



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

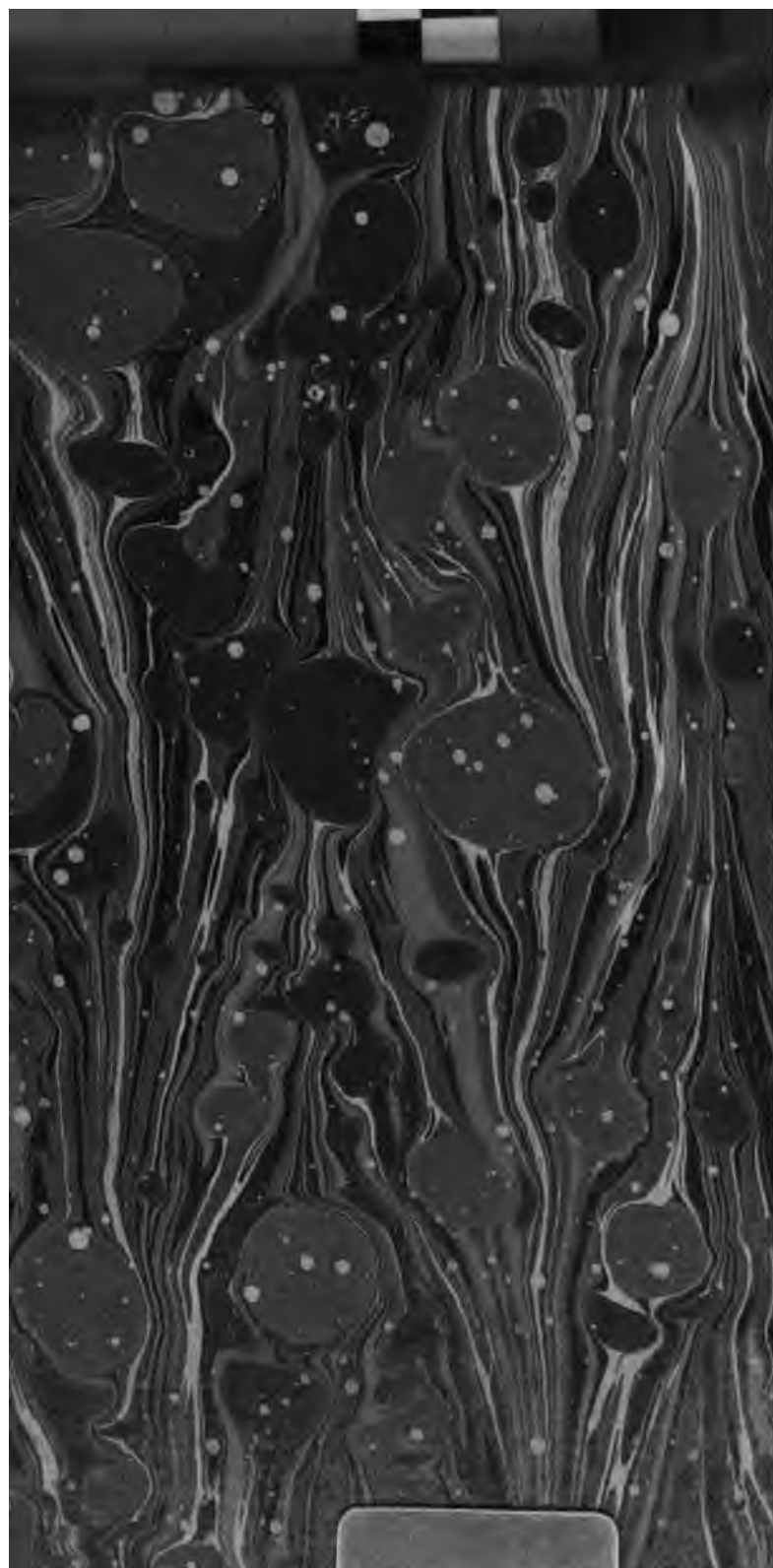
We also ask that you:

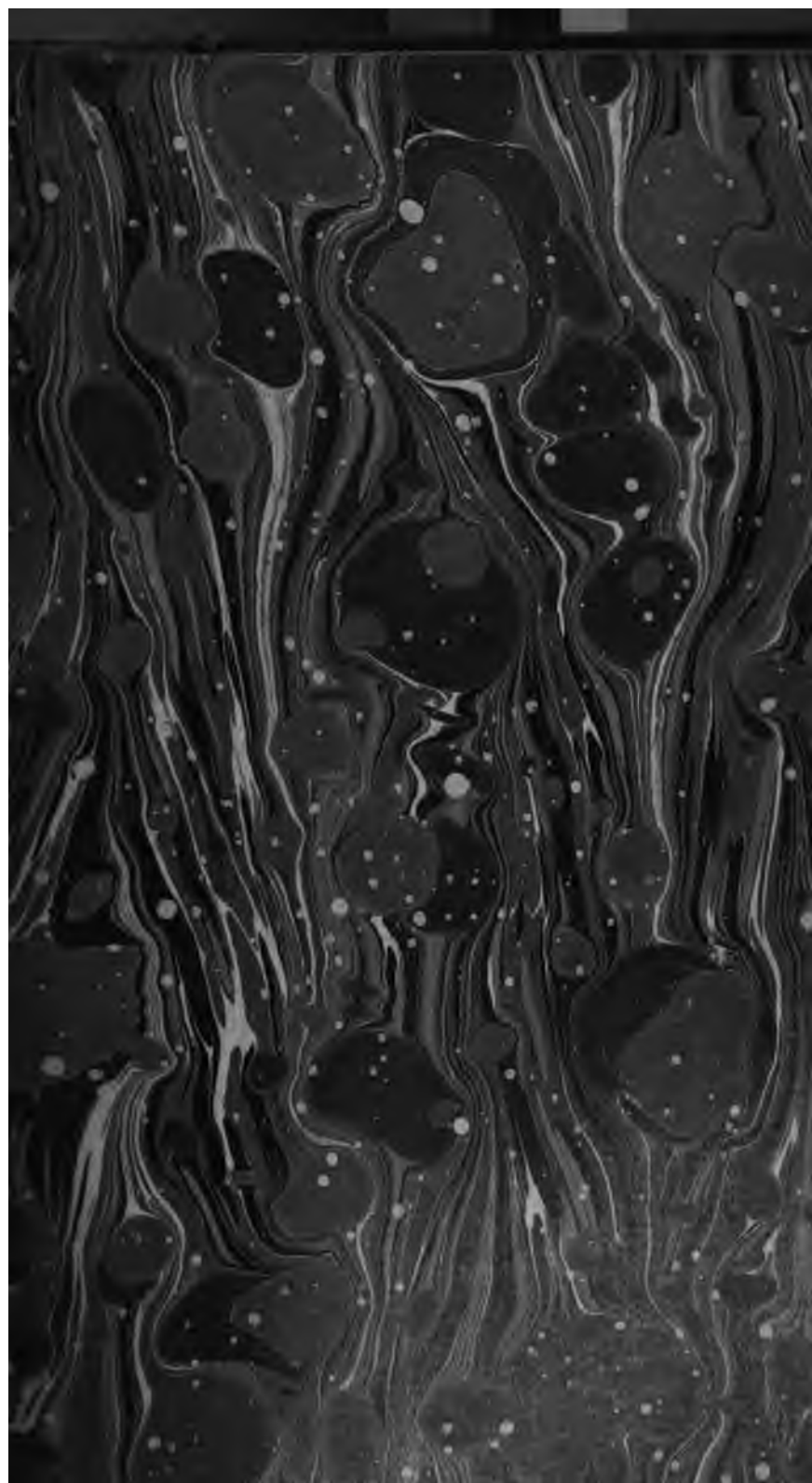
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>









$$\text{Per. } 3977 \quad e. \quad \frac{239}{21}$$





THE  
AMERICAN QUARTERLY  
REVIEW.

---

MARCH AND JUNE, 1837.

---

VOL. XXI.



---

PHILADELPHIA:  
PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY ADAM WALDIE.  
1837.



## CONTENTS OF NO. XLI.

---

ART.		PAGE
I.	AGRICULTURE. - - -	1
	1. Journal of the American Institute, a Monthly Publication, devoted to the Interests of Agriculture, Commerce, Manufactures, and the Arts; accompanied with public documents, sketches of natural history, and, occasionally, philosophical and literary essays. Edited by a Committee, members of the Institute. Vol. I. New York, 1836.	
	2. The New England Farmer and Gardener's Journal; containing essays, original and selected, relating to agriculture and domestic economy, with the prices of country produce. By Thomas G. Fessenden. Boston, 1837.	
	3. Elements of Agricultural Chemistry, in a Course of Lectures for the Board of Agriculture. By Sir Humphrey Davy, LL. D. London, 1814.	
II.	MISS SEDGWICK. - - -	18
	The Poor Rich Man and the Rich Poor Man. By the author of "Hope Leslie," &c. New York, 1836.	
III.	CHATEAUBRIAND'S SKETCHES. - -	28
	Sketches of English Literature; with considerations on the spirit of the times, men, and revolutions. By the Viscount de Chateaubriand. 2 vols. 8vo. London, 1836.	
IV.	IRVING'S ASTORIA. - - -	60
	Astoria; or, Anecdotes of an Enterprise beyond the Rocky mountains. By Washington Irving. 2 vols. 12mo. Philadelphia, 1836.	
V.	MEMOIRS OF AARON BURR. - -	74
	Memoirs of Aaron Burr, with Miscellaneous Selections from his Correspondence. By Matthew L. Davis. In two volumes. Vol. I. New York, 1836.	
VI.	VEGETABLE PHYSIOLOGY. - -	112
	Recherche Anatomique et Physiologique sur la structure intime des Animaux et des Végétaux, et sur leur motilité. Par Dr. Dutrochet, à Paris.	

# CONTENTS.

ART.		P.
VII.	THE USURY LAWS. - - -	1
	Defence of Usury; showing the impolicy of the present legal restraints on the terms of pecuniary bargains; in letters to a friend. To which is added a Letter to Adam Smith, Esq., LL. D., on the discouragements opposed by the above restraints to the progress of inventive industry. By Jeremy Bentham, Esq., of Lincoln's Inn. New York, 1837.	
VIII.	THE GRAND OPERA OF PARIS. - - -	1
	La Esmeralda, opera en quatre actes, musique de Mademoiselle Louiso Bertin, paroles de M. Victor Hugo; représenté pour la première fois sur le Théâtre de L'Academie Royale de Musique. Le 14 Novembre, 1836.	
IX.	MODERN ENGLISH TRAGEDY. - - -	1
	Ion; a tragedy, in five acts. By Thomas Noon Talfourd. New York, 1837.	
X.	THE COPYRIGHT LAW. - - -	2
	Report of the Select Committee of the Senate of the United States, to whom were referred the address of certain British, and the petition of certain American authors: Mr. Clay, chairman. Read in the senate, February 16, 1837.	
XI.	THE GREAT METROPOLIS. - - -	2
	The Great Metropolis. By the author of "Random Recollections of the Lords and Commons." In two volumes. Vol. I., second edition. London and New York, 1837.	

# AMERICAN QUARTERLY REVIEW.

No. XLI.

---

MARCH, 1837.

---

- ART. I.—1. *Journal of the American Institute, a Monthly Publication, devoted to the Interests of Agriculture, Commerce, Manufactures, and the Arts; accompanied with public documents, sketches of natural history, and, occasionally, philosophical and literary essays.* Edited by a Committee, Members of the Institute. Vol. I. New York: 1836.
2. *The New England Farmer and Gardener's Journal; containing essays, original and selected, relating to agriculture and domestic economy, with the prices of country produce.* By THOMAS G. FESSENDEN. Boston: 1837.
3. *Elements of Agricultural Chemistry, in a Course of Lectures for the Board of Agriculture.* By Sir HUMPHREY DAVY, LL. D. London: 1814.

Agriculture, in its broadest sense, may be defined the cultivation of the earth; and it is probably the most ancient of all the arts. Adam was sent forth to till the ground, and that was the condition of his existence. The precise date and measure of agricultural improvement, which existed during the different early ages of the world, cannot be accurately determined, from a want of historical records. The Chaldeans, the Phœnicians, Egyptians, Persians, Athenians, and Romans, it is well known, practised agriculture with considerable success, and encouraged it among their people as an honourable employment: and the learned treatises upon the subject, which were written during the continuance of the Grecian and Roman rule, comprising the works of such men as Hesiod, Xenophon, Cato, Columella, Virgil, and Varro, almost rival in bulk the “many camel loads” of the Justinian age of the law. Who has not heard of Cincinnatus returning to his plough, after restoring the liberties of his country; or of Regulus, who requested to be recalled from Africa lest his farm might suffer from his absence; or of the



ancient Persian kings, who annually threw off their diadem, that they might eat with the husbandmen! The senators of Rome employed the intervals of their public duties in the cares of husbandry. The veneration for this employment was carried so far by the Egyptians, that they worshipped as gods certain products of the soil, and those animals which were used in tillage.

We shall present a condensed sketch of the early history of Agriculture, though the question may be asked, Why, in this age of printing, when the world can scarcely contain the books which are written, we discuss a matter so dry and uninteresting? We enter but a single plea of justification,—the importance of the subject.

Agriculture was successfully exercised among the most civilized portions of the earth, until the reign of the Emperor Claudius, when it fell into neglect. The northern barbarians, who, after the reign of Constantine, overran Europe, cultivated by slaves only a small portion of the land near their habitations, and were content to roam over the vast deserts which their ravages had made, without any settled habits of industry. It is clear that, among these people, husbandry could receive but little attention. In 1478, an attempt was made to revive it, through the publication of a work in Florence by Crescenzo. The precise period in which agriculture was introduced into Britain is not known, although Julius Cæsar has alleged that it was practised by some of the colonists from Gaul who had settled in the southern part, about one hundred years before the Roman invasion. Great improvements were brought about in this art, however, by the establishment of the Romans in that country, and it sunk only with the declension of the other arts. Vast inroads were made by the Picts and Scots upon the general prosperity of the Britons; and on the arrival of the Saxons, in 449, the disastrous wars which followed actually drove the Britons from the fields which they had cultivated into barren regions. But although the Britons had lost, in a great measure, the science of agriculture, they encouraged it by their laws, which provided certain privileges in favour of those who should cultivate the soil.

The Anglo-Saxons, upon their accession to Britain, imbibed a contempt for agriculture, and enacted by law that it should be followed only by women and slaves. These haughty warriors were, however, soon obliged to pursue the art, when the Britons, whom they had before plundered of their subsistence, were driven from the kingdom. The Saxon princes divided their domains into two parts, the *inlands* and *outlands*. The former were generally contiguous to the mansion of the proprietor, and were cultivated by his slaves for domestic purposes :

the latter were more remote from the proprietary mansion, and were rented to the *ceorls* or farmers. In order to show the low state of agriculture at that time, we may state that the common price of an acre of fertile soil was about four English shillings, and in the year 1043, a quarter of wheat sold at about fifteen shillings, which was equal to seven or eight pounds sterling at the present time. A new era in agriculture was, however, introduced by the invasion of the Normans in 1066, and by the introduction of husbandmen from France, Flanders, and Normandy, who purchased and cultivated farms.

Previously to the fifteenth century, agriculture had received but little aid from scientific research, but in the latter part of that period it had assumed the form of a compact and permanent science. At that time it derived important assistance from Fitzherbert, who wrote two treatises upon the subject. One was entitled the "*Book of Husbandry*," and appeared in 1534. The other was called the "*Book of Surveying and Improvements*," and was published in 1539. Fitzherbert seems to have studied the character of soils, and the laws of vegetation, with considerable industry, and his works abound with much elementary knowledge, but they are of course destitute of that philosophical accuracy which is founded upon the inductive method of Bacon, afterwards established.

During the year 1600, France made extraordinary efforts to bring the art of husbandry into vogue, and for that object several important works were published; but the *practice* of agriculture was more regarded by that nation, as well as the Flemings, than the mere publication of books, so that a knowledge of their principles could only be obtained by observation. In England, during the civil wars, husbandry received some temporary checks, but in the time of Hartlib it had grown to great perfection. The country gentlemen, who had been impoverished by these wars, became industrious, but they soon sank into idleness, and the whole business of agriculture gradually fell into the hands of the common farmers. Ireland was induced, by the writings of Blyth, to give up a wretched mode of agricultural practice which had long prevailed, and to adopt a more improved system, and as evidence of the fact, the transactions of the Dublin society for encouraging husbandry are cited as authority upon this subject. After the peace of Aix la Chapelle, the nations of Europe applied themselves with uncommon vigour to the science of agriculture, and societies were regularly organized for the promotion of this object, under the patronage of their several governments. In the year 1756, increased attention was given to the subject in France, and prize questions were annually proposed by the rural academies, particularly those of Lyons and Bordeaux. Russia has also made

vigorous exertions to introduce into that country the most improved method of agriculture, through the patronage of the state, and it has been taught publicly in the Swedish, Danish, and German Universities. Italy, Tuscany, Spain, Poland, Denmark, Japan, and China, have also bestowed marked attention upon the subject.

Notwithstanding the rapid advances which have been made in modern times in agricultural science, there is no doubt that Great Britain is far before the rest of the world in its practical application. Societies, with powerful influence, such as the Bath Society, the Royal Society, and the Society of Arts, have given their agency in aid of its progress. This forwardness on the part of Great Britain is doubtless owing somewhat to the genius of the people, but more, perhaps, to the general spirit of improvement which pervades that empire, and to the denseness of the population which makes it the great alternative to starvation. A modern writer upon "the progress and present state of agriculture," enters into an argument to show the advance of husbandry in England and Wales, by a computation of the increase of population in those countries, and the consequent increase of agricultural products necessary for their support. He traces the augmentation of agricultural industry to various causes. In the first place, vast tracts of land have for many years been used as wastes, commons, and common fields, the former of which have been altogether uncultivated. These fields were sometimes ploughed, but the property in them was so intermixed and divided that this was done to very little effect. It is estimated that from the year 1760 to 1832, about six millions of acres of land have been enclosed by act of parliament, and that in this mode the produce of the soil has been increased from eight to ten fold. Another cause of agricultural improvement in these countries, is the fact of the substitution of green crops for fallow, and the introduction of fallow between successive corn crops, as well as the use of bone manure, and the better rotation of crops. This improvement throughout Great Britain has been extended to stock, as well as to arable husbandry, and this is demonstrated by the fact, that the average weight of cattle and sheep throughout the kingdom has been doubled since the year 1750. The high state of agriculture in England is a prominent feature which strikes the attention of the traveller to that country. Almost every section of earth seems to be devoted to this object, and the natural humidity of the climate keeps the vegetation at all times verdant. In fact, the soil is generally too moist and low for cultivation without the use of furrowing and draining. The country is divided into comparatively small fields, (unlike the mighty solitudes which the American wilder-

ness stretches out before the eye,) broken only by the stately mansions and grounds of the nobility and gentry, and surrounded

“By hedge-row elms on hillocks green,  
Right against the eastern gate,  
Where the great sun begins his state  
Robed in flames and amber light,  
The clouds in thousand liveries dight,  
While the ploughman near at hand  
Whistles o'er the furrowed land,  
And the milkmaid singeth blithe,  
And the mower whets his scythe,  
And every shepherd tells his tale,  
Under the hawthorn in the dale.”

It cannot be denied that other countries are also far behind the English in the quality of the stock, the blood and strength of their horses and cattle, and even dogs, owing, doubtless, to the extraordinary pains taken in breeding. The horses which one may daily see in the Regent's Park, would excite the emulation of our most accomplished gentlemen of the turf, and the display of fat sheep at Smithfield would almost startle the good people of Brighton.

The United States, in the immense magnitude and fertility of their domain, embracing a great variety of soil and climate, and affording growth to the products of the colder as well as tropical regions, afford a wide and rich field for agricultural science. The freedom of our government, the cheapness of the soil, the abolition of the laws of primogeniture and the statutes of distribution, which one of our most distinguished jurists<sup>1</sup> has declared are the only just agrarian laws, furnish ample means and motives to agricultural labour. We have no unjust imposition of taxes, like those which limit a portion of the hard-working labourers of Ireland to three potatoes a day. Here, a man with common industry, may keep himself a freeman upon his own soil, and far from want, with nothing above him but “God and the laws.”

The Indians, before the emigration of our forefathers, practised agriculture, but it was limited with them to small corn fields which they cultivated in their migratory expeditions through the wilderness. It seems to be essential to the progress of agricultural industry, that the rights of *meum* and *tuum* should be clearly defined, and that the husbandman should possess an absolute or qualified property in the soil. To this fact may be attributed the want of success which attended the agricultural labours of our ancestors. That they acquired a subsistence from the earth there can be no doubt, but it could hardly

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Justice Story.

be expected, that a colony flying from persecution and establishing itself in dense forests could make any very marked advances in this art. The colonists had not the implements of husbandry, or the leisure necessary for its cultivation. Their time was occupied in laying the foundations of a new social system, and in repelling the attacks of the savages. The most approved modes of practice had not then been completely developed, and the utensils of the art had not been invented in those commodious forms which have so much facilitated agricultural labour in our own day. Obstacles to the success of the art were subsequently presented in the outbreaking of the American revolution. The disasters springing from that event, which were felt throughout every section of the country, called upon the people to exercise the arts of war, rather than those of peace, and they were therefore compelled to strap their muskets upon their backs while they were guiding the plough. When, however, the storm of the revolution blew over, the energies of the people quietly sank down into the right channels, and since that period the business of husbandry has been gradually advancing in this country.

The aid of science to the arts, which may be deemed a prominent characteristic of the present age, is no where more strongly exhibited than in the progress of husbandry. Chemistry, botany, geology, even natural philosophy, have all contributed to this work. The composition of the different species of soil, and their capacity for producing the different kinds of vegetation, may be easily ascertained by chemical analysis. To understand rightly the proper food of plants, the varieties of vegetables necessary to be raised for the amelioration of the soil, and also the different kinds of manures and composts adapted to the several kinds of land, requires a minute philosophical investigation. The soil is frequently barren in a great degree, and there is no mode of ascertaining the *causes* but by chemical tests. If, for example, the salts of iron are discovered in the soil, they may be decomposed by lime; or if there is an excess of siliceous sand, this may be remedied by the application of calcareous matter; if of vegetable matter, by liming and burning; or if there is a deficiency in this respect, it may be supplied by manure. In fact, the whole structure of organic matter is dependent upon physical laws, and it is only by ascertaining its chemical constitution that we can act upon it agriculturally with full success.

The advantages of agricultural chemistry are, moreover, demonstrated in the right practice of the rotation of crops. The benefit of this practice consists in keeping the soil always in strength, and at the same time in drawing from it all the profit which is practicable. It is well known that different plants

produce different effects upon the soil, some tending to rob it of its strength, and others, to act gently upon it; some to loosen, and others to bind. Hence it is necessary to good husbandry, that a careful examination should be made into the chemical combination of the different plants, and this is the only mode in which crops can be properly alternated. A merely theoretic agriculturist, doubtless, would be unable to cultivate the soil with full success, but the farmer, it is obvious, would practise husbandry with far greater advantage if he could combine a knowledge of the principles of the science with an experimental practice of the art. The design, and the only design of agricultural chemistry, is to discover improved modes of cultivation. This may be done most effectually, by experimenting upon those elements which constitute the soil, and upon those causes which produce the growth of vegetation. The soil, as well as the vegetation which it produces, contains a number of chemical constituents, which have been accurately analysed, and it is through the agency of the unerring principles of science, that a knowledge of the causes of its barrenness can be obtained, and also the proper means of its fertilization.

On this foundation has been erected the work of Sir Humphrey Davy, whose title we have prefixed to this article. The course of lectures on Agricultural Chemistry was delivered during ten successive years from 1802, before the British Board of Agriculture. The work was published at their request, and dedicated to that body. We have before us the London edition, issued in 1814, but the volume has been reprinted in this country, and is already embodied into the agricultural literature of our republic. It embraces eight lectures, with an appendix, containing "an account of the results of experiments on the produce and nutritive qualities of different grasses, and other plants used as the food of animals, instituted by John, Duke of Bedford." These lectures embrace all that may be supposed connected with the application of chemistry to agriculture. The most prominent subjects treated of in the work are, "the general powers of matter which influence vegetables;" the constitution of soils; the nature of the atmosphere, and its influence upon vegetables; animal, vegetable, and mineral manures; and the chemical effect of the different modes of improving lands. These lectures are written in a clear and vigorous style, and we possess an ample voucher for the accuracy of the facts and principles they embody, in the reputation of their author as the first chemist of his age. Our limits forbid us from entering into an exhibition of the valuable facts contained in this volume, but we commend it to all the reading classes of the community, as it embraces knowledge of great importance to the man of science, the theoretical agriculturist, and the practical farmer.

We subjoin the following remarks from the introduction—which contains a syllabus of the course—exhibiting the phenomena of vegetation:—

“The phenomena of vegetation must be considered as an important branch of the science of organized nature; but, although exalted above inorganic matter, vegetables are yet, in a great measure, dependent for their existence upon its laws. They receive their nourishment from the external elements; they assimilate it by means of peculiar organs; and it is by examining their physical and chemical constitution, and the substances and powers which act upon them, and the modifications which they undergo, that the scientific principles of agricultural chemistry are obtained.

“According to these ideas, it is evident that the study ought to be commenced by some general enquiries into the composition and nature of material bodies, and the laws of their changes. The surface of the earth, the atmosphere, and the water deposited from it, must either together or separately afford all the principles concerned in vegetation, and it is only by examining the chemical nature of these principles that we are capable of discovering what is the food of plants, and the manner in which this food is supplied and prepared for their nourishment. The principles of the constitution of bodies, consequently, will form the first subject for our consideration.

“By methods of analysis, depending upon chemical and electrical instruments discovered in late times, it has been ascertained that all the varieties of material substances may be resolved into a comparatively small number of bodies, which, as they are not capable of being decomposed, are considered, in the present state of chemical knowledge, as elements. The bodies incapable of decomposition, at present known, are forty-seven. Of these, thirty-eight are metals, six are inflammable bodies, and three substances which unite with metals and inflammable bodies, and form, with them, acids, alkalies, earths, or other analogous compounds. The chemical elements, acted upon by attractive powers, combine in different aggregates. In their simple combinations, they produce various crystalline substances, distinguished by the regularity of their forms. In more complicated arrangements, they constitute the varieties of vegetable and animal substances, bear the higher character of organization, and are rendered subservient to the purposes of life. And by the influence of heat, light, and electrical powers, there is a constant series of changes; matter assumes new forms, the destruction of one order of beings tends to the conservation of another, solution and consolidation, decay and renovation, are connected, and whilst the parts of the system continue in a state of fluctuation and change, the order and harmony of the whole remain unalterable.” pp. 7—9.

Sir Humphrey, in the same part of his works, superadds some valuable remarks concerning the organization of plants; the effect of air, earth, and water, in producing their different natures, the philosophy of fallowing and irrigation, and also the character of manures, and their chemical effect upon the soil.

The aid of science has not only been exerted in advancing the best modes of tillage, but also in conjunction with the mechanic arts, it has led to the invention of new, and the improvement of old instruments of husbandry. The plough, the harrow, and many utensils of less consequence, have been gradually

advancing from the rough model of the original inventor, to the finished and commodious instruments now in use, which have vastly augmented the profits and lightened the labour of agricultural industry.

But notwithstanding science has very materially aided the progress of agriculture, it is, after all, mainly owing to the strict observation of practical results, that the most solid advantages have been obtained. For this object, the experience of practical farmers is invaluable. By comparing the results of their practice, general facts have been established. To furnish an organ for the collation of these facts, societies have been formed, and agricultural journals have been published, in almost every state of the Union. It is only within the last ten or twelve years, however, that the public mind has been awakened to an effective impulse in the cause of husbandry, as well as the other branches of national industry. Among the most prominent societies which have been established in this country for that object is the American Institute, the title of whose Journal we have placed at the head of this paper. That society was organized about eight years ago in the city of New York, "for the promotion of agriculture, commerce, manufactures, and the arts." Its design is to arouse and concentrate the public mind upon a great American system of domestic industry. It is founded on the fact, that the United States possesses within its boundaries all the means of national comfort and strength, without a necessity of dependence for any thing upon foreign markets; and that all which is required for the development of the resources which are spread around us, is active, intelligent, vigorous industry. The American Institute, in accordance with its charter, holds its stated periodical meetings, annual addresses are delivered before the society, fairs are held, contributions made of valuable facts, new discoveries, improvements, or inventions in the arts; and premiums are awarded to the most approved articles of domestic manufacture. The Journal of the Institute, which we regard as a valuable compendium, professes to give, in monthly numbers, a record of the transactions of the society. It is also in contemplation by the Institute, to establish, in connection with a library, a repository in the city of New York, which shall be a general receptacle of models in the arts—we mean those models which have been recently invented. Whoever visited the patent office at Washington, before its destruction, could not fail to be surprised at the amazing activity of the American mind in new inventions, or to be convinced that an institution like that which we have last mentioned, would be desirable in the commercial metropolis of the country. The vast advantages of a society like the American Institute must be manifest to everybody. It concentrates public



attention upon improvements in domestic industry. It enlarges the boundaries of practical knowledge, by the establishment of facts founded upon the experience of different minds, and excites emulation in the arts, by the prizes which it holds out to competition. Besides this society, others of like character have been instituted<sup>1</sup> in the different states of the union, some, we believe, under government patronage. The establishment of agricultural societies and journals in the different states, we trust, is the harbinger of greater advancement in science and the arts throughout the country. It is clearly right that inventions in the arts, or great skill and care in raising stock, should meet with reward, and accordingly the premiums which are awarded at our agricultural fairs, to the owners of first-rate cattle and approved specimens of domestic manufacture, are attended with the benefit of exciting the ambition of these two classes of producers.

Societies, similar to those which we have mentioned as existing in this country, have for a long time been established in Great Britain, which hold annual fairs, where the most approved breeds of sheep, cattle, and horses, as well as agricultural productions, are exhibited. Similar societies have been organized in France, and the report of the Central Royal Society of that country, read at its last public sitting in April, 1836, by M. Bodin, may be found in the Journal of the American Institute. Several enterprising gentlemen of the northern as well as southern states, independently of these societies, have made extraordinary individual exertions in the cause, by importing exotic plants, and the most approved stock.

Horticulture, which may be considered the *fine arts* of agriculture, has also received considerable attention in this country, through the agency of private and public enterprise; and the annual horticultural exhibitions in our large cities give promise of brilliant success. Besides the various public gardens devoted to this object, there are private establishments deserving of all commendation.

In Boston, Philadelphia, and New York, public spirit has made still farther advances. The departed, who were before consigned to the barren heath, or the crowded grave-yards of tumultuous cities, may now be congregated in beauty and peace, among silent groves, where nature, learning, architecture, poetry, and sculpture weave their brightest trophies over the monuments of the dead.

Why has not husbandry advanced *more rapidly* in this country, with its wide field of operation, aided as it is by the

<sup>1</sup> We need scarcely allude to the Franklin Institute of Pennsylvania, a noble monument of the skill and enterprise of this powerful and growing state.

most valuable agricultural journals, and such apparently energetic societies? To this question we answer, that there are two prominent causes which tend to impede the progress of agricultural industry throughout the United States. The first which we shall mention, may perhaps appear somewhat paradoxical. It is the excess of good land. In a country of limited extent and dense population, there is necessarily a resort to artificial means to augment the produce of the soil, and this tends to the advancement of husbandry. This is doubtless the foundation of the progress of that science in England. Where, however, the territory is so wide and fertile as our own, farmers are unwilling to expend their labour and money in cultivating a naturally barren or worn out soil by artificial means, when the vast regions of the west are spread out before them. Doubtless the high cultivation of a small surface of naturally barren soil would be more advantageous to the owner, than a great extent poorly cultivated, but it seems to be the ambition of our American farmers to extend their operations over large tracts. It is equally clear, that the same labour would, if expended upon the western soil, produce, upon an average, double the amount of that at the east. There has been, heretofore, a counterbalancing advantage in favour of the eastern farmer in the greater price of his products. But this we believe does not now hold good. The increasing emigration to the west, and the too general neglect there of agriculture, causes an excess of population over the products of the earth, while the market at the east is making greater demands on account of the emigration from abroad; and this tends vastly to increase the value of these products. It is a fact within our immediate knowledge, that the farmers of Michigan, even in the interior, have a ready market for all they can produce, at their own doors, as the emigrants to that country must be maintained by the produce raised by others, until they can clear and bring under cultivation their own land. The establishment of internal improvements, by facilitating the means of communication, has enhanced the price of western productions. It is known to every farmer of the west, that within a few years corn was sold in the interior of Ohio at about six cents per bushel, and that it is now more than doubled in price. It is hardly to be imagined, therefore, that very rapid advances will be made in the science of husbandry while so much good land can be procured at so small a price, and where its products can be obtained with comparatively little toil. Men here require nature to do what in many other countries is effected only by laborious art. When, however, the country becomes so densely populated as to require economy of space, art will come in to supply the deficiencies of nature, and husbandry will be greatly advanced.

Another cause of bad husbandry in this country, is that spirit of speculation, the *auri sacra fames*, which is abroad. All classes, and among them the farmers, are induced to neglect straight forward industry, and to embark in extraordinary and hazardous enterprizes, and this produces an unnatural state of things. There is, doubtless, in the rapid advancement of the Union, a wide field for the mere accumulation of wealth by speculation, but it impedes the solid prosperity of the country. Although the price of agricultural produce is high at the west, the farmers of that country are unwilling to engage in the arduous labour of tilling the soil, when there may be secured such immense advances in the value of property by judicious investments, and accordingly we find them a race of consumers, and not of producers. The exorbitant prices which are now affixed to a great proportion of the western lands by individuals, outrun the sober calculations of common sense, and must retrograde. The growth of a country generally follows and not precedes the cultivation of the soil. Imaginary valuations may feed the midnight visions of the greedy speculator; but they will not feed the body. It is to the facts which we have mentioned, conjoined with the scanty harvests of the last year, and perhaps, in some measure, to the accumulation of marketable products by speculators, that we may attribute the high price of produce at the present time. Let the farmers return to their ploughs, and they will not subject themselves to the bitter disappointments which must always follow in the path of visionary speculation. Let them reclaim the wilderness and the exhausted fields, and scatter over their broad surface the waving harvests and bleating flocks, and their gains, if less rapid, will be more solid. To this important class of our citizens, both at the east and the west, we would quote the sentiment of the Roman poet:

"O fortunatos nimium sua si bona norint  
Agricolae——"

Let them recollect that Washington was a husbandman, and returned to his farm after he had worked out the salvation of his country; that it is an honourable and virtuous employment; that it was the farmers of the revolution, who, grasping their muskets from the hooks of their cottages, were the most important instruments in accomplishing our independence, and that they, as a class, have ever been regarded as the bone and muscle of the republic.

To the neglect of agricultural industry in this country, and also the amount of foreign emigration which is daily pouring in upon us, may be attributed the fact, that wheat and other staples are imported into the United States at the present time

from abroad. There may be partial exceptions to this neglect of agriculture in some of the states, among which we might designate Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, and New York. The former, as is well known, possesses a comparatively barren soil, but by considerable effort it is brought, probably, into a better state of cultivation than any other section of New England. Good husbandry prevails also in some portions of the state of New York, particularly about the Genessee country, one of the most beautiful agricultural regions in the United States. Pennsylvania, also, with her immense resources of coal and iron, is in the main under the influence of as productive tillage as any other state in the Union, and possesses probably a better market. This is owing, in a great measure, to the existence of a hard-working German population, and the general establishment of internal improvements throughout the state, which furnish a ready market for agricultural products. Although considerable attention has been paid to the subject of agriculture at the south, by the institution of societies, and exhibitions of domestic products, it is believed that the planters make too large drafts upon the soil, and as they do not expend much labour in manuring, it becomes soon exhausted by improvident culture. We trust that the farmers of the country will return to the soil, and that agriculture, which is now so grossly neglected in comparison with other pursuits, will receive that attention which it richly deserves.

An agricultural convention has been recently held at Albany, in which certain resolutions were passed in favour of memorializing the legislature of the state for the establishment of a school for the teaching of scientific and practical agriculture; for the appropriation of money by government as rewards for useful inventions in husbandry; and also for the introduction of agricultural and horticultural books into the common schools, all of which we hope will prevail.

In order to show that the American mind has not been inactive upon the theoretic part of husbandry, we shall embody a list which was made in 1835, of the most prominent agricultural reports, volumes and journals, which have been published in the United States. The first work of that class published in this country, was *Essays on Field Husbandry*, by Jared Elliot, Connecticut; issued in Boston in 1760. The Massachusetts Agricultural Society was incorporated in 1792, and their first work, entitled *Laws and Regulations of the Massachusetts Agricultural Society*, with some interesting extracts from foreign and domestic publications, was issued in 1793. They subsequently published a collection of papers on agriculture, and finally, a voluminous work under the title of the *Massachusetts Agricultural Repository*. The Philadelphia Society

for promoting Agriculture, was instituted in 1785, and they have published five volumes of memoirs, the last in 1826. The Pennsylvania Agricultural Society, under the auspices of John Hare Powel, Esq.<sup>1</sup> have published two octavo volumes, the first in 1824, and entitled *Memoirs*, and the second, *Hints to American Husbandmen*, which appeared in 1827. The Society in the state of New York, for the promotion of agriculture, arts and manufactures, issued—under the auspices of certain gentlemen, among whom was Chancellor Livingston—four quarto volumes of *Transactions*, the first in 1792, and the second in 1799. The Board of Agriculture in the state of New York published three octavo volumes of *Memoirs*, which were printed and distributed at the expense of the state. The first of these volumes appeared in 1821, and the third in 1824. The Albany County Society of New York have likewise published several agricultural tracts; and the Essex Agricultural Society have published thirteen octavo pamphlets, the first in 1818, and the last in 1834. This list comprises the most prominent agricultural reports, not including addresses, which have been given to the public previous to 1835. We subjoin the titles of the most important agricultural works which have been published in the United States, in chronological order.

Elliot's *Essays*; Boston, 1760. *The New England Farmer or Georgical Dictionary*, by Samuel Deane, D. D.; 1797. *The Experienced Farmer*, by Richard Parkinson, Doncaster, Eng.; Philadelphia, 1799. *The Rural Socrates, or the History of Kliyogg*, a celebrated philosophical Swiss farmer; republished, Hallowell, Maine, 1800. *Essays and Notes on Husbandry and Rural Affairs*, by J. B. Bordley; 1801. *The Pennsylvania Farmer*, by Job Roberts; Philadelphia, 1804. *The American Gardener's Calender*, by Bernard McMahon; Philadelphia, 1806. *Forsyth on Fruit Trees*; republished at the same time. *A complete Treatise on Merinos*, by Mr. Tessier; 1811. *Every Man his own Cattle Doctor*, by Francis Clater; Philadelphia, 1815. *Elements of Agricultural Chemistry*, by Sir Humphrey Davy; republished, Boston, 1815. *The Code of Agriculture*, by Sir John Sinclair; republished, Hartford, 1818. *Arator, a Series of Agricultural Essays*; Petersburg, Va., 1800. *The Farmer's Assistant*, by John Nicholson; Lancaster, Penn., 1820. *Treatise on Agriculture*, by a Practical Farmer; Albany, 1820. *Husbandman and Housewife*, by Thomas G. Fessenden; Bel lows Falls, Vt., 1820. *The Farmer's Manual*, by Frederick Butler; Wethersfield, Conn., 1820. *Willich's Domestic En-*

<sup>1</sup> To the enterprise of this gentleman, more than to any other individual in the United States, are we indebted for improvements in stock husbandry, by the importation of the best cattle from abroad.

cyclopedia; republished, Philadelphia, 1821. The American Orchardist, by James Thacher, M. D.; Boston, 1822. Letters of Agricola, by John Young; 1822. Nature and Reason Harmonized in the Practice of Husbandry, by the late John Lorain; Philadelphia, 1825. Compendium of Cattle Medicine, by James White; republished, Philadelphia, 1827. Manual on the Mulberry Tree, by James H. Cobb. Essays on Calcareous Manures, by Edmund Ruffin; Petersburg, Va., 1832. Treatise on Poultry, Cows, and Swine, by B. Moubray; reprinted from the sixth London edition, and adapted to the United States, by Thomas G. Fessenden, editor of New England Farmer; Boston, 1832. The Complete Farmer and Rural Economist, by Thomas G. Fessenden; Boston, 1834. These, together with works reprinted in this country from the pen of William Cobbett, and a few others of less magnitude, comprise the bulk of the agricultural volumes which have been published in the United States.

The following are most of the periodical journals devoted to agriculture which have been issued in this country, and we rejoice to say, that, as a body, they exhibit marked talent in their respective editors.

The American Farmer; Baltimore, formerly edited by John S. Skinner. The New England Farmer, by Thomas G. Fessenden; Boston. The New York Farmer, by Samuel Fleet; New York. The Genessee Farmer, by Luther Tucker; Rochester, N. Y. Goodsel's Genessee Farmer, by N. Goodsel; Rochester, N. Y. Maine Farmer; Winthrop, Me. Cultivator, by J. Buel, J. P. Beekman, and J. D. Wasson; Albany. Farmer's Reporter; Cincinnati, Ohio. Northern Farmer; Newport, N. H. Southern Agriculturist; Charleston, S. C. Ohio Farmer and Western Horticulturist; Batavia, Ohio. Southern Planter; Macon, Ga. Farmer's Register, by Edmund Ruffin; Richmond, Va. Quarterly Journal of Agriculture, Mechanics, and Manufactures; New York. The Plough Boy; Albany, N. Y. The American Farmer's Magazine; Washington. Besides these journals, there is a work published in Wilkesbarre, Penn., in the German language, and entitled the Farmer and Gardener. Two horticultural journals have also been recently issued in Boston, the one entitled the American Gardener's Magazine; and the other, the Horticultural Register and Gardener's Magazine, edited by Thomas G. Fessenden. The list of works mentioned above<sup>1</sup> may not, perhaps, contain all the publications which have been issued in the United States, but it is sufficient to show, that how much soever we may have neglected the

<sup>1</sup> For the above list we are indebted to a valuable correspondent of the New York Farmer, of March, 1835.

*practice*, we have not, as a nation, been deficient in *theoretic* husbandry.

The recent introduction of two new subjects of culture into the United States, will, if carried out successfully, produce a marked epoch in American agriculture—we mean the manufacture of sugar from the beet root, and also that of silk. The manufacture of sugar from the beet root was first introduced into France under the auspices of Napoleon, in 1811, and has been since carried on in that country with brilliant success. So great is the interest felt, and so auspicious is the prospect for the successful production of that article in the United States, than an association of gentlemen in Philadelphia have despatched an agent, Mr. Pedder, to France, in order to procure from that country all the information respecting the process which can be obtained. So far as returns have been received they are satisfactory, and there is every reason to hope that a successful experiment will soon be tried here. If it should succeed, the vast tracts of fertile soil which we possess would afford almost inexhaustible resources for that object.

The production of *domestic silk* seems to be a subject of no less importance than the manufacture of sugar, and we rejoice that public attention is awakening to this object. The consumption of that article is so great in our country, that its domestic production, superseding the necessity of its importation from abroad, would save a vast amount of expense, and at the same time produce the most beneficial consequences to the system of domestic industry. Rapid advances in this work are beginning to be made, and the Congress of the United States has caused to be printed and distributed a valuable treatise on its cultivation and manufacture. We understand, that, besides other improvements, an establishment for the manufacture of silk has recently been commenced in Dedham, Massachusetts, which, when in full operation, will run 1600 spindles, and employ 100 females. To those sections of the country which produce the mulberry tree in abundance, the manufacture of silk would doubtless be the most productive kind of labour which could be undertaken.

The immense resources of our country, and the geographical features, as well as productions of her different parts, seem to lay a natural foundation for a complete American system, which shall make us independent of the globe. The north, south and west have each peculiar advantages which do not seem to interfere, and which might be made materially to aid each other. It is hardly to be imagined that New England will ever be a great agricultural region, as this is prevented by the natural barrenness of her soil. Her prosperity must depend mainly on her commerce and manufactures. Nor do the pro-

ductions of the south come in collision with those of the north and west, for they cannot be yielded by these regions. It is equally clear that the west must, in the end, become the great agricultural section of the country, as its natural advantages of soil place it above competition with the east in this respect. It is only by a system of internal improvement, acting upon these advantages, and by the encouragement of domestic industry, that the greatest good can be secured for all parts of the country.

We have endeavoured in this article—avoiding all minute specification and statistical detail—to exhibit briefly the general progress of agriculture, and its condition in the United States. Nature has provided us with the resources of a great agricultural nation—in our vast tracts of fertile soil, untouched by the hand of man; forests, beneath whose shade the nations of Europe might find shelter and support; and giant lakes, connecting distant regions, as with inland seas, upon whose broad bosoms the navies of the earth might float. We have also navigable rivers of immense magnitude, running almost the whole length and breadth of the continent, and rail-roads and canals are in process of construction, which will connect the remote sections of the Mississippi Valley with the Atlantic frontier. These great public works, while they furnish channels of transportation for our agricultural products, are like so many iron chains, which bind together the local interests of different sections, and make, as it were, a single neighbourhood of the republic. We possess water power enough to employ all the machinery which can be manufactured, and to work up all the products which can be furnished by the soil. But more than all, we possess a free government, which grants to labour a certain and sure reward. All we want is concentrated, intelligent, vigorous industry. Give us but this, and we may be independent of the world, and become an exporting instead of an importing nation. The establishment of this true American system, would equally benefit every section of the country; the commerce and manufactures of the east, the rice, cotton, sugar, tobacco, and gold, of the south, and the agricultural products of the west. But the soil is the most certain source of support. “The Goth, the Christian, time, war, flood, or fire,” cannot destroy it. To the earthquake alone will it yield. The glorious epoch of that golden age which is to dawn upon the world, has been described as the period when mankind shall rest in peace, beneath their own vines and fig-trees, with their spears beaten into pruning hooks, and their swords into ploughshares. If, as political economy informs us, labour is the source of wealth, experience also teaches that agricultural labour is the solid foundation of national permanence and independence.



ART. II.—*The Poor Rich Man and the Rich Poor Man.*

By the author of "Hope Leslie," &c. New York: 1836.

The gifted authoress of the above little book has conferred no small favour upon the community in which she lives, by its publication. Her former, more ambitious productions have abundantly testified her capacity for what are falsely considered the *higher* walks of fictitious composition. That she can charm the imagination and please the fancy, has been manifested by her efforts in the path of novel writing; an art which now-a-days seldom aspires to, or is at least successful in answering more than these purposes. To do practical good—to make the rising generation wiser or better—or to conduce to the amelioration of the lot of suffering humanity—is above and beyond the aim of the novelist. To originate and effectuate such an object, an ardent love of one's kind must be implanted in the heart of the writer, and, what is equally important, there must co-exist with it, a knowledge of the proper mode of putting it into practice.

One chief reason of the growing distaste of the reflecting and judicious for works of mere fancy, arises from their total inefficiency for any good; not to mention the positively bad results attendant upon the reading of very many of these productions, from the circumstance of their ministering to the worst passions of the human breast. They originate no virtuous feeling—they lead to no self-examination, no conviction of one's own worthlessness—no desire to improve either the physical or moral condition of one's neighbour: on the contrary, they pamper a sickly appetite for excitement never conducive to action; they nourish a profitless sentimentality as foreign from true benevolence or charity as cruelty itself; they feed a spirit of false honour destructive of the repose of society. They are suited, generally, to the atmosphere of the so-called higher classes, and upon them they work no beneficial effect. The humbler citizens, the labouring poor, who constitute the mass of our population, and whose children may one day occupy the places of their now wealthy neighbours, are beneath the notice of these ambitious writers. For these they take not up the pen—they strive not to lessen the load which they must bear through life, or to present a loftier aim for their struggles. They offer no consolations that may impart to their state an unction of which it is fully capable, and which their prouder brethren might sigh for in vain.

Far otherwise has Miss Sedgwick been impelled in preparing the simple and touching scenes before us. She seems to have become sensible of higher claims upon one of her talents than

merely to furnish the amusement of an idle hour—claims which the condition of our country is every day rendering more imperative upon those gifted with the brighter endowments of nature—an attention to which, too, seems of the more value as the instances of it are so rare.

We have elsewhere remarked upon the character of the literature of our country; for the most part, how ephemeral and superficial! and have endeavoured to attract attention to the necessity of rendering it as pure and beneficial as possible. Apart from newspapers, many of which are little circulating libraries, scattering through the country injurious trash at an almost incredibly cheap rate, the current literature of the day appears in the shape of weekly or semi-monthly journals, containing the reprint of novels, or other light material, from the British press; sometimes, it may be, the pestilent progeny of French romancers. If even a better supply is found in voyages, travels, or biographies, and works on science or politics—upon the numerous class of persons we before referred to, these confer no benefit. They leave their hearts and feelings untouched, and their heads as really vacant as before—for the superficial information these works may impart is worse than entire ignorance upon such subjects. There must be system—a commencement from the foundation—in education as in every thing else, to ensure success; and ideas picked up in a desultory way, without examination and without reflection, can answer no good purpose, and in all probability will be conducive to a bad one.

Reading forms an essential part of education—in our country, especially, is the remark correct, and will continue to be so. Every effort should be made, therefore, to render the class of reading-books for the people inviting, and at the same time wholesome. As there is no time for extended investigations into any branch, either of science, literature, or art, in a land where the great mass of the population are called upon to secure their own bread by their own labours, it is of infinitely more importance to promote the growth of correct moral and religious principles which will serve as a guide through all the devious paths of after life, than to sprinkle a little science or belles lettres among those whose totally diverse pursuits will ever render more than a mere smattering upon such topics entirely out of the question. To disseminate superficial views of politics, manners, science, or the fine arts, is not to educate the people—to teach them their duties to themselves, their families, their neighbours, to society, and to their God, is eminently so. The first is a labour, which, like the sickly and untimely fruit of the tree, will yield but disappointment and sorrow: the latter will produce an increase here, imparting both nourishment

and joy, and continuing to bloom and flourish even through the ages of eternity.

A full appreciation by the poorer and humbler classes (we of course use this latter term in no invidious sense) of their proper station in the social economy, their responsibilities and advantages, is what is needed. In them a spirit of contentment, not of ambition, should be fostered. The Creator has given to such, sources of enjoyment peculiar to their condition, which others, in their different spheres, know not of. But to realize these blessings, virtue must settle upon the hearth of him who receives but the frowns of fortune. In such case it is his to be free from the corroding cares of ambition and rivalry—the aching head and the feverish hand—his to press his pillow with a mind at ease, and to rise with thankfulness for a night's repose—to eat his scanty, it may be, but wholesome food, with a grateful heart, and a readiness to share his little portion with any commended by honesty and misfortune even to his limited charity.

Blessed with such feelings, and governed by such motives, even worldly advantages—if these should enter the mind of him we have described—would, in the end, be surely attained. Honest industry, strict integrity, and Christian charity, would not come short of their reward in our land; and the deserving father would see his children enjoying those means of extended usefulness which he was denied in his youth, and which they, fortified with religious principles, will know so well how to use.

To show, in the words of Scripture, that “there is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches;” and to inculcate the true principles by which the goods of this life are to be estimated, and our conduct regulated, is the aim of Miss Sedgwick in this little work, and she has most fully succeeded to the permanent increase of her own reputation, and, we trust, the good of her species. She has adopted, as the means for this excellent purpose, a very simple story, in which apposite reflections are naturally intermingled with the incidents; and the whole expressed in phraseology perfectly adapted to the sphere of those for whose benefit the book is intended. Two individuals are selected to illustrate her views, (who may be considered as the principals in her little tale, as they ultimately form the married couple,) educated in the country, of humble parentage, and blessed with early religious instruction. It is this last which carries them triumphantly through all their temptations. An interesting example of the success of equal virtue under trials of a different, probably of a severer, description, is offered in the person of another young girl whom accident had disabled in infancy, and

who was doomed to pass through a lengthened life, a cripple. The pair we have alluded to exemplify the success of honest industry, pious integrity, and unaffected benevolence: the poor invalid illustrates the triumph of Christianity in all its length and breadth—for in her it shone forth in all its beauty—over penury, disease, and depression—the blighting of almost every human feeling. The contrasts are equally well sketched. The vanity of mere riches in the hands of an unworthy possessor; the real poverty which is the lot of such an one in the midst of his gold; the want of refinement—of gratitude—of religion—of peace of mind—of contentment; the cares and disappointments which accompany the ambition of fashion, as well as that of power, the littleness of the seeming great: these are depicted in a familiar but striking manner, and with a simplicity and adherence to nature which apply them at once to the heart.

We think that the author has been rather indulgent to the father of the two heroines, "Uncle Phil," as he was familiarly called; his careless good-nature amounting to culpable negligence, and having been productive of the most disastrous consequences. His heart, however, was so good as almost to disarm resentment, even at such results. We will introduce him to the notice of the reader in an extract which, at the same time, will make him acquainted with the two daughters who play the chief part in the little story.

"But, before they arrived at this stage in the journey of life, both good and evil had chanced to them. Their first-born, Ellen, ran into an open cistern, the surface of which was just on a level with the platform before the house: so it had remained a year after the active child began to run about; and, to its mother's reiterated requests and warnings, Philip always answered—'Now that's just what I am going about next week.' When his only child was drowned in this seeming water-trap was certainly no time to reproach Philip, and he who never reproached any one could not be expected to make himself an exception. He merely said, 'It was a wonderful providence Ellen was drowned that day, for the very next he calculated to put a kerb to the cistern—but it was meant so to be—he always felt Ellen was not long for this world!' Their next child was our friend Charlotte; and she, like her drowned sister, was born with one of the best mortal gifts—a sound constitution, which, watched over by her wise and vigilant mother, promised a long life of physical comfort. But these prospects were sadly reversed when her father, having one day taken her out in his wagon, left her holding the reins 'while he just stepped to speak to a neighbour.' While he was *speaking*, the horse took fright, Charlotte was thrown out, and received an injury that embittered her whole life. Philip was really grieved by this accident. He said, 'It seemed somehow as if it was so to be, for he had no thought of taking Charlotte out that day till he met her in his way.'

"His next mishap was the burning of his work-shop, in which, on one gusty day, he left a blazing fire. A consequence so natural seemed very strange to Uncle Phil, who said 'It was most *onaccountable*, for he had often left it just so, and it had never burned up before!' This incident gave a new turn to Philip's life. He abandoned his trade, and really

loving, or, as he said, 'aiming' to suit every body, he was glad to be rid of incessant complaints of want of punctuality, bad materials, and bad work, and became, what most imbeciles become sooner or later, a Jack at all trades. In a community like that at Essex, where labourers in every department are few, and work plenty, even the universal Jack need not starve; and Uncle Phil, if unskilful and *slack*, was always good-natured, and seldom so much engrossed by one employment that he could not leave it for another. But, though rather an unprofitable labourer, Uncle Phil had no vices. He was temperate and frugal in his habits, and a striking illustration of how far these virtues alone will sustain a man, even in worldly matters. His small supplies were so well managed by his wife, that no want was felt by his family during her life. That valuable life was prematurely ended. Soon after the birth of her last baby, Uncle Phil was called up in the night by some cattle having entered his garden through his rickety fence. His bed-room door opened upon the yard; he left it open; it was a damp, chilling night. Mrs. May, being her own nurse, had fallen asleep exhausted. She awoke in an agony that proved the prelude to a fatal illness; and Uncle Phil, being no curious tracer of effects to causes, took no note of the open door, and the damp night, and replied to the condolence of his friends, that '*Miss May* was too good a wife for him—the only wonder was Providence had spared her so long.' More gifted people than honest Uncle Phil deposit quietly at the door of Providence the natural consequences of their own carelessness.

"The baby soon followed its mother, and Philip May was left with but two children—Charlotte, at the time of her mother's death, thirteen, and Susan, nine. They had been so far admirably trained by their mother, and were imbued with her character, seeming only to resemble their father in hearts running over with the milk of human kindness, unless Susan's all-conquering cheerfulness was derived from her father's ever-acquiescing patience. His was a passive virtue—hers an active principle. If any one unacquainted with the condition of life in New England should imagine that the Mays had suffered the evils of real poverty, they must allow us to set them right. In all our wide-spread country there is very little necessary poverty. In New England *none* that is not the result of vice or disease. If the moral and physical laws of the Creator were obeyed, the first of these causes would be at an end, and the second would scarcely exist.<sup>1</sup> Industry and frugality are wonderful multipliers of small means. Philip May brought in but little, but that little was well administered. His house was clean—his garden productive, (the girls kept it weeded,)—his furniture carefully preserved—his family comfortably clad, and his girls schooled. No wonder Uncle Phil never dreamed he was a poor man!" pp. 19—22.

It was to endeavour to procure, if possible, some remedy for the injury sustained by Charlotte, alluded to in the above extract, that a journey was undertaken to New York in order to consult an eminent physician of that city. The difficulty of procuring money sufficient for this object was extreme; and this difficulty was the occasion for the display of unusual generosity on the part of a play-fellow, a fine boy, named Harry

<sup>1</sup> "We have heard a gentleman, who, in virtue of the office he holds as minister at large, is devoted to succouring the poor, state, that even in this city, (New York,) he had known very few cases of suffering from poverty that might not be traced directly or indirectly to vice."

Aikin, who afterwards married the younger sister, Susan. The journey is pleasantly described, and will exhibit the training through which the mind of the young sufferer had already passed. It is called the "poor man's journey."

"It was a lovely morning in June when Uncle Phil set forth for New York with his invalid daughter. Ineffable happiness shone through his honest face, and there was a slight flush of hope and expectation on Charlotte's usually pale and tranquil countenance as she half rebuked Susan's last sanguine expression.

"You will come home as well as I am, I know you will, Lottie!"

"Not well—oh, no, Susy, but better, I expect—I mean, I hope."

"Better, then, if you are, that is to say, a *great deal better*—I shall be satisfied, sha'n't you, Harry?"

"I shall be satisfied that it was best for her to go, if she is any better."

"I trust we shall all be satisfied with God's will, whatever it may be," said Charlotte, turning her eye full of gratitude upon Harry. Harry arranged her cushions as nobody else could to support her weak back: Susan disposed her cloak so that Charlotte could draw it around her if the air proved too fresh; and then, taking her willow basket in her hand, the last words were spoken, and they set forth. Uncle Phil was in the happiest of his happy humours. He commended the wagon—"it was just like sitting at home in a rocking chair—it is kind o' lucky that you are lame, Lottie, or may be Mrs. Sibley would not have offered to loan us her wagon. I was dreadful 'fraid we should have to go down the North river. I tell you, Lottie, when I crossed over it once, I was a'most scared to death—the water went swash, swash—there was nothing but a plank between me and *eternity*; and I thought in my heart I should have gone down, and nobody would ever have heard of me again. I wonder folks can be so foolish as to go on water when they can travel on solid land—but I suppose some do!"

"It is pleasanter," said Charlotte, "to travel at this season where you can see the beautiful fruits of the earth, as we do now, on all sides of us." Uncle Phil replied, and talked on without disturbing his daughter's quiet and meditation. They travelled slowly, but he was never impatient, and she never wearied, for she was an observer and lover of nature. The earth was clothed with its richest green—was all green, but of infinitely varied tints. The young corn was shooting forth—the winter wheat already waved over many a fertile hill-side—the gardens were newly made, and clean, and full of promise—flowers, in this month of their abundance, perfumed the woods, and decked the gardens and court-yards, and where nothing else grew, there were lilacs and pionies in plenty. The young lambs were frolicking in the fields—the chickens peeping about the barn-yards; and birds, thousands of them, singing at their work.

"Our travellers were descending a mountain where their view extended over an immense tract of country, for the most part richly cultivated.

"I declare," exclaimed Uncle Phil, "how much land there is in the world, and I don't own a foot on't, only our little half-acre lot—it don't seem hardly right." Uncle Phil was no agrarian, and he immediately added, "But, after all, I guess I am better off without it—it would be a dreadful care."

"Contentment with godliness is great gain," said Charlotte.

"You've hit the nail on the head, Lottie; I don't know who should

be contented if I ain't—I always have enough, and every body is friendly to me—and you and Susan are worth a mint of money to me. For all what I said about the land, I really think I have got my full share.'

"'We can all have our share in the beauties of God's earth without owning, as you say, a foot of it,' rejoined Charlotte. 'We must feel it is our Father's. I am sure the richest man in the world cannot take more pleasure in looking at a beautiful prospect than I do—or in breathing this sweet, sweet air. It seems to me, father, as if every thing I look upon was ready to burst forth in a hymn of praise—and there is enough in my heart to make verses of if I only knew how.'

"'That's the mystery, Lottie, how they do it—I can make one line, but I can never get a fellow to it.'

"'Well, father, as Susy would say, it's a comfort to have the feeling, though you can't express it.'

"Charlotte was right. It is a great comfort and happiness to have the feeling, and happy would it be if those who live in the country were more sensible to the beauties of nature; if they could see something in the glorious forest besides 'good wood and timber lots'—something in the green valley besides a 'warm soil'—something in a water-fall besides a 'mill-privilege.' There is a susceptibility in every human heart to the ever-present and abounding beauties of nature; and whose fault is it that this taste is not awakened and directed? If the poet and the painter cannot bring down their arts to the level of the poor, are there none to be God's interpreters to them—to teach them to read the great book of nature?

"The labouring classes ought not to lose the pleasures that, in the country, are before them from dawn to twilight—pleasures that might counterbalance, and often do, the profits of the merchant, pent in his city counting-house, and all the honours the lawyer earns between the court-rooms and his office. We only wish that more was made of the *privilege* of country life; that the farmer's wife would steal some moments from her cares to point out to her children the beauties of nature, whether amid the hills and valleys of our inland country, or on the sublime shores of the ocean. Over the city, too, hangs the vault of heaven—'thick inlaid' with the witnesses of God's power and goodness—his altars are every where.

"The rich man who 'lives at home at ease,' and goes irritated and fretting through the country because he misses at the taverns the luxuries of his own house—who finds the tea bad and coffee worse—the food ill cooked and table ill served—no mattresses, no silver forks—who is obliged to endure the vulgarity of a common parlour—and, in spite of the inward chafing, give a civil answer to whatever questions may be put to him, cannot conceive of the luxuries our travellers enjoyed at the simplest inn.

"Uncle Phil found out the little histories of all the wayfarers he met, and frankly told his own. Charlotte's pale sweet face attracted general sympathy. Country people have time for little by-the-way kindnesses; and the landlady, and her daughters, and her domestics, enquired into Charlotte's malady, suggested remedies, and described similar cases.

"The open-hearted communicativeness of our people is often laughed at; but is it not a sign of a blameless life and social spirit?" pp. 33—37.

Her interviews with the physician are beautifully narrated, and we have little fear of asserting that no one can rise from the perusal of that portion of this simple story without feeling his heart softened, and inclined to become better. The doctor

is represented as not only a skilful practitioner, but also a man of genuine piety and worth; and the sentiments which the author puts into the mouth of both physician and patient present a striking example of the opportunities for the display and cultivation of religious sentiments, which are afforded in the course of a physician's practice. We are persuaded that the sketch presented by Miss Sedgwick is not mere fancy, either as respects the one party or the other.

We have not given the above extracts for the purpose of presenting any analysis of the story—it is brief and inartificial, and intended merely as the vehicle to bear along the good advice and reflections with which it abounds. Each chapter presents an incident, or description, in contrast with another either preceding or following it—intended to exemplify the worthlessness or value of money according to the use or abuse made of it, and the blessings which even poverty may confer when found among such persons as the inmates of Aikin's house. We shall content ourselves with a single additional extract, in which the *mere* rich man's charities are exemplified. It follows a statement of the active charity bestowed by Aikin, his wife, and her sister, upon the same unfortunate individual who had more claims upon the generosity of the rich man, Morris Finley, than upon them.

"It was near ten o'clock when Henry Aikin, in pursuance of his benevolent designs for Paulina, rang at Morris Finley's door, and told the servant, in reply to his saying Mr. Finley was dressing for a party, that he had pressing business, and must speak with him. The servant left Aikin in the entry, and, entering the drawing-room, pushed the door to after him, but not so close as to prevent Aikin hearing the following dialogue:—

" 'There's somebody, ma'am, in the entry, wants to speak with Mr. Finley.'

" 'Why did not you tell him he was not at home?'

" 'Because he is, ma'am.'

" 'Pshaw, Tom, you know he is going out immediately, and it's all the same thing. Do you know who it is?'

" 'No, ma'am.'

" 'Is it a gentleman?'

" 'He speaks like one, ma'am.'

" 'You certainly know, Tom—is he a gentleman, or only a man?'

" 'He is dressed like a man, ma'am.'

" 'Tom, you must get over tormenting me this way; I've told you a hundred times the distinction.' Tom smiled: he evidently had in his mind something like the old distinction of the poet, though he could not, or dared not, express it—

'Worth makes the man—the want of it, the fellow.'

" 'Well, well,' added Mrs. Finley, 'show him in, and tell Mr. Finley.'

" Aikin entered with that air of blended modesty and independence



that characterized him—certainly with no look of inferiority, for he felt none; and, as Mrs. Finley's eye fell on his fine countenance, hers relaxed, and she was in the dilemma, for a moment, of not knowing whether to class him with the *somebodys* or *nobodys*; but her glance descended to the plain and coarse garments of our friend, in time to change a half-made courtesy to a salutation befitting an inferior. 'Sit down,' she said, waving her hand to the nearest chair.

"Aikin took the offered seat, and awaited, with what patience he could, the forthcoming of the master of the splendid mansion—observing what was before him with a feeling, not of envy or covetousness, but with deep joy and thankfulness for the virtue and true happiness of his humble home. Miss Sabina Jane Finley, now a young lady of twelve years, after surveying Aikin from top to toe, said to her mother, in a suppressed but audible voice, '*Gentleman!*'"

"Mrs. Finley seemed to have what she, no doubt, thought a truly genteel unconsciousness of 'the *man's*' presence. She was very richly dressed for a ball; but, as is a common case with poor human nature, she was transferring the fault of her faded and time-stricken face to her milliner. 'I declare, Sabina Jane,' she said, surveying herself in the mirror, 'I never will get another cap of Thompson—these flowers are blue as the heavens.'

"'You selected them yourself, mamma.'

"'To be sure I did; but how could I tell how they would look in the evening?'

"'Why don't you wear your new French cap, mamma?'

"'Don't be a fool, child—have not I worn that twice already? Pull down that blonde over my shoulder—how it whoops! This is the second time Smetz has served me this way. This gown sets like fury. I never go out but I have some trial that spoils all my pleasure. Don't let me see you prink so, miss,' turning to her daughter, and pulling from her head a dress-cap that she was trying on and arranging with all the airs and graces of a fine lady; 'I have told you a thousand times, Sabina Jane,' she continued, 'not to be fond of dress!—Well, Tom, what is wanted now?'

"'That French gentleman, ma'am, what teached Miss Sabina Jane, is to call early for his money; and if you'd please to give it to me to-night—'

"'I can't attend to it to-night—tell him to call again.'

"'He has called again and again, ma'am; and he says his wife is sick—and he looks so distressed like.'

"'I have not the money by me to-night, Tom.'

"'Shall I ask Mr. Finley for it, ma'am?'

"'No, Tom.'

"The image of the unhappy foreigner haunted Tom's imagination; and, after lingering for a moment with the door in his hand, he said—'Maybe, ma'am don't remember Mr. Finley gave out the money for Mr. Felix.'

"Mrs. Finley did remember well that she had received the money, and had spent it that very afternoon for a most tempting piece of French embroidery—a love of a pocket handkerchief, that cost only thirty dollars!—the price of poor Monsieur Felix's labour for two quarters, with an indolent and neglected child. 'Shut the door, Tom,' she said, 'I can't be bothered about this money now; tell Mr. Felix to call after breakfast.' Tom despaired, and withdrew. 'How impertinent Tom is getting,' added Mrs. Finley; 'but this is the way of all the servants in this country.'

"Finley came in, dressed and perfumed for the party. 'Ah, Harry Aikin,' he said, after a momentary surprise, 'is it you—how are you?'"

"'Well, thank you, Morris.'"

"'What impudence,' thought Miss Sabina Jane, 'for that man to call my papa Morris!'"

"'I have some *private* business with you,' added Aikin, glancing at the young lady."

"'Sabina Jane,' said Finley, 'tell your mamma the carriage is waiting—these fellows charge so abominably for waiting.' This last remark was evidently a hint to Aikin to be brief."

"But Aikin wanted no such spur. He communicated concisely Paulina's condition and wants; and, knowing that Finley's conscience was of the sluggish order, he tried to rouse it by recalling vividly to his remembrance the past—the days of Paulina's innocence and beauty, and Finley's devotion to her. But Finley slurred it over like a long-forgotten dream, that would not afford the slightest basis for a claim upon his charity."

"'She is in a shocking condition, to be sure, Aikin,' he said; 'but, then, I make it an invariable rule never to give but to those that I know to be worthy.'"

"'There is much to be done for our fellow-creatures, Finley, besides giving gifts to the worthy.'"

"'Oh, I know that; and I subscribe liberally to several of our institutions.'"

"'But will you do nothing towards encouraging this poor, homeless, friendless creature to repentance and reformation?'"

"'Pshaw! Aikin, they never reform.'"

"'If that is true, a part of the sin must lie at our doors, who afford them no helps. But there is no time to discuss this: Paulina, I fear, will not be able to prove her sincerity. She has, it seems to me, but little while to live; if I can save her from the police, I shall try hard to keep her where she is, that her little remnant of life may be spent with her old friends, who will care for her body and soul.'"

"'Oh, well, if you really think she is going to make a die of it, I am willing to give you something for her.'"

"Finley took out his pocket-book, and after, as Aikin could not but suspect, looking for a smaller sum, he gave him a five-dollar note, with the air of one who is conferring an astounding obligation. Aikin expressed neither surprise nor gratitude; but, quietly putting up the note, he said, 'You know, Finley, money is not the most important thing I had to ask. I want you to go to the police-office with me. You are a great merchant, and your name is well known in the city; I am nobody, and it may be necessary for me to get my statement endorsed. Come, it is not five minutes' walk for you.'"

"'Why, bless you, man, don't you see I'm going out—there's my wife coming down stairs now.'"

"'Let her go in the carriage—you can follow her.'"

"'Oh! that's impossible; she would not go alone into a party for the world.'"

"'Can she not wait till your return?'"

"'No—it is not reasonable to ask it; it's late now—and—and—'"

"'Good night—I have wasted my time here,' said Aikin, cutting short Finley's excuses, and leaving him trying to silence his conscience by dwelling on the five dollars he had given—by fretting at the deuced folly of going out when people were tired and wanted to go to bed—and by joining in his wife's vituperation against Nancy and all her tribe."

Let it not be supposed, from these extracts, that Miss Sedgwick joins in the foolish outcry against the rich, as such. Far from it: it is only against wealth misapplied that her satire is directed. In the conduct of another of her characters, Mr. Beckwith, the author endeavours to exemplify the true use of riches.

We have formally noticed this little book, and made these extracts, for the purpose of doing what in us lay to aid in its dissemination. We would, if we could, send it to every fireside in our land—of the rich as well as the poor—though to the last we especially commend it. To the publication of such books we would ever lend our utmost aid, convinced that above all others they conduce to the real good of the community; and, in conclusion, we may express the hope that the fair author has but given an earnest of what she intends to do in a line of writing that has been too much neglected in this country, and which is of paramount importance at the present time.

---

ART. III.—*Sketches of English Literature; with considerations on the spirit of the times, men, and revolutions.* By the Viscount de CHATEAUBRIAND. 2 vols. 8vo. London: 1836.

We have heretofore<sup>1</sup> presented our views upon the literary pretensions and character of the Viscount Chateaubriand, and there is nothing in the work before us to induce, at our hands, a more favourable estimate as to either profundity of learning or any of the real constituents of greatness. That the French peer has a brilliant imagination, great command of language, and a captivating and imposing mode of treating his subjects, we should be loath to deny, while we would, at the same time, be strenuous in maintaining that his productions will not bear the test of severe criticism; that if time is but taken to guard against the seductions of his fine, though very frequently bombastic language, and to ponder upon the ideas which his load of words embodies, the conclusion will, in many, many instances, be arrived at, that the reader's admiration has been caught altogether by surprise, and he been induced to waste his praise and his time upon sheer nonsense.

<sup>1</sup> See American Quarterly Review, No. 39.

Notwithstanding all this, few, very few would regret a short time devoted to the pages of Chateaubriand. In opening his works we are at once ushered into a new world; removed entirely from the ordinary current of our thoughts and feelings. Romance throws her spell around us, and, while she perverts our vision, offers novel and brilliant sights to gaze at—the melody of the sounding line lends its enchantment to another sense; and while thus the reader is partially disabled from the exercise of dispassionate judgment, the reckless boldness of assertion increases the difficulty and almost secures the victory over the mind. As pastime, however, or relaxation, or not unwelcome momentary delusion, this is all very delightful, and the viscount will therefore not cease to be a popular writer. With that fate he will no doubt be abundantly satisfied.

It is a bold undertaking for a foreigner to attempt a critical account of the language and literature of another country—particularly of a living tongue. But our author is a bold man, and was sensible of all its difficulties. He however deemed himself equal to the task. Hear his words:—"I have visited the United States; I have lived eight years an exile in England; after residing in London as an emigrant, I have returned thither as ambassador. I believe that I am as thoroughly acquainted with English as a man can be with a language foreign to his own. I have read most conscientiously all that it was my duty to read on the subject discussed in these two volumes. I have rarely quoted my authorities, because they are known to men of letters, and men of the world care nothing about them."

The viscount goes then at his task, in his own opinion fully prepared; and he makes a formidable and orderly opening by dividing the history of the English language into five epochs, and his subject into five great parts. He ushers it in by grave political reflections and philosophical introductions, and the reader is of course led to anticipate a minute, learned and critical account of the language and its authors, about which the noble writer had read and studied so much. On the contrary, he encounters a medley of anecdote, reflections, poetry, history, fun, biography, sketches of life and manners, all very amusing in themselves, but totally at variance with the instructive, detailed, and connected treatise the introduction had promised. From a foreigner this was probably just as well—nay, infinitely better than a laboured and dull treatise, replete, as such a one would needs have been, with the most ridiculous blunders. For ourselves we are the more pleased to see it as it is, from the amusement it has afforded us. To enable our readers to enjoy a portion of this, we have taken it up at the present moment, and intend to make them fully acquainted with its contents. As regards however the writer, who undertakes and promises

so difficult an execution of so grave a task, the effect upon his reputation cannot but be injurious. The sensible and intellectual, though they may while away an hour in turning over the pages of such a book, and in gleaning the flowers of fancy and wit with which it may be strewn, cannot but lament that so many fine thoughts and beautiful ideas have been dissipated and wasted.

It is very far, however, from our purpose to criticise this work seriously. This would be treating the book itself ill, though the author might well deserve it. It is indeed below serious criticism. Our design is, as we have said, to gather the amusement it affords, and spread it before our readers. This we shall do in as connected a way as so very desultory matter will permit. The "*Sketches of English Literature*," contain notices of the Middle Ages—their laws, buildings, dress, entertainments, and manners; the Reformation, with a brief view of Luther and the other reformers—its merits compared with the Papacy, and a defence of the latter; the Protectorate; the Revolution of 1688, and of the great men who flourished at that epoch, and a comparison between it and the French revolutions of 1789 and 1830; and last, and by no means least, the private opinions, adventures, writings and sayings of the noble author himself. Who will not say that these various themes present a broad and fruitful field for a fancy so discursive as that of Chateaubriand, or who that knows the character of his genius but would anticipate his uneasiness at being confined within narrower bounds? The author, nevertheless, in his preface deems it proper to put the reader on his guard. He says:—

"I ought to premise that in this historical view I have not stuck close to my subject: I have treated of every thing—the present, the past, the future; I digress hither and thither. When I meet with the middle ages, I talk of them; when I run foul of the reformation, I dwell upon it; when I come to the English revolution, it reminds me of our own, and I advert to the actors and the events of the latter. If an English royalist is thrown into jail, I think of the cell which I occupied at the prefecture of police. The English poets lead me to the French poets; Lord Byron brings to my recollection my exile in England, my walks to Harrow hill, and my travels to Venice—and so of the rest. The book is composed of miscellanies which have all tones, because they relate to all things: they pass from literary criticism, lofty or familiar, to historical observations, narratives, portraits, and recollections, general or personal. That I may not take any one by surprise, that the reader may know from the first what he has to expect, that he may be aware that English literature here forms but the ground of my medley, the canvass for my embroidery, I have given a second title to this work." pp. vii., viii.

Some apology however was thought necessary, even by the viscount himself, in placing at the very front of his book, a lengthened dissertation upon the middle ages under the different aspects we have adverted to above, and he does it in the

following very ingenious way. His remarks, it must be admitted, have much of the tone of the philosopher, while they are full of the fancy of the poet:—

“When we study the literature of different countries, a great number of allusions and traits escape us, if we do not bear in mind the manners and customs of the respective nations. A view of literature, apart from the history of nations, would create a prodigious fallacy; to hear the successive poets calmly singing their loves and their sheep, you would figure to yourself the uninterrupted existence of the golden age on the earth. And yet, in that same England of which we are treating, these strains resound amid the invasion of the Romans, the Picts, the Saxons, the Danes; amid the conquest of the Normans, the insurrections of the barons, the quarrels of the first Plantagenets for the crown, the civil wars of the Red and White Rose, the ravages of the reformation, the executions commanded by Henry VIII., and the burnings ordered by Mary, amid the massacres and slavery of Ireland, the desolations of Scotland, the scaffolds of Charles I. and Sidney, the flight of James, the proscription of the Pretender and the Jacobites—the whole intermingled with parliamentary storms, court crimes, and a thousand foreign wars.

“Social order, separate from political order, is composed of religion, intelligence, and material industry. In every nation, even at the moment of the direst catastrophes and of the greatest events, there will always be a priest who prays, a poet who sings, an author who writes, a philosopher who meditates, a painter, a sculptor, an architect, who paints, chisels, builds, and a workman who labours. These men, surrounded by revolutions, seem to lead a life apart: if you look at them only, you see a real, a genuine, an immutable world, the base of the human edifice, but which appears fictitious and foreign to the society of convention, the political society. The priest, indeed, in his hymns, the poet, the philosopher, the artist, in their compositions, the artisan in his work, mark occasionally the time in which they live, and the recoil of the events which wrung from them in more abundance their sweat, their complaints, and the productions of their genius.

“To destroy this illusion of two views presented separately; to avoid creating that fallacy to which I have alluded in the course of this chapter; and that I may not suddenly throw the reader unprepared into the history of the poetry, works, and authors of the first stages of English literature, I think it right to introduce here a general picture of the middle ages. These preliminary matters will facilitate the understanding of the subject. Vol. I. pp. 14—16.

To the middle ages then, if our author must have it so, let us turn and see what agreeable remarks we may find in his sketches, without, for the moment, troubling ourselves to discover their immediate connection with the subject of English literature. And the “buildings” of the middle ages first attract our notice. The architecture of that era is well described:—

“Even in its external appearance, Europe then presented a much more picturesque and national aspect than it at present exhibits. For buildings, the offspring of our religion and our manners, we have substituted, from affectation of the bastard Roman architecture, such as are neither in harmony with our climate nor appropriate to our wants. The cold and servile spirit of eopyism has introduced falsehood into our arts, as the

groundwork of Latin literature has destroyed in our literature the originality of the Frankish genius. It was not thus that the middle ages imitated; the minds of those times also admired the Greeks and the Romans; they sought after and studied their works, but, instead of suffering themselves to be mastered by, they mastered them, moulded them to their will, rendering them French, and heightening their beauty by this metamorphosis, full of creative vigour and independence.

"The first Christian churches in the west were only temples reversed; the pagan worship was external, the decoration of the temple was external; the Christian worship was internal, the decoration of the church was internal. The pillars were transformed from the outside to the inside of the edifice, as in the churches in which the believers held their meetings when they issued from the crypts and catacombs. The proportions of the church surpassed in dimensions those of the temple, because the Christian congregation met beneath the roof of the church, whereas the pagan multitude collected under the peristyle of the temple. But when the Christians became masters, they changed this arrangement, and adorned their buildings also on the side towards the landscape and the sky.

"And, in order that the supports of the aerial nave might not be inappropriate to the structure, the chisel had cut them out; nothing was to be seen but flying buttresses, pyramids, pinnacles, and statues.

"The ornaments which were not essential parts of the edifice were adapted to its style; the tombs were of Gothic fashion, and the church, which covered them like an immense canopy, seemed to be moulded upon their form. The arts of design shared in this flowery and composite taste: on the walls and on the windows were painted landscapes, scripture subjects, and scenes of national history.

"In the castles of the great, coloured armorial bearings, inclosed in lozenges of gold, formed ceilings resembling those of the beautiful palaces of the *cinque cento* in Italy. Writing itself was drawn, the German hieroglyphic substituted for the rectilinear Roman letters, harmonized with the sepulchral stones. The detached towers which served for lookouts on the heights; the castles embosomed in woods or perched on the tops of rocks, like the eyries of vultures; the pointed and narrow bridges thrown boldly across torrents; the fortified towns which you come to at every step, and the battlements of which were at once ramparts and ornaments; the chapels, the oratories, the hermitages, placed in the most picturesque spots beside roads and rivers; the towers, the steeples of country churches, the abbeys, the monasteries, the cathedrals, all those edifices of which but a small number now exists, and whose fretwork time has blackened, filled up, or broken, had then the freshness of youth; they had just issued from the hands of the workman. In the whiteness of their stones the eye lost none of the lightness of their details, of the elegance of their towers, of the variety of their wavings, their carvings, their chiselings, their pinkings, and all the whims of a free and inexhaustible imagination.

"In the short space of eighteen years, from 1136 to 1154, not fewer than eleven hundred and fifteen castles were built in England alone.

"Christianity raised at the general expense, by means of collections and alms, the cathedrals for the erection of which each state was not wealthy enough to pay separately, and scarcely any of which is finished. In those vast and mysterious edifices were engraved in relief, and hollowed out as with a nipping tool, the decorations of the altar, the sacred monograms, the vestures and articles used by the priests. The banners, the crosses of various compositions, the cups, the shrines, the canopies,

the copes, the cowls, the croziers, the mitres, whose forms are met with in the Gothic, preserved the symbols of the worship at the same time that they produced unexpected effects of art. The gutters and spouts were very often carved into the faces of hideous demons or vomiting mouths. This architecture of the middle ages exhibited a medley of the tragic and the grotesque, of the gigantic and the graceful, like the poems and romances of the same period.

"The plants of our soil, the trees of our woods, the trefoil and the oak, also decorated our churches, in like manner as the acanthus and the palm had embellished the temples of the country and the age of Pericles. Within a cathedral was a forest, a labyrinth, whose thousands of arches, at every motion of the spectator, crossed each other, separated, and entwined again. This forest was lighted by circular windows of painted glass, which resembled suns shining with a thousand colours beneath the foliage; externally the same cathedral looked, with its flying buttresses and its pinnacles, like an edifice from which the scaffolding had not been removed." Vol. I. pp. 18—22.

Of the correctness of these observations we are persuaded. Modern Europe (and our own country may be included in the remark) has no national architecture. There is no *modern* style of building recognised in her code. Antiquity had her orders. Greece and Egypt reared their temples in forms and proportions as different as the genius of the two countries. The dark ages produced their magnificent piles, the impress of the mind of the era. Eastern barbarians, as we call them, can point to domes which raise their lofty heads in fantastic, it may be, but still national shapes; but modern Europe has been content, either with a servile imitation of one model, or what is infinitely worse, an unsightly and unseemly mixture of all. But let us hasten with our author to other subjects of observation—the dress, entertainments, and repasts of those days.

Nothing could be more picturesque than the variety of costume in the middle ages. Not only the different classes of society, but the inhabitants of different provinces and towns were clothed in garments varying in fashion and splendour. Modern habits have invested nearly every body in a uniform dress; but in those times it marked the wearer's station and profession. The great number of religious fraternities must have increased very much this diversity of wardrobe, and thrown a still more variegated hue over the surface of society. Chateaubriand remarks upon the immense advantages this circumstance gave to the painter in the use of his pencil, and asks, "what can the painter now make of our tight garments, our round or cocked hats?" Little, indeed, to gratify the imagination or the taste. Hence the resort to antique or fancy dresses in individual portraits—and hence, also, the plainness, approaching to the ludicrous, in the few historical paintings we have. Every one must have smiled at the parade of straight coats in Trumbull's picture of the Declaration of Independence,



to say nothing of the number of *shin pieces* which it exhibits—and every one, too, must have been sensible of the great relief afforded by the introduction into these large pictures, where the subject admitted it, of a military coat, cap, and feathers, but, above all, of a fine looking horse.

The dress varied from time to time. Sometimes a furred pelisse and a long oriental robe enwrapped the figure; again, a close dress prevailed, and that, in its turn, was followed by loose garments. The *pelicon*, the origin of the surplice, was common to all orders. The breeches, in one age, came but half way down to the knee, and were worn very tight; this, when it was the fashion to tuck up the robe about the waist, must have gratified the taste of such personages as the famous Dutches of Gordon.<sup>1</sup> But the shoes were the most remarkable. Our author says:—

“The pointed and stuffed shoes called *pouleyens*, or *poulains*, were long in fashion. The maker cut out the upper leather like the windows of a church. They were two feet long for the noble, decorated at the extremity with horns, claws, or grotesque figures. They were of such length that it was impossible to walk in them without fastening the points, which crooked upwards, to the knees with chains of gold or silver. The bishops excommunicated the poulains, and treated them as a *sin against nature*. They were declared to be ‘contrary to good morals, and invented in derision of the Creator.’ In England, an act of parliament forbade the making of any shoes or buskins ‘with poleyns exceeding the length of two inches.’ The pointed shoes were succeeded by wide square-toed slippers. The fashions of that time varied as much as those of our days. The knight or the lady who invented a new fashion became a celebrated person. The inventor of poleyns was the English knight Robert le Cornu.” Vol. I. pp. 25, 26.

A word about the ladies:—

“The gentlewomen wore very fine linen next to the skin. They were dressed in high tunics covering the bosom, embroidered on the right breast with the arms of their husbands, on the left with those of their family. Sometimes they wore their hair combed down smooth upon the forehead, and covered with a small cap interlaced with ribands; at others they allowed the hair to float loosely over their shoulders; at others again they built it up into a pyramid three feet high, suspending to it either wimples, or long veils, or stripes of silk, descending to the ground and fluttering in the wind. At the time of Queen Isabeau, it was found necessary to enlarge the door ways, both in height and breadth, in order to afford a passage for the ladies’ head-dresses. These head-dresses were supported by two curved horns, the frame-work of this structure. From the top of the horn on the right side hung a piece of light stuff, which the wearer suffered to float, or which she drew over her bosom like a wimple, by twisting it round the left arm. A lady in full dress displayed collars, bracelets, and rings. To her girdle, enriched with gold, pearls, and precious stones, was fastened an embroidered

<sup>1</sup> Her grace is known to have preferred the rear view of a Highland regiment grounding their arms, to any other sight in nature.

pouch : she galloped on a palfrey, carrying a bird on her fist, or a cane in her hand. 'What can be more ridiculous,' says Petrarch, in a letter addressed to the pope, in 1366, 'than to see men girthed round the body. Below, long peaked shoes ; above, caps laden with feathers ; hair tressed, moving this way and that, behind them, like the tail of an animal, and turned up on the forehead with ivory-headed pins !' " Vol. I. pp. 26, 27.

We must hurry through these enticing topics, upon which, too, the viscount delights to dwell, or we shall never arrive at English literature. "Repasts" and "Manners" will detain us but an instant ; though it is well in these, so called, ages of luxury and refinement, to see to what extremes matters were pushed by our ancestors :—

"Among the nobles, dinner was announced by the sound of the horn : this was called in France *corner l'eau*, because the company washed their hands before they sat down to table. The usual dinner hour was nine in the morning, and that for supper five in the evening. They sat on banks or benches, sometimes high, at others low, and the table was raised or lowered in proportion. From the bank or bench is derived the word banquet. There were tables of gold and silver chased : the wooden tables were covered with double cloths, called *doubliers* ; they were laid to resemble the surface of a river which a breeze has ruffled into little waves. Napkins are of more modern date. Forks, with which the Romans were unacquainted, were also unknown to the French till the end of the fourteenth century : we meet with them for the first time under Charles V."

"Beer, cider, and wine of all sorts, were consumed in abundance. Mention is made of cider under the second race of kings. *Clairret* was clarified wine, to which spices were added ; hypocras, wine sweetened with honey. In 1310, an English abbot entertained six thousand guests, before whom were set three thousand dishes. At the wedding feast of the Earl of Cornwall, in 1243, thirty thousand dishes were served up ; and, in 1251, sixty fat oxen were furnished by the Archbishop of York alone, for the marriage of Margaret of England with Alexander III., King of Scotland. The royal repasts were enlivened by *intermezzi* : all sorts of music were performed ; the clerks sang songs, roundelays, and virelays. 'When the king (Henry II. of England) goes abroad in the morning,' says Pierre of Blois, 'you see a multitude of people, running hither and thither, as if they had lost their wits ; horses dash one against the other ; carriages upset carriages ; players, public women, gamblers, cooks, confectioners, singers, barbers, dancers, boon companions, parasites, make a horrible noise : in short, the confusion of foot and horse is so hideous that you would imagine the abyss had opened and hell vomited forth all its devils.'

When Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury, traveled, he had two hundred horsemen in his train, consisting of knights, esquires, pages, clergymen, and officers of his household. This cavalcade was followed by eight carriages, each drawn by five strong horses : two of these carriages contained beer, one conveyed the furniture of his chapel, another that of his chamber, and another that of his kitchen ; the last three were filled with provisions, apparel, and various other articles. He had, besides, twelve horses laden with coffers, containing his money, gold plate, books, clothes, and the ornaments for the altar. Each carriage was guarded by a very large bull-dog, having a monkey on his back. (Salisb.)

"It was found necessary to enact sumptuary laws for the table.

These laws allowed the rich only two courses and two sorts of meat, with the exception of prelates and barons, who were at liberty to eat what they pleased. They limited traders and artisans to the use of meat at one meal only; for all the other meals they were obliged to content themselves with milk, butter, and vegetables. Vol. I. pp. 31—34.

The hurly-burly into which society was thrown, the discordance of its materials, the ingredients and seeds of revolutions, and excesses of every kind, are well depicted in the following passage towards the close of the viscount's view of the middle ages :—

“On the one hand chivalry, on the other the insurrection of the rustic population, all sorts of licentiousness in the clergy, together with all the ardour of religion. Itinerant monks, traveling on foot or riding on sorry mules, preached against all these scandals, and were burned alive for their pains by the priests, whom they reproached for their dissolute lives, and drowned by the princes whose tyranny they attacked. Gentlemen, lying in wait near the high roads, robbed travellers, whilst other gentlemen became in Spain, in Greece, in Dalmatia, lords of renowned cities, to whose history they were utter strangers. There were courts of love, in which arguments were held agreeably to all the rules of Scottism, and of which the canons were members; troubadours and minstrels, roving from castle to castle, lashing the men in satires, praising the ladies in ballads; citizens divided into guilds, holding festivals in honour of their patrons, in which the saints of Paradise were mingled with the deities of fable; dramatic representations, *miracles* and *mysteries* in churches; *feasts of fools*; sacrilegious masses; gravy soups eaten upon the altar; the *Ite missa est* responded to by the three brayings of an ass; barons and knights engaging at these mysterious repasts to make war upon nations, vowing upon a peacock or a heron to fight to the death for their ladye-loves; Jews slaughtered and slaughtering one another, conspiring with lepers to poison the wells and springs; tribunals of all sorts, sentencing, by virtue of all kinds of laws, to all sorts of punishments, accused persons of all classes, from the heretic, flayed and burned alive, to adulterers bound together naked and led in public through the crowd: the complaisant judge, substituting an innocent prisoner, instead of the wealthy murderer, condemned to die; to crown the confusion, to complete the contrast, the old society civilized after the manner of the ancients perpetuating itself in the abbeys; the students at the universities reviving the philosophic disputes of Greece; the tumult of the schools of Athens and Alexandria mingling with the din of tournaments, feasts, and tiltings. Lastly, place, above and out of this so agitated society, another principle of action, a tomb, the object of all affections, of all regrets, of all hopes, which was incessantly drawing beyond sea sovereigns and subjects, the valiant and the guilty, the former to seek enemies, kingdoms, adventures, the latter to fulfil vows, to atone for crimes, to appease remorse—and you have a picture of the middle ages.” Vol. I. pp. 39—41.

After this lengthened introduction, the first and second epochs of English literature, viz., at the time of the Anglo-Saxons, the Danes, and during the middle ages, are despatched in the space of fifteen pages, which consist, for the most part, of extracts from the “Erse Poems.” There is really nothing which justifies a very long notice of the literature of that era, though one

might very naturally have assumed a different opinion from the sketch of the middle ages which precedes it, and the other philosophical reflections with which it is introduced. But is there any thing that is worthy of a more elaborate dissertation in the third and fourth epochs, from William the Conqueror to Henry the Eighth? Not much; but one, or, at the most, two names illumine this long night of literature; we refer to Gower and Chaucer; and he must be a rash man who would now undertake the reading of either of them. The only fact of importance during this extended space of time, which has regard to our present subject, and upon which Chateaubriand slightly touches, is the struggle for mastery between the two languages, the French and English, in the latter kingdom; we say the *two* languages, in reference to spoken language and the literature of the people, but the *three*, when regard is had to literary composition, because the Latin laboured long to maintain its supremacy, and was not vanquished for many years after this period. It is this circumstance which makes the name of Chaucer grateful to English ears. He fought manfully for his native tongue against foreign idioms, and may be considered as the very first who did it good service. But it was only in the use of the language that Chaucer asserted and preserved his nationality; he did not ascend to Saxon sources for his themes, but borrowed from Petrarch and Boccaccio the character and spirit of his songs and tales. The contest between the tongues, though probably familiar to most of our readers, will, from the interest of the subject, bear a word or two in addition.

It is known that the extremest abhorrence for the English language was felt by the Conqueror. By his command, the laws and judicial acts were written in French, and children were directed to be taught the rudiments of literature in the same tongue. The rival languages were the rival standards of the two parties—and we know the deadly hate felt for each other by the Saxon and Norman races. The latter was in the seat of power, and used the means which fortune had placed in its hands, nearly to the utter extinction of the English tongue, as well as people. Our author says on this point:—

“Edward I. paid the most respectful attention to the reading of a Latin bull of Boniface VIII., and ordered it to be translated into French, because he had not understood its meaning.

“Peter de Blois informs us that, in the beginning of the twelfth century, Gillibert was ignorant of English; being well versed, however, in Latin and French, he preached to the people on Sundays and holidays. Wadington, a poet and historian of the thirteenth century, intimates that he writes his works in French, and not in English, in order that he may be the better understood by *high and low*, a proof that the foreign idiom was on the point of stifling the ancient idiom of the land.” Vol. I. pp. 89, 90.

A strong foothold was first obtained by the French idiom at the conquest, though it had been previously used in England, and was more firmly planted and enlarged by the very conquests of Edward III. and his heroic son over their rivals. But those victories, while they excited the national pride, finally prepared the way for the supremacy of the native tongue; a supremacy it not long thereafter secured, when it was rendered more copious and beautiful by the intermixture of other idioms.

The first step towards this far more important victory was made in the grant, by this very monarch, of the use of the insular idiom in *civil pleadings*, though the judgments of the courts thereon were still rendered in French. It is a curious fact, that the very act of parliament of 1362, which directed this innovation, was itself drawn up in the foreign tongue. Our author says, "that, it required the scourges of Heaven to combine with the laws in extinguishing the language of the conquerors"—for it was only after the great plague of 1349 that the French tongue began to be disused generally. The acts of parliament continued till a much later period to be drawn up in French—the first English act of the house of commons being in the year 1425; and it was not until 1483, under Richard III., that parliament engrossed and promulgated the bills in English—an example which has not since been departed from.

The Reformation, most fortunately, affords the noble author another grand incident in his sketch of the progress of English literature, and he makes the most of it. Its important influence upon the cause of letters in England he does not very clearly make out; but it gives him what he wanted—a glorious occasion for an episode. The important questions he propounds are—How was it brought about?—what were its consequences to the human mind, to literature, to arts, to governments? These grave questions are skimmed over in a lively, playful manner, and the subject affords room for much pleasant anecdote, and the display, on the part of the author, of his attachment to the Roman catholic faith. He takes occasion, too, to discuss Luther's character and views: his account of them containing some truth mixed up, of course, with much error. His chief aim in discussing Luther's doctrines appears to be (and it is rather an extraordinary design for a peer of France) to show that the protestant religion was intended only for princes and gentlemen, and altogether unsuited to the common people. With them he seeks to render it unpopular; and, as respects the former, he tries to make them ashamed of their faith, because its originator—or, we should say, reformer—was the son of a peasant.

"Martin Luther, the creator of a religion of princes and gentlemen, was the son of a peasant. He tells his own story in a few words, with that impudent humility which springs from the success of a whole life.

"I have often conversed with Melancthon, and related to him the minutest details of my life. I am the son of a peasant; my father, grandfather, and great grandfather, were mere peasants. My father had removed to Mansfeld, where he became a miner: I was born there. That I should in after-life graduate as a bachelor, a doctor, &c., was not in my destiny. Have I not surprised many people by becoming a monk? and afterwards by exchanging the brown cowl for one of another kind? This greatly distressed my father, who fell ill in consequence. I next fell to loggerheads with the pope—married a nun who had run away from a convent, and have had many children by her. Who could ever have read this in the stars? Who could have foretold that such things were to happen?"

"Born at Eisleben, on the 10th of November, 1483—sent, at the early age of six years, to the school at Eisenach—Luther earned his bread by singing from door to door. 'I also,' said he, 'was a poor beggar, and have received bread at the doors of houses.' Ursula Schweickard, a charitable lady, took pity on him, and paid for his education; in 1501, he entered the university of Erfurt. A poor and obscure boy, he opened that new era which commences with him—an era which so many changes and calamities were to render imperishable in the memory of men." Vol. I. pp. 149, 150.

His account of Luther contains nothing very new—nothing, we mean, furnished by Chateaubriand himself. What he says of him is chiefly extracted from the late work of Michelet, coupled with flying remarks of his own. The subject, however, gives him occasion to speak of Roman catholicism at the present day, and its prospects in the United States. He contends that his faith is favourable to the liberty of the people—that this is indeed *its evangelical aliment*; while protestantism encourages aristocracy, and imparts no impetus to political freedom.

We think that it would be exceedingly easy to show the fallacy of these assertions, but this is neither the time nor the place for discussions of the sort. Our main object is to let Chateaubriand speak for himself, merely expressing our dissent where we do not agree in sentiment; and therefore, in justice to him, we shall extract what he says upon this head.

"Christianity commenced among the plebeian, poor, and ignorant classes of mankind. Jesus addressed himself to the lowly, and they rallied round their master. Faith gradually ascended to the upper ranks, and at length found its way to the imperial throne. Christianity was thus catholic or universal. The religion styled catholic set out from the lowest, and finally reached the highest step of the social ladder. The popedom was only the tribunate of nations, when the *political age* of Christianity arrived.

"Protestantism followed an opposite course. It was first introduced among the heads of the body politic—among princes and nobles, priests and magistrates, scholars and men of letters—and it slowly descended

to the inferior conditions of life. The impress of these two origins remains distinctly marked in the two communions.

"The reformed communion has never been so popular as the catholic faith. Being of princely and patrician origin, it does not sympathize with the multitude. Protestantism is equitable and moral, punctual in the discharge of duty; but its charity partakes more of reason than of tenderness; it clothes the naked, but does not warm them in its bosom; it shelters the poor beneath its wings, but does not dwell and weep with them in their most abject haunts; it relieves, but does not feel for misfortune. The monk and the priest are the companions of the poor man: poor like himself, they have for their companions the bowels of Jesus Christ. Rags, straw, disease, and dungeous, excite in them no disgust, no repugnance; charity imparts a perfume to indigence and misery. The catholic priest is the successor of the twelve lowly men who preached Christ raised from the dead; he blesses the body of the deceased beggar, as the sacred remains of a being beloved by God and raised to eternal life. The protestant pastor forsakes the beggar on his death-bed—to him the grave is not an object of religious veneration; he has no faith in those expiatory prayers by which a friend may deliver a suffering soul. In this world the minister does not rush into the midst of flames or pestilence; he reserves to his own family that affectionate care which the priest of Rome bestows on the great human family.

"In a religious point of view, the reformation is leading insensibly to indifference, or the complete absence of faith: the reason is, that the independence of the mind terminates in two gulfs—doubt and incredulity."

"Though the English colonies have formed the plebeian republic of the United States, yet those states do not owe their liberty to protestantism. They were not emancipated by religious wars; they rebelled against the oppression of the mother country, which, like themselves, was protestant. Maryland, a catholic and very populous state, made common cause with the others, and now most of the western states are catholic. The progress of this communion in the United States of America exceeds belief. There it has been invigorated in its evangelical aliment—popular liberty—whilst other communions decline in profound indifference."

"An attentive examination of facts must lead to the conclusion that protestantism has not promoted popular freedom. It has given to mankind philosophic liberty, but not political liberty. Now, the former liberty has nowhere led to the attainment of the latter, except in France, the true land of catholicism. How happens it that Germany, naturally philosophic and already armed with protestantism, has not advanced a single step towards political liberty in the eighteenth century; whilst France, of not very philosophic temperament, and under the yoke of catholicism, gained during that century all her liberties?"

"The man of theory has a sovereign contempt for that which is practical. He looks down from the height of his lofty doctrine, judges men and things, meditates on the general laws of society, directs his bold enquiries even into the mysteries of the divine nature, and feels and thinks himself independent because only his body is chained. To think every thing, and do nothing, is at once the character and the virtue of philosophic genius. The philosopher wishes to see mankind happy—the sight of liberty charms him; but he does not care to see it through two windows of a prison. Like Socrates, protestantism may be said to have called minds into existence; but, unfortunately, the intelligences which it has ushered into life have hitherto been only beautiful slaves.

"Be it observed, however, that most of these reflections on the reformed religion are intended to apply only to the past: the protestants of the present day are not, any more than the catholics, what they formerly were. The protestants have gained in imagination, in poetry, in eloquence, in reason, in liberty, and in genuine piety, what the latter have lost. The antipathies between the different communions no longer exist. The children of Christ, from whatever line they spring, unite at the foot of Mount Calvary, the common birth-place of the family. The licentiousness and the ambition of the court of Rome have ceased; and the vatican is now distinguished by the virtues of the early bishops, patronage of the arts, and the majesty of recollections. Every thing now tends to restore catholic unity; with a few concessions on either side, concord would soon be established. To be enabled to shine forth in renewed glory, Christianity wants only a superior genius, coming at the proper time and place. The Christian religion is entering upon a new era; like institutions and manners, it is undergoing the third transformation. It is ceasing to be political, according to the old social mechanism; it is advancing to the great principle of the gospel—natural democratic equality between man and man, as it is acknowledged before God. Its flexible circle extends with knowledge and liberty, whilst the cross for ever marks its immovable centre." Vol. I. pp. 191—205.

The reckless assertion of the above paragraphs may excite the surprise of the reader, but their ingenious sophistry will but induce the smile of contempt.

Our author hastens on till he arrives at Shakspeare. His notice of Surrey, More, and Spenser, is miserably defective. Upon Henry VIII. (whom he is pleased to consider one among the list of the protestant literati of England) he rests for a few minutes—being a fine theme for eloquent invective. A striking sketch of the tyrant is presented in these lines:

"Henry VIII. wrote poetry as well as prose. He played on the flute and the spinett. He set to music ballads for his court and masses for his chapel, and he left behind him a motett, an anthem, and many scaffolds. He was certainly a troubadour of most imaginative genius. This man, who employed a wooden image of the Virgin as part of the materials for the pile at which the confessor of Catharine of Arragon was burnt; who summoned before his tribunal the dead body of St. Thomas of Canterbury, tried it and condemned it to death, in spite of the legal maxim, *non bis in idem*; who caused fagots to be bound on the backs of five Dutch anabaptists, and regaled his eyes with the spectacle of five moving *auto-da-fés*.;—he had a fine subject for a romantic sonnet when, from the summit of a solitary hill in Richmond Park, he saw the signal which was transmitted from the tower of London, announcing the execution of Anne Boleyn. What delicious satisfaction he must have enjoyed at that moment! The axe had severed the delicate neck, and stained with blood the beautiful hair, on which the poet king had lavished his fatal caresses." Vol. I. pp. 217, 218.

At the name of Shakspeare he stops, "in order to consider him at his leisure, as Montesquieu says of Alexander." For him he professes extreme admiration; and yet, from certain

VOL. XXI.—NO. 41.



opinions and expressions he hazards, we are inclined to suspect (what is not at all unnatural in a foreigner) that he does not understand him. The introduction of his subject is well managed.

"Spenser was the favourite poet of the reign of Elizabeth. The author of *Macbeth* and Richard III. was eclipsed by the dazzling rays of the 'Shepherd's Calendar,' and the 'Faerie Queene.' Did Montmorency, Biron, and Sully, who were by turns ambassadors from France to the courts of Elizabeth and James I., ever hear of a strolling actor, who performed sometimes in his own plays, and sometimes in those of other authors? Did they ever pronounce the name of Shakspeare, so barbarous to French ears? Did they ever suspect that there was around him a glory which would outlive their honours, their pomp, their rank? Yet the mountebank player—the representative of Hamlet's Ghost—was the great phantom, the shade of the middle age, who rose upon the world like the evening star, just at a moment when the middle age had sunk among the dead; that extraordinary interval which Dante opened, and which Shakspeare closed.

"Whitelocke, a contemporary of Milton, speaking in his 'Historical Sketch' of the author of 'Paradise Lost,' designates him as 'a certain blind man, named Milton, Latin secretary to the parliament.' Molière, the *player*, acted his own Pourceaugnac—as Shakspeare, the buffoon, personated his own Falstaff. The author of the *Tartuffe*, the comrade of poor Mondorge, changed his illustrious name of *Poquelin* for the humble name of *Molière*, that he might not disgrace his father, the *upholsterer*.

"Avant qu'un peu de terre, obtenu par prière,  
Pour jamais sous la tombe eût enfermé Molière,  
Mille de ses beaux traits, aujourd'hui si vantés,  
Furent des sots esprits à nos yeux rebutés.

"Thus, the veiled travellers who come, from time to time, and seat themselves at our tables, are treated by us merely as common guests: we know not their immortal nature until the day of their disappearance. On quitting this world, they become transfigured, and say to us, as the messenger of heaven did to Tobias—'I am one of the seven which go in and out before the glory of the Holy One.' " Vol. I. pp. 229—231.

Shakspeare, however, is not his literary hero: Milton sustains this part. The former came into competition with the dramatic authors of the viscount's own country, and he was unwilling to yield to a stranger the palm. With Milton there could be no rivalry; his grand work stood unique in its design and character—alone in its glory. Republican and protestant though he was, of his writings the French catholic peer speaks with unbounded praise: no language is too strong for his merits. In all this we agree with the writer, but we protest against the depreciation of Shakspeare—for such we consider the lowering of him to the level of the French dramatists.

Chateaubriand contends that while Shakspeare is admired theoretically in England, in practice the case is quite otherwise. And he founds his argument upon the fact of his plays having

been altered and adapted to the stage. "Why not act," says he, "the plays of their deity in a perfect form?" Conceding the truth of the assertion, an inference does not follow derogatory to the genius of Shakspeare, or affecting in the least his popularity as a dramatic author. Some of his confessedly most beautiful plays are rarely if ever acted. Of those which are, there is enough for the immortality of a dozen men. That his merits were for a season unperceived and unappreciated, argues only the stupidity of the age. The same temporary neglect happened to Milton: but when once the glories of these luminaries arose to the vision of an admiring country, their splendour was duly acknowledged, and they have been worshipped unceasingly since.

The *universality* of Shakspeare's talent, our author thinks, has tended to corrupt dramatic literature, and founded the erroneous notion on which the new school, as he is pleased to term it, is established. He thinks that it is deemed by that school the perfection of the tragic art to "jumble together a succession of incongruous and disconnected scenes—to place the burlesque and the pathetic side by side—to bring the beggar in contact with the king." If it be so, Shakspeare is not to blame for it, but his ignorant imitators. The fact, however, is not so. The school which Shakspeare founded, and himself carried to perfection, is the school of nature in contradistinction to that of studied, formal art—action limited within divisions of time unsuited, according to all the regular course of nature, for the happening of the supposed events, and passion and feeling doled out and checked by rigid weight and measure. When Chateaubriand pronounces Racine more *natural* than Shakspeare, (whom, by the by, too, he seems disposed to place below Corneille, Molière, and even Voltaire,) we confess we consider him above or below argument, and would therefore leave him undisturbed in the possession of his opinion. "Racine, in all the refinement of his *art*, is more *natural* than Shakspeare—just as the Apollo, in all his *divinity*, is more *human* in his form than an Egyptian Colossus."

But we eschewed controversy, so let us turn to an agreeable extract. We have here a good picture of the theatre in Shakspeare's time.

"In the dramatic performances of Shakspeare's time, the female characters were represented by young men; and the actors were not distinguished from the spectators except by the plumes of feathers which adorned their hats, and the bows of ribbon which they wore in their shoes. There was no music between the acts. The place of performance was frequently the court-yard of an inn, and the windows which looked into this court-yard served for the boxes. On the representation of a tragedy in London, the place in which it was performed was hung with black, like the nave of a church at a funeral.

"As to the means of illusion, some idea may be formed of them from the burlesque picture drawn by Shakspeare in the 'Midsummer Night's Dream.' A man, having his face smeared with plaster, is the which intervenes between Pyramus and Thisbe, and he spreads out his fingers to represent the chinks in the wall through which the lovers converse. A lantern, a bush, and a dog, are employed to produce moonlight. In rude dramatic performances of this kind, the scene, without changing, alternately represented a flower-garden, a rock against which a ship was to strike, or a field of battle, where half a dozen miserable-looking fellows would personate two armies. There is extant a curious inventory of the property of a company of English players; and in this document we find set down a dragon, a wheel employed in the siege of London, a large horse with his legs, sundry limbs of Moors, four Turks' heads, and an iron mouth, which was probably employed in giving utterance to the sweetest and sublimest accents of the immortal poet. False faces were also employed for those characters who were flayed alive on stage, like the prevaricating judge in Cambyse. Such a spectacle for a day would attract all Paris.

"But, after all, correctness of scenic accessories and costume is less essential to the illusion than is generally imagined. The genius of Racine gains nothing by the cut and form of a dress. In the maps of Raphael, the back-grounds are neglected and the costumes incorrect. The rage of Orestes, or the prophecy of Joad, recited in a drawing-room by Talma, habited in his own dress, produced not the same effect then when delivered by the great actor on the stage, in Grecian or Hebrew drapery. Iphigenia was attired like Madame de Sévigné, and Boileau addressed to his friend the following fine lines:

'Jamais Iphigénie, en Aulide immolée  
N'a coûté tant de pleurs à la Grèce assemblée,  
Que dans l'heureux spectacle à nos yeux étalé  
En a fait sous son nom verser la Chanmélé.'

"Accuracy in the representation of inanimate objects is the spirit of the literature and the arts of our time. It denotes the decay of the higher class of poetry, and of the genuine drama. We are content with minor beauties, when we cannot attain great aims. Our stage represents perfection in the chair and its velvet coverings, but the actor is equally successful in portraying the character who is seated in the chair. But, having once descended to these minute representations of material objects, it cannot be dispensed with, for the public taste becomes materialized and demands it.

"In Shakspeare's time, the higher class of spectators, or the *gentlemen*, took their places on the stage—seating themselves either on boards, or on stools which they paid for. The pit was a dark and deep hole, in which the audience stood crowded together. The spectators in the pit, and those on the stage, were like two hostile camps drawn face to face. The pit saluted the *gentlemen* with hisses, threw mud at them, and addressed to them insulting outcries. The *gentlemen* returned these compliments by calling their assailants *stinkards* and brutes. The *stinkards* ate apples and drank ale; the *gentlemen* played at cards and smoked tobacco, which was then recently introduced. It was the fashion for the gentlemen to tear up the cards, as if they had lost some great stake, and then to throw the fragments angrily on the stage—to let them speak loud, and turn their backs on the actors. In this manner were the tragedies of the great master received on their first production. John Bull threw apple-parings at the divinity at whose shrine he now o

adoration. Fortune, in her rigour to Shakspeare and Molière, made them actors, and thus gave to the lowest of their countrymen the privilege of at once insulting the great men and their writings." Vol. I. pp. 249—252.

Our author places Julius Cæsar and Richard III. on a par with Macbeth, Hamlet, and Othello. We believe that he is the first critic of any pretensions who ever did so—as he is assuredly the first who ever charged him with a want of *variety* in the delineation of female character. Our readers might scarcely credit the assertion: but so says our author. He enters into a parallel (too long to be here extracted) between the chief female characters of French tragedy and those of Shakspeare, and points out, as he supposes, the immense superiority of the former. After a number of extracts and impassioned remarks, he exclaims, "What are all Shakspeare's females in comparison with *Esther*?" Her speech to *Elise* (fine, undoubtedly) is then given, and the comparison closed by the following rapturous apostrophe to all barbarians; no doubt, including among such those who are unhappy enough to prefer Shakspeare to Racine:

"If there are any Huns, Hottentots, Hurons, Goths, Vandals, or other barbarians, insensible to the feminine modesty, the dignity, and the melody of this exquisite passage, may they be seventy times seven-fold delighted by the charms of their own native productions. 'I thought,' says Racine, in his preface to *Esther*, 'that I could fill up the whole of my dramatic action with such scenes as God himself has in a manner prepared.' Racine justly thought so, for he alone possessed the harp of David consecrated to the scenes *prepared* by God." Vol. I. pp. 284, 5.

The era of Shakspeare is well described. The author groups together in a very imposing manner all the events of the times, fancying the impressions likely to be made by them upon such a mind as that of the bard of Avon. For ourselves, we believe that Shakspeare's wonderful poetic talent was one given to him by his Creator, which would have burst forth in splendour in any age; though we should not be disposed to adopt the language which Chateaubriand professes to quote, but which we strongly suspect to be his own—"that the poet was as a solitary comet, which, having traversed the constellations of the ancient firmament, returns to the feet of the Deity, and says to him, like the thunder, 'here I am.'" This is precious bombast. Still it was quite fair in Chateaubriand to conjecture the influence of the occurrences of his day upon the imagination of the bard, and it affords the writer an opportunity of showing off in the kind of composition in which he excels. The extract is long, but we wished not to abridge it, as it is well worth the perusal.

"At home, Elizabeth presented in her own person an historical character. Shakspeare had attained his twenty-third year when Mary

Stuart was beheaded. The child of catholic parents, and probably himself a catholic, he had doubtless heard, among his own community, that Elizabeth had endeavoured to make Rolstone the instrument of seducing her fair captive, in order to disgrace her; and that, taking advantage of the massacre of St. Bartholomew, she had made an attempt to deliver over the Queen of Scots to the vindictive feelings of the Scottish protestants. Who knows but curiosity might have led young William from Statford to Fotheringay to witness the catastrophe? Who can say but he may have seen the bed, the chamber, the vaults hung with black, the block, the head of Mary, into which the executioner, by his first unskilful stroke of the axe, had driven a portion of the unfortunate victim's coil and gray hair? May not the eyes of Shakspeare have rested with interest and curiosity on the beautiful and mutilated corse?

"Some time after, Elizabeth cast another head at the feet of Shakspeare. Mahomet II. had an Icoglan decapitated for the purpose of giving a painter an idea of death. Strange compound of man and woman! Elizabeth seems, during the whole of her mysterious life, to have felt but one passion, and never to have known love. The last malady of this queen, say the memoirs of her time, proceeded from a grief, the cause of which she ever kept a profound secret. She never evinced an inclination to have recourse to remedies—as if she had made up her mind long before to die—being weary of her life from some secret cause, which was said to be the death of the Earl of Essex.

"The sixteenth century, the spring-time of modern civilization, flourished in England more prosperously than in other parts of the globe. It developed those sturdy generations of men, who already bore within them the seeds of liberty, in the persons of Cromwell and Milton. Elizabeth dined to the sound of drums and trumpets, whilst her parliament was passing atrocious laws against the papists, and whilst the yoke of sanguinary oppression weighed down unhappy Ireland. The executions at Tyburn alternated with the gaieties of the fashionable ball; the austerities of the puritans with the revels of Kenilworth; comedies with sermons; lampoons with hymns; literary disquisitions with philosophical discussions and sectarian controversies.

"The spirit of adventure animated the nation, as at the period of the wars in Palestine. Protestant crusaders volunteered to combat the idolaters—that is to say, the catholics. They followed across the seas Sir Francis Drake and Sir Walter Raleigh, who, like Peter the Hermit, were friends of Christ, but enemies of the Cross. Engaged in the cause of religious liberty, the English lent their aid to all who sought to shake off the yoke of tyranny; they shed their blood beneath the white plume of Henry IV. and the yellow flag of the Prince of Orange. Shakspeare witnessed all this, and he also was witness to those auspicious tempests which cast the wrecks of the Spanish vessels upon the shores of his delivered country.

"Abroad, the picture was not less favourable to poetic inspiration. In Scotland, there were the vices and ambition of Murray—the murder of Rizzio—Darnley strangled, and his body cast to the winds—Bothwell espousing Mary in the fortress of Dunbar, and afterwards becoming a fugitive and a pirate in Norway—Morton delivered up to the executioner.

"The Low Countries presented all the miseries inseparable from a nation's emancipation: Cardinal de Granvelle, the Duke of Alva—the tragic deaths of the Count d'Egmont and the Count de Horn.

"In Spain, besides the death of Don Carlos, we find Philip II. erecting the sombre Escorial, multiplying his auto-da-fés, and saying to his

physicians—"Are you afraid to take a few drops of blood from a man who has made it flow in rivers?"

"In Italy, the history of the Cenci, renewing the ancient adventures of Venice, Verona, Milan, Bologna, and Florence.

"In Germany, Wallenstein's career had just commenced.

"In France, the nearest country to the native land of Shakspeare, what were the stirring events of the time?

"The tocsin of St. Bartholomew sounded when the author of Macbeth had attained his eighteenth year, and England was convulsed by the intelligence of that massacre; exaggerated accounts of it, (if exaggerated they could be,) details calculated to inflame even the imaginations of children, were printed in London and Edinburgh, and sold in every town and village throughout the country. A great deal was said about the reception given by Elizabeth to the ambassador of Charles IX. 'The silence of night reigned through the royal apartments. The ladies and courtiers were ranged in rows on each side, clothed in deep mourning; and when the ambassador passed through the midst of them, none made their obeisance, nor even turned upon him a civil look.' Marlowe brought upon the stage his play entitled 'The Massacre of Paris,' and possibly Shakspeare may have made his debut in one of its characters.

"The reign of Charles IX. was succeeded by that of Henry III., so fertile in catastrophes: Catherine de Medicis, the favourites, the day of the barricades, the assassination of the two Guises at Blois, the death of Henry III. at St. Cloud, the agitations of the League, the murder of Henri IV., must have varied incessantly the emotions of a poet who beheld the long chain of events extending before him. The soldiers of Elizabeth, the Earl of Essex himself, took part in our civil wars, and fought at Havre, Ivry, Rouen, and Amiens. Some veterans of the English army might have recounted, at the fireside of William Shakspeare, the calamities they had witnessed in our fields of battle." . . .

"Shakspeare was born in the interval between the religious revolution, which commenced under Henry VIII., and the political revolution which was preparing to burst forth under Charles I. Both before and after him, there was nothing throughout England but scenes of bloodshed and horror.

"In the reign of Edward VI., Somerset, the protector of the kingdom and uncle of the young king, perished on the scaffold.

"In the reign of Mary, there were the martyrs of protestantism, the beheading of Lady Jane Grey, and Philip, the exterminator of protestants, landing in England, as if to review and devote to destruction the camp of the enemy.

"With the reign of Elizabeth came the martyrs of catholicism. Elizabeth herself, anointed with the sacred oil in conformity with the Roman ritual, became the persecutrix of the faith which had placed the crown upon her head. Elizabeth! the daughter of that Anne Boleyn who caused the schism from the church of Rome, who was sacrificed after Thomas More, and who died half lunatic, praying, laughing, and contrasting the smallness of her neck with the breadth of the executioner's axe.

"Shakspeare in his youth must frequently have encountered old monks, chased from their cloisters, who had seen Henry VIII., his reforms, his destructive hand laid upon their monasteries, his court fools, his wives, his mistresses, and his executioners. When the poet died, Charles I. was in his sixteenth year.

"Thus Shakspeare might have laid one hand on the hoary heads menaced by the last but one of the Tudors, and the other on the auburn

locks of the second of the Stuarts;—on that head which was painted by Vandyke, and subsequently struck off by the parliament party. Filling this position, contemplating these tragic objects, the great poet descended into the tomb. His life was employed in drawing his spectres and his blind kings—in depicting female sorrow and the punishment of ambition—so as to unite, by analogous fictions, the realities of the past with the realities of the future.” Vol. I. pp. 292—299.

Another charge is brought against Shakspeare which we feel desirous of repelling—a want of passion and true feeling. He is represented as a sceptic—a sort of abstract, metaphysical-minded man, who sported with the affections as with toys, the trifles of a vacant hour. Hear what the viscount says, after quoting some of his beautiful sonnets.

“There is more of poetry, imagination, and melancholy, in these verses than sensibility, passion, and depth. Shakspeare loved, but he believed no more in love than he believed in any thing else. A woman to him is a bird, a zephyr, a flower, which charms and passes away. Owing to his carelessness or ignorance of fame, and to his profession, which excluded him from good company and kept him aloof from the conditions which he could not attain, he seems to have taken life as a fleeting unoccupied hour, a transient and agreeable leisure.

“Poets love liberty and the muse more dearly than their mistresses. The pope offered to absolve Petrarch from his vows, in order that he might marry Laura. The bard replied to his holiness’s obliging proposition, ‘I have still too many sonnets to write.’

“Shakspeare, that great tragic spirit, drew his serious ideas from his scorn of himself and the human race. He doubted every thing. ‘Perhaps’ is a word which in his lines incessantly recurs. Montaigne, on the other side of the water, repeated: *Peut-être—que sais-je?* ‘Perhaps—what do I know?’” Vol. I. pp. 315, 316.

The deep pathos and irresistible passion of his verse is the best answer to the charge.

Again he is supposed by Chateaubriand to have been unconscious of his genius—careless about fame. The author must have forgotten, or never read, the impressive verses beginning—

“Not marble, nor the gilded monuments  
Of princes, shall outlive this powerful rhyme.”

As little of an egotist, perhaps, as any great man who ever lived, Shakspeare still possessed the sense of innate greatness, or he would not have been human. While, therefore, we differ in toto with the writer in our estimate of Shakspeare’s character, still we must do justice to the beauty of the following lines, with which he closes his notice of him:

“Shakspeare, during his life, never thought of living after death. What now to him is my song of admiration? In admitting all suppositions, in reasoning on the truths or the errors with which the human mind is penetrated or imbued, what were to Shakspeare a renown whose echoes cannot reach him? If a Christian, amidst eternal felicity, can he care for the nothingness of this world? If a deist, freed from the

clouds of matter—clouds lost in the splendour of God—does he bestow one glance on the grain of sand that he has left? If an atheist, he sleeps, without breathing or awaking, the sleep called death. Nothing then is more vain than glory beyond the tomb—at least, unless it has kept friendship alive—unless it has been useful to virtue, serviceable to distress—and unless it be given us to enjoy in heaven the sense of one consoling, generous, liberating idea, left by us upon earth!" Vol. I. p. 319.

A very rapid sketch of the literature of England, from the time of Shakspeare to that of Milton, is next presented to us—our author appearing desirous of hastening to his hero, to a consideration of whom he devotes most of the remainder of his work. Upon the second volume we cannot dwell so much at length as we have done upon the first, on account of the space we have already occupied, though there is in it an abundance of interesting matter to detain us. To Milton, then, the commonwealth, and Cromwell, let us direct our attention for a short time.

Milton's career is, we suppose, familiar to our readers. We shall not, therefore, present them with any part of Chateaubriand's account, except for the new dress in which he clothes his facts—serving up old things in a style to render them doubly agreeable. With his remarks upon Milton, too, we shall have but little fault to find, our admiration for him being equal to that of our author himself.

Milton traveled on the continent after he had finished his studies, and when he had already distinguished himself by his writings. The beauty of his person and his accomplishments procured him great consideration abroad. He hastened home, however, without visiting Greece, upon news of coming disturbances in his native country. His stand was at once taken—he went for liberty. He did not, indeed, instantly assume an active part in the first movements of the revolution. Domestic duties, and his studies, engrossed him for a while; but when his thoughts were matured, he poured them out unceasingly into the ears of his countrymen. They were the notes of freedom; and they sounded sweetly in the ears of her partisans. The pen, not the sword, fell to his share in the contest.

Johnson, in his rough way, attacks Milton for his temporary inactivity; he even attempts a joke at his expense. Chateaubriand defends him; though not at all at length, nor as ably as he might. Milton's character, however, will survive the assault even of a Johnson.

In Italy, Milton fell in love. The incident is thought to have so sensibly affected his feelings as to have cooled their natural fervour; he is supposed not to have loved any of the three wives he afterwards took to himself as ardently as the Italian



beauty. His first marriage was a strange affair. Our author narrates it thus—

"The Earl of Essex having taken Reading in 1643, Milton's father and mother, who had retired to that town, returned to London, and took up their residence with the poet. Milton was then thirty-five years old. One day, he stole away from home wholly unattended. His absence lasted a month, at the expiration of which he returned a married man to that abode which he quitted a bachelor. He had married the eldest daughter of Richard Powell, a justice of the peace, of Forest Hill, near Shotover, in Oxfordshire. Powell had borrowed of Milton's father five hundred pounds, which he never repaid; but he considered that he should settle the account by giving his daughter to the son of his creditor. This match, contracted as clandestinely as an illicit amour, was not less inconstant. Milton did not forsake his wife, like Shakspeare; it was his wife who forsook him. The family of Mary Powell were royalists; whether it was because Mary would not live with a republican, or for some other reason, she returned to her parents. She promised to come back at Michaelmas, but she did not keep her word. Milton wrote letter after letter, but received no reply; at length he despatched a messenger, who threw away his eloquence and his time. The deserted husband then resolved to repudiate his runaway spouse. In order to extend to other husbands that independence which he asserted for himself, his genius suggested to him to convert a question of personal susceptibility into a question of liberty, and he published his treatise on 'The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce.' " Vol. II. pp. 22, 23.

The issue, however, was creditable to both parties.

"In accordance with his principles respecting divorce, Milton solicited the hand of the young and accomplished daughter of a Dr. Davis, but she felt no partiality for the great genius who paid his addresses to her. The poet's wife now bethought herself of him: the Powell family, whose loyalty had cooled in proportion as the royal cause became less prosperous, wished for an accommodation. Milton having called upon a relative named Blackborough, the door of the room suddenly flew open; Mary threw herself in tears at the feet of her husband, and confessed her fault. Milton pardoned the offender. Posterity has profited by a connubial quarrel, for to this adventure we are indebted for that admirable scene between Adam and Eve, in the 10th book of Paradise Lost:—

'Soon his heart relented  
Tow'rd her, his life so late and sole delight,  
Now at his feet submissive in distress!"

"The issue of a romantic marriage, begun in mystery, renewed in tears, was three daughters, and two of these Antigones reopened the pages of antiquity to their blind father.

"After the triumph of the parliament, Milton offered an asylum to his wife's family." Vol. II. pp. 27, 28.

The civil war was now raging, and Milton's pen was untiringly at work. Publication after publication issued from the press. Every great act of the king's opponents found an advocate in the poet, while he as energetically attacked the doings of the royalists. Chateaubriand presents a graphic sketch of

Milton, quietly seated at his desk in composition, while all was in commotion around him.

"In 1645, Milton published a collection of the English and Latin poems of his youth. The songs were set to music by Henry Laws, who belonged to the chapel of Charles I.: the voice of the apologist was soon to penetrate to the coffin of the sovereign in the chapel of Windsor.

"Milton's father died; the parents of the poet's wife returned to their own home; and his house, says Phillips, once more became the temple of the muses. At this time, Milton was on the point of being employed as adjutant-general of the troops under Sir William Waller, a general of the presbyterian party, who has left us his memoirs.

"When, in the month of April, 1647, Fairfax and Cromwell had made themselves masters of London, Milton, in order to pursue his studies more quietly, gave up his large establishment in Barbican, and retired to a small house in High Holborn, near which I long resided. It may not be amiss here to repeat an observation which I made at the beginning of this work:—'A view of literature,' I said, 'apart from the history of nations, would produce a prodigious fallacy: to hear the successive poets calmly singing their loves and their sheep, you would figure to yourself the uninterrupted existence of the golden age on the earth. . . . In every nation, even at the moment of the direst catastrophes, and of the greatest events, there will always be a priest who prays, a poet who sings,' &c.

"We see Milton marry, engage in the study of languages, instruct boys, publish compositions in prose and verse, as if England were enjoying the most profound peace; and yet civil war was kindled, a thousand parties were tearing one another in pieces, and people walked amidst blood and ruins.

"In 1644, the battles of Marstonmoor and Newbury were fought; and the head of the aged Archbishop Laud fell beneath the axe of the executioner. The years 1645 and 1646 beheld the battle of Naseby, the taking of Bristol, the defeat of Montrose, and the retreat of Charles I. to the Scottish army, who delivered up their sovereign to the English for the sum of four hundred thousand pounds.

"The years 1647, 1648, and 1649, were still more tragic. They comprise within their fatal period the rising of the army, the seizure of the king by Joyce, the oppression of the parliament by the soldiery, the second civil war, the escape of the king, his second apprehension, the violent sifting of the parliament, the trial and death of Charles I.

"Let the reader refer to these dates, and place under them successively the works of Milton which I am about to treat of. Milton was probably present as a spectator at the decapitation of his sovereign; he returned home perhaps to write some verses, or to arrange for boys a paragraph of his Latin grammar: 'Genders are three; masculine, feminine, and neuter.' The fate of empires and of men is of no more account than this in the movement by which societies are carried along.

"In France, too, there were, in 1793, poets who sang of Thyrsis, one of the characters of the Masque, and who were no Miltons; people went to plays, the dramatis personæ of which were honest country folk; shepherds trod the stage, while tragedy ran about the streets. We know that the Terrorists were remarkably mild in their manners; these gentle swains were particularly fond of little children. Fouquier Tinville and his man Sampson, who smelt of blood, amused themselves at night in the theatre, and wept at the delineation of innocent country life." Vol. II. pp. 32—35.

The viscount dwells largely upon the prose works of his favourite; gives copious extracts, and claims some credit to himself for his notice of them. It may be that in France they are unknown; in England, and this country, though not very generally read, they are still by no means undiscovered gems. We should, however, welcome any attempt to make them more familiar even to us; and we think it not out of place to introduce here a remarkable passage, from his *Defence of the Regicides*, against the pamphlet of Peter Du Moulin. It is strikingly prophetic.

"I seem to overlook, as from the top of a hill, a great extent of sea and land. Spectators crowd around: their unknown faces betray thoughts similar to my own. Here, Germans, whose masculine spirit disdains servitude; there, French, with a living and generous impetuosity in behalf of liberty; on one side, the composure and valour of the Spaniard; on the other, the reserve and the circumspect magnanimity of the Italian. All the lovers of independence and virtue, the valiant and the sage, in whatever place they may be, are for me. Some favour me in secret, some approve me openly; others welcome me with applause and congratulations; others, again, who had long withstood all conviction, at length yield themselves captive to the force of truth. Surrounded by this multitude, I now imagine that, from the pillars of Hercules to the extremities of the earth, I behold all nations recovering the liberty from which they had been so long exiled; I fancy that I see my countrymen conveying to other lands a plant of superior quality and of nobler growth than that which Triptolemus carried with him from region to region; they are sowing the benefits of civilization and freedom among cities, kingdoms, and nations. Perhaps I shall not unknown approach this concourse; perhaps I shall be loved by it, when it is told that I am the man who engages in single combat with the proud champion of despotism." Vol. II. pp. 51, 52.

In reading Milton's political writings, we seem to have in hand a liberal author of our own day, and not one of the seventeenth century. We find no such sentiments in the mouth of any other individual of his time in any country; they are the opinions and the reasonings of a much later era.

We must leave the recital of the fortunes of "Cromwell's Latin secretary:" blind though he was, the protector knew the value of securing the transmission of his name to posterity as the friend of Milton. How nobly the bard on all occasions defended the fame of his benefactor, is well known. Some remarks upon the character and death of Milton we will give from the work before us:—

"The bard of Eden said that a poet 'ought to be himself a true poem;' that is, a model of the best and most honourable qualities.

"Milton rose at four in the morning during summer, and at five in the winter. He wore almost invariably a dress of coarse gray cloth; studied till noon, dined frugally, walked with a guide, and, in the evening, sung, accompanying himself on some instrument. He understood harmony,

and had a fine voice. He for a long time addicted himself to the practice of fencing. To judge by *Paradise Lost*, he must have been passionately fond of music and the perfume of flowers. He supped off five or six olives and a little water, retired to rest at nine, and composed at night, in bed. When he had made some verses, he rung, and dictated to his wife or daughters. On sunny days he sat on a bench at his door; he lived in Artillery Walk, leading to Bunhill Fields.

"From without, insults were heaped on this the sick and forsaken lion. These lines were addressed to him, headed 'Upon John Milton's not suffering for his Traitorous Book, when the Tryers were executed, 1660:'

'That thou escap'dst that vengeance which o'ertook,  
Milton, thy regicides, and thy own book,  
Was clemency in Charles beyond compare,  
And yet thy doom doth prove more grievous far;  
Old, sickly, poor, stark-blind, thou writ'st for bread;  
So, for to live, thou'dst call Salmasius from the dead.'

They reproached him with his age, his ugliness, his small stature, and applied to him this verse of Virgil:—

"*Monstrum horrendum, informe, ingens, cui lumen ademptum.*"

observing that the word *ingens* was the only one which did *not* apply to his person. He had the simplicity to reply (*Defensio Autoris*) that he was poor because he had never enriched himself; that he was neither large nor small; that at no age had he been considered ugly; that in youth, with a sword by his side, he had never feared the bravest.

"In fact, he had been very handsome, and was so even in his age. The portrait of Adam is his own. His hair was admirable, his eyes of extraordinary clearness; no defect could be perceived in them; it would have been impossible to guess that he was blind. If we were not aware what party rage can do, could we believe that it would make it a crime for a man to be blind? But let us thank this abominable hate, we owe to it some exquisite lines. Milton first replies that he lost his sight in the defence of liberty, then adds these passages, full of sublimity and tenderness:—

"In the night that surrounds me, the light of the Divine Presence shines the more brightly for me. God beholds me with greater tenderness and compassion, because I can see nought but Him. The Divine law ought not only to shield me from injury, but to render me more sacred; not on account of the loss of sight, but because I am under the shadow of the Divine wings, which seem to produce this darkness in me. To this I attribute the affectionate assiduities of my friends, their soothing attentions, their kind visits, and their respectful behaviour.'

"We see to what shifts he was reduced in writing, by a passage in one of his letters to Peter Heimbach.

"That virtue of mine which you call my political virtue; and which I would rather you had called devotion to my country—patriotism, enchanting me with her captivating name, almost, if I may so say, expatriated me. In finishing my letter, let me beg of you this favour, that if you find some parts incorrectly written, you will impute the fault to the boy who writes for me; he is utterly ignorant of Latin, and I am obliged wretchedly enough to spell every word I dictate.'

"The miseries of Milton were still more aggravated by domestic griefs. I have already said that he lost his first wife, Mary Powell; she

died in child-birth, as, after a year's marriage, did his second, Catharine Woodcock, of Hackney. His third, Elizabeth Minshell, survived him, and had used him well. He appears not to have been beloved; his daughters, who played such poetical parts in his life, deceived him, and secretly sold his books. He complains of this. Unfortunately, his character seems to have had the inflexibility of his genius. Johnson has said, with precision and truth, that Milton believed woman made only for obedience, and man for *rebellion*."

"Milton, in his last days, was forced to sell his library. He drew near his end. Dr. Wright, going to see him, found him confined to the first floor of his small house, in a very small room, to which the visiter ascended by a staircase, carpeted, extempore, with green baize, to deaden the noise of footsteps, and to procure silence for the man who was advancing towards everlasting silence. The author of 'Paradise Lost,' attired in a black doublet, reclined in an elbow-chair. His head was uncovered, its silver locks fell on his shoulders, his blind but fine dark eyes sparkled amidst the paleness of his countenance.

"On the 10th of November, 1674, that God who had discoursed with him by night came to fetch him; and reunited him in Eden with the angels, amid whom he had lived, and whom he knew by their names, their offices, and their beauty.

"Milton expired so gently that no one perceived the moment when, at the age of sixty-six years (within one month), he rendered back to God one of the mightiest spirits that ever animated human clay. This temporal life, though neither long nor short, served as a foundation for life eternal. The great man had dragged on a sufficient number of days on earth to feel their weariness; but not sufficient to exhaust his genius, which remained entire, even to his latest breath." Vol. II. pp. 99—109.

There is, as we before remarked, so little of literary criticism in this work, that our extracts have been necessarily somewhat different from what our readers may have expected. The only portion of the book in which our author has kept in view the real object of his sketches, is that in which he descants upon *Paradise Lost*. He enters into a description of the plan of the work, and offers his opinions at some length upon its execution. We shall therefore copy a portion of his description which gives, in our judgment, a beautiful view of the whole poem. To the author it is the most creditable section of his book.

"What can I say of 'Paradise Lost' that has not been said already? A thousand times have its sublime traits been cited; its conversations, its combats, the fall of its angels, and that hell which

'——— would have fled  
Affrighted, but strict fate had cast too deep  
Her dark foundations.'

"I shall chiefly dwell, therefore, upon the general composition of the work, to point out the art with which the whole is conducted.

"Satan awakes in the midst of the fiery lake (and what a waking!) He calls together the council of the punished legions, reminds his companions of their failure and disobedience, of an ancient oracle which foretold the birth of a new world, the creation of a new race, formed with a design to fill the places of the fallen angels. Dreadful idea! It is in hell that the name of man is first pronounced.

"Satan proposes to seek this unknown world, to destroy or to corrupt it. He departs, explores hell, encounters sin and death; he induces sin to open the portals of the abyss, traverses chaos, discovers the creation, descends from the sun, and arrives on earth; sees our first parents in Eden; is moved by their beauty, their innocence, and, by his remorseful tenderness, gives an ineffable idea of their nature and their happiness. God beholds Satan from heaven, and predicts the weakness of man, his utter ruin, unless some one presents himself to be his surety, and die for him. The heavenly choir stand mute with amazement. In the silence of heaven, the Son alone replies, and offers himself as a sacrifice. The victim is accepted, and man redeemed, even before he falls.

"The Almighty sends Raphael to warn our first parents of their enemy's arrival and intent. The celestial messenger relates to Adam the revolt of the angels, which took place at the moment when the Father, from the summit of the holy hill, proclaims that he has begotten the Son, and endowed him with full power. The pride and jealousy of Satan, inflamed by this declaration, excite him to combat; vanquished with his legions, he is thrown into hell. Milton had no data for assigning a motive for Satan's rebellion; he was obliged to draw every thing from his own genius. Thus, with the art of a great master, he makes known what had befallen before the opening of the poem. Raphael then relates to Adam the work of the six days. Adam, in his turn, describes his own creation. The angel returns to heaven. Eve suffers herself to be tempted, tastes the forbidden fruit, and involves Adam in her fall.

"In the tenth book all the personages reappear; they are about to meet their fate. In the eleventh and twelfth books, Adam sees the results of his faults, in all that is to happen till the incarnation of Christ. The Son must sacrifice himself to ransom man. The Son is one of the characters of the poem. By means of a vision, he remains the last and alone on the stage, in order to fulfil, in the soliloquy of the cross, the definitive action. *Consummatum est.*

"Such is the work in its simplicity; the incidents and the narrations spring the one from the other. We travel through hell, chaos, heaven, earth, eternity, and time, amid blasphemies and hymns, tortures and delights; we rove through these immensities with ease, unconsciously, insensible of moving; we think not of the efforts it must have cost to bear us thus high, on eagle's wings, or to create such a universe.

"The observation touching the last appearance of the Son, shows, contrary to the opinion of certain critics, that Milton would have been wrong in suppressing the last two books. These books, considered, I know not why, as the weakest part of the poem, are, in my opinion, quite as beautiful as the others; nay, they have a human interest which the earlier ones possess not. From the greatest of poets, as he was, the author becomes the greatest of historians, without ceasing to be a poet. Michael informs our first parents that they must quit Paradise. Eve weeps; grieved at leaving her garden, she says,

'Oh, flowers!

My early visitation, and my last  
At even, which I bred up with tender hand,  
From the first opening bud, and gave ye names.'

"A charming trait of character, which has been supposed to be the idea of a modern German poet, but is only one of the beauties with which the works of Milton abound. Adam, too, complains, but it is that

he must abandon the scenes where God had deigned to honour him with his presence. He says,

‘Here I would frequent

. . . . . and to my sons relate

On this mount He appeared, under this tree

Stood visible, among these pines his voice

I heard, here with him at this fountain talked.’

“This idea of God, with which man is impressed throughout the ‘Paradise Lost,’ is one of extraordinary sublimity. Eve, in waking to life, is occupied but with her own beauty, and sees God in man. Adam, as soon as he is created, guessing that he could not have made himself, instantly seeks and calls upon his Maker.

“Eve remains sleeping at the foot of the hill. Michael, from its summit, shows Adam, in a vision, his whole race. Thus the Bible is unfolded. First comes the story of Cain and Abel. When Adam sees Abel fall, he exclaims to the angel,

‘— Oh, teacher !

But have I now seen death ? is this the way  
I must return to native dust ?’

“Observe that, in the scriptures, nothing is said of Adam after his fall ; silence spreads over the nine hundred and thirty years between his sin and his death. It would seem that the human race, his hapless posterity, durst not speak of him. Even Saint Paul names him not among the patriarchs who lived by faith. The apostle commences his list with Abel. Adam passes for the chief of the dead, because in him all mankind died ; and yet for nine centuries he saw his sons traveling towards the grave, of which he was the inventor, and which he had opened for them.

“After the murder of Abel, the angel shows Adam a ‘lazar house,’ and every different form of death ; this picture is full of power, in the style of Tintoretto. The poet says,

‘— Adam could not but weep,

Tho’ not of woman born.’

“A pathetic reflection, inspired by that passage in Job—‘Man that is born of a woman is of few days, and full of trouble.’

“The history of the giants of the mountain, who seduce the females of the plain, is marvellously told. The deluge offers another vast scene. In this eleventh book, Milton imitates Dante in the form of speech—‘Master,’ used in the dialogue. Dante would have invited Milton as a brother to enter with him the group of great poets.

“The twelfth book is no longer a vision, but a narrative. The Tower of Babel, the call of Abraham, the advent of Christ, his incarnation, his resurrection, are replete with beauties of every kind. This book concludes with the banishment of Adam and Eve, and with lines so sad, that every body knows them by heart.

“In these last two books, the poet’s melancholy is increased ; he seems more than ever to feel the weight of misfortune and age. He attributes to Michael these words :—

‘So may’st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop

Into thy mother’s lap, or be with ease

Gathered, not harshly pluck’d, for death mature :

This is old age; but then thou must outlive  
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change  
 To withered, weak, and gray; thy senses, then,  
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego  
 To what thou hast; and for the air of youth,  
 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign  
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry  
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
 The balm of life.'

"A commentator, speaking of Milton's genius, in these two last books of 'Paradise Lost,' says, 'It is the same ocean, but at the ebb of tide; the same sun, but at the moment of its setting.'

"Be it so. The sea appears most lovely to my eye when it permits me to wander over its deserted strand, while it retreats towards the horizon with the setting sun." Vol. II. pp. 119—125.

Upon the remainder of the book we have little to say. As a history of the literary men of England who succeeded Milton, it is scarcely more than a parade of names. Any one ignorant of the subject would receive but little light from the perusal of what follows the sketch of Milton's writings. We shall, therefore, merely glean a few passages before quitting the work.

A comparison which he institutes between the English and French revolutions, enables him to present sketches of distinguished individuals, a species of writing in which he excels. His picture of Mirabeau is fine.

"In fact, the actors in that revolution never came up to the mark of those of the French revolution, measured as the latter was upon a much larger scale, and carried on by a nation much more closely connected with the general destinies of the world. Is it to Ludlow or Hampden that we can compare Mirabeau? His superiors in a moral point of view, they were greatly inferior to him in genius.

"Connected by the excesses and accidents of his life with the most remarkable events, and with the existence of felons, ravishers, and adventurers, Mirabeau, the tribune of aristocracy, the deputy of democracy, partook of the characters of Gracchus and Don Juan, of Catiline and Guzman d'Alfarache, of Cardinal de Richelieu and Cardinal de Retz, of the profligate of the regency and the savage of the revolution; there, moreover, flowed in his veins the blood of the Mirabeaus; an exiled Florentine family, which retained somewhat of those armed palaces and those great factious illustrated by Dante; a French naturalized family, in which the republican spirit of Italy, during the middle age, and the feudal spirit of our own middle age, were found combined in a succession of extraordinary men.

"The ugliness of Mirabeau, laid upon a ground of beauty, for which his race was distinguished, produced an image of one of the powerful figures in the *Last Judgment* of Michael Angelo, the compatriot of Arrighetti. The marks left by the small-pox on the orator's face rather bore the appearance of scars occasioned by fire. Nature seemed to have moulded his head for empire or the gibbet; to have shaped his arms for the purpose of curbing a nation or carrying off a woman. When he shook his mane, with his eyes fixed upon the mob, he suddenly checked their progress; when he raised his foot and showed his claws, they ran



furiously. Amidst the most frightful riot of a sitting, I have seen him in the tribune, dark, hideous, and motionless; he reminded me of the Chaos of Milton, impassible and shapeless—the centre of his own confusion.

"Twice did I meet Mirabeau at an entertainment; on one occasion at the house of Voltaire's niece, the Marchioness de Villette; on another, at the Palais Royal, with deputies of the opposition, with whom Chapelain had made me acquainted. Chapelain was conveyed to the scaffold on the same tumbrel with M. de Malesherbes and my own brother.

"Our discussion after dinner turned upon the subject of Mirabeau's enemies; I happened to be next to him; and, with the timidity of a young man, unknown to all, had not uttered a word. He looked me full in the face with his eyes of wickedness and genius, and, laying his broad hand upon my shoulder, said, 'They will never forgive me my superiority.' Methinks I still feel the impression of that hand, as if Satan had touched me with his fiery claw.

"Too soon for his own sake, too late for that of the court, Mirabeau sold himself to the latter, and the court bought him over. He hazarded the stake of his fame for the prospect of a pension and an embassy; Cromwell was at the point of exchanging his future prospects for a title and the order of the garter. Notwithstanding his pride, he did not set a sufficient value upon himself; the superabundance of money and of places has since raised the price of men's consciences.

"Death released Mirabeau from his promises, and rescued him from dangers which he would probably have been unable to overcome: his life would have demonstrated his incapacity for good; by his death he was left in the height of his power for evil." Vol. II. pp. 158—161.

A portrait of a Vendean is equally striking.

"Whilst residing in London in 1798, I once met, at the residence of the chargé d'affaires of the French princes, a crowd of dealers in counter-revolutions. There stood in the corner a man, who appeared to be from thirty to thirty-five years of age, unnoticed by all, and whose whole attention was fixed upon an engraving of the death of General Wolfe. Struck with his appearance, I enquired who he was. One of my neighbours replied, 'He is nobody—a Vendean peasant; the bearer of a letter from his chiefs.'

"This man, who was nobody, had witnessed the death of Cathelineau, the first general of La Vendée, and a peasant like himself; of Bonchamp, in whom Bayard seemed to have revived; of Lescure, armed with a hair-cloth, which was not proof against a ball; of Elbée, shot in an arm-chair, his wounds preventing him from encountering death standing; of La Rochejaquelin, whose dead body was ordered by the patriots to be *verified*, with a view to tranquillize the convention in the midst of its victories over Europe. This man, who was nobody, had assisted at the two hundred captures and recaptures of towns, villages, and redoubts; at the seven hundred partial actions and the seventeen general engagements; he had taken part in the struggles against three hundred thousand regulars, and six or seven hundred thousand forced levies and national guards; had helped to carry off five hundred pieces of cannon, and a hundred and fifty thousand muskets; had forced his way through the *infernal columns*, companies of incendiaries headed by conventionalists; had found himself in the midst of the ocean of fire, which thrice rolled its waves over the woods of La Vendée; lastly, he had witnessed the destruction of three hundred thousand Hercules of the plough, companions of his labours, and had seen a hundred square leagues of country converted into a wilderness of ashes.

"The two Frances met on this soil which they had thus leveled. Whatever remained of old blood and of recollections in the France of the Crusades, struggled against the new blood and the hopes put forth by revolutionary France. The victor was sensible of the dignity of the conquered: Thurot, the general of the republicans, declared that 'history would assign to the Vendéans the first rank among military populations.' Another general wrote to Merlin, of Thionville; 'Troops that have defeated Frenchmen, such as these, may well hope to conquer all other nations.' The legions of Probus said as much, in their songs, respecting our forefathers. The battles of La Vendée were called by Bonaparte 'Battles of Giants.'

"I was the only one of the crowd in the apartments who looked with admiration and respect upon the representative of those boors of old who, whilst breaking the yoke of their lords, repelled, under Charles V., the invasion of foreigners; I fancied I beheld in him an inhabitant of those communes which, aided by the petty provincial nobility, in the days of Charles VII., reconquered, furrow by furrow, inch by inch, the territory of France. He had that air of indifference which marks the savage; his eye was gray and inflexible as an iron rod; his lower lip trembled under his clenched teeth; his hair fell from his head like snakes, benumbed but ready to rear themselves; his arms, hanging by his side, gave a nervous shock to enormous fists slashed with sabre cuts; he might have been taken for a sawyer. His physiognomy expressed a plebeian rustic nature, brought by a moral force into the service of interests and ideas at variance with that nature; the unaffected fidelity of the vassal, the simple faith of the Christian, were blended in him with rude plebeian independence, accustomed to value itself, and to revenge its own wrongs. His sense of liberty seemed to spring from the consciousness of the strength of his arm and of the intrepidity of his heart. He was as silent as a lion, scratched himself like a lion, yawned like a lion, stretched on his side like a wearied lion, and appeared to dream of blood and forests; his intelligence was akin to that of death. What men were the French of those days, be their party what it might, and what a race have we become at the present day! But the republicans had their principle in them, in the very midst of them, whereas the principle of the royalists was out of France. The Vendéans sent deputations to the emigrants; the giants sent to solicit leaders from the pigmies. The rustic messenger I was contemplating had taken the revolution by the throat; he had exclaimed—'Come in; pass behind me; it will not hurt you; it shall not stir; I have a strong hold of it.' No one was willing to pass; Jacques Bonhomme then released the revolution from his gripe, and Charette shivered his sword." Vol. II. pp. 179—182.

But for the space we have consumed, we should extract the whole of what Chateaubriand says about himself and Lord Byron. It is one of the most amusing specimens of restless vanity we recollect ever to have encountered. He admires Byron much; and is somewhat afraid that the admiration was not reciprocal. Lord Byron never mentioned or even alluded to him in his writings. That so distinguished a man, as the viscount regards himself to be, should have been passed by unnoticed, without some very good reason, is incredible. What, then, was the reason? Perhaps he had unintentionally offended the English bard. He never acknowledged the receipt of a

copy of his early poems, and perhaps Byron was hurt at the neglect. Perhaps his works furnished too many ideas and sentiments to his contemporary, who, having pilfered from his rich stores, was ashamed to acknowledge him as an acquaintance. Perhaps Byron never heard of him; or dreaded his superior genius. None of these "perhaps" seem completely to satisfy even Chateaubriand himself, and as Byron is dead, the poor viscount is likely never to have his mind put at ease upon this deeply interesting portion of *English literature*. We pity him much—for "a wounded spirit who can bear?"

---

ART. IV.—*Astoria; or, Anecdotes of an Enterprise beyond the Rocky mountains*. By WASHINGTON IRVING. 2 vols. 12mo. Philadelphia: 1836.

We hail with great pleasure the appearance of a work, recommended at once by the general favour of the author, by the novelty and romantic interest of its incidents and details, and by the congeniality of the great enterprise which is its general subject, to the genius and tendencies of the age—for commerce is the visible body in which the spirit of the age, so constantly talked about, is most often manifested; commerce, which enriches nations, strengthens defence, averts war, and fertilizes peace; commerce, which stimulates the inertness of man's nature through his wants, till he reaches out his hand over half the world to his brother; commerce is the dominant principle of the time. The fame of the conqueror is a song, and happily now dying away, with the shrieks and groans that were its burden; and the craft of the diplomatist is become an evil savour; but the merchant is merciful and he inherits the earth, going forth with benefit and reciprocity, and reaping where he has not sowed by the glad consent of those who have. The armed combinations of miscalled merchants, in reality, pirates, have passed away: they ravaged India and South America, they had plunder abroad to sustain them, and taxation and monopoly at home, but their military vices and diplomatic pride wasted their resources and laid their prosperity in the dust. Individual enterprise will step into their places and repair the mischief they have done; it will introduce instruction where monopolies cherished ignorance, and raise up

industry and prosperity where tyranny brooded over barbarism. Commerce can never appear to the world in its own dimensions, efficiency and beauty, till it is completely emancipated from all subjection to power, and completely dis severed from all connection with it. It is so here, or nearly so; more nearly than any where else in the world; and here, accordingly, it is held in honour and reputation, it ennobles and liberalizes and elevates its professors, and fills every man's hand with blessings, which he distributes gladly, with the sower's confidence that they will spring up to his hand again. But widely different is the state of things existing where trade is made the slave of military force, or the thrall of aristocratic stagnation, rendering toilsomely an unthanked service, and only suffered to drag on a despised and precarious existence. So it is in Russia, Germany and Italy, so it was in France and Belgium, and though its fetters are now deemed to be knocked off, their brands still remain, and the iron has entered into its soul. Under arbitrary power, however, there is still the apology of constraint; but there is a worse light in which commerce may stand before the world, and in which, to those who have not seen its better face, it seems like the impersonation of the destroying angel. This is when it becomes the ally of power, and the two principles corrupt each other; neutralizing each other's benefits, and aggravating to the utmost each other's tendencies to evil. Commerce then becomes the tempter, and power the spoiler; the trader's avidity is the fiery eye of the fiend, and the rulers force is his iron claw, and no heart of man possessing both ever did or ever can restrain them from robbery and oppression. The worst form, because the most energetic, in which these combinations can appear, is that of a royal monopoly in an arbitrary government. Of the effects of this all the Spanish American colonies can tell; and long, very long will it be, freed as they now are, before its traces disappear from among them. The next form is that of chartered companies, with political powers and functions, of which the most conspicuous examples are the British and Dutch East India Companies: for the proceedings of the former of which, those who wish to sup full of horrors may look into Burke and Sheridan, and the evidence on the trial of Warren Hastings. Chartered companies, with simple privilege of exclusion, come next in the scale of dishonesty and mischief; institutions of which an old saw says wisely, that they are exempt from the responsibilities of soul and body; and it leaves you to infer that they do what none would dare to do that had either. In the progress of the narrative under consideration, we shall encounter such a company, and we shall have occasion to contrast their conduct with that of an individual with whom they come, in

the course of trade, into competition and collision, and we shall find it no exception to the rule. The individual merchant is frank, liberal, and above board: he depends on his own skill and resources, and the fair principles of trade, for his success; and is willing his rivals should succeed too, if they can. Their spirit, on the contrary, is grasping and crushing; they importune their governments to turn the storm of war upon his colony; they stimulate the zeal of the naval heroes sent to destroy it by illusory tales of plunder to be obtained, and at the same time they hustle the property which was to supply that plunder by a legerdemain treaty, by bribery and fraud, into their own pockets; thus balking the legalised piracy of its prey, after using its terrors to aid their underhand proceedings. And the result is, that an enterprise fails in which many interests of this country, and vast schemes of ambition, and honour of its projector, were bound up together; an enterprise which ought to have succeeded upon all the rules by which human foresight and opinion are usually guided, which was wisely planned, and vigorously sustained, but was met, time after time, by fresh and various calamities, and only betrayed and crushed at last by the treachery of a trusted agent, when success was within its reach. Mr. Irving says:—

“It is painful, at all times, to see a grand and beneficial stroke of genius fail of its aim: but we regret the failure of this enterprise in a national point of view; for, had it been crowned with success, it would have redounded greatly to the advantage and extension of our commerce. The profits drawn from the country in question by the British Fur Company, though of ample amount, form no criterion by which to judge of the advantages that would have arisen had it been entirely in the hands of citizens of the United States. That company, as has been shown, is limited in the nature and scope of its operations, and can make but little use of the maritime facilities held out by an emporium and a harbour on that coast. In our hands, beside the roving bands of trappers and traders, the country would have been explored and settled by industrious husbandmen; and the fertile valleys bordering its rivers, and shut up among its mountains, would have been made to pour forth their agricultural treasures to contribute to the general wealth.

“In respect to commerce, we should have had a line of trading posts from the Mississippi and the Missouri across the Rocky mountains, forming a high road from the great regions of the west to the shores of the Pacific. We should have had a fortified post and port at the mouth of the Columbia, commanding the trade of that river and its tributaries, and of a wide extent of country and sea-coast; carrying on an active and profitable commerce with the Sandwich islands, and a direct and frequent communication with China. In a word, Astoria might have realized the anticipation of Mr. Astor, so well understood and appreciated by Mr. Jefferson, in gradually becoming a commercial empire beyond the mountains, peopled by ‘free and independent Americans, and linked with us by ties of blood and interest.’” Vol. II. p. 261.

Many of our readers, probably, know something in general

terms of the foundation of Astoria, but few know any thing of the details; and the particulars which this narrative sets forth could only be known to one to whom the parties interested in the enterprise might think fit to communicate them. In a happy hour they were communicated to Mr. Irving, and they have furnished him a series of such pictures as he especially delights in drawing; the whole subject being one eminently suited to his tastes and turn of mind. He identifies himself so willingly with the heroes of his tale, and sympathizes with them so entirely, he depicts so vividly the scenes through which he makes them pass, from the barbaric pomp and wassail of Montreal, to the ruffling society of Mackinaw, and the border traders of St. Louis, the diplomatic dignity and military pageantry of the Arickara village, and the descending grades of savage life to the poor Snake Indians and wild Upsarokas, all these things are sketched *con amore*, and pass before you in a lively and attractive panorama. The voyage of the Tonquin, too, her stay at the Sandwich Islands, and the accounts of King Tamaahmaah and Governor John Young, are exceedingly spirited and amusing: but to connect all these things together and show what is the plot of the work, we must make an extract from the first part, where, after speaking of the return of Lewis and Clarke from the Rocky mountains in 1804, Mr. Irving adds:—

“It was then that the idea presented itself to the mind of Mr. Astor, of grasping, with his individual hand, this great enterprise, which for years had been dubiously, yet desirously contemplated by powerful associations and maternal governments. For some time he revolved the idea in his mind, gradually extending and maturing his plans as his means of executing them augmented. The main feature of his scheme was to establish a line of trading posts along the Missouri and the Columbia, to the mouth of the latter, where was to be founded the chief trading house or mart. Inferior posts would be established in the interior, and on all the tributary streams of the Columbia, to trade with the Indians; these posts would draw their supplies from the main establishment, and bring to it the peltries they collected. Coasting craft would be built and fitted out, also, at the mouth of the Columbia, to trade, at favourable seasons, all along the northwest coast, and return, with the proceeds of their voyages, to this place of deposit. Thus all the Indian trade, both of the interior and the coast, would converge to this point, and thence derive its sustenance.

“A ship was to be sent annually from New York to this main establishment with reinforcements and supplies, and with merchandise suited to the trade. It would take on board the furs collected during the preceding year, carry them to Canton, invest the proceeds in the rich merchandise of China, and return thus freighted to New York.

“As, in extending the American trade along the coast to the northward, it might be brought into the vicinity of the Russian Fur Company, and produce a hostile rivalry, it was part of the plan of Mr. Astor to conciliate the good will of that company by the most amicable and beneficial arrangements. The Russian establishment was chiefly

dependent for its supplies upon transient trading vessels from the United States. These vessels, however, were often of more harm than advantage. Being owned by private adventurers, or casual voyagers, who cared only for present profit, and had no interest in the permanent prosperity of the trade, they were reckless in their dealings with the natives, and made no scruple of supplying them with firearms. In this way several fierce tribes in the vicinity of the Russian posts, or within the range of their trading excursions, were furnished with deadly means of warfare, and rendered troublesome and dangerous neighbours.

"The Russian government had made representations to that of the United States of these malpractices on the part of its citizens, and urged to have this traffic in arms prohibited; but, as it did not infringe any municipal law, our government could not interfere. Yet still it regarded, with solicitude, a traffic which, if persisted in, might give offence to Russia, at that time almost the only power friendly to us. In this dilemma the government had applied to Mr. Astor, as one conversant in this branch of trade, for information that might point out a way to remedy the evil. This circumstance had suggested to him the idea of supplying the Russian establishment regularly by means of the annual ship that should visit the settlement at the mouth of the Columbia (or Oregon); by this means the casual trading vessels would be excluded from those parts of the coast where their malpractices were so injurious to the Russians.

"Such is a brief outline of the enterprise projected by Mr. Astor, but which continually expanded in his mind. Indeed, it is due to him to say, that he was not actuated by mere motives of individual profit. He was already wealthy beyond the ordinary desires of man, but he now aspired to that honourable fame which is awarded to men of similar scope of mind, who, by their great commercial enterprises have enriched nations, peopled wildernesses, and extended the bounds of empire. He considered his projected establishment at the mouth of the Columbia as the emporium to an immense commerce; as a colony that would form the germ of a wide civilization; that would, in fact, carry the American population across the Rocky mountains; and spread it along the shores of the Pacific, as it already animated the shores of the Atlantic." Vol. I. pp. 37—40.

It is difficult to convey, in the short space of a review, an adequate notion of the energy with which this idea, once matured, was acted on and followed up. A numerous party, consisting of partners in the scheme, clerks, boatmen, trappers, Indian interpreters, &c., recruited from New York, Montreal, Mackinaw, and St. Louis, after many difficulties and delays, left the last named place October 21st, 1810, sixty persons in all, for the mouth of the Columbia, the good ship *Tonquin* having sailed on the 8th of September for the same destination, from New York. The *Tonquin* arrived at the Columbia in the end of March, 1811, and landed safely several of the partners, some clerks, hunters, Canadians, and Sandwich Islanders; a party strong enough to build a fort for the nucleus and citadel of the new colony, and to push up the rivers and establish hunting and trapping and commercial posts, which they expected to increase and improve on the arrival of the reinforce-

ments and supplies which were coming from St. Louis with the inland expedition. The fort and posts were for the present under charge of Mr. Duncan McDougal, a Scotchman, and former clerk of the Northwest Company ; but the inland party was commanded by Mr. Wilson Price Hunt, who, on his arrival, was to take the general superintendence. Both these gentlemen, and several others in both parties, were partners, that is, they were associated in the prospective profits of the enterprise : but for five years Mr. Astor was to bear all loss ; and of the hundred shares into which the stock of the company was to be divided, he was definitively to retain fifty. This power, and that of introducing more partners, gave him a perfect control, as a matter of right, and it was only because this control was nullified in practice, by disobedience of orders, and at last by treachery, that the undertaking fell to the ground. Those who ruined it to build upon its ruins prospered no better : the Northwest Company is long since extinct, and the Hudson's Bay Company, its ancient rival, has gathered the fragments of its inheritance.

In June, 1811, the *Tonquin*, having seen Astoria in a defensible condition, sailed along the coast to *Neweetee*, to trade for furs with the savages, and by an imprudence of the captain in admitting too many of them on board at a time, she fell into their hands ; the crew were overpowered and murdered, and Mr. Lewis, the ship's clerk, being wounded and defenceless, and hopeless of mercy, set fire to the magazine, and blew himself, his savage enemies, and their prey, at once into the air. This dreadful tragedy was the first of many misfortunes which occurred to this well-planned enterprise, and it was a case against which the forethought of Mr. Astor had especially cautioned the brave but imprudent commander of the *Tonquin*. Captain Thorn, when it was too late, did all that despair and courage could effect ; he fought like a lion, but was overpowered by numbers and slain.

The overland party were forced to pass the winter of 1810—11 on the Missouri, they suffered much from desertion, for even the rude hearts of western hunters quailed a little at the terrible deserts and various dangers they must traverse from the Missouri to the Columbia. In April, however, they set forward, and for several months kept on together, till they reached the Rocky mountains, where multiplying difficulties met them. First, the increased obstacles in their mountainous journey, then the rigour of the season, and, by and by, when they had abandoned their horses on the upper waters of a tributary of the Columbia and trusted themselves to canoes, they floated down three or four hundred miles, so as to make returning to the horses impossible, and came to an impracticable



navigation. Here, in a frightful, howling waste, a country scarcely habitable in summer, they encountered winter and famine: they bore up and kept together while they could, but at last separated, and several small parties, after excessive suffering, arrived successively at Astoria in February and March, 1812. The narration of all these adventures should be perused in Mr. Irving's words, no pen is so fit as his to exhibit all its various phases. He sympathizes perfectly in all the exultation, the hardihood, the sufferings and patient endurance of the hunter; he enters, with spontaneous glee, into all the odd traits and wild originality of the fresh characters he encounters, and he interests himself equally with gossiping inquisitiveness in the domestic relations of Pierre Dorion, or the marriage of Duncan McDougal with the clean princess, the daughter of the one-eyed Comcomly. We can give but little idea of all this by extracts, nor have we space for many; but the original book is within every body's reach.

Mr. Astor remained at New York without information as to the expeditions by sea and land; but he acted on his plan as laid down, and on the presumption that every thing had gone right. He fitted out another ship, the *Beaver*, in October, 1811, which arrived at Astoria in May, 1812, with supplies and reinforcements, and having staid long enough to concert operations for her return and homeward voyage, she sailed along the coast to trade with the Russian settlements. Every thing at Astoria depended on her return; she had taken Mr. Hunt from that post, where his presence soon afterwards became exceedingly necessary, as the news of war with England had arrived there, and many dangers were growing out of it for the American interests at Astoria. But the *Beaver* never did return. By an unfortunate decision of Mr. Hunt, after getting a load of seal skins, she left him at the Sandwich Islands and sailed for Canton; the agents of the Northwest Company came down the Columbia upon Astoria, and Mr. McDougal, the partner in command, received them hospitably, supplied them with provisions to enable them to stay in the country, made them friends among the natives, and furnished them goods to trade with them, and, finally, sold out to them Mr. Astor's merchandise, furs, and posts on the Columbia and its tributaries, at a base price, and entered into partnership with them to get a share in the profits of the operation. Mr. Hunt arrived in time to protest against all this, but the mischief was consummated; the pretext for it was, that an armed ship of the Northwest Company was expected, which had obtained the aid of several vessels of war from the British government, and that unless the Astorians would sell peaceably, they would be plundered forcibly. A sloop of war did, in fact, come there soon after, and landed

some agents of the Northwest Company, but the party at Astoria were strong, the coast most dangerous and inhospitable, the fort inaccessible from the sea, and could only be attacked by parties landed for the purpose, who would have been opposed by the Indians, now fully in the American interest. And in the worst event, the furs might have been carried up the river and secreted; there was no force to prevent that, and had they even been lost it would have been more satisfactory to the feelings of Mr. Astor, and infinitely better for the honour of Duncan McDougal.

In the mean time, the ship *Lark* was fitted out from New York by Mr. Astor for the colony, and wrecked on the Sandwich Islands, and another yet, the *Enterprise*, had been prepared and loaded, and would have sailed under convoy of the frigate *John Adams*, when the sailors of the frigate were taken for the service of the lakes, and the harbour of New York being blockaded by the enemy, the *Enterprise* was unloaded and laid up. Such perseverance as this in the face of uncertainties, disappointment and disaster, indicates no ordinary character; but this is not all, nor near all, that Mr. Astor did for his colony. He wrote to Canton to have the *Beaver* go back from thence, but Captain Sowle took it upon him to disobey the order and act upon some opinions of his own; neglecting what he was directed to do, and marring what he attempted. Mr. Astor had sent an agent to St. Petersburg, and concluded an advantageous arrangement with the Russian Northwest Company for an amicable intercourse and interchange of supplies, merchandise and services, and he had applied to the government of the United States for a little reinforcement of forty or fifty men for his fort, which one of their armed ships might drop at the Columbia river, while the arrival of his merchant vessels was very uncertain. He spared no forethought nor expenditure, he left no stone unturned to find assistance, he never hesitated nor doubted for a moment in proceeding on the principles he had once laid down. But war, fraud, disobedience, and the disasters of the desert and the sea, were at last too much for him, and this great undertaking was abandoned. "Were I among you," he writes to Mr. Hunt, just before the final catastrophe, "and had the management of affairs, I would defy them all; but as it is, every thing depends upon you, and your friends about you. Our enterprise is grand, and deserves success, and I hope in God it will meet it. If my object was merely gain of money, I should say, think whether it is best to save what we can, and abandon the place; but the very idea is like a dagger to my heart."

An important and characteristic feature of this affair, is the interest with which it was viewed by the rulers of several of

the greatest nations of the earth. The Russian government, having complained to ours of the irregular traders on the northwest coast, who supplied the savages with firearms, it is to Mr. Astor's company that our government looks for the only remedy our laws enable us to apply in such a case. The Russian cabinet, accordingly, sanctions an agreement of its own Northwest Company with Mr. Astor, for mutual aid and benefit, tending to the suppression of the irregular trade in question, while the British government sees in the new colony the germ of a state, and of an ally for its rivals, and stretches out its hand to destroy it. These are such wheels as a private individual can but rarely put in motion; if, peradventure, he can ride on one as it moves he esteems himself honoured and advanced. To have been charged by any one of these governments with any thing they wished to do in this business, would have been a post eagerly coveted by many a man who would have thought the commerce which was the inspiring principle of it all, a matter infinitely beneath him. The captain of the *Racoon*, which was the British armed ship sent to take Astoria, and his officers and crew, had all their energies for six months directed to that point, and all their thoughts employed on the rich prize which a small modicum of Mr. Astor's wealth would make to divide among them. What to him, considered with reference merely to its value in money, was a very small object, was to them all, a great one; what he had brought knowledge and genius to create, they were bringing brute force to destroy; the unreasoning hirelings of their own government, they were lent, like wooden or iron tools, to a trading company who artfully stimulated their avarice to sharpen their zeal, as the picador mocks and tortures the bull in the arena, that he may roar and fight the better. Yet this arena, and such employment as this, has been esteemed more honourable in the world than the extension of civilization, the diffusion of light, and the planting of cities!

There are passages scattered through this book which make us fear that Mr. Irving himself has but an inadequate idea of the true beauty and dignity of commerce. Otherwise than as an American he could not feel, and we are at present *the* commercial nation, having, doubtless, much more commerce in proportion to our numbers than any other. Mr. Irving, then, could not fail to respect commerce, and feel kindly towards it, but there are certain common-places about the corrupting influence of trade, &c. &c. of which he ought long ago to have purged his mind, but it appears he has not entirely done so. It was not to be expected that, with the documents before him, from which he has given so many pictures of the vices and misery of the savages of the northwest, from which he has

inferred that by the effects of those vices they are tending to extinction, and were so "long before the advent of the white men," (see vol. i. p. 241): in this same book, we say, we should not have expected to find the thievishness, laziness, and impudence of the Indians of Wish-ram ascribed to "the habits of trade and the avidity of gain," (see vol. i. p. 111). On the contrary, trade brings honesty into request and makes it profitable, and it takes root and becomes habitual and the stock of many virtues. Instances of this might be cited from these volumes, and, indeed, the savages generally on the northwest coast appear to have appreciated the benefits of trade, and to have dealt with the white men most usually like customers who meant to come again. Old Comcomly was not, probably, over conscientious, but he saw his own interest, and understood that of his son-in-law, McDougal, and the interest of his reputation too, better than McDougal did himself, and this intelligence made him friendly and faithful.

With regard to the life and character of Mr. Astor, they are dealt with in these volumes in the most sparing manner possible: every thing that cannot be brought to bear upon the fur trade is suppressed. Enough appears, however, to give a strong and distinct impression to a certain extent, and to excite a strong curiosity to know more. There was an expectation, before this book appeared, that it would contain a biography of the man who, during half a century, has been following the chase we are all most eager in, and who has constantly outstripped us all. From an obscure stranger, he has made himself one of the "celebrities" of the country, constructing for himself a fortune first, he has taken his stand on that, as on a pedestal, from whence he could command distinction. Endowed with an intuitive discernment of character, and a native logical clearness of head and perception of the adaptation of means to ends, he always used the instrument or the word he wanted, with singular justice of selection. There was nothing omitted, and nothing superfluous, nothing to attract or dazzle; he never sought to command attention, but rather, as far as possible, to avoid it. Working thus with noiseless machinery, but with untiring vigour, he has comprehended the ends of the earth in his schemes, and filled them with his agents, and made them acquainted with his name. Nations have taken cognizance of his individual enterprises, statesmen have studied them, and laboured to favour or thwart them, and among them there has been one at least, as this book proves, where failure was a general misfortune for mankind.

We say again, we wish to see the life of such a man set forth by a master hand, and we hope we may yet receive it from that of the annalist of Astoria. It should be written by the

consent and with the aid of its subject—it should be conceived in a commercial spirit, and should detail enterprises which none but he could communicate: whose motives, connection, and ramifications he only could disentangle and display. Such a book would bear to the history of a great commercial country the same relation that the life of an eminent warrior does to the history of a martial state. It follows, therefore, that as the honour and fame of a nation which grows great by the arts of peace are to those of a military one, so is the merchant individually to the individual warrior, and whoever disparages the species of distinction we are all now striving for, insults us both nationally and individually. Between the histories of war and peace, let the reader judge which is more worthy to be written, which more novel, and which more commonplace, and which casts the stronger light on the yearnings and strivings of the world that now is. For Agamemnon and Napoleon are gathered to the Lernæan hydra and the wild boar of Erymanthus: violence is entombed, and commerce is come forth, the twice blessed, to rule like mercy, giving gifts unto men.

There are yet some strange mists before our eyes, even in this free world, about those ideas of greatness and distinction, though every day, as we grow older, is helping to dispel them. A political puppet, if he happened to be a prime minister, was once a great man, decidedly; so was a military coxcomb, if he could contrive to make himself talked about. Yet the great object of the late remodellings of the world has been to dispense with both these sorts of pre-eminence by means of self-government and peace—and, accordingly, exactly in proportion to the advance of civilization is their decline; the one to a mere clerk of supplies and appropriations, the other to a simple police officer. For our own country, for the last half century, diplomacy and war have had little to do, and have raised but few sterling and unequivocal reputations. To these, as many as there are, we would yield their deserved respect, and, as few as they are, the peaceful aspect of the times gives promise (for which we thank God) that in future years the harvest will be less. Two of the greatest names our country has produced since it was free, are unquestionably Dewitt Clinton and Fulton, and with what are those names associated? With the alliance of art and nature, whose plenipotentiaries they were for a certain object, and that object was, in each case, the furtherance of commerce. Dewitt Clinton governed New York because he was made to govern it, and not because he was chosen. That he happened to be a governor was an accident, but God made him for a leader. He saw where our energies stagnated, and he gave them arteries and circulation, and brought the ocean into acquaintance with the lakes. Mr. Astor's enterprise to open a communication

between two oceans, was imagined in a similar spirit, and having imagined it, he was free from the next difficulty which met the projector of the Grand canal, we mean the necessity of conveying to other minds the views and convictions of his own, and persuading them to co-operate. On the contrary, he used them without consulting them any farther than was necessary to enable each agent to play his part; he said as the Centurion saith, Do this, and he guarantied them that they should be paid, and it was done. Here, then, is the use of wealth, that it can command; it is power, and such use of it is honour and fame.

Mr. Astor has never regarded his fortune as an end, but as a means, as an instrument with which other and greater ends might be wrought out. He has said that in his active days he never had so much money as he really wanted to *use*, and that his views were always beyond his means. Over what field those views extended, the history of Astoria shows; and the disastrous part of it brings out in strong relief a character whose perfect simplicity and quietness have usually, during a long life, kept its inherent energies aloof from observation. There are enough sordid examples in the world for the declaimers against the pursuit of wealth to dilate upon, but the story of Astoria tells the other way. It will live to the honour of its founder; and the most malevolent or bigoted disparager of commercial illustration must confess, at least in this instance, that

—“something of the spirit of old Greece  
Flash'd on his soul a few heroic rays,  
Such as lit onward to the Golden Fleece  
His predecessors in the Colchian days.”

We are sorry to observe that these volumes are very carelessly printed. Some gross mistakes occur repeatedly—as *set* for *sit* (vol. i. pp. 78, 90); would *lay* for would *lie* (vol. i. p. 230, vol. ii. p. 168); *council*, for *counsel*, appears once (vol. i. p. 37); *notions* for *motives*, as it would seem (id. p. 203); and “in his own land,” apparently for “with his own hand” (id. p. 226). If this last is not a misprint, it requires a note to explain it. There are also occasional inaccuracies of style—as the importance *to keep*, for *of keeping* (id. p. 122); seventh *instant*, for “seventh of the month” (id. p. 168); and a passage where Mr. Irving says all hands were busy about something, while others were employed on something else (id. p. 97). These are trifles, and a second edition will no doubt make them all right.

We have taken up this book as we found it, and have penned these remarks upon it with pleasure, zeal, and interest; but, in dismissing the subject, there remains a dissatisfaction, an incompleteness, a curiosity which we suppose cannot be ministered to nor removed. We should have wished to see the adventures of the subordinate agents thrown more into the background,

and the projector of the enterprise brought more into relief; we should have wished to be made acquainted with him—to be told of his views, his hopes, his fears, and the details of what he did and attempted in this matter, and of the springs he brought into play at home and abroad, and the causes that impeded their operation; we should have wished to see him figure as the hero of a great commercial epic, so to speak, and the first one perhaps purely commercial, for which the world has furnished the material, since Jason. But to all this there were insuperable obstacles in the characters of all the parties concerned; and much development of fact, beyond what has been given, might have been made, but for interests still existing which such disclosures might have injured. Had they been made they would only have shown a greater extent of the same energy, and perseverance, and moral courage, for which all we have already seen is so remarkable.

There is one subject on which we shall say a few words here, to contradict a rumour that this work had been ordered by Mr. Astor from Mr. Irving, executed as a job, and paid for with a stipulated price. We have taken some pains to enquire into this, and we have information which enables us to state positively that Mr. Irving has received no compensation nor pecuniary favours of any sort from Mr. Astor, directly or indirectly. As a friend of Mr. Astor, Mr. Irving could not but know something of this story; it interested his curiosity; he talked often with Mr. Astor about it, and chose it himself as a subject for his pen, brought it out at his own risk and expense, and as yet it has been by no means profitable compared with most of his other works. That Mr. Astor would have aided its execution, and willingly, no one can doubt; but, from a delicacy easily to be appreciated, Mr. Irving would not allow the shadow of such an interference to fall on the performance.

We shall conclude with an extract chosen from many we had marked to show Mr. Irving at home in the wilderness, and dealing, with his congenial humour, with its adventures. It is an onslaught of the Indians upon a party who were bearing despatches to Mr. Astor, the loss of which of course made it necessary for the bearer to go back to the fort for more; and the unlucky fantasy which possessed the Indians in relation to them was one more link in the chain of Astorian fatalities.

"The worthies of Wish-ram, however, were not disposed to part so easily with their visitors. Their cupidity had been quickened by the plunder which they had already taken, and their confidence increased by the impunity with which their outrage had passed. They resolved, therefore, to take further toll of the travellers, and, if possible, to capture the tin case of despatches; which, shining conspicuously from afar, and being guarded by John Reed with such especial care, must, as they supposed, be 'a great medicine.'

"Accordingly, Mr. Stuart and his comrades had not proceeded far in the canoes, when they beheld the whole rabble of Wish-ram stringing in groups along the bank, whooping and yelling, and gibbering in their wild jargon; and when they landed below the falls, they were surrounded by upwards of four hundred of these river ruffians, armed with bows and arrows, war clubs, and other savage weapons. These now pressed forward, with offers to carry the canoes and effects up the portage. Mr. Stuart declined forwarding the goods, alleging the lateness of the hour; but, to keep them in good humour, informed them that, if they conducted themselves well, their offered services might probably be accepted in the morning; in the mean while, he suggested that they might carry up the canoes. They accordingly set off with the two canoes on their shoulders, accompanied by a guard of eight men well armed.

"When arrived at the head of the falls, the mischievous spirit of the savages broke out, and they were on the point of destroying the canoes—doubtless with a view to impede the white men from carrying forward their goods, and laying them open to further pilfering. They were with some difficulty prevented from committing this outrage by the interference of an old man, who appeared to have authority among them; and, in consequence of his harangue, the whole of the hostile band, with the exception of about fifty, crossed to the north side of the river, where they lay in wait, ready for further mischief.

"In the mean time, Mr. Stuart, who had remained at the foot of the falls with the goods, and who knew that the proffered assistance of the savages was only for the purpose of having an opportunity to plunder, determined, if possible, to steal a march upon them, and defeat their machinations. In the dead of the night, therefore, about one o'clock, the moon shining brightly, he roused his party, and proposed that they should endeavour to transport the goods themselves above the falls, before the sleeping savages could be aware of their operations. All hands sprang to the work with zeal, and hurried it on in the hope of getting all over before daylight. Mr. Stuart went forward with the first loads, and took his station at the head of the portage, while Mr. Reed and Mr. M'Lellan remained at the foot to forward the remainder.

"The day dawned before the transportation was completed. Some of the fifty Indians who had remained on the south side of the river perceived what was going on, and, feeling themselves too weak for an attack, gave the alarm to those on the opposite side, upwards of a hundred of whom embarked in several large canoes. Two loads of goods yet remained to be brought up. Mr. Stuart despatched some of the people for one of the loads, with a request to Mr. Reed to retain with him as many men as he thought necessary to guard the remaining load, as he suspected hostile intentions on the part of the Indians. Mr. Reed, however, refused to retain any of them, saying that M'Lellan and himself were sufficient to protect the small quantity that remained. The men accordingly departed with the load, while Reed and M'Lellan continued to mount guard over the residue. By this time a number of the canoes had arrived from the opposite side. As they approached the shore, the unlucky tin box of John Reed, shining afar like the brilliant helmet of Euryalus, caught their eyes. No sooner did the canoes touch the shore, than they leaped forward on the rocks, set up a war-whoop, and sprang forward to secure the glittering prize. Mr. M'Lellan, who was at the river bank, advanced to guard the goods, when one of the savages attempted to hoodwink him with his buffalo robe with one hand,



and to stab him with the other. M'Lellan sprang back just far enough to avoid the blow, and, raising his rifle, shot the ruffian through the heart.

"In the mean time, Reed—who, with the want of forethought of an Irishman, had neglected to remove the leathern cover from the lock of his rifle—was fumbling at the fastenings, when he received a blow on the head with a war club that laid him senseless on the ground. In a twinkling he was stripped of his rifle and pistols, and the tin box, the cause of all this onslaught, was borne off in triumph." Vol. II. pp. 96—98.

---

ART. V.—*Memoirs of Aaron Burr, with Miscellaneous Selections from his Correspondence.* By MATTHEW L. DAVIS. In two volumes. Vol. I. New York: 1836. pp. 436.

This volume has, no doubt, in one respect been a very successful literary enterprise. *It has sold well.* The subject was one of adventure and peculiar interest, and public curiosity, stimulated as well by the ominous seclusion to which the hero of the narrative had for a long period condemned himself, as by a thousand and one hints of new disclosures and unsuspected revelations, was directed with singular intensity to this biography. Besides the interest of the theme itself, resort had very fairly been had to the artifices which the book-making and book-selling community so well understand, to make the world believe that something more than ordinary was coming. The author, too, Mr. Matthew L. Davis, is, if we mistake not, an accredited contributor to the daily press, having thus great facilities to herald the coming biography, and was regarded as an individual who not only had the advantage of intimate personal association with the hero of his story, but who, from his habits of life, was supposed eminently to possess the talent of close and minute observation, and to deserve all confidence for accuracy and impartiality. The result, as to mere dollars and cents, has been just what might be anticipated. The volume has been very cheap to its proprietor and very dear to the public, and we believe we do not misrepresent public opinion, (we are sure we describe sound critical judgment,) when we say that in precise proportion to the avidity with which the book was sought on its first appearance has been the disappointment its perusal has occasioned. Mr. Davis tells us on his title page, that he comes "to bury Cæsar, not to praise him," and literally does he, in one sense, comply with his promise, for if ever the ashes of the dead were hurried ingloriously to their resting place, they have

been in the case of Mr. Davis's illustrious friend. The dim lamp which the careless chronicler holds over the grave scarcely gives light enough to guide the curious to the spot, and the recorded obsequies of one who, with all his faults, was a man of high promise and eminent talent, would far better suit the veriest beggar in reputation that ever occupied a paragraph in history. Had Aaron Burr been a much worse man than he was, his memory deserved a better fate than to be slurred over in this way. Had he been a moral leper without a single good trait to redeem him, which he certainly was not, his talents, his military daring, his intellectual energy, and the high political station from which he fell, entitled him to exemption from careless neglect. Better would it be to have dragged the body of the fallen tribune through the streets of Rome, and in the face of the multitude thrown it into the Tiber, than to have smuggled it to the grave with the consummate carelessness with which Mr. Matthew L. Davis has treated his "Cæsar."

We pronounce this harsh judgment with sincere regret, but from an imperative sense of justice. The biography of our country, in its revolutionary era at least, is a sacred theme which we cannot bear to see trifled with. It is consecrated by the purity and sublimity of the cause which was at stake and hallowed by the atmosphere of virtue and high individual morality which encompassed it. Not that all the great men of the revolution were beyond reproach, either in their public or their private characters. The book before us shows us one exception, and others may no doubt be suggested. Still the instances are inappreciably rare, and the vast amount of public and private virtue which distinguishes our early history must be admitted to form its most beautiful characteristic. Like the snowy summits of the Cordilleras breaking through a dark curtain of cloud, (a sight we once remember to have seen, and who that has seen will ever forget it,) and glowing in the rich sunset of the tropics, are, to the mental vision, the accumulated virtue and wisdom of the revolution in comparison with the misty elevations to which the achievements of our day aspire. The contrast is as painful as it is distinct. We are not croakers by temperament, nor habitual mourners over the degeneracy of the times. But what we hint at is too palpable to be mistaken. The chivalry of public virtue at least is gone; the romantic purity of patriotism is blurred over; personal integrity and morality have found a counterfeit in what are called "party claims;" and the reward of an approving conscience—the precious recompense of a sense of duty performed, beyond which our revolutionary ancestors rarely looked, has its substitute in the attainment of "office and the spoils of political victory." With what dispenser of public honours and emoluments would private moral worth

now outweigh political influence? Let the history of the times answer.<sup>1</sup>

“Such were not they of old, whose temper’d blades  
Dispersed the shackles of usurped control,  
And hew’d them link from link; then Albion’s sons  
Were sons indeed; they felt a filial heart  
Beat high within them at a mother’s wrongs;  
And shining each in his *domestic sphere*  
Shone brighter still when called to public view.”

We have always thought, that to the private worth and personal merits of our revolutionary ancestors justice has not been done. Every biographer makes his narrative purely the record of public service and neglects the details of personal incidents and private virtues, which should shine so conspicuously in the history of the times. Few who have bestowed any attention on the subject in this aspect, can fail to be deeply impressed with the new claims on gratitude and veneration which thence originate. Our ancestors drew their swords for opinions' sake, for, in fact, they were not harshly governed ; and having drawn it, thought no sacrifice too great for the contest. In private life, the majority of them were men of stern morality and high integrity, whose patriotism and domestic virtues had the same firm basis. They had, too, the reward of social and familiar virtue, in the devoted affection of their families and friends, and in those domestic comforts which that affection so bountifully supplies. Yet all this, the fruits of this familiar love, the delights of this domestic circle, they sacrificed without hesitation at the call of their indignant country—and sacrificed them, too, though not without regret, at least without a murmur. We have, in our mind's eye, at this moment, more than one instance of this patient endurance and personal sacrifice ;—of men who,

'The literary reader will pardon the extract, in a note, of Milton's eloquent vituperation of his own disjointed times:—"This is the masterpiece of a modern politician, how to qualify the sufferance of the people to the length of that foot which is to tread on their necks; how rapine may serve itself with the fair and honourable pretences of public good; how the puny law may be brought under the wardship and control of will: in which attempt, if they fall short, then must a superficial colour of reputation by all means, direct or indirect, be gotten to wash over the unsightly bruise of honour. To make men governable in this manner, their precepts mainly tend to break a national spirit and courage, till having thus disfigured and made men beneath men, as Juno in the fable of Io, they deliver up the poor transformed heifer of the commonwealth, to be stung and vexed with the brize and goad of oppression, under the custody of some Argus, with a hundred eyes of jealousy. To be plainer, sir, how to solder, how to stop a leak, how to keep the floating carcass of a crazy and diseased monarchy or state betwixt wind and water, swimming still upon her own dead lees, that, now, is the deep design of a modern politician."—*Prose Works*, vol. i. p. 14.

at the beginning of the war, abandoned their cherished homes and families, their wives and children, for the distant camp and council, endured separation for nearly the whole revolution, with short intervals of reunion; and when the war was over, returned to their firesides with shattered health and broken spirits, only to breathe their last amid the tears of those they loved so dearly. We hope to see the history of this personal endurance, and these sacrifices, some day written far better than it ever has been. It will be a brilliant and a useful memorial. It will point the moral of our revolutionary story, and will teach us how strictly just the final judgment of history is on private virtues or vices, as tinging the public character of the aspirant for fame. The late Mr. Canning, himself an example of the association of private morality and political eminence, in a critical essay published in the early part of his life, enforced the necessity of private biography as illustrative of public character, with a vigour of thought and elegance of diction which will be our apology for inserting it here. We quote it as the testimony of the statesman, as well as of the man:—"By the union of political history with views of private life and manners, a new and independent spring of pleasure is opened to us in the contemplation of that sympathy and resemblance which generally subsists between the public and private characters of men. 'It is impossible' (said an illustrious master of eloquence) 'that the unnatural father, the hater of his own blood, should be an able and faithful leader of his country; that the mind which is insensible to the intimate and touching influence of domestic affection, should be alive to the remoter impulse of patriotic feeling; that private depravity should consist with public virtue.' The sentiment is here expressed with all the vehemence of a political chief, conscious of the amiableness of his own domestic life, and inveighing against a rival too strong in most points to be spared when he was found weak. It has, however, a foundation of truth, and may suggest the advantages resulting from the blended species of biography of which we have spoken. Even in the anomalous cases where no correspondence, or no close correspondence, can be traced between the more retired and the more conspicuous features of a character, a comparative exhibition of the two has its use, and will furnish the philosopher with many interesting themes of reflection. The chief use, however, of such an exhibition resides in the rule and not in the exceptions, and belongs not to the speculative few, but to the active many. By associating, in the view of mankind, whatever is amiable, and, as it were, *feminine* in the human character, with whatever in it is commanding and Herculean, it takes advantage of our veneration for the latter to betray us

into a respect for the former. It gives dignity to the humbler virtues and domestic charities in the eyes both of public and private men, both of those who aspire to become great, and of those who are content to remain little; and thus secures the vital interests of society." If our public men, we repeat, cherishing this philosophic truth, could be tempted to the retrospect of the illuminated record of our early history, and be made to believe that it affords an attainable standard of public virtue, and genuine though exalted patriotism: if our children could be taught that on these pages they will find models of heroic virtue, private and public, as worthy of imitation as any on the scroll of ancient story, might we not yet hope for the dawning of a brighter day on our beloved country, when charlatans and "frontier Catilines" shall be driven from the abused confidence of the people to the appropriate abodes of political piracy and crime.

But even the personal history of those who either stained our annals by public delinquency like Arnold, or who, with claims on gratitude for eminent public services like Burr, bore the merited stigma of private immorality, should be written, and written honestly and fairly, if with no other object than to make the contrast of patriotism and virtue more distinct. We have a right to expect just as much from the biographer of crime as from the biographer of virtue, especially if, as in the case of Mr. Davis, he makes pretensions to impartiality, and promises to do strict justice, even in condemnation of his friend. We shall have occasion, presently, to show in this instance how illusory the pretension is, and what gross injustice the feeble condemnation of admitted vices and follies does. But first, a word or two more of general remark.

Whenever an American Plutarch shall arise, before whose vision no clouds of popular delusion shall float, and who can discover and will dare tell the truth, we may hope to see the parallel drawn between two of our public men, who, with fates widely different, had many points of resemblance and contrast. We mean, with deference to popular prejudice be it spoken, a parallel between Thomas Jefferson and Aaron Burr, the one the luckiest, as the other was confessedly the most unfortunate, of our American public men. We believe the time is passing and will pass full soon, when admiration of Mr. Jefferson's services and virtues will be predominant in the public mind. Truth and historical justice have had a hard struggle with prejudice and popular delusion, and perhaps would have been worsted in the contest, but for the aid which Mr. Jefferson himself gave them in his historical testament. Like Bolingbroke's bequest to Mallet, he left a charged weapon in the hand of his executors, to be fired off after his death. Luckily

for the cause of truth, it exploded so near his grave that it only mutilated the monument which enthusiasm was generously raising to his memory, and Mr. Jefferson, to the eye of candour and just perception of right and wrong, stands revealed in colours with which, whilst living, his worst enemy would not have ventured to paint him. Until the year 1804, when, by the commission of an act of blood which shocked public sentiment, Colonel Burr was driven into seclusion and obscurity, he and Mr. Jefferson may be regarded as political rivals, whose chances of success were nearly balanced. In talent and intellectual pretensions there was no very palpable disparity between them, though the career of each, even in civil life, had been widely different, the one having great eminence as a public writer, (if we may use the phrase,) but never being able to command success or to take an active part in deliberative discussion, whilst the other was eminent alike at the bar and in the senate, as a prompt, vigorous, and powerful debater. On this point, besides the testimony of Mr. Davis himself, (which, by the by, we are glad sometimes to be able to refer to,) we have the strong expression of that veteran republican, John Taylor, of Caroline, who, in the debate in the senate of the United States in 1793, on Mr. Gallatin's eligibility, addressed a note to Burr, saying, "We shall leave you to reply to King (Rufus): first, because you desired it; second, all depends on it; no one else can do it, and the audience will expect it." While Burr, therefore, has left no such record of his intellectual power as the "Declaration of Independence," or the diplomatic correspondence with Hammond and Genet, there is abundant traditionary evidence of his being gifted, in no ordinary degree, with that rival talent which seeks all its honour in contemporary praise. So far as mere revolutionary services enter into the estimate, we speak more especially of military services, the disparity was still less strongly marked. From the period when, with all the ardour of enthusiasm, Burr joined the band of adventurers which marched to Quebec under Arnold, to the close of the campaign of 1779, he was in active service, and throughout enjoyed high distinction for what chiefly adorns the military character, undaunted and unhesitating courage, and a calmness of deliberation and accuracy of judgment, which no emergency, however untoward, could discompose. At Quebec, Long Island, New York, White Plains, Monmouth, and New Haven, he was in the foremost rank of danger, and retired from service only when compelled to do so by declining health and the effects of uninterrupted fatigue and exposure on a frame constitutionally feeble. Mr. Jefferson's military career, we believe, is limited to his unsuccessful defence, when governor of Virginia, of the

James River settlements against Arnold in 1781, and to his escape from Tarleton at Carter's mountain.

When, on the termination of the war and the formation of the constitution, the public men of this country arrayed themselves under the banner of antagonist parties, Burr and Jefferson were found in the same ranks—the ranks, too, which were destined to be politically triumphant. And here we are struck with a sympathetic action, strongly illustrative of that unison of spirit which, throughout, seems to have guided these two distinguished men. The military men of the revolution, who in all their trials had found none harder to bear than the want of a government compact and strong enough to sustain itself, when the constitutional parties were formed, generally espoused what are now known as the federal principles. Hamilton, Knox, Lee, Lincoln, Wayne, Morgan, St. Clair, Davie, and Howard, were all federalists in principle as in practice.<sup>1</sup> They approved of the constitution, and they cordially sustained the first administration of the government. There was another class of men—men of the pen as well as of the sword—who, though not exactly harmonizing among themselves in doctrine with respect to the constitution, gave to Washington's administration a ready and resolute support. We refer to the leading statesmen of Virginia and the south—the Lees, Henry, Marshall, Harrison, Rutledge, the Pinckneys. Mr. Madison is the only eminent exception, and, but for the predominating influence of Mr. Jefferson, it is fair to presume that he would not have estranged himself from his true companions, but, following out the abstract opinions he had taught in the pages of "The Federalist," and the honest dictates of his heart, would have been found with Hamilton and Jay, by the side of Washington.<sup>2</sup> With neither of these two bands, of statesmen

<sup>1</sup> Our navy was also poisoned with federalism. Barry, Decatur, (father and son) Talbot, Truxton, Dale, and Preble, were active adherents of the party; and Mr. Jefferson, in a letter to Robert R. Livingston, in 1799 thus condemns the infant navy for its political heresies:—"The post which circumstances constrain us to propose to you, is the secretaryship of the navy. Republicanism is so rare in those parts which possess nautical skill, that I cannot find it allied there to the other qualifications." We can fancy the spectres of the Vengeance and Insurgent flitting before his vision when he wrote this unjust denunciation of as true republicans as ever shed their blood for their country.

<sup>2</sup> That in this respect we may not be supposed to do injustice to Mr. Madison, for whose character we have the highest respect, we will cite the authority of a writer who thought adhesion to Mr. Jefferson a cardinal virtue. In a note to an article on the Bank of the United States in the 15th No. of the Southern Review, written soon after Mr. Madison's letter to Mr. Charles Jared Ingersoll in favour of the bank, the writer says: "When Mr. Jefferson lived, Mr. Madison went right; his

or soldiers, did Burr or Mr. Jefferson unite. While in the mind of the former, sympathy with his ancient comrades in arms was wholly inadequate to conquer untiring personal antipathies and unmitigated hate, the latter, on his return from Europe, redolent with French philosophy and French politics, submitted to adhesion just so long as official connection continued, and not a moment longer. Burr, a legitimate survivor of the Conway conspiracy, was found along with General Gates and one or two others, in willing opposition to the administration. While Mr. Jefferson (the parallel being still undisturbed), disdaining communion with the high spirited chivalry and patriotic wisdom of the south, willingly surrendered himself to the councils of factious hostility.

When, at a rather later period, the administration and opposition parties became more distinctly organised, Col. Burr and Mr. Jefferson may be said to have had nearly equal pretensions in the ranks of the party they joined. Mr. Jefferson was the leader, "*primus inter pares*," of the new democracy of Virginia. Burr was the leader, without a rival, of the democracy of New York. In these relations, the advantage as to mere partisanship was clearly on the side of Burr. Mr. Jefferson's principles, and his party, were far from being predominant in Virginia. They had to contend there with a formidably adverse power, the principles and popularity of the president, whose purity and patriotism no responsible public man *then* dared to question. A counterbalancing power less effectual than General Washington's personal and political influence and character would have been sooner overcome; but as it was, such was its weight, that so long as it was felt, the contest of antagonist principles in Virginia was a close one. Patrick Henry, than whom, so far as the principles of the constitution were involved, the federal party had no more determined opponent, was too honourably conscious of what was due to the president ever to be decoyed into opposition, or into cordial union with the party that was then acting adversely to the administration. "I love him," said this patriarch of democracy, speaking to Mr. Blair, of Marshall, in 1799, "because he feels and acts like a republican and an American; and I know but one other who equally deserves my confidence." And in a private letter to the same gentleman, written a few weeks before his death, he uses this language, which we cannot help quoting, if it be relevant only to show that the fountain of Virginia democracy then poured forth pure

original anti-republican tendencies were suppressed, and he became an able and strenuous advocate of the people's rights. Since Mr. Jefferson's death, he has chosen to coalesce with men so many grades inferior to his own talents and standing, that we look at the change with surprise and regret." We need not say we are far from endorsing this doctrine.



waters at its head. "The conduct of France has made it the interest of the great family of mankind to wish the downfall of her present government; because its existence is incompatible with that of all others within its reach. And while I see the danger that threatens ours, from her intrigues and her arms, I am not so much alarmed as at the apprehension of her destroying the great pillars of all government and social life. I mean virtue, morality, and religion. This is the armour—and this alone—which renders us invincible. These are the tactics we should study. If we lose these we are conquered—fallen, indeed. In vain may France show and vaunt her diplomatic skill and brave troops; so long as our manners and principles remain sound, there is no danger. *But believing, as I do, that these are in danger; that infidelity, in its broadest sense, under the name of philosophy, is fast spreading; and that, under the patronage of French manners and principles, every thing that ought to be dear to men is covertly and successfully assailed,* I feel the value of those men amongst us, who hold out to the world the idea that our continent is to exhibit an originality of character; and that, instead of that imitation and inferiority which the countries of the old world have been in the habit of exacting from the new, we shall maintain that high ground upon which nature has placed us, and that Europe will alike cease to rule us, and gives us modes of thinking."

With such "deluded democrats" in his own ranks, or with so predominant an adverse influence as was Washington's in Virginia, Colonel Burr and his party had not to contend in New York. Hamilton, King, and Jay, though a powerful triumvirate, were not invincible by the machinations and intrigues which Burr and his political sappers brought to bear on them, and which only failed when directed to undermine and destroy the deep-seated popularity of the president. At the election of 1800, owing to their active efforts, the democratic ticket was successful in New York, and Jefferson and Burr, by a most unlooked for coincidence, were placed before the world as the two individuals who most equally divided the affection and confidence of the great party then commencing its dominion in our country. As is well known, each of the two had seventy-three votes, and no election being made by the people it devolved on the house of representatives, which body determined the doubtful chance in favour of Mr. Jefferson. Nor should it

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Jefferson felt this division in his own ranks most sensibly. In a letter to John Taylor, dated Monticello, Nov. 26, 1798, he says, "I should not apprehend (danger) out of the state, if all was sound within. But there is a most respectable part of our state who have been enveloped in the X. Y. Z. delusion, and who destroy our unanimity for the present moment." Vol. III. p. 403.

be forgotten, that Mr. Jefferson himself, at this time, regarded Colonel Burr as one of the pillars of the democratic party. As soon as the triumph of that party was ascertained, but before it was even suspected that the two leaders would themselves come in conflict, Mr. Jefferson wrote to Colonel Burr as follows: "While I must congratulate you, my dear sir, on the issue of this contest, because it is more honourable, and doubtless more grateful to you than any station within the competence of the chief magistrate, yet, for myself, and for the substantial service of the public, I feel most sensibly the loss we sustain of your aid in our new administration. It leaves a chasm in my arrangements which cannot adequately be filled up. I had endeavoured to compose an administration, whose talents, *integrity*, names and dispositions, should at once inspire unbounded confidence in the public mind, and insure a perfect harmony in the conduct of the public business. I lose you from the list, and am not sure of all the others. Accept my affectionate and respectful salutations, &c."

And again, as an odd contrast with the expressions of personal regard and confidence in the above extract, though in perfect consonance with the opinion of Burr's high political standing, we find Mr. Jefferson, in his "Ana," under date of 26th January, 1804, saying:—"I never saw Colonel Burr till he came as a member of the senate, (1791). His conduct very soon inspired me with distrust. I habitually cautioned Mr. Madison against trusting him too much. . . . With these impressions of Colonel Burr, there had never been an intimacy between us, and but little association. When I destined him for a high appointment, it was out of respect for the favour he had obtained with the republican party, by his extraordinary exertions and success in the New York election of 1800."

With the election of 1801, the historical parallel may be said to cease. Mr. Jefferson became president, with unbounded popularity and unmeasured influence; and Burr, submitting to the common fate of all who do not vault from the vice presidential to the presidential chair, was comparatively forgotten, until the unfortunate duel with General Hamilton drove him into obscurity, from which, except in the mad Mississippi attempt in 1806, he never afterwards emerged. Abandoned by his political friends, who had gone to worship the rising sun of democracy, pursued by the unmitigated hatred of Mr. Jefferson, whose philosophy never taught him to forget the fright of 1800, detested by his political enemies, who saw in him not only the active agent of their defeat, but the destroyer of their leader, the last twenty-five years of his life were passed in utter oblivion

<sup>1</sup> Jefferson's Works, iii. 445.

<sup>2</sup> Id. iv. 520.

and insignificance. Those of his countrymen who only knew him personally during this long void of fame can scarcely realize what he once was, and what, in the fair calculation of chances, he might have been.

While Mr. Jefferson and Colonel Burr were friends and political associates, there was between them, on most points perfect unison of opinion—on one or two of them, not entirely uninteresting, the volume before us throws some light. We presume that it is no longer a matter of doubt that there was, on the part of Mr. Jefferson, not only a bitter but an active hostility to General Washington. Those who were attentive observers of the times, opponents as well as friends, never doubted it, and Mr. Jefferson's memoirs and letters fully confirm it. The idle distinction between opposition to men and opposition to measures, even if ever available, will not serve to exculpate Mr. Jefferson from the charge of an insidious and active hostility uttered, on all occasions, when there seemed to be no danger of disclosure to its unsuspecting object, to every measure of the administration after he left it, and to much that was done before. In his letters to his foreign correspondents (e. g. to Mazzei) he palpably libelled the president for his official course and scarcely troubled himself to draw the faintest line between personal and official acts.

Burr's hostility to Washington was unmitigated, but it was not disguised, and from the date of his unexplained quarrel with the commander in chief in 1776 to the hour of his death his purpose seems to have been unwavering to lose no opportunity to depreciate his character and talents, and to question the purity of his motives. His shrewdness, however, convincing him that it was in vain to attempt to inspire any portion of the American people with even a suspicion of the integrity and spotless purity of the father of his country, his anxious effort seems to have been to show the world that Washington was a man without any extraordinary reach of mind, and especially destitute of military ability. Mr. Davis tells us in his preface that Colonel Burr was especially anxious to mingle the tale of personal grievances with this memoir, and to make it the medium of a harsh critique on General Washington's military character. This, the biographer very prudently refused to do, and the refusal seems for a time to have put in jeopardy Mr. Davis's literary project. The curious reader may collate with this trait of Burr, Mr. Jefferson's delineations of Washington's character, in which, if he finds an involuntary and honest tribute to his virtue, it is paid uniformly at the expense of his abilities. Sometimes, as in the celebrated letter to Doctor Jones, the portrait is so highly finished, praise and censure approval and doubt are so interwoven, that it is no easy matter

to say which predominates ; but, on the other hand, when the result is less elaborate, and natural impulse guides the pen, it is easy to detect the motive which impels him. Every one familiar with the history and writings of Washington (and we must thank an indefatigable contemporary for giving us all an opportunity of becoming familiar with them) knows, that at no period of his life were his energies more perfect, than from the year 1794 to the end of his eventful career, during more than a half of which time he continued president, and for a portion of the rest was in the performance of actual and perplexing duty as commander in chief of the provisional army. This is indisputable truth, which he that reads may know, and yet Mr. Jefferson, who, unlike his former friend and rival, Burr, had no prudent Mr. Davis at hand to chasten his animosities, in putting the seal on his "Ana," in February, 1818, thus characterises the close of Washington's great career:—

"From the moment of my retiring from the administration, the Federalists got unchecked hold of General Washington. His memory was sensibly impaired by age,"—(Washington in 1794 was but sixty-two, and Jefferson, when he wrote this elegy on departed intellect, was seventy-five)—"the firm tone of his mind, for which he was remarkable, was beginning to relax, its energy was abated, a listlessness of labour, a desire for tranquillity had crept on him, and a willingness to let others act, and even think, for him. . . . Understanding, moreover, that I disapproved of the British treaty, and copiously nourished with falsehoods by a malignant neighbour of mine, who ambitioned to be his correspondent, he had become alienated from myself personally, as from the republican body, generally, of his fellow citizens ; and he wrote the letters to Mr. Adams and Mr. Carroll, over which, in devotion to his imperishable fame, we must for ever weep as monuments of mortal decay."<sup>1</sup>

The most malignant limner of the Conway cabal could not have more grossly caricatured the last scene of Washington's life, or made more graphically distinct the decrepit figure of the dotard patriot tottering to his grave unsustained by the only hand, unsolaced by the only counsel, on which Mr. Jefferson modestly thought he could securely rely.

When Mr. Jefferson's executor published his *Memoirs and Correspondence* in 1829, those whose memories were assailed in their encyclopediacal pages, had not more reason to complain than those who, according to Mr. Jefferson's account, were the tale-bearers for his contemporary records. All the gossip there registered has its pedigree minutely set forth, and is traced from the last endorser backward. Amongst those most frequently

<sup>1</sup> *Jefferson's Works*, iv. 452.

cited as authority for the rumours of the day, and who doubtless little dreamed that after the lapse of more than thirty years, all the details of current rumour which, as such, they carried to the credulous secretary, would be published and they quoted as authority, were several who, it now appears, were in the same confidential relation to Colonel Burr. There was no tale of federal delinquency and Hamiltonian enormity which, according to Mr. Jefferson's journal, these worthy gentlemen did not credit and repeat, and to the narrative, the record shows their auditor lent a ready ear and most retentive memory. We need not cite instances of what we refer to; but find, in the volume before us, the following letter, which shows that Burr, too, was the recipient of the same things from the same sources. It is a letter from Dr. Rush to Colonel Burr, introducing Mr. John Beckley, an individual, who, we need not remind the reader, was a cherished disciple of Mr. Jefferson, and an accredited defamer, under the well-known signature of "The Calm Observer," of the Washington administration. We can imagine how grateful the writer's comment on Hamilton's funding system must have been to him to whom it was addressed:—

"PHILADELPHIA, 24th September, 1792.

"Dear Sir,—This letter will be handed you by *Mr. Beckley*. He possesses a fund of information about men and things. The republican ferment continues to work in our state; and the time, I think, is approaching very fast, when we shall universally reprobate the maxim of sacrificing public justice and national gratitude to the interested ideas of stock-jobbers and brokers, whether in or out of the legislature of the United States.

"Your friends every where look to you to take an active part in removing the *monarchical rubbish of our government*. It is time to speak out, or we are undone. The association in Boston augurs well. Do feed it by a letter to Mr. Samuel Adams. My letter will serve to introduce you to him, if enclosed in one from yourself.

"Yours sincerely,

—pp. 316, 317.

"BENJAMIN RUSH."

In the comparison which we have sketched, rather than illustrated, between Jefferson and Burr, we have been actuated by no disposition to exalt or depress either at the expense of the other, but chiefly by a wish to render to Colonel Burr that justice of which none have been so anxious to deprive him as his ancient fellow-labourers and associates. The aversion of the federalists to Burr, though founded in reason and justice, was a moderated and softened feeling in comparison with the rancorous animosity which Mr. Jefferson and his school exhibited towards him. The former saw, in his seclusion and obscurity, a judgment on his faults and follies, and were content without adding weight to the dispensation. Mr. Jefferson,

from the moment that Burr dared to aspire to the high honour for which his life of intrigue had been spent, never lost sight of his victim, and would, if we may judge him by his letters, have gladly seen him end his days upon the scaffold. After Burr had been once acquitted on the charge of treason, Mr. Jefferson wrote to Mr. Hay:—"We are strongly of opinion that the prosecution against Burr for misdemeanour should proceed at Richmond. If defeated, it will heap coals of fire on the head of the judge (Marshall): if successful, *it will give time to see whether a prosecution against him for treason can be instituted in any, and what other court.*"<sup>1</sup> Now, whatever Colonel Burr may have merited, at other hands, this persecution by Mr. Jefferson and his political friends was most unjust—morally and historically unjust. From 1789 to 1800 they were fellow labourers in the same political vineyard. They were the Theseus and Pirithous of their party. They were "the twinn'd lambs" of the same flock,

———"that did frisk i' the sun  
And bleat the one at the other."

"A letter," says Mr. Jefferson to Burr in 1797, "will, at any rate, give me an opportunity of recalling myself to your memory, and of *evincing my esteem for you.*"<sup>2</sup> Mr. Davis has not favoured the world with any of the responsive notes of Colonel Burr's affection.

We have endeavoured cursorily to show not only that, till the period when a conflict of interests occurred, they were closely united in personal and political communion, but, as we honestly believe, that their chances of success were nearly balanced and that there was little or no disparity of intellectual merit or pretension between them.<sup>3</sup> Burr had traits of character to which Mr. Jefferson had no claim whatever. They were both men of inordinate ambition. Mr. Jefferson masked his projects of personal and political advancement with all the adroitness of a practised and cautious engineer—never exposing himself to unnecessary risk, and directing his steps stealthily but surely to the object in view. Burr was a bad, *brave* man, of restless temperament and uncontrolled passions. While a soldier, there was no enterprise dangerous enough to appal him—no hazard which, in pursuit of his military ambition, he would not readily run. As a politician, he was a man of desperate expedients, unshaken resolution, and indefatigable perseverance. While Mr. Jefferson was enjoying all the lucky irre-

<sup>1</sup> Jefferson's Works, iv. 103.

<sup>2</sup> Id. iii. 356.

<sup>3</sup> In his deposition in the case of Burr v. Cheetham, Mr. James A. Bayard said, speaking of Colonel Burr, "I considered Mr. Burr personally better qualified to fill the office of president than Mr. Jefferson."

sponsibility of the vice presidential station, Burr was boldly fighting the battles of his party on the floor of the senate mingling in all discussions with ability and decision, and seeking rather than avoiding the responsibilities of a leader.

When, in 1794, Mr. King's modified bill to increase the standing army was under consideration on the last day of the session—it having passed all its preliminary stages by a decided majority—an unanimous vote was necessary on its final passage. By the rules of the senate, the question could not be put if any member objected. Colonel Burr objected, and the bill was thus defeated. It may well be doubted whether Mr. Jefferson's temperament qualified him for such thorough and responsible party duty. Whenever, in the course of his political or professional career, he was made the object of insult, Burr was always ready to resort to the soldier's last redress; and in his personal encounters, as well the bloodless one with Mr. Church as the mortal combat with General Hamilton, he exhibited a degree of courage and composure worthy his military reputation. Even when driven into retirement, (and here the contrast is honourable to Mr. Jefferson,) his chafed and wounded spirit led him to seek solace and excitement in his Mexican expedition and, after that failed, to sink back into gloomy misanthropy and, unless stung much wrongs his fame, freely to resort to desperate professional expedients.

The curfew of Mr. Jefferson's eventful day called him to the retirement of literary and philosophic ease, which, though ultimately and most unhappily disturbed by pecuniary embarrassments, was hallowed by the enthusiastic reverence of numerous political adherents, and by the devotion of the dominant party in our country. His death formed part of a romantic coincidence; and a nation, grateful for the good and generously forgetful of the evil he had done or wished to do, poured their willing lamentations o'er his tomb. Burr died at an equally advanced age in obscurity and neglect, without a friend or child to stand by his bed of pain. In what way his old age was passed—in what pursuits and with what feelings towards the world he was about to leave—Mr. Davis's next volume must inform us. His preface to the volume before us gives an incident and trait of character with which, and one of familiar and corresponding interest of Mr. Jefferson's, we close these general remarks, and this hasty parallel between these two eminent men.

On the 14th of February, 1818, in the calm and philosophic retirement of Monticello, Mr. Jefferson revised his "Ana," and put the seal of final approval on that malignant tissue of exploded calumny which he destined as a posthumous memorial of unconquered prejudices, to wound the feelings of the living

and insult the memory of the dead. After the lapse of twenty years from their dates, he gave to this record of detraction "a calm revisal" and final sanction!

At page 91 of Mr. Davis's Memoir, we learn that "for more than half a century of Colonel Burr's life, the female sex seemed to absorb his whole thoughts. His intrigues were without number; his conduct was most licentious; the sacred bonds of friendship were unhesitatingly violated when they operated as barriers to the indulgence of his passions. *For a long period of time he seemed to be gathering and carefully preserving every line written to him by a female, whether with or without reputation; and, when obtained, they were cast into one common receptacle*—the profligate and corrupt by the side of the thoughtless and betrayed victim. All were held as trophies of victory—all esteemed alike valuable. They were calculated to excite the sympathy of the brother, the parent, the husband. Why they were thus carefully preserved, is left to conjecture. Some of them had been penned more than sixty years." Without copying Mr. Davis's silly comment on such atrocious details, we ask the reader's attention, in conclusion, to these illustrations of the septuagenary labours and recreations of Mr. Jefferson and Mr. Burr. With them ends the parallel.

We must not, however, forget Mr. Davis's volume, and in recurring to it shall endeavour to substantiate the unfavourable opinion we have already expressed. What the biographer's means and opportunities of preparing a memoir of deep interest were, appears from the following extract from the preface:

"During a period of forty years I was intimately acquainted with Colonel Burr, and have reason to suppose that I possessed his entire confidence. Some time after his return from Europe in 1812, on different occasions, he suggested casually a wish that I would make notes of his *political* life. When the memoirs and correspondence of Mr. Jefferson were published, he was much excited at the statements which were made in his *Ana* respecting the presidential contest in congress in 1801.

"He procured and sent me a copy of the work, with a request that I would peruse the parts designated by him. From this time forward he evinced an anxiety that I would prepare his memoirs, offering me the use of all his private papers, and expressing a willingness to explain any doubtful points, and to dictate such parts of his early history as I might require. These propositions led to frequent and full conversations. I soon discovered that Colonel Burr was far more tenacious of his *military*, than of his professional, political, or moral character. His prejudices against General Washington were immovable: they were formed in the summer of 1776, while he resided at head-quarters, and they were confirmed unchangeably by the injustice which he said he had experienced at the hands of the commander in chief immediately after the battle of Long Island, and the retreat of the American army from the city of New York. These grievances he wished to mingle with his own history; and he was particularly anxious to examine the



military movements of General Washington on different occasions, but more especially at the battle of Monmouth, in which battle Colonel Burr commanded a brigade in Lord Stirling's division. I peremptorily refused entering upon any such discussion; and, for some time, all communication on the subject ceased.

"Colonel Burr, however, renewed the conversation relative to his memoirs, and agreed that any thing which might be written should be confined to himself. With this understanding I frequently visited him, and made notes under his dictation. I never asked him a question on any subject, or in relation to any man or measure, that he did not promptly and willingly answer. On his part there was no desire of concealment; nor did he ever express to me a wish to suppress an account of any act of his whole life. So far as I could judge, his only apprehensions were that '*kind friends*,' as he sometimes termed them, by attempts at explanation, might unintentionally misrepresent acts which they did not understand.

"I devoted the summer of 1835 to an examination of his letters and papers, of which there is an immense quantity. The whole of them were placed in my hands, to be used at my discretion. I was authorized to take from among them whatever I supposed would aid me in preparing the contemplated book." Pref. pp. 3, 4.

And that the reader may judge for himself what incidents this association and these materials, if properly improved, could have illustrated, we will give a summary of them as contained in this volume.

Aaron Burr was born at Newark, in the state of New Jersey, on the 6th February, 1756. His father, an eminent presbyterian divine of distinguished piety and learning, was the first president of Princeton college. His mother was the daughter of the celebrated Jonathan Edwards. Of the advantages of the guardianship of such parents their child was soon deprived, as both his father and mother died before he attained his third year. It is no idle speculation to attribute to this destitution of those guides who alone could have controlled his turbulent disposition, the early growth of the evil and unlicensed passions which so soon seem to have possessed young Burr, and which tenanted his bosom to the latest hour of his existence. In 1769 he entered college, and was graduated as bachelor of arts in 1772. During his collegiate and academic course, his habits and studies appear to have been most irregular, occasionally secluding himself from all companionship but that of his books, and then plunging into dissipation and pleasures of the most dissolute character.

While tracing his collegiate career, Mr. Davis—in order, we presume, to illustrate the very profound remark which he takes the trouble to quote, at page 25, from Boswell's Johnson, (the remark is Boswell's, not Johnson's,) "that, in following an eminent man from his cradle to his grave, every minute particular which can throw light on the progress of his mind is interest-

ing"—records an instance of college mischief on the part of his hero, with an historic gravity at which every one whose academic recollections are not obliterated will doubtless smile.

"In the college there was a literary club, consisting of the graduates and professors, and still known as *The Clio-Sophic Society*. Dr. Samuel S. Smith, subsequently president of the college, was then (1773) a professor. With him young Burr was no favourite, and their dislike was mutual. The attendance of the professors was expected to be regular. The members of the society in rotation presided over its deliberations. On a particular occasion it was the duty of young Burr to take the chair. At the hour of meeting he took his seat as president. Dr. Smith had not then arrived; but, shortly after the business commenced, he entered. Burr, leaning on one arm of the chair, (for, although now sixteen years of age, he was too small to reach both arms at the same time,) began lecturing Professor Smith for his non-attendance at an earlier hour—remarking that a different example to younger members was expected from him, and expressing a hope that it might not again be necessary to recur to the subject. Having finished his lecture, to the great amusement of the society, he requested the professor to resume his seat." Vol I. pp. 40, 41.

Now, whether Colonel Burr was the father of this antiquated joke, or not, we do not pretend to say; but certain it is that something very like it has been an heir-loom with every class that has been graduated from that time to the present. We remember to have seen, in a recent memoir of the late Sir Humphrey Davy by his brother, Dr. Davy, (a very interesting book, by the by, and one we will not insult by comparing it with Mr. Davis's volume,) an anecdote of the youthful philosopher not unlike the novel incident we have just mentioned. His biographer gravely relates, as a proof of precocious sagacity, that when little Humphrey, then but two years old, was told by his nurse, on the birth of a little brother or sister, that *his nose was put out of joint, he deliberately put his finger to his own nose*. Burr's calling Dr. Smith to order, from the chair of the Cliosophic society, was quite as worthy of historic record as Sir Humphrey's misunderstanding of the nursery taunt; though we presume Mr. Davis, from the gravity with which he tells the story, saw in the young Cliosoph the shadow of the future vice president, holding in check the zeal of John Randolph or Luther Martin on the impeachment of Judge Chase. In noticing this part of Burr's life, it should be remembered, to his honour, that whilst at college he formed relations of the most intimate and affectionate friendship with a number of individuals destined afterwards, with him, to stand prominently before their country;—men whose regard (and it appears to have been sincere in their youthful days) is no unsubstantial proof of merit in him who could conciliate it. If any thing could make us believe that even the biographer does injustice

to the moral character of his hero, it would be that among his nearest and dearest friends he counted three such men as William Patterson, William Bradford and Timothy Dwight—than whom (we record the recollections of those who knew them well) no purer men ever lived. Mr. Patterson, as is well known, was honoured in every relation of life, public and private, as a man of singular talent and integrity—was at one time governor of the state of New Jersey—a distinguished member of the convention that framed the constitution of the Union—and, soon after the organization of the government, was appointed by President Washington one of the judges of the supreme court of the United States. Mr. Bradford, whom Mr. Davis familiarly terms a “college chum of great merit,” died in 1795, before his fame had reached its promised height, and left behind him a reputation for equal talent and virtues. After occupying the highest rank in the judiciary of his native state, he too received an honourable testimonial of Washington’s confidence—being appointed, a short time before his death, and on the promotion of Mr. Randolph, attorney-general of the United States. The lustre of Dr. Dwight’s life and character needs no tribute here; they form an integral part of the moral and intellectual treasure of our country. These were the cherished and affectionate companions of Burr’s college hours. What a contrast do their virtuous and useful lives, their tranquil and lamented deaths, present to the troubled scene of his turbulent and disastrous career!

The outbreak of hostilities at Lexington and Bunker Hill, summoned all the adventurous youth of the colonies from the retirement of peaceful studies, and impelled them into action. Burr, disregarding the prudent counsels of friends and guardians, in company with his friend, Matthias Ogden, left his home, in New Jersey, and joined the army before Boston. His impetuous temperament being unsuited to the dull routine of a siege, he gladly availed himself of the opportunity of adventure afforded by the projected invasion of Canada, and joined the heroic band which, under the command of Arnold, penetrated the wilderness to Quebec. He was present at the attempt on that city, in December, 1775, and received the dying Montgomery in his arms. He was, in fact, the only officer of the advancing party that was not killed or wounded. At this time he was but nineteen years of age. In relation to his gallantry on this occasion, we find in this volume the following affectionate letter, from one of the three friends to whom we have just referred:—

“PHILADELPHIA, January 24th, 1776.

“Dear Burr,—I am informed a gentleman is just setting off for Quebec, and snatch the opportunity of at once condoling with you for the loss of

your brave general, and congratulating you on the credit you have gained in that action. 'Tis said you behaved well—you behaved gallantly. I never doubted but you would distinguish yourself, and your praise is now in every man's mouth. It has been my theme of late. I will not say I was perfectly disinterested in the encomiums I bestowed. You were a son of Nassau Hall, and reflected honour on the place of *my* education. You were my classmate and friend, and reflected honour on me. I make no doubt but your promotion will be taken care of. The gentlemen of the congress speak highly of you.

"Your affectionate

—p. 75.

"WILLIAM BRADFORD, JUN."

On leaving the army in Canada, in the spring of 1776, Burr returned to New York, and, through the intervention of some mutual friends, was attached, conditionally we are inclined to believe, as his name was never announced in general orders, to the military staff and family of the commander in chief. He continued in this relation to General Washington but for a few months, when, in consequence of a difference not yet explained, but to which, or rather to Mr. Davis's manner of treating it, we shall presently refer, he relinquished his post and was appointed aid to General Putnam. In this capacity he was actively engaged in the battle on Long Island, and in the subsequent operations during and after the evacuation of New York. During the retreat across New Jersey, in the fall and winter of 1776, Burr continued, we presume, with the army, and acted as aid to Putnam. We say this is our conjecture, for his biographer, through the interval which elapsed from September, 1776, to March, 1777, and during which the important military events at Trenton and Princeton occurred, has not condescended to tell us what his hero was doing, or even where he was, except by implication. We cannot refrain from incidentally showing in how summary a way this period is disposed of. The quotation will serve to show as well the historical accuracy as the literary merit of this abortive memoir. We especially admire the felicity of the quotation, with which the author ekes out even this meagre extract.

"After the abandonment of Manhattan Island by the American army, and some fighting in Westchester, General Washington crossed the North river with a part of the troops, and retreated through New Jersey. The movements of Lord Cornwallis left no doubt that the object of the British general was Philadelphia. He advanced rapidly from Brunswick upon Princeton, hoping, by forced marches, to get in the rear of the Americans. On the 8th of December, 1776, Washington crossed the Delaware, secured the boats, and broke down the bridges. Great apprehension and alarm for the safety of Philadelphia now existed. Judge Marshall, in his *Life of Washington*, says,

"In consequence of this state of things, the general advised that lines of defence should be drawn from the Schuylkill, about the heights of Springatsbury, eastward to the Delaware, and General Putnam was

ordered to superintend them.' Major Burr was now actively engaged; the aid-de-camp of General Putnam, whose esteem and unbounded confidence he continued to enjoy." pp. 108, 109.

This is literally all that Mr. Davis vouchsafes to tell us of a epoch of our history which has no equal in point of romantic interest, and for the stirring incidents of which Burr's daring temperament was peculiarly adapted. Mr. Davis, in another part of his work (p. 175), informs us, with admirable simplicity that "for history, Colonel Burr entertained a great contempt. He confided but little in its details;" and adds, the expression of his own sagacious conjecture, that "this prejudice was probably strengthened by the consideration that justice, in his opinion, had not been done to himself." Could he inspect the production of this chosen chronicler of his own actions, we are very sure his respect would not be heightened.

In the summer of 1777, Burr was appointed lieutenant-colonel of Malcolm's regiment; of which, however, owing to the inactive character of his senior officer, he had the actual command, and with which he was stationed, for the remainder of the campaign, in the neighbourhood of the North River. He then joined the main army, and went into winter quarters at the Valley Forge. At this time, though constantly receiving from the commander in chief signal marks of confidence in his military abilities and personal courage, he appears willingly to have united himself with what is known in our history as the Conway cabal, which, fomented and stimulated by the imbecile ambition of Gates, the hot-headed irritability of Lee, the wilful cunning of Conway himself, and the treacherous and wicked co-operation of other less prominent but as active agents, threatened the reputation of Washington, and the success of the great cause he was conducting. Whether Burr was in the battle of Germantown or not, his biographer has forgotten to mention. At Monmouth he was actively and brilliantly engaged; and in consequence of fatigue and extraordinary exposure on that occasion, his health was greatly and seriously impaired. From this time till he retired from the army, in 1779, he was stationed on the debateable ground above New York, and on the North River, and there rendered very valuable services in protecting the country from the incursions of the British and their adherents. His military life closed with his participation in the gallant defence of New Haven against Governor Tryon in July, 1779. Colonel Burr was accidentally in the town confined to his bed by sickness, when the enemy landed. Without a moment's hesitation, and with characteristic bravery, he mounted his horse, and placing himself at the head of a body of the college students, for a time successfully repelled the advancing foe. This incident, on which Burr himself, 1

the last hour of his life, seemed to dwell with the most gratification, his biographer thus oddly narrates—

"Some skirmishes soon ensued, and portions of the militia united with them. The British, ignorant of the force that might be presented, retired; but shortly returned, with several pieces of artillery, when a cannonading commenced, and the boys retreated in good order. *An American historian says*,—'The British entered the town after being much galled and harassed.' The slight check which they thus received, afforded an opportunity for the removal of some valuables, and many of the women and children." p. 174.

By the by, Mr. Davis's "impressed" quotations and "elegant extracts," from Boswell's Johnson (p. 25), Johnson's Life of Sydenham (Id.), Moore's Life of Lord Byron (p. 91), Marshall's Washington (p. 108), and Gordon's History (p. 126), are, in point of singular infelicity, unlike any thing we ever met with. Ensign Fluellen had a much more appropriate collection of recorded illustrations, and at least confined himself to the classic volume of antiquity. Mr. Davis drags in an unlucky quotation by the hair of the head, and then ungenerously leaves it to explain how it got there, and why it came.

Such was the military career of Colonel Burr, which, commencing at the age of nineteen, terminated at twenty-three, comprising within the period of rather more than four years, many of the most important and interesting incidents of the times. Of his military fame, Mr. Davis tells us Colonel Burr was justly proud, more jealous of it, indeed, than of his moral or intellectual character; and it may fairly be presumed that, during the "forty years' unreserved association" with his destined annalist, many a personal reminiscence—many an explanation or comment must have been imparted which we might expect to find recorded here. Yet we have searched the pages of Mr. Davis's stunted biography for something of the kind—but all in vain. Had he told the tale as it must have been told to him, it could not have been otherwise than deeply interesting. Had he narrated in detail (for the subject would have fairly authorized it) the incidents of such an adventurous life as it fell from the lips of him whose fame the book pretends to guard, he need have vouched no other authority. The personal narrative of the adventurous band which penetrated the wilderness in 1775, which never has been told but imperfectly, and which, in point of romantic daring, was worthy of its gallant leader and his brave followers, would of itself have outweighed, in point of value and interest, the actual materials of this whole volume. The detail of military operation and personal prowess, in which Burr was so active a participant, from the time Arnold's band reached the Chaudière, whence Burr

was sent (according to Mr. Davis) to meet Montgomery at Montreal, to the tragic catastrophe under the walls of Quebec when, as has been stated, Burr stood by the side of his gallant commander, at the head of the advancing party, and received him in his arms as he fell; the accurate history of the abandonment of Long Island, and operations afterwards; the retreat through New Jersey; the winter campaign of 1777; the pursuit of Sir Henry Clinton; and the battle of Monmouth; these are subjects on which the world had a right to expect minute and novel information, at least, so far as relates to the person and agency of the hero of the tale. But, in point of fact, no more than twenty pages are filled with what may be supposed to have come from the source to which Mr. Davis had exclusive access, and which, on that account only, is valuable and in lieu of it, we have a series of certificates from comparatively obscure individuals, taken for the purpose of sustaining a claim, made by Burr, in 1814, for remuneration from the legislature of New York. These certificates are utterly unworthy of insertion in a memoir, though no doubt very serviceable to sustain a memorial. We have, for instance, the certificates of Samuel Rowland, of Hezekiah Ripley, of Isaac Jennings and Andrew Wakeman, of Nathaniel Judson and Judge George Gardner, of Lieutenant Robert Hunter and Colonel Richard Platt, all very respectable persons, no doubt, of whom it is no offence to say, that their names are not written in capital letters on the roll of history; but not a word or line (for the few letters which are given from Burr scarcely deserve to be mentioned) from the lips or pen of him whose testimony would be valuable, if his fame were worth preserving.

If this book is barren of military incidents, it is an arid waste as to military criticism, though this, too, was a point on which we are told Colonel Burr was very tenacious, and which would have been, if properly treated, to many readers a point of great interest. On but three occasions is there any attempt at it—the attack on Quebec, the evacuation of New York, and the battle of Monmouth. That our readers may not consider us unjust to Mr. Davis, we will cheerfully let him be a witness in his own cause, and give the following extract, being the whole of his remarks on the assault on Quebec, omitting only a quotation from the Life of Washington, which, like Mr. Malaprop's hard words, is most wantonly pressed into service and begging the reader to observe the extent to which Mr. Davis is indebted to Colonel Burr in his critique:—

“The first plan for the attack upon the British works was essentially different from that which was subsequently carried into execution. Various reasons have been assigned for this change. *Judge Marshall says*

"Colonel Burr says, that a change of the plan of attack was produced, in a great measure, through the advice and influence of Mr. Antill, a resident in Canada, who had joined the army, and Mr. Price, a Montreal merchant of property and respectability, who had also come out and united his destiny with the cause of the colonies. Mr. Price, in particular, was strongly impressed with the opinion, that if the American troops could obtain possession of the lower town, the merchants and other wealthy inhabitants would have sufficient influence with the British commander in chief to induce him to surrender, rather than jeopard the destruction of all their property. It was, as Colonel Burr thought, a most fatal delusion. But it is believed that the opinion was honestly entertained.

"The first plan of attack was agreed upon in a council, at which young Burr and his friend, Matthias Ogden, were present. The arrangement was to pass over the highest walls at Cape Diamond. Here there was a bastion. This was at a distance of about half a mile from any succour; but being considered, in some measure, impregnable, the least resistance might be anticipated in that quarter. Subsequent events tended to prove the soundness of this opinion. In pursuance of the second plan, Major Livingston, with a detachment under his command, made a feint upon Cape Diamond; but, for about half an hour, with all the noise and alarm that he and his men could create, he was unable to attract the slightest notice from the enemy, so completely unprepared were they at this point.

"While the first was the favourite plan of attack, Burr requested General Montgomery to give him the command of a small forlorn hope, which request was granted, and forty men allotted to him. Ladders were prepared, and these men kept in constant drill, until they could ascend them (standing almost perpendicular) with their muskets and accoutrements, with nearly the same facility that they could mount an ordinary staircase. In the success of this plan of attack Burr had entire confidence; but, when it was changed, he entertained strong apprehensions of the result. He was in the habit, every night, of visiting and reconnoitring the ground about Cape Diamond, until he became perfectly familiarized with every inch adjacent to, or in the vicinity of, the intended point of assault." pp. 69—71.

Here was a point of strategy, on which no one at all acquainted with the scene of action will doubt that Burr was clearly right. The attack of the 25th December, 1775, by Arnold and Montgomery, we regard as one of the most remarkable attempts recorded in military history, and far superior, in point of daring enterprise, to the more elaborate but successful assault by Wolfe, in 1759. But it was more remarkable for its boldness than for the military skill that was displayed, for had the main attack on the lower town succeeded, as probably would have been the case had not Montgomery fallen, all the main works above, including what is now comprised within the walls, the castle of St. Louis, and whatever batteries there then were on Cape Diamond, remained to be taken. The merit of Wolfe's movement was its consummate skill, as well as the perfect success (for in military matters success is merit) of every step he took, from the time he evaded the vigilance of Montcalm, by breaking up his camp in the night below the



French lines, until he reached the heights above the cove without interruption, and to the amazement of his adversary deployed his whole army on the plains of Abraham. His attack on Quebec, from that moment, was a battle on the open plains, for Montcalm, as if maddened by the success of his adversary in eluding his vigilance, with the despair of a lion at bay, scorned merely to defend his works. The event would scarcely have been different had the French remained within their lines, for the works on Cape Diamond, unlike the impregnable fortress which now surmounts it, were then scarcely worth mentioning, and continued so in 1775. As far as we can decipher Mr. Davis's ill-digested and obscure account of the attack, Burr's counsel was to assault the works on the cap just as Wolfe meant to do had not the French given him battle outside the lines. This, we are satisfied, though we give military opinions with great diffidence, from personal examination of the ground and conference with competent technical judges would, with fair allowances for accidents, have been completely successful. It would have been highly interesting to have had the testimony and comment of so competent a military critic as Burr on this celebrated attempt. We have no room to devote to Mr. Davis's equally meagre narrative of the affairs at Long Island and Monmouth.

Before leaving the account of Colonel Burr's military life, we have a word of graver censure to bestow on a portion of Mr. Davis's book. We have already stated, that this memoir was not designed as a panegyric. We almost wish it had been, for we could have pardoned much more to the partial affection of an engrossing friendship than we can to careless and almost contemptuous indifference. Historical truth, too, would have been less apt to suffer. So far, however, is Mr. Davis from making his book too eulogistic, that he tells us more than once that the subject of his story was licentious and profligate in the extreme, gross in his appetites, and ungovernable in his passions, and what is more to our purpose just now, expressly admits that his prejudices and malignant antipathies survived to the late hour of his life, unmitigated and unsubdued. On one point we think that Mr. Davis has done gross injustice, and though we are inclined to believe that it has mainly arisen from the awkward, unworkmanlike manner in which he puts his materials together, and from his singular intellectual inaptitude for the task he has undertaken, it is on that account but little less reprehensible. The injustice we refer to is injustice—palpable injustice—to General Washington.

We have already stated, what was indeed known long before this volume was published, that between Washington and Burr there was a deep-rooted antipathy, which was not confined to the

breast of either, but was heartily reciprocated. Of its tone and degree we have no other means of judging than such as the different characters of the men afford. On the part of Washington it may be assumed to have been the stern resentment of a just man, whose feelings had been wounded, and whose judgment sanctioned the impulse. With such a man as Burr, and in the absence of all other source of light, it is no want of charity to say, that it must have been a far less exalted feeling, revenge for imaginary wrong, or selfish resentment for deserved rebuke, corroding the heart it tenanted, and uniting with all the other ingredients of a soul morally diseased. Washington's treatment of Burr was perfectly consonant with this estimate of his feelings. Whenever an opportunity offered of testifying respect for his military qualifications, he cheerfully and unreservedly did so. Immediately after the battle of Monmouth, he despatched Burr on a confidential and hazardous tour of observation on Sir Henry Clinton's movements on the North river, and in July, 1778, employed him to superintend the measures of vigilance and precaution against the tories and loyalists. In October of the same year Burr applied to the commander in chief for a furlough without pay, Washington granted the furlough, but refused to suspend the pay, on the ground of the palpable injustice of such a course to an officer of so much merit. When Burr resigned his commission in 1779, General Washington testified his esteem of his military merits in the following letter:—

“MIDDLEBROOK, 3d April, 1779.

“Sir,—I have to acknowledge your favour of the 10th ultimo. Perfectly satisfied that no consideration, save a desire to re-establish your health, could induce you to leave the service, I cannot therefore withhold my consent. But, in giving permission to your retiring from the army, I am not only to regret the loss of a good officer, but the cause which makes his resignation necessary. When it is convenient to transmit the settlement of your public accounts, it will receive my final acceptance.

“I am, &c.,

GEORGE WASHINGTON.”

—p. 168.

But beyond the line of approval of his military qualifications he never departed, nor did time bring any abatement of Washington's distrust of his integrity and moral principle. As late as 1792, when Burr was a senator of the United States, his biographer records the following incident:—

“During the winter of 1791—2, being Colonel Burr's first session in the senate of the United States, he spent much of his leisure time in the state department. For several sessions after the organization of the federal government, all the business of the senate was transacted with closed doors. At that period the correspondence of existing ministers

was kept secret, even from the senators. With every thing connected with the foreign affairs of the country, Colonel Burr was exceedingly anxious to make himself intimately acquainted. He considered it necessary to the faithful and useful performance of his duty as a senator. He obtained permission from Mr. Jefferson, then secretary of state, to have access to the records of the department before the hour for opening the office arrived. He employed one of the messengers to make a fire at five o'clock in the morning, and occasionally an intelligent and confidential clerk to assist him in searching for papers. Here he was engaged until near ten o'clock every day. It was his constant practice to have his breakfast sent to him. He continued this employment the greater part of the session, making notes on, or extracts from, the records of the department, until he was interrupted by a peremptory order from the president (Washington) prohibiting his farther examination.

"Wishing some information that he had not obtained in relation to the surrender of the western posts by the British, he addressed a note to the secretary of state, asking permission to make that particular examination; to which he received the following answer:—

"'Thomas Jefferson presents his respectful compliments to Colonel Burr, and is sorry to inform him it has been concluded to be improper to communicate the correspondence of existing ministers. He hopes this will, with Colonel Burr, be his sufficient apology.'" p. 331.

But again, Mr. Davis repeats a still more striking instance in 1794:—

"About this period the democratic party were highly incensed against the president for continuing Gouverneur Morris as a minister to the French republic. The executive provisory council had requested his recall. He was considered a monarchist, and hostile to the revolution. Many of the opposition senators had spoken with great freedom of the policy of General Washington in this particular. These remarks having been communicated to the president, he expressed, informally, a willingness to recall Mr. Morris, and to nominate a member of the opposition if they would designate a suitable person. In consequence of this suggestion, the democratic members of the senate, and some of the most distinguished members of the house, had a conference, and resolved on recommending Colonel Burr. Mr. Madison, Mr. Monroe, and another member of congress whose name is not recollected, were delegated to wait on the president and communicate the wishes of the party.

"General Washington paused for a few moments, and then remarked that he had made it a rule of life never to recommend or nominate any person for a high and responsible situation in whose integrity he had not confidence; that, wanting confidence in Colonel Burr, he could not nominate him; but that it would give him great pleasure to meet their wishes if they would designate an individual in whom he could confide. The committee returned and reported the result of their conference. The senators adhered unanimously to their first nomination, and the same delegates waited on the president and reiterated the adherence of their friends to Colonel Burr. Whereupon General Washington, with some warmth, remarked that his decision was irrevocable; but immediately added, 'I will nominate you, Mr. Madison, or you, Mr. Monroe. The former replied that he had long since made up his mind never to leave his country, and respectfully declined the offer. They retired, and reported the result of their second interview. The democratic gentlemen were not less inflexible, and instructed their delegates to say to the president that they would make no other recommendation. On the third

visit they were received by Mr. Randolph, secretary of state, to whom they made the communication, but who considered it indecorous, knowing the president's feelings, to repeat the message. pp. 408, 409.

No other selection being made by the opposing senators, on the 27th May, 1794, General Washington nominated Mr. Monroe as minister to the French republic.

That Colonel Burr's antipathy to Washington was not diminished by these overt acts of dislike was most natural—that it was a malignant and indiscriminating feeling we may infer from the character of the man, as well as from his biographer's admissions. Now what we condemn in Mr. Davis is, that he has not given us the real cause of this mutual hostility, which he must have known, for it is scarcely conceivable that Burr, in the repeated conversations he had with Mr. Davis on this very subject, should overlook its origin; or that, not knowing it, he should refer to it in such a way as to derogate from the character of that party to the quarrel, who, in the absence of evidence, least deserved the imputation. It is well known, that during the short period that Burr was in the family of the commander in chief, in New York, in the spring of 1776, the seeds of this dislike were sown. Burr resigned, or was compelled to leave precipitately, the post which his friends thought it so desirable to obtain for him, and from the period that Washington knew him, as he soon learned to know every one of his family, he never *trusted* him. We will not deprive Colonel Burr's memory of the benefit of the converse of this truth, that from the moment he knew Washington familiarly *he hated* him. One is as true as the other, and the public will not, we suspect, be at a loss to determine where the fault lay. Not so Mr. Davis. After candidly admitting a catalogue of moral blemishes in his hero, he most inconsistently places him in this quarrel on a level with Washington, and then passes judgment, or rather gives a kind of unfair special verdict, which, as a settlement of the question, does justice to neither. But let him speak for himself; in his preface he tells us Burr's "prejudices against General Washington were immovable. They were formed in the summer of 1776, while he resided at head quarters, and they were confirmed unchangeably by the injustice which he had experienced at the hands of the commander in chief, immediately after the battle of Long Island," &c. At page 167 he again refers to it, "Burr was more than respected by his brother officers, and idolised by the troops. As a man and a citizen he was exceedingly disliked by General Washington. Causes unnecessary to examine at this late period of time, had created between *these gentlemen* feelings of hostility that were unconquerable, and were never softened or mollified." This is not all. Mr. Davis, taking

courage in the dark, gives us very distinct intimations that Burr was a victim of injustice on the part of Washington. At page 83 he says, "There is no doubt that the short residence of Major Burr with General Washington laid the foundation for those *prejudices* which, at a future time, ripened into hostile feelings on both sides." At page 78 he tells us that, "In the spring of 1776, the army moved from Montreal to the mouth of the Sorel. Major Burr yet remained with it. While at Montreal he became *disgusted* with General Arnold on account of his meanness and other bad qualities," &c. On the very next page is related the invitation given him by Washington to join his family. "This invitation," says Mr. Davis, "he accepted, and Burr occasionally rode out with the general, but very soon became restless and dissatisfied. He wrote to the president of congress, who had been an intimate friend of the father, that he was *disgusted*, and inclined to retire from service. Neither is this collocation of Arnold and Washington, as objects of Burr's disgust, the limit of Mr. Davis's inuendo, for at the close of the volume, after narrating the circumstances connected with the president's refusal to appoint Mr. Burr minister to France, he adds this very unnecessary comment:—"This incident demonstrates, on the one hand, the strong and unchangeable prejudices of General Washington against Colonel Burr; and, on the other, the firm and unbounded confidence reposed in him by the democracy of those days."

Now, what we condemn in all this is the wantonness of the insinuation, that a man so proverbially and severely just as General Washington could be influenced by irrational prejudice, and be guilty of gratuitous injustice to such a man as Burr. In fact, the perplexity and obscurity which Mr. Davis hangs around this single incident in his history is such, that, to account for it, we must attribute it either to perfect stupidity or disingenuousness. Burr never told him that he was ignorant of the cause of Washington's animosity, and, if he had, no one would have believed it; and Mr. Davis either never asked him the question, or else, thinking it better to deal in conjecture and inuendo, has deemed it expedient to suppress the answer. This is a fair inference from his own assertion in the preface, which we have already quoted: "I never," says he, "asked Colonel Burr a question on any subject, or in relation to any man or measure, that he did not promptly and willingly answer. On his part there was no desire of concealment; nor did he ever express to me a wish to suppress an account of any act of his whole life."

Those who have studied the character of Washington, as illustrated by his most familiar correspondence, know that one of its strongest and most beautiful traits was the grateful appre-

ciation of the merits and services of those who deserved and received his confidence—those who, in other words and in an enlarged sense, formed “his family.” He exacted from those around him the strict performance of duty; he looked for a stern sense of the responsibility which the relation imposed; and, when his requisitions were met, his grateful recollection never was obliterated. Edmund Randolph, who was his aid at the commencement of the war, was, on the organization of the federal government, selected first as his attorney-general, and then as secretary of state. Joseph Reed, of Pennsylvania—his first private secretary, and on whose ability as a writer he most relied—was distinguished by numerous testimonials of his grateful regard, and by the high estimation he had of his talents and moral worth. After being appointed adjutant-general by Washington, and then recommended to congress as brigadier in command of the cavalry, he was only separated from the commander in chief to serve his native state in her highest office. Mr. Reed died in 1785, before the formation of the federal union. Robert H. Harrison, of Maryland, the successor of Mr. Reed as private secretary to the commander in chief, continued at his side, his counsellor and friend, during the larger portion of the war; and, when the new government was formed, received “his abundant reward” in being one of the four first selected as judges of the supreme court of the United States. In tendering the commission to his valued friend, the president used this emphatic language: “Considering the judicial system as the chief pillar upon which our national government must rest, I have thought it my duty to nominate, for the high offices in that department, such men as I conceived would give dignity and lustre to our national character.” It was such men as these who were trusted by Washington, and who loved him in return. With them, and those like them, such a man as Burr had no sympathy and could have no communion; and it is the knowledge that Mr. Davis had, or ought to have had, that such men filled with honour a station Burr relinquished, which should have taught him the ineffable folly of the remark with which he closes his comment on this period of his hero’s story.

“During the short period that he remained in the family of General Washington, he was treated with respect and attention; but soon perceived, as he thought, an unwillingness to afford that information, and those technical explanations of great historical military movements, which an enquiring and enlightened mind like Burr’s sought with avidity and perseverance. He therefore became apprehensive, if he remained with the commander in chief, that, instead of becoming a scientific soldier, *he should dwindle down into a practical clerk—a species of drudgery* to which his pecuniary circumstances did not render it necessary for him to submit, and for which neither his habits, his education, nor his temperament, in any degree, qualified him.” Vol. I. pp. 82, 83.

It has been seen that Colonel Burr's military life terminated in July, 1779. Immediately afterwards he commenced the study of law with his friend, Judge Patterson; and, having completed it with Mr. Thomas Smith, was admitted to practice at Albany in January, 1782. In the previous year he married Mrs. Prevost, a lady of loyalist connections and considerable wealth. In the spring of 1784, he was elected to the state legislature; he attended two sessions as a member, during one of which he distinguished himself by his active and able opposition to what was known as the Mechanics' Bill—a bill to confer chartered privileges of unlimited extent on a few individuals connected with mechanical pursuits, and to connect them with the corporation of the city of New York. It was defeated mainly through the agency of Mr. Burr. From 1785 to 1788 he was unknown as a politician. His own health was precarious, and that of Mrs. Burr caused him constant alarm. He had but one child, a daughter, on whose education he bestowed the greatest care, and to whom he seems to have appropriated all the gentleness of his nature. As has been already stated, Burr, in 1787, was ranked with the anti-federal party, and in the spring of that year was an unsuccessful candidate for the legislature. In September, 1789, he was appointed by Governor Clinton attorney-general of the state of New York, which office he filled with great distinction till 1791, when he was elected to the senate of the United States. His colleague and political opponent was Rufus King. In 1792, he was appointed by Mr. Clinton judge of the supreme court, which honour however he promptly declined. During his term of service, Mr. Burr was a leading member of the opposition party, and, as we have already stated, took an active part in all the discussions of the senate. None of his speeches, however, are preserved by his biographer. In 1800, the democratic party triumphed in the state of New York, and Burr was taken up and elected with Mr. Jefferson on its ticket. Here Mr. Davis's volume concludes.

Before we leave the historical part of this work, there are two subjects incidentally referred to which are worthy of a passing remark. Mr. Davis has made two statements, on the authority of Colonel Burr, which we have no hesitation in saying are totally destitute of foundation. The first is a revolutionary incident thus related:

"In the summer of 1780, Major Andre, of the British army, was in correspondence with Mrs. Arnold (the wife of General Arnold), under a pretext of supplying her, from the city of New York, with millinery and other trifling articles of dress. On the 23d of September, 1780, Major Andre was captured, and the treason of the general discovered. When this news reached West Point, Mrs. Arnold became, apparently almost frantic. Her situation excited the sympathy of some of the men

distinguished officers in the American army. Mrs. Arnold, having obtained from General Washington a passport and permission to join her husband in the city of New York, left West Point, and on her way stopped at the house of Mrs. Prevost, in Paramus, where she stayed one night. On her arrival at Paramus the frantic scenes of West Point were renewed, and continued so long as strangers were present. Mrs. Prevost was known as the wife of a British officer, and connected with the royalists; in her, therefore, Mrs. Arnold could confide.

"As soon as they were left alone Mrs. Arnold became tranquillized, and assured Mrs. Prevost that she was heartily sick of the theatrics she was exhibiting. She stated that she had corresponded with the British commander—that she was disgusted with the American cause, and those who had the management of public affairs—and that, through great persuasion and unceasing perseverance, she had ultimately brought the general into an arrangement to surrender West Point to the British. Mrs. Arnold was a gay, accomplished, artful, and extravagant woman. There is no doubt, therefore, that, for the purpose of acquiring the means of gratifying an inordinate vanity, she contributed greatly to the utter ruin of her husband, and thus doomed to everlasting infamy and disgrace all the fame he had acquired as a gallant soldier, at the sacrifice of his blood. Mrs. Prevost subsequently became the wife of Colonel Burr, and repeated to him these confessions of Mrs. Arnold.

"The preceding statement is confirmed by the following anecdote. Mrs. Arnold was the daughter of Chief Justice Shippen, of Pennsylvania. She was personally acquainted with Major Andre, and, it is believed, corresponded with him previous to her marriage. In the years 1779-80, Colonel Robert Morris resided at Springatsbury, in the vicinity of Philadelphia, adjoining Bush Hill. Some time previous to Arnold's taking command of West Point, he was an applicant for the post. On a particular occasion, Mrs. Arnold was dining at the house of Colonel Morris. After dinner a friend of the family came in, and congratulated Mrs. Arnold on a report that her husband was appointed to a different but more honourable command. The information affected her so much as to produce hysteric fits. Efforts were made to convince her that the general had been selected for a preferable station. These explanations, however, to the astonishment of all present, produced no effect. But, after the treason of Arnold was discovered, the family of Colonel Morris entertained no doubt that Mrs. Arnold was privy to, if not the negotiator for, a surrender of West Point to the British, even before the general had charge of the post." Vol. I. pp. 219, 220.

So far from confiding in the statement thus given at second hand, we believe there is no fact, not susceptible of demonstration, better ascertained than that Mrs. Arnold was not privy to her husband's treachery. Mr. Sparks, who has examined this whole subject with the greatest care, has stated this to be his conviction; and the surviving members of the lady's family, some of them her contemporaries, are satisfied that the texture of her mind did not qualify her to be the confidante of such perilous secrets, and that Arnold knew too well the desperate game he was playing to trust her. As respects the correspondence between Andre and Mrs. Arnold prior to her marriage, the fact is probably as stated by Mr. Davis; but it is equally probable that it was a correspondence of perfect innocence—the



correspondence of a gallant young soldier with a gay young lady, devoted to happy reminiscences of feasts and balls, rather than to subtle treason or dark stratagem. We therefore confidently reiterate our discredit of the whole tale of Mrs. Arnold's privity to her husband's plans, even though supported by the reflected evidence of Mrs. Prevost.

The other point to which we refer, has relation to the promise with which Mr. Davis closes his first volume. After referring to the mystery which the author thinks still environs the history of the contested presidential election of 1801, in the house of representatives, he winds up his memoir with this grandiloquent finale:—

"But the period has arrived when the question should be met with manly firmness; when the voice of history should announce to posterity the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so far as it can be ascertained. The generation which were the actors in those scenes have passed away. The parties immediately interested are sleeping the sleep of death. Few, very few, indeed, now living, understand the nature of that contest. The curtain shall be drawn aside. The documents which develop its character, and which are scattered in fragments, will be brought together, and recorded (it is hoped) in a permanent and tangible form.

"It will be seen that the immediate friends and advisers of Mr. Jefferson, until within a few hours of the balloting, had no confidence in certain leading and distinguished members of congress, whose names shall be given, but who, on his coming into power, promptly received the most substantial evidence of his kind feelings, by appointments to office. The clearest evidence will be presented that Mr. Jefferson entered into terms and conditions with the federal party or some of their leaders; that the honourable James A. Bayard, of Delaware, acted on the part of the federalists, and the honourable Samuel Smith, of Maryland, at present mayor of Baltimore, on the part of Mr. Jefferson; and that terms and conditions were agreed upon between them before Mr. Jefferson could be elected; while, on the other hand, it will be demonstrated that the charges which have been made against Colonel Burr of having intrigued and negotiated with the federal party to obtain the office of president were as unjust as they were groundless. But '*I come to bury Caesar, not to praise him.*' " p. 436.

We are far from wishing to discourage the publication of the second volume; on the contrary, we are anxious to have some of the later portions of Colonel Burr's life illustrated by the unreserved personal testimony of Mr. Davis himself, but we do not believe that it is in his power, or that of any other man living, supposing the witnesses who have testified to have told the truth, to throw any new light on the history of the election of 1801. And further, we have no hesitation in asserting, that Mr. Davis's concluding remark is meant to convey the idea that there was a corrupt understanding between Mr. Bayard and Mr. Jefferson, there is not a shadow of authority for it, nor can he produce one tittle of evidence to sustain it. Mr. Davis must

indeed, know that the charge has been more than once clearly and conclusively disproved. If nothing more is meant than that Mr. Bayard, and those of his political friends who decided the question in favour of Mr. Jefferson, endeavoured honestly to make terms and stipulations for the protection of their party, and the maintenance of its principles, there then will be little novelty in the disclosure, since the parties concerned never, we believe, from 1801 to this hour, pretended to conceal it. We say all this in fearless anticipation of Mr. Davis's second volume.

Before closing this already, we fear, protracted view of the life and character of this singular man, we may be allowed to pause for an instant on the disclosures made of his domestic life and relations. With all the gross appetites of a libertine; with a chafed temper, that, when roused, knew no control; with disappointment preying on his heart, and excitement, at times, fretting to decay his feeble constitution; with all this to make him morose and harsh, he was, in one of his domestic relations at least, the kindest, gentlest, most affectionate of human beings; and the letters which Mr. Davis has preserved, written by Colonel Burr to his daughter, from the moment when her intellect so far dawned as to make her sensible to a father's counsel, are beautiful and interesting in the extreme. The fastidious reader may object to their details, but no one, who has felt or imagined the interest which the rearing of so tender and precious a flower as an only daughter must inspire, can think them excessive. We find him, in the press of business, and in the midst of parliamentary turmoil, seeking refuge in the holy cell of communion with his child, and pouring out the riches of his undivided affections upon her. It seems to be with him, literally,

—“A lonely pure affection unopposed.”

It absorbed whatever of gentleness there was in his disposition, leaving a dark residuum of ill-governed and coarse appetite. It was the silver lining of the sable cloud which obscures his fame. It was, too, the affection of an intellectual parent, sedulous not only to make her love him, but to make her worthy of his love. Her education he seems to have guided and directed with considerate care; and the fruits of this solicitude were, we believe, in their maturity, all the anxious parent promised himself. We may exaggerate the merits of these letters from Colonel Burr to his daughter. We may have been too deeply impressed by the contrast of this correspondence with the arid ghastly destitution of virtuous and gentle sentiment which this volume exhibits; but such as they appeared to us when we first read them, we commend them to the perusal of our readers.

Utterly unlike these beautiful effusions of parental affection are the nauseous specimens of amorous sentimentalism with which Mr. Davis has filled so large a portion of his book, in the shape of letters from Mrs. Burr to her husband. What conceivable inducement could have operated on his mind to publish such stuff we are at a loss to imagine. They reflect no credit on the head or heart of the writer, and throw not a ray of light on the character of him to whom they are addressed. They are as nauseous as developments of familiar imbecility, which it is painful to be compelled to witness. We know not what may be Mr. Davis's standard of refined sentiment, what his notion of the proper tone of conjugal correspondence; but as he has thought fit to palm off on the public a volume stuffed full of such specimens as the following, we have a right to infer his scale is not graduated very high:—

“NEW YORK, March 22d, 1784.

“My Aaron had scarce quitted the door when I regretted my passiveness. Why did I consent to his departure? Can interest repay the sacrifice? can aught on earth compensate for his presence? Why do I hesitate to decide? Ten thousand fears await me. What thought suggested my assent? The anxiety he might suffer were he to meet with obstacles to raising the sum required; should his views be frustrated for want of the precaution this journey might secure; his mortification; mine, at not having the power to relieve him, were arguments that silenced my longing wish to hold him near me; near me for ever. My Aaron, dark is the hour that separates my soul from itself.

“Thus pensive, surrounded with gloom, thy Theo. sat, bemoaning thy departure. Every breath of wind whistled terror; every noise at thy door was mingled with hope of thy return, and fear of thy perseverance when Brown arrived with the word—*embarked*—the wind high, the water rough. Heaven protect my Aaron; preserve him, restore him to his adoring mistress. A tedious hour elapsed, when our son was thy joyful messenger of thy safe landing at Paulus Hook. Stiff with cold how must his papa have fared? Yet, grateful for his safety, I bless my God. I envied the ground which bore my pilgrim. I pursued each footstep. Love engrossed his mind; his last adieu to Bartow was the most persuasive token—‘Wait till I reach the opposite shore, that you may bear the glad tidings to your trembling mother.’ O, Aaron, how thank thee! Love in all its delirium hovers about me; like opium, lulls me to soft repose! Sweet serenity speaks, ’tis my Aaron’s spirit presides. Surrounding objects check my visionary charm. I fly to my room and give the day to thee.

—247, 248.

THEODOSIA.”

There is an incident mentioned in the early part of this volume, which, taken in connection with the career and character of him to whom it relates, is full of interest. About the year 1817, when Burr’s tumultuous life began to draw toward a close, when the heyday of the blood was tamed, and passion might be supposed, at least, so far to have subsided as to leave room for good impressions, he received from a female corre-

spondent a letter of affectionate but considerate religious expostulation, enclosing one from his mother, written when he was but four years old. We cannot deny ourselves the pleasure of extracting the letter of his (to us unknown) correspondent :—

"My dear sir,—I trust the purity of the motives by which I am actuated will find an apology in your bosom for the liberty I assume in addressing you on a subject which involves your eternal interest.

"Here, in the wilds of —, I have found an extract of a letter, written by your inestimable mother nearly sixty years ago, of which you are the principal subject; and a transcript of which I shall enclose for your perusal. Perhaps you will think me a weak, presumptuous being; but permit me, dear sir, to assure you, this does not proceed from a whim of the moment. It is not a mere transient gust of enthusiasm. The subject has long been heavy on my mind. I have more than once resolved to converse with you freely; to tell you how my own feelings were affected relative to your situation; but my faltering tongue refused to obey the impulse of my soul, and I have withdrawn abruptly, to conceal that which I had not confidence to communicate. But meeting (I believe providentially) with this precious relic has determined me. I will write, and transmit it to you. I am too well convinced of the liberality of your sentiments; but I still believe you retain an inherent respect for the religion of your forefathers.

"I have often reflected on your trials, and the fortitude with which you have sustained them, with astonishment. Yours has been no common lot. But you seem to have forgotten the right use of adversity. Afflictions from Heaven 'are angels sent on embassies of love.' We must improve, and not abuse them, to obtain the blessing. They are commissioned to stem the tide of impetuous passion; to check inordinate ambition; to show us the insignificance of earthly greatness; to wean our affections from transitory things, and elevate them to those realities which are ever blooming at the right hand of God. When affliction is thus sanctified, 'the heart at once it humbles and exalts.'

"Was it philosophy that supported you in your trials? There is an hour approaching when philosophy will fail, and all human science will desert you. What then will be your substitute? Tell me, Colonel Burr, or rather answer it to your own heart, when the pale messenger appears, how will you meet him—'undamped by doubts, undarkened by despair?'

"The enclosed is calculated to excite mingled sensations both of a melancholy and pleasing nature. The hand that penned it is now among 'the just made perfect.' Your mother had given you up by faith. Have you ever ratified the vows she made in your behalf? When she bade you a long farewell, she commended you to the protection of Him who had promised to be a father to the fatherless.

"The great Augustine, in his early years, was an infidel in his principles, and a libertine in his conduct, which his pious mother deplored with bitter weeping. But she was told by her friends that 'the child of so many prayers and tears could not be lost;' and it was verified to her happy experience, for he afterwards became one of the grand luminaries of the church of Christ. This remark has often been applied to you; and I trust you will yet have the happiness to find that 'the prayers of the righteous' have 'availed much.'

"One favour I would ask: when you have done with this, destroy it, that it may never meet the eye of any third person. In the presence of that God, before whom the inmost recesses of the heart are open, I have

written. I consulted him, and him only, respecting the propriety of dressing you; and the answer he gave was, freedom in writing, with feeling of the deepest interest impressed upon my heart. Z. Y

"To Col. A. Burr." pp. 21, 22.

There is something deeply affecting in this appeal of fervent unostentatious piety. There is something inexpressibly melancholy in the fear that is forced upon us that it struck responsive chord in the soul of the jaded sensualist to whom was addressed, but was, perhaps, thrust aside into the repository of his licentious relics. If this letter had a different, and, for a moment, salutary influence, Mr. Davis did great and fearful injustice by neglecting to tell us so. We find that it failed to have the least effect on the proof and bulwark of a callous heart. In his comment on Burr's preservation of all his licentious female correspondence, to which we have already referred, the biographer sees, or thinks that he sees, analogy to some trait in the character and life of Lord Byron and quotes a passage from the memoirs of the noble poet to account for this disgusting appetite of his hero. Had he looked farther over the pages of the same volume he would have found an analogy of far more interest and moral beauty to the life of Burr's unknown female correspondent. The literary reader need not be told that we refer to the touching letter written by Byron to Mr. Shepherd, enclosing his dying wife's prayer for the poet's welfare, which is preserved by Mr. Moore. Byron felt the appeal deeply, and with more than his ordinary generosity acknowledged the feeling in a letter, which, in point of beauty of sentiment and diction, is unsurpassed by any prose composition in the English language. He concluded his answer with these strong expressions of a softened heart, which are inapplicable to him whose career of vice and insensibility have been noticing:—"I can assure you that all the false notions which ever cheated humanity into higher notions of its own importance would never weigh, in my mind, against the present and pious interest which a virtuous being may be pleased to take in my welfare. In this point of view, I would willingly exchange the prayer of the deceased for the united glory of Homer, Cæsar, and Napoleon, could such be accumulated on a living head."

We must now bring to a close our views of Colonel Burr's life and character, and of Mr. Davis's book. The interest in the subject, and its intimate connection with a large portion of our history, have induced us to give them at greater length than usual. Of Mr. Davis's volume we have spoken in a tone that it deserves, and in a spirit of perfect good will to him, though of just severity to his ill-digested and ill-managed production. He has an inducement to continue his work which

will conquer all fear of criticism, in the assurance that all who bought his first volume will, for the sake of symmetry, buy the second. For such a volume he must still have vast materials in the personal reminiscences and correspondence of Colonel Burr, which we fervently trust he will use with greater prodigality and more dexterity than he has exhibited in his first part. Deficient, however, as this book is in all the elements of biographical merit, it will have done some good by adding even its mite of historical truth for future use. Its ultimate fate, when the little novelty it contains shall be transferred to more enduring memorials, we need not trouble ourselves to predict. In giving this warning to Mr. Davis, we cannot do better than to endorse it with the significant hint, which a much sounder critic than ourselves gave to an author two hundred years ago. "We have few modern heroes who, like Xenophon and Cæsar, can write their own commentaries. And the raw memoir writings and unformed pieces of modern statesmen will, in another age, be of little service to support their memory or name; since, already the world begins to sicken with their kind. 'Tis the learned, the able, and disinterested historian, who takes place at last. And when the signal poet or herald of fame is once heard, the inferior trumpets sink in silence and oblivion."<sup>1</sup>

---

Since the preceding article went to the press, a careful examination of documentary evidence within our reach has satisfied us, not only that the panegyric which is bestowed on Burr's military talents is much exaggerated, but that several statements of matters of fact made by Mr. Davis are strikingly incorrect. One of the latter is too remarkable to be passed over without notice. At pages 67, 68, we have a very romantic account of an expedition by Burr in the disguise of a catholic priest, from the Chaudière pond to Montgomery, at Montreal. This was undertaken by Arnold's order, and the details of his various perils and escapes are fully set forth, and, among other things, the fact of his being detained by accident several days at Three Rivers before he reached head quarters. "For three days," says Mr. Davis, "he was secreted in a convent at that place." Now it appears from the official account of the expedition preserved in the collection of the Maine Historical Society, (now before us,) that the army reached the Chaudière pond on or about the first of November. On the 13th of November Arnold crossed the St. Lawrence and landed his troops at Wolfe's cove, and on the 19th he marched about

<sup>1</sup> Shaftesbury's Advice to an Author; vol. i. p. 225.

seven leagues up the river to Point aux Trembles. On *the thirtieth of November* Arnold did send Burr to Montgomery, and on *the first of December (but four days intervening)* Montgomery and his troops arrived. The letter from Arnold to Montgomery is as follows:—

“POINT AUX TREMBLES, 30th Nov. 1775.

“Dear Sir,—This will be handed to you by Mr. Burr, a volunteer in the army, and son to the former president of New Jersey college. He is a young gentleman of much life and activity, and has acted with great spirit and resolution on our fatiguing march. His conduct, I make no doubt, will be a sufficient recommendation to your favour.

“I am, dear sir,

“Your most obed't humble servant,

“B. ARNOLD.”

“Brig. Gen. Montgomery.”

This letter, which will be found at page 386 of the *Ma ine* Historical Society's collection, Vol. I., at once entirely discredits the whole narrative of Burr's adventurous exploit. There cannot be a word of truth in the whole story.

ART. VI.—*Recherche Anatomique et Physiologique sur la structure intime des Animaux et des Végétaux, et sur leur motilité.* Par DR. DUTROCHET: à Paris.

There is an elegance, as well as novelty, in the present mode of conducting experiments, which renders the study of the more abstruse branches of science peculiarly attractive. Whether it be owing to the circumstance that philosophy is divested of the jargon which rendered it unintelligible to common understandings, we know not: but certain it is, that the mystical word, *science*, once approached with such profound dread and reverence, is now an agreeable plaything for a leisure hour—a recreation, rather than a labour of the mind.

It is to the French Institute that the world is indebted for the advances that are making in science. It is to the members of that enlightened body that we owe our admission into the halls of philosophy, the doors of which were so long scrupulously closed against the *many*. Most especially is it owing to this

learned institution, that natural science has taken so elevated a position, and that the physiology of plants has come to be considered as the very stepping stone of that branch of scientific knowledge.

There are, to be sure, illustrious names in England ; but for the elementary parts of the science under discussion—for the investigation of fixed principles—where are there such men as Dr. Dutrochet, De Candolle, and others of this class, who have written so copiously, so ably, and so intelligibly, on this one important branch of philosophy—vegetable physiology ?

The more minute our investigations in the animal kingdom, the more conspicuous will our ignorance appear ; we shall be amazed to think with how much self-complacency we sat down content, under such a tissue of absurdities as disfigured the study before these men enlightened us. The great part which the electric and magnetic fluids take in arranging and propelling organic matter, is still unknown to us ; when the time arrives for the full comprehension of the powers and laws of these two great principles, much of the beautiful system of internal organization will be revealed to us.

The life of man will not then hang on so slender a thread ; chance, which more or less comes to the aid of the physician, will be succeeded by true knowledge. Man knows that he is born to die, but he knows, likewise, that he may aspire to live out his term—his threescore years and ten. It is his privilege to avert or lessen the evils which tend to shorten his brief career ; and nothing is so likely to affect this object, as to become minutely acquainted with the internal structure of organized bodies.

Experiments on plants are conducted with more ease and certainty than on animals, for plants are completely in our power on account of their peculiar passiveness and rigidity. We have the aid, too, of good glasses and ingenious instruments ; dissections, therefore, are not attended by those revolting, unpleasant feelings—those compunctious visitings—which render the study of animal physiology so disgusting, particularly when called upon to operate on living subjects.

Let it not be inferred, because the whole mass of inanimate or vegetable life is under the control of man, that power is to be exercised over it without any expenditure of those sympathies which we bestow when animal life is in question—that because the vegetable subject is incapable of complaint or resistance, we are to be divested of all concern for it. Whether plants are injured by casualties or neglect, or are wantonly destroyed, they are as much entitled to our regard as when they are in full health, and contribute to our wants and our pleasures. More refined motives than what result from the mere gratifica-



tion of sense should influence us in the cultivation of plants. We should take as much pleasure in the health, in the beauty and in the longevity of a plant, as we do in its usefulness. When we undertake the care of a tree or a flower, it should be our study to protect and relieve it from those evils to which they are liable, with motives distinct from gain.

It is not intended that any morbid sensibility should be played—that we are to weep over a faded lily, or moralize over a fallen leaf, or “die of a rose in aromatic pain”—but that a positive duty is neglected when plants are allowed to suffer evils which attention could alleviate, or foresight prevent. To entitle vegetable life to our regard, we should consider it the work of the same Divine Spirit which created our own. It is this expanded thought which has exalted the study of vegetable physiology to its present high standing in science.

It is to this enlarged and liberal sentiment that we owe the diffusion of knowledge in this generation; and, as we have observed, to none are we so much indebted as to the French philosophers. They are an ingenious, inquisitive, patient, laborious race, beginning at the very germ, and rendering the study of each particular branch clear and satisfactory. We can follow Dr. Dutrochet and Professor De Candolle, with much pleasure and confidence, throughout their physiological enquiries, because they lead us step by step from the most unpromising beginnings to the broadest and clearest heights, and they only leave us to our own resources when all rubbish and difficulties have been removed.

The fact is, the French are the best pioneers and experimentalists in the world, and we are absolutely enticed to follow them by the easy mode of explanation that they offer. We have not, as hitherto, to jump over an appalling gap, or to climb up a rugged hill, stumbling as we proceed, before we obtain a starting place for our speculations. They present to us with a smooth road, imperceptible in its ascent, of which we know the termination, having legible milestones for our guidance. The French philosophers are, besides, as courteous and considerate when explaining their scientific knowledge as in a parlor. What a Frenchman knows, he is willing to tell all the world, and to tell it in the kindest manner. The Germans are likewise communicative, but not courteous. An Englishman is slow to communicate his discoveries, his first care being to appropriate the benefits to himself. This selfish propensity cannot, however, always be gratified, for his own countrymen are as unwilling to admit his claims, as he is to make them public. He has to fight his way through a host of ill-natured envious critics, who wear out his time and his patience in controversy; and many a nervous and sensitive person has prefer-

to give up the honour and benefit of an important improvement in the arts or in science, rather than run the gantlet to substantiate his claims as the original inventor.

It is with pleasure and profit, therefore, that we study a French author; and Dr. Dutrochet is conspicuous for simplicity and perspicuity, as well as for his honest and considerate attention to the claims of those who have preceded him in his particular studies. Never was there any thing more beautifully clear and satisfactory than his work entitled *Anatomical and Physiological Researches*—there is nothing equal to it extant.

The Genevan philosopher, M. de Candolle, is likewise entitled to our gratitude, for he has added many new and useful hints. It has been the peculiar happiness of these two distinguished men, to know that they have infused more spirit into the study, and have created a greater eagerness for pursuits of this kind, than any other previous writers on vegetable physiology. Thousands of minds have been set to work—and in the right way, too—they have not only been taught to think for themselves, but have been taught how to set about thinking.

Vegetable physiology, as treated by these gentlemen, is one of the most fascinating and satisfactory studies in the world; and happy must that man account himself, who has leisure and abilities to walk out in the fields and orchards, and look at the wonders which the learning of these philosophers has laid open to him. He who makes this branch of science a study, feels himself at once elevated far above ordinary men. He is entrusted with the key of knowledge, and he can at any moment unlock the door and walk in a world of delights; innocent pleasures of which the ignorant can form no conception.

It is gratifying, likewise, to pursue the same experiments, and with the same results, that were so clearly laid down by these able and ingenious men; but it is still more gratifying to know that our investigations have led to some discoveries that may, ultimately, add new light to this branch of science.

The closest observation, and the clearest view of the subject, prove to us that there are two indisputable points of resemblance between a plant and an animal—vitality and instinct. These two elementary principles are imparted, continued, and extinguished, in the same manner, whether infused in a moving or fixed body. In many other particulars, although a similarity in the physical structure and capacities can be traced, yet the organic material is so very different that there is great danger in being deceived. But in the two grand leading points—vitality and instinct—the same laws govern both plants and animals; vicissitudes of climate, light, shade, moisture, dryness, nourishment, care, neglect, produce the same effect on a tree as on a man. It is partly to ascertain how the internal organs of

each are disposed, and to trace a connection between them, that these minute investigations have been made. What a simplicity there is in all the works of nature, that, with only a variation of the same powers—life, instinct, and matter—build up every thing that lives, and moves, and has a being !

Plants have the instinctive power of motion, and are impelled to it by external as well as internal influences. They have movements peculiar to themselves, either in the search of food, or to protect themselves from injury. This movement is effected by elongating the rootlets, and by folding up the leaves. Such processes, for ever going on, could only result from an irritation or excitement in the system similar to that which takes place in the animal economy. The bird, the bee, and the new-born child, have no more reason to guide them, when they go to the exact spot for nourishment, than the spongelets of a tree have, which drink in by a similar process—suction—the fluid nutriment that the rootlets and slender filaments place within their reach. They are the arms or feelers, on the surface of which the spongelets are placed ; and being placed on the surfaces of all the ramifications of these extremities, they are thus brought into immediate contact with the aliment suited to them.

We are very willing to use the term “nervimotion,” as introduced by Dr. Dutrochet, but it appears to us that irritability is quite as suitable as the one proposed. By irritability in the animal system we do not imply any mental perception of sensation, but simply a physical capacity to react on the application of pressure or deleterious stimulus. If a fly and a chicken be suddenly deprived of their head—which part, in the higher order of animal life, is the seat of volition—they still remain susceptible of the same movements, for a certain length of time, to which they were subject when the will could control them. The leg of the spider called *long-legs* will sometimes keep in motion, while lying flat, for upwards of a quarter of an hour. It imitates the motion of walking exactly as if it was still attached to the body of the spider, and yet in no insect or animal is the ligament and cuticle which connects it with the body so frail and delicate—almost a touch will separate the whole leg, having three joints, from the body.

In consequence of the reproductive principle with which plants are so strongly endowed, and of the remoteness of the extremities from the main radiating point, they are allowed a corresponding quantity of the vital principle. They possess it in greater proportion, and it is of longer continuance in the system, than that which is allowed to animals. There is, likewise, a slower development of this vital energy, which enables a plant the longer to resist the changes of climate, and of those

casualties to which they are the more subject in consequence of being deprived of the powers of speech and locomotion. The reproductive capacity, which plants possess in so remarkable a degree, eminently proves that they have this superabundant quantity of the vital principle.

Each articulation or joint of a plant has the special power assigned to it, not only to receive from the roots its own share of the crude sap as it rises, but of retaining and apportioning this sap to its own use, so as to sustain the particular twig that emanates from this articulation. Of course, when the terminal shoot is separated from the joint there is a reservoir of this *cambium* or elaborated juice at the base, which is sufficient to sustain the slip until it can strike out roots and support itself.

There is an important fact corroborative of this, which is this—the extremities of the tallest trees exhibit the first appearance of life when excited by the sun's rays in the spring; they show as much animation and vigour after being exposed to the cold of a Siberian winter, as if the general circulation had never been checked. Whereas tortoises, and other animals which lie torpid during the winter, are obliged to draw their limbs within the shell, or curl up their bodies in such a manner as to bring the extremities as closely as possible to vital heat. Plants, therefore, have a power connected with that of divisibility, by which heat is generated at the articulated sections, and this heat is excited even before the frost is out of the ground in the spring.

Although the organic structure of plants varies so much in different species, yet the same phenomena of vitality, instinct, and irritability, exist in all. The circulation of sap is so rapid in the grape vine, owing to the peculiarity of the interstitial medium, that, when wounded, the exhaustion from the copious discharge often endangers the life of the plant. The same effect is produced in seasons of great drought: the grape vine suffers for the want of a constant supply of fluid nutriment; if it be withheld the plant slowly loses its energy, the leaves hang loosely and without motion, and the unripe flaccid berries wither on the vines. Here an analogy can be traced between the animal and plant; but our object is chiefly to speak of vegetation, and not to draw comparisons.

The electric fluid will sometimes prostrate the energies of the grape vine. We have seen the leaves of a whole vineyard hang lifeless after a warm, gentle, July shower, during the hottest period of the day. Many of the vines never recovered from this syncope, if so it may be called. A warm shower in mid-day will sometimes produce the like effect on the sensitive plant, but it always revives after the shower is over.

Every thing that has life is more or less affected by the elec-

tric fluid; that the sensitive plant shows its presence so instantaneously, is owing to the peculiarity of the ligament which connects the articulations and the cellular tissues. But the same revulsion or collapse takes place in all plants, only in a greater or less degree according to the activity of the vital principle. If we wound the bark of a tree, no external motion is visible; this arises from the rigidity of its parts, yet we feel assured that some commotion takes place internally at the very instant that the injury occurs. The work of repair goes on immediately; for, no sooner is the bark bruised than there is a rush of secretive matter to the spot, which covers the wound from the air, and in a short time the broken bark is renewed, having acquired additional strength by the healing process.

The external motion of some plants, and the motion that we feel assured is going on within others, may as well be called irritability as nervimotion. No one refers to mental action for the production of that convulsive movement of the spider's leg, nor of the hen when the head has been chopped off. These movements are the remains of the same principle which is common to plants and animals—vitality. This power, life, gradually disappears from the parts when they are separated from the head, but neither sensation nor consciousness have any share in producing these irregular movements; they are altogether involuntary. It is a fact worthy of observation, that these convulsive movements will be more violent in a hen that has been chased about for some time before her head was cut off, than if she had been taken quietly from the roost.

We perceive, therefore, that on any emergency the vital principle can be accumulated, and that it will remain in the system for some time after the controlling power, *the will*, has been separated from it. The body of the hen flounders and writhes about without any effort of will or design, just as a paper kite is dashed about by the winds when the string has been cut from the hand which controlled its motions.

If matter, undergoing fermentation, be placed under ground within the reach of the spongelets of an exhausted tree, its vigour will be restored. It is the *gaseous* particles which infuse new life, and why may we not expect a similar result from an introduction of gases into the veins when the system is in a state of collapse or exhaustion? Why not hope that it may renew life in a body that is debilitated by typhus, or sinking with a protracted disease. It is reasonable to suppose that when a fever is subdued, or has worn itself out, the introduction of certain vivifying gases, through a *fluid medium*, would at once give a new tone to the system, and prevent it from sinking.

Thoughts like the above present themselves to the mind while

studying the beautiful science of vegetable physiology. It is in vain for the closet philosopher to insist that no conclusion can be drawn from analogies such as these, or that no analogies exist. Our knowledge will eventually amount to this—that gases have been selected, by the wisdom of the Almighty, as the propelling power which is to circulate all elementary matter. When bodies are to be formed, or when injuries are to be repaired, the process is effected through the medium of a fluid. All equable and slow depositions of matter have been transferred to their resting place by the instrumentality of gases aided by a fluid menstruum. But when a rupture or a dismemberment, or any convulsion of nature, is to take place, gases are the *sole* agents; they then want no fluid medium—they are sufficient of themselves to produce all the pains incident to the human body, and all the violent phenomena which occur on earth. They are as necessary to the existence of a plant as to an animal; and it is only when there is an excess, or too small a portion of them, that organized systems perish.

Nerves seem only necessary to a system where sensation is to be conveyed, and sensation, or a consciousness of it, appears only to belong to animal life. Pliancy and contractibility are all that the organs of a plant possess, and all that vegetation requires, if we except the power of absorption; and yet that power, on reflection, is a mere contractile force. But, in which ever way we view the subject, we still find that gases are the propelling power.

The vitality of plants and of the inferior order of animals, particularly those which have the power of reproducing a limb, or an outer case or skin, continues long after sensation has ceased—for we must insist on calling that violent action which the headless body of a chicken exhibits, the effect of the vital principle. It is of precisely the same nature as it was when it pervaded the whole system, during the time when the animal was completely imbued with it, and when the *will* could control the movements of each organ.

It may be urged that galvanism can produce similar movements; but, in the case of the headless chicken, the agency of that fluid is not perceptible, although we grant that the time is fast approaching when the propelling power of the galvanic and electric fluids will be identified with that which animates or renders active the *principle of life itself*. Of this we are certain, that electricity has a powerful effect on vegetation—not only blasting and shattering the largest trees, but rupturing the sap vessels—thus producing congestion and death. But still, even in this, the propelling power, that which transports the electric fluid, is gas.

Although it is needless to enquire into the nature of that

principle called life, yet we should certainly endeavour to comprehend what it is that sustains it and gives it facilities when it is present in organized life. Both in plants and animals, life is sustained by a due attention to the changes of the atmosphere, and to the judicious application of nutriment. We should recollect, however, that although large masses of food are taken into the stomachs of animals, and are applied likewise to the roots of plants, yet, while in its crude state, the solid parts are not forced into the absorbent vessels as the proper food for organized bodies. The stomach to animals is what the stercoraceous or compost heap is to plants—a place where food is elaborated. We apply this fermented mass to the roots or spongelets of a plant; but, separated as the particles are, only such portions of it as can be combined with or elevated by gases can ever find their way through the minute pores of the spongelets.

Yet whatever be the quality of the gaseous compound, when presented to the pores for absorption, *it is to water* that they are indebted for the equal and healthy admixture of the nutritive particles. In like manner, the whole system of an animal is indebted to a fluid menstruum for the equable diffusion of the proper juices which are to sustain life. In this respect the analogy is perfect.

We learn, therefore, that by the agency of gases in a fluid medium, nutriment is conveyed *from without* to the pores of the spongelets of a plant, and *from within* to the ducts of an animal. This is for the purpose of enlarging the size, repairing the waste and continuing the life of both, for it is by these disunited nutritive particles, that the interstices of the germ of every organized body are enlarged. Here nature operates alike and to the same end; the only difference of the economy is, that in an animal, the labour of preparing the food for the above purpose is performed in the centre of the system, whereas, in a plant, the food is prepared for it from without, at a distance, there being no such viscus in vegetable life as a stomach, strictly so called. Yet an elaboration of the ascending particles is effected by some means within the plant, for that which is admitted in the first instance becomes very different in its nature and character after it is deposited around the annular swellings that lie at the base of each limb or twig. Let us understand how this elaboration is effected.

In a healthy plant each articulated section appropriates to itself a sufficient quantity of this nutritive matter, for the purpose of enlarging and sustaining *its own individual parts*, having no other connection with the rest of the plant than by a slight ligament which unites it at the base. It may be said that it is united also by the bark; but this is error, for the bark vessels are likewise connected by this slight ligament, the loss

of which ligament is of no disadvantage or injury to either the twig, the tree, or the tubular action, for the action is confined to short limits.

On a close inspection, it will be seen that at those places of deposit, the annular swellings, there is a concentration of this vegetable chyle, or elaborated sap, and it is there held in reserve during the winter, so that these parts are not dependent on the parent stem for their support. The ascending sap in the spring excites the vessels to make use of this conserve, and to distribute it to the leaf and flower buds *which exist on its own section*. This rise of sap takes place as soon as the air is sufficiently heated by the sun's rays in the spring to excite the *extremities* of each individual terminal shoot to action.

With respect to the long agitated question of the circulation of sap, taking into consideration the physical organisation of both plants and animals—the one rigid and immovable, the other flexible and capable of voluntary motion—we think the rise of sap in one continued stream is equivalent to the circulation in animals. Nor need we wonder at this, and object to the term circulation, because it is not like that in animals, for, even with them, the process varies as much, and is as diversified, as the different orders themselves. In our apprehension, there is not only a circulation in plants, but one of a more peculiar and simple character than would be inferred from an inspection of their organs. It does not alter the fact of positive circulation, because it is different in plants.

The leaves of plants, delicate and transient as they are, perform the office of lungs, or, rather, are the outlets and inlets of gaseous matter, and yet no one doubts that they are the respiratory organs, although so different from those of animals. They not only supply the system with new matter, but they submit, likewise, a portion of that which ascends to their surface to the action of atmospheric gases, and other portions of it they reject.

The upper surfaces of leaves, as well as the bark of the tree, imbibe through their pores a great deal of the humidity of the atmosphere, and allow of the evaporation of ascending sap. Knowing this, and that the edges of all leaves throw off the fluid and gaseous secretions which have been rejected by the circulation, we may with safety infer that some portions of the cuticle, even of the spongelets, minute as they are, have likewise the power of discarding the residuum of elaborated sap. The spongelets—the name given to these absorbents by Dr. Dutrochet, and a very appropriate one—have the same office assigned them as the leaves. In fact, they should be considered as subterraneous leaves or lungs, and notwithstanding that pores have never yet been detected in the bark of a tree, yet if fluids can



permeate from without, they may be rejected from within. There can be no question of the fact, that the bark absorbs moisture, for experiment proves it; the bark of the tree is, for all similar purposes, exactly like the skin of an animal, which discharges from the pores that portion of the oily and fluid secretions, the retention of which would produce fevers.

That leaves may have the full benefit of light, heat, and moisture, the upper surfaces assume, as nearly as possible, a horizontal position, or else hang obliquely to receive the slanting rays. Not, as has been conjectured, in consequence of their green colour, but because the pores of the leaf, being vertical or nearly so, they are the better enabled to submit ascending matter to the action of atmospheric gases. The green colour common to all leaves, and generally to the bark of all stems, is produced by some chemical change which takes place in the secretions that lie in the cellular tissues of the bark, leaf, and bud. This secretive matter is at first of a pale yellow colour which, in fact, is the colour of the leaf when it first protrudes from the bud in the spring. It is the colour, too, of all plants when they first emerge from the ground, changing to green when the cuticle of the leaf and bark are sufficiently prepared to admit the action of heat and light. It is well known that when plants are reared in darkness the fluids are white which is likewise the colour of fibrils and tender rootlets, the colouring matter of fluids being uniformly white at the roots. Light, therefore, excepting in a solitary case or two, is necessary to the production of the green colour; light, heat, and moisture, to the continuation of it in the leaves; and light and moisture to the continuance of it in the bark.

The sap, in the first place, acquires a yellow tinge while passing up, which arises from its coming within the power of atmospheric gases. It is a fact well known, that if the bark of a tree be lifted up it will be seen that the sap, almost colourless at first, changes immediately to a deep orange tint, the particles of the atmosphere producing this change. The secretions, therefore, when they reach the cellular tissues of each leaf and bud, must receive a blue colouring matter from without, and the union of the blue and yellow produces green.

M. de Candolle observes that the oxygen of carbonic air is exhaled by the leaves, and that carbon is deposited there, which deposition produces the green colour. What evidence have we that carbon will change the yellow colouring matter to green? In putrefactive processes the green colour is destroyed by the presence of finely pulverized charcoal. We cannot suppose that the powers of an agent are so unlimited as to make a fixed principle, like carbon, add a blue colouring matter to one substance and abstract it from another, particularly as it forms a

conspicuous a part in the building up of organic bodies. It may, and no doubt is, present in the cellular tissues, for the same purpose that it is present elsewhere—as a counteracting power to the one which causes decomposition, or acetous fermentation. It is urged that the green part of wood, when burnt, exhibits a greater proportion of carbon than either the albumen or woody fibre. This is owing to the abundance of mucilage and gluten which that part contains, and not to the mere colouring matter. The quantity of carbon extracted from the burnt green wood might, with greater propriety, be suspected of having formed the principal part of the organic structure; for if it was so plainly recognized, there was more than enough to unite with the yellow fluid, as a quantity scarcely perceptible would be sufficient for the purpose. In our opinion, the matter which forms the *blue* tint is yet unknown to us.

A very curious phenomenon has recently come within our own knowledge, which will throw some light on the subject. We discovered that snow which fell on tanner's spent bark, when the ground underneath was *not* frozen, became immediately tinged with a beautiful green colour. This green snow lay in patches on a tan walk, and on closely investigating this singular circumstance, we observed that those parts alone of the snow were coloured which lay on pieces of bark that were covered with a dingy, yellow dust. In sprinkling dust of this kind on a board, and covering it with a slice of newly fallen snow, the colouring matter of the dust rose slowly through the pores of the snow, and tinged it throughout with a beautiful, bright green colour. Both the snow and the dust were perfectly dry at the time. This phenomenon did not appear when the dust was laid on *ice*, or on frozen ground, and then covered with snow.

If carbon alone were the cause of the green colour, or of the change in the yellow sap, then this green tint would remain *fixed*, as it were, even when the vitality of the plant had ceased. The very character of carbon consists in its preserving its identity; that is, the *perceptible* part of carbon remains fixed, and it is only in its perceptible state, *as a substance*, that we can ever know it. But this is not the character of the matter which produces the green tint in leaves, for let the *blue* tint come from either a mineral or vegetable pigment, for both can furnish it, its evanescent nature is the same. Be it what it may, light and a slight degree of heat seem necessary to its development. And, as regards its formation in snow, the *blue* tint must exist in the interstices of snow; and we recollect seeing a remark in corroboration of this, "that snow, when presented to certain rays of light, had a bluish cast throughout." A writer, whose name is not now recollected, attributes the

generation of the green tint to the *monas* or other infusory animalcules; but this is a gratuitous supposition, and, were it correct, we should still be in the dark respecting the nature of the essence which produced the *blue* tint in the *monas*. There is no doubt that animalcules exist in the pores of the cuticle of the leaf, as well as in the interstices of snow and ice, but with the aid of excellent glasses we never could discover in them the least approach to the blue tint.

Although that portion of light which remains perceptible in snow, in conjunction with the heat which all bodies contain when above the freezing point, be sufficient to produce a union between the blue tint of the snow and the yellow tint of the bark, yet a great quantity of solar light is necessary to the continuance of the blue principle in the green colour of leaves. A few days of cloudy weather, as has been observed by Professor Eaton and others, will not only prevent any new union of the blue and yellow tints, but will cause the greater part of the blue tint already formed to disappear from the foliage. As soon as the sun breaks out in full splendour, the pale, sickly colour of the leaves becomes a vivid green again. Can it be proved that there is a deficiency of carbon in the atmosphere, either at night or in cloudy weather.

In the autumn, as soon as the atmosphere is deprived of heat, the circulation of plants becomes languid, the fibres contract, the vessels collapse, there is no action in the cellular tissues, the blue tint is decomposed, and disappears from the leaves. Nothing remains but the yellow colour of the sap which, being detained in the leaf, undergoes all the changes from the deepest yellow to orange and red—just such change as the sap itself undergoes, when brought immediately in contact with the air. This change is not only seen in bruised bark, but in the juices of all fruits, most conspicuous in the common bough or green harvest apple. The green tint, however, never leaves the bark of plants, for, as has been observed, there is always a little circulation in plants, even in the coldest winters. Nor does this green tint ever disappear from the leaves of the family of resinous plants; which latter fact is good hint to chemists in the fixing or setting of colours.

The green tint appears to be only necessary to the surface of the leaves and bark, its use being to mitigate the intensity of the rays of light, which otherwise would too suddenly decompose the fluids contained in the cellular tissues. These fluids are propelled to the surface for the purpose of evaporation, and for undergoing some change. The green tint continues down the back of a living plant until it reaches the point whence the roots emanate; here solar influence ceases—or rather the action of light ceases. The green colour not only disappears, but

the roots have not their sap tinged with the yellow colouring matter.

Roots, when exposed to the light for a length of time, have their bark sometimes tinged with green, but it is not in consequence of the absence of colour, as some suppose, that roots descend or gravitate, or that trunks and branches ascend, in virtue of possessing that colour. It might as well be urged, that a parrot extends and elevates its wings in virtue of the green feathers, and that the feet gravitate or cling to the perch in consequence of being deprived of them.

From the radiating points of a plant proceed differently constructed organs—one set performing the office of feet and mouths, and perhaps lungs, and the other acting as arms and lungs, and perhaps mouths likewise. The construction of the cuticle of the leaves is so different from that of the spongelets at the roots, that it will be seen at once that the spongelets are not destined to excite or produce the green colouring matter—and they *have* not this power for the simple reason that the green tint is not essential to the necessities of the roots.

In sickly plants, where there is a want of vigour, the cuticular action is feeble, and the leaves, even with the aid of light and heat, are unable to generate the green colour. If restoratives are not administered—such as shade and moisture—the plant must die. The cuticle of the leaf is as tender and delicate as the retina of the eye, which cannot, any more than the cuticle of the leaf, bear the strong glare and heat of the sun. When the eye is diseased we protect it from the light by a *shading of green*. The disease in peach trees, throughout the United States, called the yellows, is nothing more than a disease of the cuticle. If there is a want of healthy action in the pores of the leaf, the tree declines in health, and is not able to resist the cold of winter, the leaves *put out* in the spring, sickly and pale, and the fruit drops off prematurely ripe; such a tree scarcely survives the next winter. We have frequently restored trees in which the yellow had just made its appearance, by removing them to damp, shady places, and we have seen whole orchards of peach trees, thus diseased, recover their green colour, in the course of a wet summer.

The mere *length* of the body or trunk of a tree, is of no particular advantage to it; on the contrary, tall trees, with long limbs, are very apt to be injured by wind and lightning. It is well known that trees which have *no* stems or trunks; but with limbs springing immediately from the ground or radiating point, are rich in fruit and foliage.

After bestowing great pains in the investigation, we are of opinion that the ducts, commonly called sap vessels, as soon as they have sufficiently elaborated the sap, *which they abstract*

from the interstices, deposit this secretive matter to the part immediately in the area of the same circumference with themselves. There rests no doubt on our minds that the nutritive fluids enter the spongelets, pass up through the interstices, and are absorbed by the ducts exactly as is the case in that part of the circulatory process of animals. Every thing in the economy of the plant proves that the absorbent vessels deposit the elaborated sap in a lateral direction.

1. If all the leaves and leaf buds be stripped from any section or twig of a tree having fruit buds on it, the fruit on that section never grows, although those above and below it grow.

2. If a hole, about two inches square, be cut in the trunk or limb of a tree, the secretive vessels will furnish matter for a renewal of the abstracted part—but the healing process will proceed from the sides of the wound, and not from the top or bottom. The granulations which are seen above and below the wound, on close inspection, will be found to have proceeded from the sides. The hole, when entirely covered with new bark, shows the true manner in which the healing proceeded, for the middle of the closed wound has a cicatrice of an oblong form.

3. If a square or round piece of bark, of about two inches diameter be cut from a tree, and a piece of bark from another part of the tree is made to fit in the hole very exactly, the edges will unite at the sides first. The top and bottom cut will only adhere by a glutinous ligament, which in time will be displaced by granulations proceeding from the side edges. In most experiments, however, when the piece set in is of two inches diameter—the edges of the top cut never unite.

4. If a limb be cut off closely to the trunk or limb of a tree—so closely to the bark as that no ring or swelling is left attached to the trunk or limb—the wound will heal from the side edges first, and from these side edges granulations will be pushed out, which will in time cover the whole of the wounded parts, leaving an oblong cicatrice, with an indentation in the centre.

5. If part of the base of the limb or twig—the ring or swelling from which all limbs and branches grow—be left attached to the trunk, the healing process goes on rapidly; and from the edge of the whole circumference, leaving the cicatrice round, with a round indentation in the centre.

6. If a limb be cut between the joints, the wound never heals. The edges of the bark, where separated, shrivel, and all that part above the swelling or ring, of which we spoke, decays and becomes a naked stump.

Therefore, the trunk, and all the spaces or intervals between the joints or articulations, are mere shafts or supporters; and it matters not whether they be one inch or twenty feet, as it

the quantity of nutritive matter they convey. The of trunks and limbs is to allow of the upward ascent of p, which sap is conducted through the interstices. ral, clostral, and other ducts, being the true absorb-elaborating vessels, the mere *length* of the trunk or is nothing to the goodness of the fruit, or beauty to the

But at the same time that the whole tree has to be i by the nutriment thus raised, yet a certain portion of ssary to the enlargement and repair of these trunks ps; consequently, the *additional* sap, which a high ises up, would be necessary to sustain the mere increase unk.

essels, and the porous interstices, which surround each quite sufficient for the purpose of nourishing the dif-gans which lie in embryo at the base of every limb or ore the joints are. It is in these annular swellings that itration of nutriment exists, the sap being detained nger at this spot.

these incontrovertible facts, we must draw the conclu-: the crude sap rises through the interstices, and not any of the vessels or elongated ducts, whether spiral vise. That this crude sap rises to the extreme points riminal shoots, and those parts, if not wanted for the he plant, disappear from the leaves and bark. The d sap, or cambium, or whatever it may be called, *does at all*, but is *given out*, laterally, as the sap rises, by cal ducts, to those parts on a level with each section of cts. The elaborated sap of each vesicular division es with that which is ascending in the capillary pores. laborative or digestive process, in certain stages, is n nearly in the same manner as in animals; the differ-ar vessels absorb such portions of the fluid mass which ing, as is requisite for the economy of the section that *level with these vessels*. Instead, therefore, of a con-roke from the top to the bottom of the plant and then in, as in the circulation of the blood, the elaborated ves only in its own little sphere. In fact, as Dr. it has satisfactorily shown, the fluids must necessarily ed to a small space, as the absorbents are interrupted ntervals, and being hermetically closed, as it were, there no continued flow or circulation of this digested sap. rroborate this opinion of the lateral direction of the ices, and the limited action of the vessels which absorb ve only to examine the bark of large trees. There is acing, at intervals, of some of these absorbent vessels; ranged at right angles with those that are placed ver-and are very distinct in the bark of the cherry tree.

We observed that the healing process goes on more rapidly when part of the swelling is left attached to the trunk of the tree, after the limb has been sawed off. This swelling or ring left around the edge of the wound, contains a quantity of nutritive matter, which is given out at every point of the circumference, so that the wound can be healed at once. Whereas, if all this swelling, or, as it may be called, this reservoir of secretive matter, were cut off with the limb, the wounded part would not be so soon healed. The depositions from the absorbent vessels would be scanty, and be given out slowly, proceeding, as before mentioned, in a *horizontal* direction only, and of such a nature as only to repair the bark. There is one great advantage, however, in cutting the base or swelling entirely off with the limb, as no new limbs, or twigs, or weak sprouts, will shoot out from the edges of the wound, which would certainly be the case if the ring were left, for it is here that the embryo organs lie.

The roots of trees and plants are more dependent on the upper radiating point for their extension and duration than the branches are on the roots. The terminal shoot can exist separately from the tree, whereas no artifice can cause that part of the extremity of a root that is separated to grow. This inability in the roots, when cut off from the radiating point, is in consequence of being separated from the *conducting medium*. They are not dependent on the upper part for nutriment from the returning vessels, because their own ducts furnish them with all that is requisite—giving out the elaborated sap in a similar manner to that of the trunk and branches; but when the trunk is cut off, capillary action ceases, and, consequently, the sponges let absorb no more crude sap.

A gardener knows that at certain periods of the year, from good cuttings, he can obtain healthy plants. He knows that cuttings from the grape vine will form new roots, and push out new branches. His experience has taught him. He is content to know nothing more than that the part below—if cut closely to a joint—heals over, and that roots appear at the places where branches would be, if the cuttings had remained on the vine. He imagines that the leaf buds, themselves, are transformed into roots as soon as the sun and air are withheld. This is not the case; the bud of a cutting, or a layer, when planted, will push up and become a plant itself, if it is not planted too deep below the germinating point; but if it be planted below this point, then it perishes, whilst roots will protrude from the very same joint. Being aware of this, we perceive the propriety of breaking off the leaf buds of all cuttings, excepting three or four at the top, which are to serve as conductors, or as radiating points.

Being assured, therefore, that the ring, "bourrelet," or swelling, which surrounds all the joints of a plant, contains the germ of all the organs—roots as well as of branches in an incipient state—and that secretive matter is held in reserve at these places of depot, we can easily infer that the lower part of a cutting should be separated close to the joint. This facilitates the growth of the roots, as much time is wasted in efforts to slough off the useless piece of wood below the joint, for until that has disappeared, the roots will shoot out thin and weak.

But, although the secretive matter lies as a conserve in this annular swelling, and it is here, also, that the organs are developed, yet it must not be forgotten that *the capacity to form new organs does not exist in this conserve*. They originate in the germ of the tree, or plant, and belong to the constitution of vegetable organization. The secretions are to fill up the incipient outline as fast as it enlarges, and to repair what has been injured.

The roots of plants do not always depend on the nutriment which is obtained from soils that lie within atmospheric influence; hardy trees can exist independently—that is, the roots can grow and extend in every direction without the aid of those gases which emanate from solar heat and light. Many trees have attained an immense size, in perfect health and fruitfulness, the roots of which were covered with a stone flagging, as is seen in our large cities. The roots of many trees run under walls and foundations of houses, precluding the possibility of external influence. The roots of the grape vine get out of the reach of gases which are generated by the heated atmosphere. When roots are formed near the surface, they are cut off by judicious gardeners, being considered as injurious to the plant.

When the substratum is particularly favourable to the growth of roots, the ducts are enlarged, and more secretive nutriment is retained than is requisite; *for that portion of cambium which the ducts absorb does not rise to assist in the enlargement of the branches and fruit, but goes to increase the size of all those parts adjacent to each link of the vesicular division*. In consequence of the great absorption, at the roots, of the heavier particles which the ascending sap contains, the crude fluid can rise with greater ease, and, accordingly, there is a great growth of trunk and branches. When this is the case, a tree does not bear fruit so soon as if the limbs grew less rapidly. A practical orchardist, without going into the philosophy of the thing, cuts out a great deal of the superabundant wood, particularly those tall, upright limbs, called water sprouts, or gluttons, for they rarely, if ever, bear fruit.

Although trees and tough woody plants do well, at times, when the roots are entirely excluded from solar influence, yet a



tree must be far advanced in years and strength before it can thrive in a close sod. Independently of the absorption of moisture, of which even stones and the foundations of houses do not deprive the roots, the grasses and grains abstract all the vivifying gases. These gases, more or less present in all soils, leave the tardy operation which attends the process of circulation in large bodies, and fly to that which is more rapid, such as is in grains and grasses. Capillary action being rapid in annual plants, the gases, charged with elementary matter, are elevated with more ease through their interstices. It is evident that gases are endowed with a principle which compels them to attain a certain height in space as quickly as possible; this they effect by flying to the easiest point of exit. An uncultivated barren soil is not suitable to the extrication of gases, because they cannot elevate themselves speedily from a dry surface; they move with greater ease, and to a more definite purpose through a fluid or moist medium.

Wherever decomposition is going on, by combustion, fermentation, or chemical disintegration, the consequent motion produces a current in the immediate vicinity. Around every mass which is undergoing decomposition, there is a current of this kind. Manures are placed around the roots of trees, because experience has taught us that they grow the better if being thus manured. Very few apprehend that a new power is generated by this process, nor is the knowledge ever connected with the rise of sap, yet it is in part owing to this current that the sap rises at all. The spongelets are admirably adapted to receive the gaseous particles which follow the course of the light currents; they are flaccid and almost invisible, when deprived of moisture, but become turgid and elastic, when filled with the gaseous fluid.

Three things, therefore, are necessary to a proper determination of crude sap to the pores of the spongelets.

1. A gentle and equable current, such as always exists wherever matter is undergoing decomposition; the current being capable of conveying the gases which are charged with the elementary matter that is disengaged from the decomposed matter.

2. A fluid medium, without which gases would be not only useless, but positively injurious. Water is necessary to the easy movements of gases; and it is only through this medium that their power is available for the purposes of vegetation.

3. A tubular, or porous medium, such as the secretory ducts of plants and animals, sponges, sugar, linen, and soils. It is the *interstices*, and not to the *tubular* vessels of a plant, that the gases convey the elementary particles which are extricated from manures. The spongelets themselves, as their name implies, are

the porous organs—the inlets to the whole of the porous organization of the plant. They show, at once, the true rise of the sap, being a continuation of the interstices.

There is one fact, materially connected with the rise of sap, very overlooked, even by the French physiologists—it is, if a small piece of bark be cut from a growing, healthy tree, and a piece taken from another tree of the same kind is laid in the wound, the side edges will unite by what is called, surgery, *healing by the first intention*. In a similar manner a foreign bud adheres, when inserted under the bark in the budding process. Now, it must be granted that in both instances there is a complete separation of all the spiral, clostral, and other vessels, yet the sap rises, the parts unite, and the bud grows. As it respects the bud, there is no attempt to join the side edges of the bark in the process of inoculating; it is enough that the inner surface of the bud adheres by a glutinous cement, for the vessels in no instance ever come in contact with the vessels of the bark in which the bud is inserted. The crude sap, which is constantly rising, finds no difficulty in forcing itself through the porous interstices of the little bud. When a bud is to be transferred to a tree, great care is taken to remove the little pellicle which adheres to the under part of the base of the bud. *It is in this little reservoir that the tubular organs of the bud are held for use*, and, being a spongy gument, it is admirably fitted to receive the crude sap. Of what use to the bud are the spiral and clostral vessels of the tree, under which it is pushed? There is no connection whatever between the edges of the bark of the bud and the edges of the tree; if the sap rose through tubular ducts, the bud could receive none of it, for there is no connecting link. If it be said that the sap rises through the tubular vessels of the bark of the tree, notwithstanding it is not joined to the edges of the bark of the tree, then why is it that the bud perishes, if the under pellicle underneath is removed? for the tubular organs remain in the bark.

But the sap—the crude sap, fresh from the spongelets—does not rise through tubular ducts, either in the cited instance of the inserted piece of bark, or the bud. This crude sap could not more ascend through the mutilated tubes than the blood of animals could ascend through a vein or artery that had been divided. The art of man could not unite a divided artery, and nature never does it for him, neither can the closest union of tubes connect the divided tubes of a plant. If a young plant be sustained, and its organic structure developed, by the flow of sap through the interstitial medium of pith, it can be easily allowed that a porous medium, nearer the organs, is as efficient to the rise of sap as the pith was. It will ere long be

satisfactorily proved, that the tubular vessels of both plants and animals are mere absorbents and propellants, whilst the *interstices* of both flesh and bark convey the chyle or crude sap to the external surface of these tubes, and likewise retain that portion of it which is rejected by the main tubes.

There is this difference between the tubular system of animals and plants. In the former, having but *one* spongelet, called the lungs, both for the admission and expulsion of the gases, necessary to the tubular action, the whole circulation is effected by two impulses—the filling and emptying of the lungs. The reason of this is obvious; in this case there is but *one individual system* to be nourished by the process. In plants, each bud is an individual; and each bud, therefore, receives its own sustenance from its own vascular action: the circulation of elaborated sap is effected by that section of tubes which lies in the vicinity of the bud to be nourished, whilst the crude sap, admitted by the many spongelets, at the roots, rises through a porous medium, unconnected, but by a glutinous ligament, and dispenses the elementary particles to the whole range of tubes.

But, although that portion of the crude sap which the main tubes reject, is retained by the porous medium which elevated it, yet it is retained only till it can be absorbed by other vessels which convey these rejected, unnecessary particles to the cuticle of the leaves and bark. The whole system—the support of vitality—is strictly analogous to that of animals; the same beautiful system of absorption and rejection by differently constructed organs.

Gases are so evanescent and intractable, that they could not be directed to any fixed point, were it not that they are capable of being transmitted through tubes, porous substances, and the interstices of a fluid. Water is a medium for the transmission of gases, used by nature and art. The gases, charged with nutritive and other matter, move with ease through all fluids; at the same time, *water*, when thus impelled by gases, is not available to us unless its motion can be controlled. It must *itself have a conductor through which it can traverse*. The particles of a fluid cannot be sustained or held together, unless in individual drops; nor can a fluid be elevated in an upright column, without it has a tremendous gaseous power to propel it. If gases, by a fixed law, are compelled to expand and reach the highest point in as short a time as possible, all matter must be subordinate to their action. In consequence of this, fluids are obliged to present as wide a surface as their globules will allow, that gases may elevate themselves, and the particles with which they are charged, with greater ease.

Unless, therefore, water is conveyed through tubes or a porous medium, we cannot avail ourselves of its power; con-

quently, the united energies of gases and fluids are bestained when their motions are directed through tubes and porous bodies. It is in this way that all the great work of nature is effected; but how many centuries it was before man could comprehend it.

It is capillary attraction,—as it is miscalled,—which elevates fluid through sponges, sugar, soils, pith, and all porous substances, and it is in proportion as the particles of water are connected that they are capable of elevating themselves. There is a peculiar principle in water which we do not recollect ever to have seen noticed, as applied to the rise of fluids in capillary tubes. *This principle admits of an easier flow of water when its particles are connected.* A greater quantity will flow from an upper to a lower reservoir, in a given time, when the tube through which it runs extends, uninterruptedly, from the bottom of the upper reservoir, to the water in the lower one, than if the tube did not reach the water. Water, likewise, will not flow from the narrow mouth of a *large* phial when it is turned upside down, unless in single drops at certain intervals of time, but if a piece of wet rag, thread, or other wet porous substance, comes in contact with the drop which hangs suspended from the mouth of the phial, the water will run out immediately in a connected stream. Even a piece of wet sponge or rag, of size sufficient to fill the neck of the phial, will enable the water from the inverted phial to flow out readily.

Whilst the leaves, buds, and roots—or even the leaves alone for a time—are attached to a plant, fluids will rise to the extremities. But when these conducting media are separated from the tree, capillary action is discontinued. As long as there is vitality in the trunk of a tree, the sap will ascend, but if there is no outlet for the sap thus raised, there is an end of all vascular action.

If we break off the stem of a dead plant, or a capillary tube, *below the point* whence water rises by what is called capillary attraction, the water does not overflow,—and why? Because there is no longer a conducting medium. But, as in the case of the inverted phial, if a wet thread be laid on the broken tube, so that it touches the water in the bore of the tube, the water will elevate itself by means of its own particles in the wet thread. If a single filament of flax, or any fine thread, is introduced through one of these tubes, the water from the basin, which was only elevated one inch above the level, will rise to the very top of the tube, even if it is twelve inches in height.

This phenomenon cannot be explained on the principle of capillary attraction as taught in the schools; for let the bore of the tube be of what size it may, whether only capable of admitting a fine hair, or of a foot diameter, the effect is the same,—

water will rise if it have a porous or other conducting medium. It is well known that if a napkin be suspended over a basin of water, so that the lower part of it is kept wet, the water will soon rise to the top of the napkin, but it will rise in the interstices of the napkin much sooner if it is dipped in water and then wrung out, before it is suspended over the basin. A napkin thrown over the side of a basin, one end touching the water, will act like a syphon, and in a short time will empty the basin. At some future time we may enter more at large on the subject of what is called capillary attraction, and endeavour to account for the limited action of a fluid in capillary tubes, and the unlimited ascent of a fluid in the interstices of porous bodies. Our present object is to speak of the manner in which we apprehend sap may rise to the extremities of a plant.

Neither the roots nor the leaves of a plant can exist independently of the branches and trunk; but the twigs or terminal shoots, can live when separated from the tree. The conserve, or concentrated cambium, which is deposited at the articulations, serves the cutting as a pabulum for its nourishment, until leaves and roots are formed. Nature is provident and careful of all organised matter, and leaves but little to chance; where reason does not direct, she substitutes instinct, and where instinct is limited, she takes the matter more immediately in her own hands. In a cutting, the means of life are amply afforded until the roots are formed; and when a swarm of bees leave the parent hive to form another colony, they, by some instinctive regulation, carry with them honey and farina sufficient to sustain themselves until their cells are made.

The rapidity with which the sap circulates, in some plants, would very soon destroy vegetable life, were it not that a kind Providence, in all cases, has allowed them a respite from this powerful excitement. This is accomplished by withdrawing the exciting cause for a stated time. In the American climate, particularly, the life of a plant would be short, but for the length of its repose in winter; and in all climates either night or winter comes to its relief.

This rest, or sleep, so perceptible in many plants, is supposed by some philosophers to be occasioned by the loss they sustain of part of the vivifying gases. They imagine that light disperses this gas. That cannot, however, be called a loss, which renews and refreshes instead of exhausts; yet it is no doubt owing to the action of gases that leaves and flowers expand or open in the morning. The relief that a plant obtains by this repose, arises from the slowness of circulation; when the exciting cause,—solar light and heat,—is withdrawn, the fluids rise slowly and are retained longer in the interstices. If the leaves perspired at night, as copiously as they do by day, the

circulation would be just as rapid as in the day;—far more water flows over an inclined plane at night, when evaporation ceases, than when the surface is exposed to the heated rays of the sun. The fluidity thus restored at night, enables the plant to meet a renewed excitement during the succeeding day; animals require repose likewise, for in addition to the same excitement which brings on indirect debility in the plant, such as is caused by atmospheric pressure and internal gaseous repulsion, they are enervated by the fatigue of labour and of recreation, such as their wants and their pleasures require.

In those climates where leaves drop off early in November, a slight circulation is still perceptible; the surface of the bark, as may be known by the presence of the green tint, is sufficiently stimulated by light and by the vital principle, so that if a tree does not actually grow, the organs do not collapse. A great quantity of crude sap remains in the interstices; were it not for this circumstance, severe frosts could not burst the trees asunder; this very fact proves that a slow circulation is going on during the winter, for if gases did not find an outlet in winter, capillary action would cease, and fluids would be compelled to gravitate: none would remain in the tree.

It is to the appearance of these gaseous movements, that a new theory has been formed in France, and a regular pulsation attributed to the rise of sap. But there is nothing regular in the movements of those gaseous particles which depend on the impulse they receive on entering the spongelets, for according to the quantity of fermentation going on near the extremities, will the force of the gaseous particles be.

Gases, charged with the fluid and minute particles of elementary matter for the use of the plant; or, in more appropriate terms, gases that are forcing up this matter,—for the whole is a compulsory and not an attractive effort,—do not move in a continued stream, but interruptedly and in distinct separate globules of irregular size. Let any force whatever be applied to extricate gas from a solid or fluid mass—withdraw it by suction, or force it out by pressure, quickly or slowly, the globules will be of different diameters, scarcely two being of the same size.

In objection to this, it may be urged that the matter thus extricated cannot be deemed gas—that it is nothing more than a thin distension of the globules of water which we see, and that the gas, or rather the particles of gas, are never visible,—that the principle itself can never be known to us but by the motion it produces amongst disjointed or solid masses of matter. All this is true, but it should be recollected that the effect of a first principle is all by which it can be judged. We cannot see the principle of decay nor the principle of life, yet we speak of

life and death merely from being familiar with the *effects* of the two great first principles; so in like manner we speak of gas from a conviction that the power exists within the bubble of water. If through the interstices of a fermenting mass the extricated air is traversing, and it encounters no obstacle, the fluid particles which surround it are distended, and the diameter of the globule, thus formed, is in proportion to the quantity of air that forces itself in this globule, and the energy of the gas is in proportion to the quantity of elementary matter with which the globule of water is charged.

Let any one examine the fluids of his own mouth; he will perceive that the pores of the salival glands are filled with bubbles of different diameters, and he will find that all secretions are mere congeries of fluid bubbles of a larger or smaller size, the veins and arteries being likewise filled with these gaseous secretions.

As it respects the rise of fluids in vegetable pores, when it is freely acknowledged that one of the laws of matter compels gases to extricate themselves from restraint, it follows, that soon as the pressure of the first air bubble is removed the next will rise to fill the vacuum. Gases, whether free from elementary matter, or charged with it, effect the purposes of organic life by moving through tubes and pores. They overcome the gravitating propensity of other bodies and force them in the same direction with themselves, and when it is considered that fluids are subject to their power, the ascent of water in capillary ducts and pores can be accounted for on the soundest principles of philosophy,—water is *compelled* to follow the pressure of gas, when the latter is in quantity sufficient to overcome the downward propensity common to all fluids, and it is in this universal solvent—water—that all matter is elaborated, whether it is to build up or to destroy, whether it be to aid the principle of life or of death.

Every one of the fixed principles, or laws of nature, has power over matter in its different forms, accommodating its force to the size and weight of the body presented to it. Gravity acts on solids and fluids according to their *compactness* and distance from the surface of the earth. Levity impels matter from the surface to the limits of the atmosphere, according to the lightness and the number of porous interstices a body contains. If there were a column of sand extending from the centre of the earth to the surface, and there were water enough at the base to reach the top of this column, the water would be *compelled* to the very top. Where, therefore, is the mystery of the rise of sap in the capillary pores of a plant, so suited to the admission of gaseous fluids? Added to this is the imp-

**which** life gives to all the particles of matter of which an **organised** body is composed.

Having said thus much of the rise of sap—and, we trust, without presumption—we should proceed to another part of the **physiology** of plants, which is quite as interesting: the **limits** of the connection between the tree and the layers and cuttings or grafts taken from it.

A tree and an oyster carry their progeny on the back, **both** united to the parent stock by means of a glutinous ligament, and adhering with equal tenacity. The smallest excrescence on the oyster is capable of becoming an animated being as soon as it is detached from the back of its parent; and one of the terminal shoots of the tree can become a tree, likewise, when cut off and planted. The same aliment which sustained the tree, is forced up in the slip to nourish that likewise, but every organ and part of a plant requires different aliment. As there is no central reservoir, no stomach in which all the crude sap could be elaborated, and as there are so many individual parts to be sustained—considering each articulation as a separately organised plant—it follows that each section or joint must elaborate the proper juices for itself; and when the matter is suitably prepared by the different processes which take place, in the spiral, clostral, and other tubes, the next course is to deposit the portion necessary to each leaf and bud, at the base of this leaf and bud. The twig on which this leaf and bud exist—if it be one of a year's growth—can easily be separated, for the ligature which connects it to the lower joint is of a frail texture. This ligature is composed of a continuation of tubular and porous vessels, the mere rupture of which does not injure the general circulation of fluids, for they are themselves jointed, as it were, at short intervals, if we may except the spiral vessels, the true office of which is not yet known. As to the porous part of the limb, where the twig is cut off, it is well known that fluids do not rise when there is no longer a connecting medium.

The slip, therefore, that is broken from the tree or plant, becomes an independent body, with the habits and character of the parent stock, and is entitled to the same privileges as well as subject to the same evils. But the sustenance designed for the roots is not of the same nature as that which is prepared for the fruit-buds and leaves, neither is the nutriment which is elaborated in the stomach of an animal circulated indiscriminately. Those vessels that build up bones absorb such portions from the blood as are requisite, whilst those that supply the flesh abstract that which is wanted for the purpose. Perhaps the interstitial medium receives that in its pores which is to enlarge and repair the vessels themselves. The nutriment required to sustain a plant, when it grows to a large tree,



is immense; and if there were returning vessels, or a regular flow of sap or cambium from top to bottom, then surely sucker buds at the upper part of the roots would receive the same nourishment as the buds of the graft. That this is the case, a moment's reflection will teach us.

It may be suggested that the suckers from trees not isolated all produce fruit like the main stock; this is true with particular trees—but it is one of the strongest proofs of the limited action of the tubular vessels; for we have observed throughout, that the tubes furnish the proper juices only to those buds in their immediate section. If no buds grow underground, then the elaborating vessels only absorb such portion of the crude sap as is requisite to sustain the tubular and peridermic organs of the section to which the absorbent vessels are attached.

The *decay* of trees has been the subject of much conjecture and speculation, and it has settled down into an opinion that a tree which has grown from a scion or graft taken from another is merely the *extension* of the parent tree. It is inferred in consequence of the identity, the young tree must partake of the destiny, as well as the character, of the original. That physiologists could have fallen into this error, is inconceivable; for, according to this doctrine, if the parent tree died of old age, then a tree grafted from it the year before must die at the same time.

Each slip or terminal shoot is as much a distinct and independent individual, when the roots are formed, as one of the Siamese twins would be if the membrane which united them could be severed. No one supposes for an instant that, if two young men were separated, one must necessarily die when the other did. We do not allude to death in consequence of cut asunder the strong ligature which unites them, but to death from old age: one might live to the age of a hundred, and the other die of exhaustion at seventy-five. If the duration of the life of an apple tree was a century, a slip taken from this in its ninetieth year has the same chance of living out the same time as the parent tree had. When the pores and tubes are divided at the junction of the articulation, which is effected by snapping asunder the slip and the section attached to it, there is an entire loss of all connection between the parent and the slip. The organs of the new plant, being of the same form and capacity as those of the tree whence the graft was taken, go on to enlarge different parts—build up and repair—until the term allotted to its race has expired. As long as an animal or tree is permitted to grow—as long as *extension* is possible—so long is there enlargement, both in height and diameter, of each pore organ. When the gravitating principle will not admit of

ther increase of size, the whole energies of the plant are in requisition to repair the waste and injuries to which it is subject, and to keep off the approach of death as long as possible. This is the instinctive property of organized matter—it belongs to the constitution of a plant as well as to that of an animal, to prevent decay when it can no longer increase in size.

The vital principle, therefore, is not the exclusive property of the whole tree, *as one body*, like that possessed by an animal, *but belongs to every articulated section*. The abstraction of life from one part does not affect the health of the rest. *Vegetable* life is a principle that can exist, or rather animate, a thousand parts at once, and yet connect itself with the whole. When the terminal shoot is cut off, vital energy still remains in it; and if the slip be so planted as that the embryo organs can protrude, and thus obtain nourishment for the upper part, *life* remains and animates the plant. If the slip is not planted, then the vital principle slowly leaves it and the slip dies. Even *life* can be stimulated to remain some time longer in a plant divided from the roots, by placing the stem—when the leaves, flowers, and bark, are in a state of collapse—in boiling water, showing of how much power gaseous action is in the economy of the vital principle. With a knowledge of this one important fact, why may not the trial be made of the introduction of certain gaseous fluids through the vascular tubes of an animal exhausted by hunger or disease? Oxygen gas, when inhaled, and thus forced by the lungs through the porous interstices, shows how speedily the system may be stimulated. It appears, therefore, that if the alimentary principles which nourish the body were forced either through the pores or tubular vessels by means of gases, the system might be sustained until the stomach and other digestive organs should recover their tone. We hope the trial may be made.

Trees, whether large or small, are not in the least indebted to high winds, or even to the ordinary winds of summer, for this enlargement or health. Many at the present day imagine that winds promote a healthy circulation, and that nature has endowed them with this invigorating power. But how could any one accustomed to the care and observation of plants fall into such an error? To be sure, we see the body and limbs of a tree bend to the blast, and toss to and fro when agitated by fitful gusts of wind, and we perceive that they apparently recover from these shocks, and give signs of health and fruitfulness; it is therefore concluded that this excitement is as necessary to the prolongation of their vigour and life as exercise is to an animal. The truth forced upon us by long experience is, that so far from being necessary, the action of winds is positively injurious.

It might as well be urged that gales of wind are of service to

a ship at sea, because she weathers the storm and comes sailing quietly into the harbour, looking as beautiful and as sound as when she left the port. But experienced seamen know that she has received many a strain, that her timbers have been wrung, her masts weakened, her sails rent, and that the foundation of decay sprung from those very gales.

A breeze just strong enough to give a gentle motion to the leaves, is, in reality, all the motion required from external causes. The experiment can be made at any time, by planting two trees of the same kind, of equal size and health, in different positions. If one be trained closely to the wall of a house, and confined by ligatures at every joint, continuing this restraint from year to year, and if the other be planted in an open field as a standard, the tree which is unable to move a single joint will grow rapidly under all the disadvantages of confinement. When all the twigs and limbs that were cut away from the tree which was trained, are taken into consideration, as well as the height and breadth of it as it stands, it will be perceived that it has grown to more than twice the size of the standard tree.

Winds undoubtedly *retard* the growth of a tree, and to one that is tall, the injury is very great; the bark and delicate vessels are not all that suffer, the petioles of the leaves also are tortured and twisted, until life is almost driven out. Every one must have witnessed this deplorable state of exhaustion which a tree is in after it has been thus violently blown about. The leaves droop, the tender limbs hang listlessly for several days, and many of a delicate nature wither and die.

Although trees are deprived of the power of locomotion, yet they are endowed with a capacity to resist or counteract many of the evils incident to their confined fixed position. One remarkable instance of this is the equilibrium to which they have the power of returning when accident or continued pressures have destroyed it. No sooner is a plant injured, than ramifications of equal extent to the wounds or amputations shoot out immediately and supply the waste. Another mode which a tree has of preserving a balance, when suffering under the harsh influence of regularly recurring northwest winds, is to *strengthen* the under or curved side of the limb or trunk that is bent out of its upright position. This is done by detaining a greater quantity of the proper juices, or assimilatory matter, in this curved spot.

If a transverse cut be made in the curved branch of a tree, it will be seen that the curved or concave part is thicker from the centre to the circumference than that of the upper or convex part. The concentric layers are equal in number, but the porous interstices are larger, and more of the elementary particles are deposited there. This same phenomenon occurs when trees are

placed in a cold northern exposure, even when they are not bent out of the perpendicular by strong winds. When cut cross, the layers on the *south* side will be found thicker and fuller than on the north side. This proceeds from some obstruction to the lateral pressure or direction of the secretions by the tubular and other vessels, for if external cold prevents the exit from within of rejected secretions, if the bark has not sufficient energy to slough off the fungus which is constantly deposited on unresisting substances, then the circulation on the north side must be weaker than that on the south.

It may not be irrelative to observe in this place, that it is to the presence of fungus or moss on the north side of trees, that travellers and Indians direct their course through unfrequented forests. In forests of pine, *to which no moss adheres*, travellers are guided by the enlargement of limbs and the fuller luxuriance which the *south* side exhibits. The particular qualities of the sap of resinous trees is not the sole cause that prevents the adhesion of atmospheric depositions, for in consequence of the enlargement of the porous and membranous organs, gaseous fluids are more abundantly present. Consequently the rejected secretions are forced off to the surface, and this lubrication of the bark or cuticle prevents the dust and other atmospheric particles from clogging up the pores. We perceive that the quickest growing limbs have the smoothest bark—neither canker, rust, nor fungi rest upon it.

But of all the mysteries connected with the rise of sap, and, in fact, connected with the circulation of the blood, there is none so extraordinary and inexplicable as the vital principle itself. Many physiologists have adopted the notion that this principle is transmitted to the different parts of a plant and animal through the medium of the sap and blood. We do not believe in the exclusive vivification of the sap and blood; the principle called *life* does not adhere to or traverse through any particular section or organ. It is an impulse which is diffused throughout the whole organic system of both plants and animals. It is a primary essence existing independently throughout space, traversing unrestrained, and attaching itself to all *organized* matter. As long as the organized body is sustained by the two great powers—centripetal and centrifugal pressures—as long as the one power can prevent the undue pressure of the other—or, in other words, as long as an equilibrium is kept up, the action of the vital principle is unimpaired. But if the centrifugal power, or *levity*, forces up alimentary particles in too great a quantity, so as to overcome that portion of centripetal, or gravitating power which is opposed to it—which two powers operate on organic as well as inorganic matter—then the action of

the vital principle is accelerated—the body is said to live too fast.

Life, therefore, is dependent on a prevention of excess. Both in animal and vegetable life, care is to be taken not to overcharge the system with alimentary stimulus, for if the vessels are too much excited, life, or the vital principle, cannot traverse the system with ease. A certain portion of this vital essence is necessary to the healthy operations of an organized being, but if the circulation is quickened, then it follows that, as life traverses every particle, and these particles are propelled more rapidly, the vivifying principle must accumulate to a greater degree than the economy of the system can bear; there is not only a superabundance of mere life, but of alimentary stimulus likewise, and in the end this stimulus must clog up the fine vessels of the brain; when this is the case, congestion and apoplexy, by putting a stop to the circulation, drive life from the system altogether. Too much stimulus at the roots of plants operates in the same manner on their system as on ours, and the greatest care should be taken to apply nutriment judiciously.

Life leaves the system also when the circulation is too slow, for then aliment is too sparingly diffused—there are fewer particles around which this vital principle can traverse, and as they continue to decrease, so will there be less animation. In vegetable life the centripetal and centrifugal power both operate from without at the extremities, but in animal locomotive life, the latter power emanates from the centre, the heart, and the centripetal, or gravitating principle, presses on every part of the body externally, so that the equilibrium is kept up when there is no preternatural or morbid action to intervene.

Life therefore, does not attach itself, solely to the elaborated particles in the tubular vessels, but also to every portion of the germ or organic structure of a plant and animal; but only as long as these organs or parts are capable of being acted upon by the joint and equal efforts of the two repelling powers—gravity and levity. Life, or the vital principle, can exist in a paralysed limb when the contractile ligature on which the mind operated to produce motion, is either relaxed or broken asunder. Life—therefore—does not of itself produce sensation or motion—it is when all things accord, when there is a fitness and adaptation throughout, that life pervades every atom of an organized being.

When the contractile or elastic organs of an arm that is paralysed are only relaxed, the arm may be restored to motion; but if they are snapt asunder, and when complete paralysis occurs suddenly this snapping is both felt and heard by the sufferer, then the art of man can never restore the motion or use of the arm.

We are not aware of any sudden stroke of paralysis in plants, ~~it~~ that of death by apoplexy is common to many that are too much stimulated. Rapidly growing pear trees, particularly those ~~om~~ abroad, often have their vessels ruptured by a too sudden extension; as plants are endowed with a principle of divisibility, ~~the~~ injured part be immediately cut off, the remaining branches ~~o~~ not receive any material injury. But of that disease, called ~~ar~~alysis, there is nothing that is strictly analogous, if we except ~~be~~ the loss of action in a limb after a rupture of the vessels by *frost* during a hard winter.

Therefore, the vital principle is accelerated or retarded, according to the amount of force in the disturbing powers, both ~~a~~ it regards plants and animals, and as this force is continued ~~inequally~~, so will life decline or be unable to traverse the body. The blood, or sap, shows no livelier sense of its presence than ~~does~~ the human skin and bone, or the bark and wood of a tree. Like every other law or principle that sustains matter, life depends on the assistance of gaseous fluids for its capacity to animate an animal or a plant, yet life is not matter, although ~~like~~ gases it exerts its influence on gaseous matter. The particles held in solution by the tubular and porous vessels do not ~~possess~~ any more of its vivifying powers than does the material of which these vessels are made.

Mind, is the highest power bestowed by God on an organized being; it is a divine essence, and can never perish. Life must, ~~o~~f necessity, accompany all the different processes which go to ~~sustain~~ both the plant and animal, but *mind* is not compelled to follow all these different operations. A man may be so completely an idiot as to have no consciousness, and yet may have ~~the~~ power of motion. It is to life that an organized being is indebted for the movements of its body and limbs, but it is by ~~mind~~ that these movements are directed to some definite purpose. Plants have the power of motion—instinctive motion—but no consciousness. It is in a well organized brain that ~~mind~~ exists in perfection; man alone has this perfect organization, for the brain of animals is differently constructed.

Instinct belongs to animate and inanimate life. By the wise and benevolent order of the Almighty, all the particles of matter are endowed with a principle which make them subordinate to organization. Where there is no mind given, this instinctive faculty is abundantly supplied, and it extends itself to bodies ~~possessing~~ no life. The particles of crystals dispose themselves in a regular form according to the divine law—birds of the same kind always sing the same notes and show the same plumage. The bee exudes wax from the pores of its body, and for ever makes hexagonal cells. Animals without teeth imbibe their first nutriment always by suction, but where there

is mind there is entire freedom of action. Man possesses li mind and instinct; his reasoning powers, or mind, enable h to guide this instinct to a definite purpose to suit his own c convenience, altering and varying his position as often as he fe inclined. Animals having this instinct can avoid evil a provide for their necessities, but plants, being permanen fixed in the earth are therefore more helpless and more deper ent on our care. Having no consciousness, they possa nothing more than an inferior instinct, which guides the blindfold, as it were, to their limited course. They are passia and make no resistance, but their instinct impels them to repe waste, and to spread a wider and a wider surface to gaseou influence under ground, and to the action of the atmosphe above.

It is to this point, therefore, that we have arrived—plan taken from their native beds, where they grow wild, are throw altogether on the benevolence and care of man. That preciou gift—mind—is bestowed on him to assist the Creator of a things in protecting this helpless part of his works. We a his agents here to accomplish some great design which, in th end, is to exalt our own nature. Let every one, therefor having a brute or a plant under his care, look that he di charges his duty towards it well.

We shall close our remarks by observing, that although w believe that *life* traverses, and, in popular terms, animates ever particle of an organized body, whether of plant or animal, y that the *particles themselves* are not organized beings. We d not find, from the experiments we have made, that eithe detached or annexed congeries of matter have a procreativ regenerating power. Neither the particles of a fluid or a soli body—gases, light, heat, isolated or concrete masses of earth or minerals—have organic bodies. The endless, minute divis bility of which they are capable, and the changes which tak place in their nature and character in consequence of pressur and chemical disintegrations, do not lead to the conclusion th they possess the same principle of vitality which animate vegetable and animal life.

Natural science, particularly that branch of it called veg table physiology, is a beautiful study; but few have an opportu nity of becoming acquainted with it, and, therefore, are n sufficiently impressed with its important bearing on scienc generally. To understand it to advantage, it must be studied i the fields and gardens with the aid of an untiring, inquisitiv spirit—with the assistance of good glasses and skill in usin them. Books or lectures can avail us but little, as they a chiefly written in the closet, and too frequently in slovenl haste, either to complete a lecture or to make a book. Our ow

knowledge has been gleaned principally from our walks amongst orchards and gardens, where all the phenomena were observed with our own eyes, and the experiments made with our own hands.

"Science," says an anonymous writer, "in its broad and comprehensive term, has flourished, and might continue to flourish, amongst the learned, whilst the rest of the world is in comparative ignorance. But a thorough knowledge of that branch of it which comprehends vegetable physiology must be the result of education widely spread, and of peculiar refinement of tastes, habits, and occupations."

---

**ART. VII.—***Defence of Usury; showing the impolicy of the present legal restraints on the terms of pecuniary bargains; in letters to a friend. To which is added, a Letter to Adam Smith, Esq. LL. D., on the discouragements opposed by the above restraints to the progress of inventive industry.*  
**By JEREMY BENTHAM, Esq., of Lincoln's Inn.** New York: 1837.

The expediency of repealing the usury laws of Pennsylvania, so that there shall exist no legal restraint upon the rates of interest for money, has been discussed in the public prints and elsewhere, of late, with great zeal; and the subject still continues to excite much interest in the trading community. Petitions and remonstrances have been forwarded to Harrisburg, and before the present session shall close it is probable they will be subjected to legislative action.

We propose in this paper to urge a few arguments in favour of this measure. In doing so we shall endeavour to be as brief as the nature of the subject will admit.

According to a learned jurist, usury is a contract upon a loan of money, or giving days for forbearing of money, debt, or duty, by way of loan, chevisance, shifts, sales of wares, or other doings whatsoever. "*Usura dicitur ab usu et aere, quia datur pro usu aëris.*" It will be seen, therefore, that the taking of interest for the use of money, whether it be merely to the amount legalized by statute, or in an excess over that amount, is in a literal sense, and according to the ancient acceptation, usury. The Mosaical precept, which prohibited the Jews from taking usury from their brethren, has excited many



doubts in the minds of conscientious men as to its propriety *foro conscientie*. These doubts continue to exist to a great extent even at the present day, upon the ground that receiving a compensation for the hire of money is contrary to the revealed law of God. A reference, however, to the twenty-third chapter of Deuteronomy, in which this prohibition contained, will conclusively show, that so far from its being intended as a moral precept, the restraint was explicitly imposed upon the Jews only as regarded their dealings with each other, and did not extend to their commercial operations with the people of other nations. Thus in the twentieth verse—"Unto a stranger thou mayest lend upon usury; but unto thy brother thou shalt not lend upon usury: that the Lord thy God may bless thee in all that thou settest thy hand to, in the land whither thou goest to possess it."

It can hardly be supposed, under these circumstances, that this precept was designed to have any other than a political operation—for if the taking a reward for loans of money were *malum in se*—if a moral turpitude attached to such transactions, the restriction certainly would not have been limited to the Jews alone.

Be this as it may, however, the practice of usury during the early ages was viewed with unmingled detestation, and was the object of legal prohibition. So far back, in England, as the time of Alfred, the commission of this crime was visited by the vengeance of church and state: the estates of the delinquents were confiscated, and themselves punished by the severest penalties. They were considered as violators of the divine law, and subverters of the law of nature, in attempting to propagate from that which was naturally sterile and unfruitful.

So far down as the reign of James I., the intolerance with which this "vice" was regarded, was still very great; but, before that period, by the enactment of the statute 37 Hen. VIII. c. 9, the taking of interest was sanctioned and allowed. By that act, ten per cent. for the forbearance of a year was the authorized rate, and excessive usurious transactions were punishable by forfeiture and imprisonment. This law continued in effect until the succeeding reign, when by the statute 5 and 6 Edward VI., c. 20, it was repealed. The statute 13 Elizabeth, c. 8, after declaring that the former act had not been effectual, but that "the vice of usury had much more exceedingly abounded," repeals the statute of Edward and restores that of Henry VIII. again, fixing ten per cent. as the legal interest. Since that period, owing to fluctuations in the amount and value of money, several statutes have been enacted, by which the rates of interest were altered. The 21 James I., c. 17, reduced it to eight per cent. Subsequently, the 12 Charles

c. 13, reduced it to six per cent. ; and, finally, the 12 Anne, 6, which is the English "statute of usury" at the present ; reduced it to five per cent.

reason (which we alluded to above) for the prejudice against ry, was founded upon the assertion of Aristotle, "that all ey is, in its nature, barren and unproductive," and, there-, to make money beget money is contrary to the law of ire. And so, in 3 Inst. 153, Sir Edward Coke refers to the ates of Henry VII., in which all usury "is damned" and minated a dry exchange—" *Usura contra naturam est, i usura sua natura est sterilis, nec fructum habet.*"

'he absurdity of this dictum can in no way be better mani-d than by applying the same principle to the hiring of hes ; the leasing of houses ; or the chartering of ships ; ch coaches, houses and ships, certainly do not generate gs of their own species ; and yet, no one ever disputed the al right of letting them for reward.

That money was originally designed for the purposes of hange, and not for profit, may be very true, and we shall go out of our way to dispute it ; but it must be considered t money originated at an early age of the world, when its licability to commercial purposes was not taken into view. e present is essentially a commercial day, and if interest uld be abolished, the characteristic of the age will be des- ed, and commerce must die. It cannot exist without bor- ing and lending—if interest were interdicted no man would d his money, for there would be no corresponding benefit ilting from the loan, to indemnify him for the hazard he ht run, or the inconvenience he might suffer. It is well wn that in those tyrannical ages when interest upon loans entirely prohibited, the little trade that was carried on was opolized by the Jews, and so continued to be until the ance of civilization and knowledge, and the consequent ival of commerce, restored the doctrine of interest.

We would not defend an excessive demand for the hire of ey, any more than we would defend an exorbitant demand the use of other necessities or conveniences of life. The al wrong inflicted upon the community would be as great he one case as in the other. But the question is whether regulation of the prices of money comes more within the pe of legislative authority than the regulation of the prices ther merchantable commodities. We contend that it does not. e value of money in a trading community depends upon eral circumstances : first, the amount of the supply in the ds of lenders, and the extent of the necessity for the use it felt by borrowers ; second, the inconvenience of parting h it for the present, and the risk of losing it altogether.

Now, unless a government should impose restraints upon citizens which would limit them in the amount of their commercial operations—unless they should say to the merchant such shall be the quantity of your purchases and sales, and such the price you shall receive for your merchandise, it is possible for laws to fix a just and undeviating value to the currency of a country. The supply of an article in the market and the demand for that article, do not entirely depend upon each other. At one time there may exist a heavy demand with a limited supply; at another there may be an abundant supply with very little demand. In no article of traffic is this more constantly the case than with money. How, then, can there be any uniformity in legal regulations of interest. The rates of interest have varied from age to age, and from country to country. Among the Romans, at the time of Justinian, it was at twelve per cent. In England, at the time of Henry VIII. we have seen, it was fixed at ten per cent. Subsequent statutes successively reduced it to eight, six, and five. In some parts of Asia it is at ten and twelve, and in Constantinople it has sometimes been at thirty. In a moral point of view there can be no difference between the highest and the lowest rate. What is it, then, that indicates the expediency of any particular rate, but the convenience of the borrower and lender? and what is it which manifests that convenience but the consent of the parties? A is in want of \$1000 for the furtherance of a commercial operation; B would lend it to him at two per cent a month for four months, if the law forbade him not; but that in Pennsylvania, is an illegal, usurious transaction, because an act of 28th March, 1723, prohibits the taking of more than six per cent., under penalty of forfeiture. Now B will not lend money at six per cent., because, by employing it in his own business he can realize more than thrice that amount. In his own hands, therefore, it is clearly worth to him twenty per cent because he can make that sum out of it. A, however, has held out an inducement to him to make the loan, by offering him at the rate of twenty-four per cent.; but this contract cannot be made without a violation of law, (which is always attended with risk,) and it may be of conscience also.

Now what right has the legislature to step in and thus hinder us in our business transactions? What man, or what set of men are so competent to judge of the ability and mutual convenience of parties to a contract, as the parties themselves? A is willing to pay \$80 for the use of \$1000 for four months; he wishes to employ it in an enterprise which will produce him a clear profit of fifty per cent. upon the sum employed. At the repayment to B of the loan, with its interest, amounting to \$1080, A would have in his own coffers a surplus profit

**§420.** But no, say our paternal lawgivers, you must not make such a contract. Why not? Because, in the first place, it is contrary to the divine law, and therefore a moral sin; and, in the next place, we wish to restrain projectors and speculators.

Contrary to the divine law! Then we ask you, gentlemen, why do you not carry out the principle to its fullest extent, and prohibit usurious interest in *all* business transactions? Why have you placed a legal sanction upon whatever rate of interest may be agreed on between the parties, in bottomry, and respondentia, and policies of insurance, and annuities upon lives? Where is the difference, in point of moral sin, between taking high interest upon a promissory note, and upon a respondentia bond? Something, you say, must be allowed for the hazard. But does that make any difference in regard to the morality of the transaction? if it does, we assert the difference to be in favour of the note, for the other savours strongly of gambling.

To pass a law prohibiting the taking of usury, upon the ground that it is a contravention of the Mosaic precept, and yet to make the distinction in the cases to which we have just referred, upon the principle of allowing indemnity for hazard, appears to us to be the *ultima Thule* of legislative absurdity and inconsistency.

Well, but independently of the moral consideration, it is said, that a check must be placed upon the visionary schemes of projectors. Who are these projectors? upon what men, or class of men, is intended to fall the stigma of this odious appellation? We answer, upon those who devote their attention to the cultivation of the useful arts; upon those who require money to aid them in their plans of invention; upon those who would project new, or make improvements upon old, devices of human contrivance. In short, this legislative restriction effectually operates upon all that human ingenuity projects for the benefit of mankind.

The application of the steam engine to the propulsion of boats, was the work of a projector, and money was found necessary to carry the work into effect. When Robert Fulton accomplished that splendid object, he gave an impulse to his name, which will transmit the remembrance of it down to the last generation of the world. The discovery of the western hemisphere was the work of a projector, and the author of that discovery has written his great name upon the records of immortality. The genius of men like these is frowned down by a narrow policy of ephemeral legislators. Now how is it that this class of men would be affected by an *operative* law, fixing the rate of interest? Suppose the act of March, 1723, were really effectual in preventing usury (which, not to speak verily of the laws, it happily is not,) look at the result.

The great object of the capitalist who comes into the market with his money, is to lend it at the highest interest within his reach, and upon the best security he can get. If he should place it out upon bond and mortgage, he will be content with an interest below its real market value, because he has a lien upon landed property, generally worth two or three times as much as the money loaned. A pledge of good stock certificates would be a security, nearly if not quite as firm, and the rate of interest, therefore very little higher. The calculation of interest, in both these cases, takes into view simply the inconvenience suffered by the lender in parting with his money; there being no hazard, no addition is made on that account. But suppose the loan is made on *personal* security; the interest will be calculated in a compound ratio made up of the inconvenience and the hazard; so that if the current value of money be eight per cent., the interest demanded will be perhaps ten per cent., allowing *two* for the hazard run. We now come to those men designated *projectors*. Let one of this unfortunate class present himself in the market, in search of a loan of money. If he have no remarkably good security to offer, it is probable that in nine cases out of ten he can obtain no loan, unless through motives of friendship, or the expectation, founded upon strong grounds, of deriving a collateral advantage from his project. Money lenders are loth to hazard their capital solely upon the chances of success of a scientific discovery, or an invention in the mechanic arts. But suppose the lender to be convinced of the merit and probable success of the invention, (to carry which into effect his money is wanted,) still he will not make the loan, even with the ordinary security, at the same interest that he would to a person engaged in a solid and established business, because the hazard is so much the greater. He will add a heavy per centage to the current rate of interest, in order to indemnify himself for the risk he runs. Even if the security offered were unexceptionable, this would be the case to a certain extent, on account of the dangerous and uncertain purposes to which the money is to be applied. Cases may, however, occur, in which a loan might be effected for such an object. An ingenious mechanician, we will suppose, has made an improvement in the steam engine, by which the motive power is increased, at a diminished expense, and the danger of explosion entirely removed; he must have money to bring his invention into operation, but has no security to offer for a loan; he convinces a capitalist of the certainty of his ultimate success, and that that success will secure to him the acquisition of a splendid fortune; the capitalist is willing to jeopard the loan, but the hazard is very great, and the interest must be proportioned to it,—the lender must have forty per cent. for his

money. Here the law interposes and forbids the contract, and the unfortunate "projector," is defeated and driven from Change. After all his efforts to raise money have failed, as a last resort he parts with the patent right of his invention to a company,—he sells, for a paltry thousand, that which may realize hundreds of thousands to the purchasers. This, it may be argued on the other side, is too strong a case. If it be so, it is because the usury laws of Pennsylvania are ineffectual in preventing such contracts: were the act of 1723 operative to the full extent that it was intended to be by the legislature, such cases might constantly occur.

Now the question recurs, why these "projectors," as they are jeeringly called, should be singled out as the objects of legislative restraint? Is it for the protection of the community from visionary schemers? Who is it that suffers, but the projector himself, when his inventions are unfortunate or unsuccessful? Certainly not the public; and if the public *were* the sufferers, they are sufficiently competent to their own protection, without the interposition of an act of assembly to shield them from imposition. The trading community has arrived at years of sufficient discretion, to enable it to walk without the aid of leading strings. We say, then, (for these and other reasons which will be apparent to the reader without enumeration by us), that this law, so far as it is intended to operate as a restraint upon native ingenuity, is unjust and impolitic to the last degree. Genius is too rare and precious an endowment to be discouraged and tied down by legislative enactment. It should rather be fostered and protected, and assisted by every species of encouragement in the power of the legislature to bestow.

We know not what other considerations influenced the passage of the act of 1723, nor do we know whether peculiar circumstances did not exist at that time, which rendered its passage advisable. Legislation, however, should be adapted to the character of the people and the condition of the times; and a law which may have been very politic a century ago, in a country like this, (which is in a state of perpetual revolution), may be exceedingly impolitic now. Not being aware, then, of all the causes which operated in producing the law of 1723, we proceed to the dissection of an argument against usury, upon which our opponents of the present day are continually harping. We allude to the supposed influence of the law in preventing prodigality.

Now we have had this assertion dinned into our ears, almost from time immemorial; and we have never yet been able to comprehend the manner in which the law effected this object. So long as the prodigal is in possession of ready money, he certainly stands in no need of loans. But let his ready cash be

exhausted, and himself driven to the necessity of borrowing, enable him to continue the indulgence of his pleasures; there is no reason why he should be obliged to pay higher interest than another person, provided he can offer good security to the lender—a mortgage upon real estate, or a pledge of stock, or even a good endorser upon his promissory note, would secure him a loan at the market value of money. In the case of a mortgage, as Mr. Bentham takes occasion to remark, the prodigality of the mortgagor would be an inducement with many persons, as long as they were content with the security; so his want of punctuality in the payment of interest would give the mortgagee an opportunity of foreclosing and forcing a sale which is often attended with great advantage. The ability of the prodigal, then, to raise a loan, depends upon the security he can offer. But suppose he has no security to offer; it is asked how is he to borrow money at the ordinary rate of interest? He would be just as likely, in a case like that, to get it at as ordinary as at an extraordinary rate. The truth is, that without security, no capitalist would lend him money upon any terms. The only manner in which he can raise money at all is to borrow it from his friends in such sums as they are willing to lose, and then he gets it without interest.

In default then of actual and substantial security, and in the absence of every other plausible inducement, he can get no loan. But he may have a fortune *in prospectu*,—he may have a father, or a near relative, at whose death he may justly look for a handsome inheritance. Then comes the plan of raising money upon *post-obits*. He goes to a money lender and states his situation. "I want a loan," says he, "of ten thousand dollars. I have no real or personal security to offer for it, but I have a rich father, at whose death I shall come into the possession of a hundred thousand,—lend me the sum I require, and I will give you a bond for ten thousand dollars with fifty per cent interest, payable upon the happening of that event." The lender makes his calculations: the father is advanced in years, certainly, but his health is good, and he may yet live many years: the son is young, but his health is impaired, and his constitution broken by excess: if the father should survive the son, I shall lose my money, because his portion of the estate will be diverted from its original destination; and even were not so diverted, his heirs would not feel themselves bound to an illegal contract: moreover, the son may be disinherited, in account of his prodigality; in which case, also, I shall be a loser: fifty per cent., however, is a great temptation, and I think I might hazard the loan: but then, there is the statute against usury in the way, and how can I be secure that it will not be pleaded, in bar of my claim, by the borrower himself? I must

be indemnified for that risk, and therefore an addition of twenty per cent. must be made, to cover those chances.

Now observe the manner in which the act of 1723 operates : a capitalist is willing, for the sake of an extraordinary profit, to run an extraordinary risk ; he would therefore lend his money in the case just referred to, at fifty per cent., if it were not for the act of assembly,—that act, however, rendering the transaction null and void, if pleaded in bar, and the lender having nothing to rely on but the honour of the borrower, increases his demand of interest to seventy per cent. Thus it will be seen that the usury law forces twenty per cent. more out of the borrower's pocket, than would be the case if the law were not in existence. It will not be urged on the other side, that the twenty per cent. so added will prevent the prodigal from borrowing ; the character and necessities of such an individual, furnish sufficient proof that he will have the money upon any terms ; we shall not waste argument, therefore, to establish a self-evident fact. In regard to the raising of money upon *post obit* bonds, at a heavy interest, we will only observe, that according to our view it differs very little in point of morality from the present mode of wagering, usually denominated "Life Insurance."

It must be seen by every one who will reflect a moment on the subject, that a man who is in want of a loan will give any amount of interest which the exigency of his case demands, and his circumstances will justify ; now, it is altogether indisputable, that no particular rate of interest can be fixed upon, which will be equally adapted to the necessities of all. If a man can realize a profit of twenty per cent. upon all the money he can employ in his business, he can well afford to pay the capitalist an interest of ten per cent., or more, for the use of his funds ; but the legislature, ignorant as they are of the circumstances which govern merchants and others in their money transactions, absolutely forbid the borrowing upon such terms. This amounts in effect to a prohibition of borrowing at all—it paralyzes commercial enterprise, and shuts out every man from trading but he who has capital of his own ; for who, as we have said, that can make twenty per cent. from his money, will lend it to another at six ? It is said that the laws against usury protect indigence from imposition. How do they protect indigence from imposition ? It is perfectly clear that the same rule, which we just now applied to the prodigal, will equally apply to this class. If an indigent person (that is, a person destitute of all means) asks for a loan, how is he to get it ? No one will lend money to him, even at one thousand per cent., unless he have some prospective resources, which hold out the possibility of repayment at some future day. And here we will take leave



to observe, that the fixing of a rate at which the other necessities of life shall be sold, would be a better protection to indigence, than the placing of a regular rate of interest upon money. The reason for this is obvious. A person finds it necessary to purchase goods upon credit. He may do this without much difficulty (for merchandise is far more easily obtained on credit than money); if he is desirous of finding out the market value of the articles he is in want of, he is obliged to seek in all directions for such information; and even then, his object may be but imperfectly accomplished. The merchant may then charge him an exorbitant price; the bargain is concluded, and the debtor is bound by the contract—there is no escaping from it—he must pay the money. But the current rate of interest is easily discovered; we have nothing to do but go upon 'Change, to ascertain a fact which is there notorious to every one. A man is, then, not so liable to imposition in taking a loan of money, as in buying a bill of goods. But suppose he has been thus imposed upon, and has agreed to pay a money lender a higher interest than he would be obliged to pay elsewhere. The escape is perfectly easy. He can go to another capitalist; borrow the sum he wants at its market price, and pay off the first loan.

Thus it will be seen, that it is very easy to be relieved, without any breach of contract, when one is charged an exorbitant interest for money; while in the purchase of goods at an unreasonable price, the bargain once closed, relief is impossible. The regulation of the prices of goods, however, is an impracticable thing; and if practicable, and attempted by the legislature, would be scouted at by the people, as preposterous and absurd. The regulation of interest for money, in such a way as to adapt any particular rate, or limited number of rates, to the exigencies and circumstances of all, we do contend, is just as impracticable; and being so impracticable, the act of March 1723 is opposed by every principle of common sense and common reason.

We now proceed to consider, more particularly, the direct operation of that law upon this community; and the benefits that would result from its entire abolition.

It is well known, that in Pennsylvania there are many conscientious capitalists, who are restrained from coming into the market with their money by two causes: 1st., they will not lend at six per cent., so long as they can obtain a higher legal interest elsewhere; and 2d., they will not violate the law by taking usurious interest. These persons, not being themselves engaged in commercial pursuits, must bestow their capital somewhere. In the adjoining states of New York and New Jersey, the legal rate of interest is seven per cent.—one per cent. higher than in Pennsylvania; the consequence is, that the greater part of the money in the hands of such men is sent

York and New Jersey, and invested on the best security at that rate. We have personal knowledge of actually done; and, in the report of the committee of Philadelphia Chamber of Commerce, it is stated to be a frequent occurrence. It is certainly the result naturally expected.

Suppose the legal interest in Pennsylvania were enhanced seven per cent., thereby equalizing it with the legal rate in New York and New Jersey, it is perfectly clear that the money in this state would be removed, and this species of capital vested within our own limits; if the legal rate in Pennsylvania were increased to eight per cent., the current rate in New York and New Jersey would take a turn, and the money in the hands of Pennsylvania capitalists, in all those states where the legal rate is eight per cent., would flow in upon us. Carry the argument farther, and abolish *all* restrictions upon the rate of interest, and it is obvious, that the money in all those states where usury laws are in existence, would direct its course to Pennsylvania, until we should be flooded with funds in all quarters, seeking a profitable investment. This current would continue to flow, until the supply of money exceeded the demand for it, at certain rates of interest.

What would be the effect of all this upon the rates of interest? Clearly to reduce these rates: 1st, by making money abundant in the market; 2d, by removing the risk which attends a violation of the law; 3d, by obviating the necessity of negotiating usurious loans through the medium of brokers, and thereby saving brokerage commissions.

Are these three reasons to be good and sufficient. The result is by which a rush of specie into Pennsylvania (supposed by the act of 1723 were repealed), from the other states of the Union, could be prevented, would be by the repeal of the usury laws of those states; these laws being all thus repealed, setting aside their difference of enterprise and commerce, would stand upon an equal footing. But this result, which cannot be apprehended—at least for many years—perhaps never; for the strong prejudices against usury exist through the country, and particularly in those states of which are rather agricultural than commercial, under the accomplishment of such an object (if at all) would require much time and labour. In regard to our relations with foreign countries, we will take occasion to observe, that the general repeal of usury laws throughout the Union would avail more than any other measure, counterbalancing the disadvantages under which we are labouring from the great disproportion existing between our exports and imports. It would greatly contribute to this result

by encouraging the introduction of foreign capital; which, itself, would in a great measure compensate for the vast amounts of specie annually exported from this country for the payment of foreign debts. It must be perfectly apparent to every one, that a foreign capitalist will not send his money a distance of three thousand miles, for the purpose of illegal "shaving." This is an operation often attended with considerable hazard; and very little money is employed in this way unless under the immediate management or superintendence of the lender—the calculation of the credit of the borrower, and the risk attending the violation of law, is with difficulty confided to the agency of a third person. But take away the legal prohibition, and the objections of foreigners to sending their capital would be removed, because they could then make a profitable investment upon substantial landed security. In the case of *shaving*, by means of an agent, the possible infidelity of that agent in performing the duties of his trust, would be a matter for serious consideration. In the case of investment upon ground rent, or bond and mortgage, no such consideration could arise.

2. We have said that the effect of the usury laws is to enhance the rate of interest, by increasing the risk to the lender—the lender must, therefore, insure himself against the operation of that law, by a charge of additional interest; this would be the case under any circumstances; but the law is doubtless operative in producing this effect, inasmuch as it drives out competition; for there are many individuals who could not be induced, by the most exorbitant interest, to hazard the violation of law. Independently of the hazard, and the moral consideration, there is even to the present day a certain degree of dispute attendant upon the character of the usurer, which also exercises a great restraining influence.

So many capitalists being thus prevented from bringing their money into the market, it follows as a consequence that those who are *not* driven out, having less competition to encounter, have less to restrain them from increasing the rates of interest. We believe that a confederation among money lenders to enhance interest beyond the actual market rate, is exceedingly difficult, and perhaps not possible; but if it *be* possible, it is clear that it would be rendered so, by diminishing the number of operative capitalists; for the fewer their number, the more easily can they act in concert. There needs no labour or demonstration to prove this. No necessity, however, would exist for this concert of action; for by driving competition from the market, the supply of money would be so far reduced below the demand, as to enable lenders to require from borrowers sufficiently exorbitant interest.

3. A repeal of these laws would have a tendency to abolish brokerage commissions upon illegal negotiations. It is well known that, under the existing order of things, very few negotiations, for the loan of money at illegal interest, are made without the agency of a broker. The broker, of course, receives a regular compensation for effecting the transaction, which is generally one quarter of one per cent. upon the gross amount of the loan, and this commission is always paid by the borrower. A is in want of a loan of eight thousand dollars for two months; he employs B, a broker, to procure him the money, which he accordingly does, from C, a capitalist. C's charge for interest is one and a half per cent. a month, amounting in all to \$240—B's charge for commissions is one quarter per cent. upon the whole sum, amounting to \$20. Thus we see, that A is obliged to pay \$260 for the use of \$8000 for two months. It is self evident, if the object of the parties to a contract of this nature, in employing the broker, be the evasion of the penalty attached to a breach of the usury laws, that the repeal of those laws would altogether abolish such an agency for such a purpose, and the borrower and lender would then negotiate with each other *in propriis personis*; so that, in the case we have supposed, A would have only \$240 to pay for his loan, instead of \$260.

We know it is adversely asserted, that the repeal of the law would not remove the necessity of a broker's agency; and this is strenuously insisted upon, on the ground that brokers are continually employed in the purchase and sale of real estate, and the stocks of incorporated companies.<sup>1</sup> But the circumstances, under which the different agencies are conducted, destroy the analogy. In the first place, there is no regular place of resort, where buyers and sellers of real estate can meet for the purpose of conducting their negotiations. If a man wishes to buy a house, he never thinks of going to the Exchange to effect his object, (unless in pursuance of a sheriff's advertisement,) because it is not customary for holders thus to offer their property at private sale. A broker's office takes the place of an Exchange, and a register is there kept of much of the real estate in the market. This is the usual way in which holders advertise for sale. Purchasers, however, in addition to these, are actuated by other motives. Houses are not sold at a regular market rate, as money is,—their prices do not so much

<sup>1</sup> So in the case of loans upon real security,—agents are in general employed to effect them. Such transactions require much investigation, both as respects the value of the property and the validity of the title. Formal papers are also essential. Securities of this description are very different from commercial papers, and may well demand for their negotiation an intermediate person.

pend upon the demand and supply, but are influenced more by the character of the seller, and the fancy of the buyer. A great deal of bargaining, therefore, is sometimes required in making a purchase; and thus a broker is employed by the purchaser, in consequence of his superior knowledge of the value of real estate, and skill in conducting such a negotiation.

So also in the purchase of bank and other stocks, a skillful broker, by a species of finesse, may often operate several per cent. more advantageously at the stock and exchange board than the actual purchaser could do for himself in the street. The commissions paid to the agents in both these cases, are therefore well applied, and are perhaps often the means of saving a hundred times the amount to the principals.

Now, the lending and borrowing of money upon a promissory note is so simple a transaction, that no skill whatever is necessary to effect it. The first thing to be ascertained, is the current value of money in the market; than which, as we have said, nothing is more easy, for it is a matter of notoriety to every one who resorts to the Exchange; this being ascertained, the borrower walks up to one of the numerous capitalists who throng the place "where merchants most do congregate," hands him the business or accommodation paper (as the case may be) which he wants discounted, gets the money at the rate agreed upon between the parties, and the affair is settled. It is no argument on the other side, to say, that brokerage is so trifling as not to be worthy of consideration in this discussion. Reflect for a moment, upon the vast sums that are loaned in this market by private capitalists,—they annually amount to millions of dollars, and the broker pockets his quarter per cent. commission upon every dollar of it. It matters not whether the loan be long or short—for a month or for a year—the commission is still the same.

We assert, then, that the act of 1723 is not only totally inefficient, but actually promotes that which it is intended to prevent—upon this ground alone it should be immediately repealed. We believe that we have already demonstrated that to be the effect of the law, and it will not be necessary to pursue this point further. But it is argued by the advocates of limited rates, that the inefficiency of a law, provided that law be aimed at the prevention of crime, is not a good reason for its repeal. We have already shown that, according to the Bible its use of usury is not a crime; but, independently of that, we take leave to enquire, why should our statute book be lumbered with an accumulation of laws which never have effected any useful purpose? "If the law does no good," we are answered, "neither does it do any harm, and therefore we would have it remain." Even upon this supposition we would advocate a repeal.

say that the act of 1723 *does* work an infinite deal of harm, and we trust we have made this apparent.

If the law attaching the penalty of death to the crime of murder were inoperative to such an extent as in no degree to prevent the commission of murder, we would rescind it; because we think that an inoperative law is worse than no law at all. This, however, is a matter concerning which different opinions may be entertained,—but if this law against murder were not wholly ineffectual in preventing, but actually tended to produce murders, we are unable to see how a difference of opinion could exist on the subject.

It is sufficiently obvious, from what we have seen, that the present law against usury is worse than inefficient. It is equally clear that the ingenuity of man could not devise a law which would be an efficient substitute. In a community which is in character so essentially commercial, if it were possible to make an effective law, it would not for a moment be tolerated; and we do believe that it is nothing but the total incompetency of the act of 1723, which prevents the people from raising an united voice against it.

There is one thing which cannot but strike every reflecting person in regard to this act; we mean, the corrupting influence which it exercises upon the morals of the people. The second section runs thus:—

“If any person or persons whatsoever do or shall receive or take more than six pounds *per cent. per annum*, on any such bond or contract as aforesaid, upon conviction thereof, the person or persons so offending shall forfeit the money and other things lent, one half thereof to the governor, for the support of the government, and the other half to the person who shall sue for the same, by action of debt, bill, plaint or information, in any court of record within this province, wherein no essoin, protection or wager of law, or any more than one imparlance, shall be allowed.”

Now can any man read this most iniquitous statute and fail to see that it holds out a reward to the blackest treachery and ingratitude? We have no reference now to those common informers, who, for the sake of pecuniary gain, make it a business to prosecute for every breach of law to which a money penalty is attached. Such characters, we all agree, are despicable enough. But when a party to a solemn contract, entered into for the purposes of mutual benefit, is enabled, nay, encouraged, by the law to avoid that contract by the deliberate violation of his manly honour, we earnestly protest against the longer continuance of such a blot upon the pages of our statute book.

The common informer may seek to justify his business by the benefit resulting to society from the punishment of crime.

The borrower at unlawful interest can have no such justification, for he knows full well that society could derive no advantage from the punishment of usury. It is the lender alone who would be affected by his treachery.

We here conclude our remarks upon this subject; as an apology for them, we have placed at the head of this paper, the title of Mr. Bentham's treatise. We perceive that the committee of the legislature of New York, appointed to enquire into the expediency of repealing the usury laws of that state, have adopted this treatise as their report. Hence its republication. The work is pregnant with striking facts and irresistible reasoning, and we would be well pleased if the legislature of Pennsylvania would profit by the example.

ART. VIII.—*La Esmeralda, opera en quatre actes, musique de Mademoiselle Louise Bertin, paroles de M. Victor Hugo, représenté pour la première fois sur le Théâtre de L'Académie Royale de Musique. Le 14 Novembre, 1836.*

The grand opera of Paris, technically termed the Royal Academy of Music, is the most finished and accomplished institution, of its kind, that the world has known. A magnificent *salle*, a stage of unusual dimensions, an orchestra composed of eighty chosen graduates of the Royal Conservatory, an array of vocal and dramatic talent of a high order, numerous troupe of well drilled choristers, an unrivalled *corps de ballet*, led by the *élite* of all European dancers—to which is added every possible contribution, of architecture, of scenery, of decorations, and of appropriate costume, towards enhancing the brilliancy of the spectacle—all these elements of beauty and of splendour render it a barometer of the musical taste of Parisians. Hear the same walls, which near seventy years ago rung with enthusiastic admiration of Glück's *Iphigénie* now re-echoing the thousand continued plaudits elicited by admirable productions of Meyer Beer!

The influence of this institution seemed to have attained *maximum* in 1832—a year stamped indelibly as an era in the annals of music. Rossini had retired upon his laurels, the great Italian had become indolent, satiate of fame—may his resources somewhat impaired, and he himself too proud to destroy, as many others have done, with his own hands, fame and a bright prospect of immortality. Some years previous he had contracted to deliver a *partition* every two to the Grand Opera. *Moïse and the Siege of Corinth*

produced with little success) are generally known to our usual readers; not so the Comte Ory, an exquisite two act musical comedy, which succeeded them. Its hero, the count, a French, in the same degree as *il dissoluto punito* of Mozart as a cosmopolite, Don Giovanni. He has not even existed long enough to know the value of a "catalogue" of his *bonnes fortunes*, but lives rovingly on, the creature of impulse and of pride. In the opening act he is disguised as a hermit—his cell without the walls of a castle—the fair *châtelaine* of which hath caught his eye." Nothing can be more seducing than the lay,

"Que le destin prospère."

which he gives his benediction to the troupe of pretty peasants who deposite, before his door, their offerings of fruits and flowers. It entices from the castle its dame and her attendants—see how confidently they enter the net of assumed sanctity! The count is in ecstasy—she invites him to shrive her within her domicile—nay more, she takes him by the hand—when lo! as they approach the drawbridge, enter the count's tutor, who proclaims a name which fills with terror, yet with curiosity, every female bosom:

"C'est le Comte Ory."

In an instant the cowl is withdrawn, the stole cast off, and, the beard once removed, behold in lieu of anchorite a gay young knight. A moment before we were melted by the touching ethos of his benediction—now listen to his audacious defiance! The curtain drops.

At the opening of the second act we are within the castle—a trumpet peals through its battlements—in the interval between two *fortissimi crescendos* of thunder, we hear that unrivalled quartett of female voices supplicating refuge from the storm,

"Noble châtelaine  
Voyez nôtre peine;"

And the seneschal admits a band of pilgrim nuns, fleeing before the blasts of heaven, and the impious persecution of *ce méchant Comte Ory*! a supper of fruits and milk is served up to these sanct maidens who, strange to say, seem not to relish such rural fare. The Lady Isabelle retires and leaves the holy sisters to their devotions. But, oh surprise! the cloak and hood all off—for nuns, read reckless knights—their leader the *Comte Ory*! One of the party enters with two jars of wine, and the walls resound with the revelry of

"A la bonne folie  
C'est charmant—c'est divin,  
Le plaisir nous convie  
A ce joyeux festin."



At dead of night the count arises and prowls about the—a dangerous lion at such an hour and in such a place just as matters approach a *dénouement*, a trumpet sound flourishes without, and the lord of the castle returns with his followers from the holy land. The lady is thus rescued from danger, and her pursuer forced with his companions to surrender their liberty as a boon.

After the *Comte Ory*, the “Swan of Pesaro” set the seal to his immortality by the production of *Guillaume Tell*. Meanwhile, previously to this event, all Europe awaited with breathless interest the appearance of this noble drama.

On the night of its first representation, the Grand Opera was crowded to excess, and a seat was sold as high as one hundred and fifty francs. The performance over,—a joyous and enthusiastic multitude assembled beneath the windows of the *Maestro*, while the choristers of the opera sang the inimitable quartett of the *Comte Ory*. Such an ovation was as worthy the hero of a revolution; and, in fact, Rossini effected a revolution, destined, perhaps, to outlive the glorious liberties of July.

A dispute next arose as to the emoluments of the composer, and the matter is still in litigation. Meanwhile, under pressure of losing the arrears for which he contended, the *Maestro* preserved a willing silence. Director of the Italian opera, he has been employed of late in drawing forth the talent of Bellini, Donizetti, and Mercadante, in producing their comedies at the *Bouffes*<sup>1</sup>, and in developing the vocal resources of the young *cantatrici* entrusted to his skill. To his instruction Giulia Grisi mainly indebted for her success. He is now in every public place of amusement—and Paris abounds in them—to-day you meet him at *Tortoni's*, to-night at *Musard's*; yesterday morning he was strolling in the *Jardin des Plantes*; last evening at the Grand Opera you saw him a delightful listener to the *Huguenots* of Meyer-Beer.<sup>2</sup>

We have said that the year 1832 was an epoch in the annals of the *gai science*—it gave birth to *Robert le Diable*—a grand cal melo-drama—Germanic in its conception, and in its execution.

<sup>1</sup> The Italian Opera.

<sup>2</sup> Rossini made a tour through Germany and Belgium, last autumn, in company with Rothschild of Francfort. The accounts he gave, on his return, of the distresses which inconvenience great men *en route* are ludicrous enough. At night, for instance, hardly had he ensconced himself comfortably in his *auberge*—his eyes half-closed with sleep—low strains of music broke in upon his slumber. The sounds of the musicians draw nigh! and the *maestro* finds himself serenaded by an air from *Semiramide* or *Armida*! He was thus obliged every night to make a speech at the expense of sleep; besides being bored to death with his own music.

sition displaying each new and fertile resource of the school of Rossini.

But *Robert le Diable* was long preceded by the masterpiece of Von Weber. True,—but *Der Freyschütz* was executed at the *Opera Comique*, the productions of which theatre may be said to form a transition between the *vaudeville*, or lighter comedy, and the grand opera, in which, as in all the pieces exhibited on the stage of the *Rue le Pelletier*, the dialogue is *recitative*. It is written over the door of the *Théâtre du Vaudeville*—“*Le Français né malin, inventa le Vaudeville.*” This, *mutatis mutandis*, would also be an appropriate inscription for the portico of the *Opéra Comique*.

*Robert le Diable* is then the first five-act opera in which, on the French stage, the elaboration of a thought was carried out with the most exquisite finish of execution and unity of design. It exhibits the conflicts of a good with an evil principle, and the *partition* shadows forth each phase of emotion. The perpetual warfare between monos and daimonos—between things heavenly and things infernal—on the one side, early education, maternal love, and the noble materials of virtue—opposed to them, the subtle voice of the serpent, the fiend who avows himself a father, the father who would win his son to perdition; all these colourings of passion, thrown into the most vivid contrast, are wrought into a succession of powerfully dramatic scenes—each new one augmenting the interest felt in its predecessor.

The legend is, as the minstrel hath it,

*   *   *   *   *	Ce mauvais garnement
“L’histoire epouvantable	A Lucifer promis,
De notre jeune duc	Et qui pour ses méfaits
De ce Robert le Diable	S’exila du pays.”

“De Normandie” would not have impaired the beauty of M. Scribe’s last couplet, inasmuch as our hero’s was a Norman dukedom. *Robert* is an amateur of wine, of dice, and of beauty, who maintains his reputation with the pit by his display of reckless daring and generosity, and who deserves no mention by the side of our old and philosophical friend, Faust. The true hero of the drama is (as is usual in such matters since Milton) the Devil—his friend and unknown sire.

Sweet woman most appropriately administers the chalice of holy hope to this all but lost sinner—we mean Robert, not his sire—and in the hour of trial, when he consents to sign the black and bloody bond, an organ, pealing to her assistance, recalls to his mind the chants of his infancy. At the same moment, Alice unfolds the dying letter of his mother.

“O mon fils ma tendresse assidue  
Veille sur toi du haut des cieux

Fuis les conseils audacieux  
Du séducteur qui m'a perdu."

*C'en est fait*—the hour has come; and Bertram, in despair, strives to drag Robert with him through the flames amid which he disappears. The scene is strikingly dramatic, and the horror displayed in Nourrit's convulsed features, as he starts back from the spot at which his sire vanished, is a magnificent piece of acting. All this occurs in the antechamber of the chapel—a curtain rises, and a splendid assemblage of priests, *enfants de chœur* with censers, of lords and ladies in wedding-bravery, at the head of whom the princess Isabel kneels before the altar—await to celebrate the nuptials of the repentant duke with his lady-love.

The opera *Robert* was followed by *Gustave ou le bal Masqué*, a production of Auber's, far inferior to the *Muette*, and founded upon the assassination of Gustavus of Sweden, by Ankaström. History is of course altered to suit the genius of the piece. Truth, Clio, in dramatic mythology, too often becomes the goddess of fiction. The main success of *Gustave* is to be attributed to the brilliant masquerade in the fifth act. We remember having been present at its first representation, and the bravos which welcomed this gay scene were in due accordance with the Gaul's love of splendour, and admiration of tinsel. Besides the usual gas lights of the stage, eighteen hundred bougias in rich candelabras illumined the ball room "as the sun at noon." This scene is now often played without the preceding four acts—the opera is therefore, comparatively, a failure.

Cherubini—the Beethoven of the present day—next produced an opera. The forte of this grand composer lies less in music than in profound harmonic conceptions. *Alibaba*—so his last work is entitled—is founded upon the well known Arabian tale, and was first exhibited in 1834. Although the early representations were crowded to excess, it was little appreciated by the *parterre*, for which dignified areopagus of splendid harmonies and masterly cadences were too scientific. Yet it seems to us that even Milton's *Comus* would weary the English pit, and the undying *parterre* of the French theatre holds, in its palms, the destinies of every dramatic production. It is called upon to praise or to condemn. In vain are bands of *claqueurs*, hired to applaud, even as professional mourners retained at a funeral. Enthusiasm paid at the rate of thirty sous a night is not easily communicated. We were enchanted with *Alibaba*, the dilettanti pronounced it a *chef d'œuvre*, but the majesty, the pit of the grand opera, thought otherwise. It accordingly fell through.

Previous to the appearance of *Alibaba*, the *Don Juan*, Mozart had been brought out at great expense, and the ri-

*materiel* of this magnificent opera extended by the Parisian musicasters into five acts. Even the *parterre* was ashamed not to admire the master-piece of Mozart—especially when presented in a very pretty *libretto*, and notwithstanding that the baritone part of its hero had been transposed an octave in alt, so as to meet the compass of Nourrit's voice. Still, though its merits were acknowledged by all, Don Juan met only with enthusiasm from the privileged few.

The hiatus intervening between Cherubini's splendid failure, and *La Juive*, was filled up by Robert le Diable, (now near its two hundredth representation,) and by one or two new ballets, and the thirst of the Parisians after novelty was quenched for a time by the graceful flights of Mademoiselle Taglioni, and by the voluptuous *pas de deux* of the two Ellslers. Fanny—the younger of these sisters—is surprisingly beautiful as a woman, and beautifully surprising as a *danseuse*. Her *pirouettes* and feats of muscular strength and agility are, however, the very opposite of the suave and chaste sylphisms of Taglioni.

At last the *Juive* was exhibited to the public, who had long awaited her coming. Never did Jewess or opera so surpass all expectations. Mademoiselle Falcon looked and sang the Rebecca of Ivanhoe; the scenery and decorations were brilliant above all traditions of dramatic splendour, and the music has entitled its composer, M. Halevy, to a seat in the French institute. This opera was produced in the spring of 1835, and many a gay Parisian left the masquerades of the Carnival for this splendid spectacle. One hundred and eighty thousand francs were expended in "getting it up," and in one scene a gorgeous procession of one hundred and fifty knights on horseback, in full panoply, pass over the stage. In the last act a large public square is admirably depicted, and the sad illusion of an *auto-da-fé* is rendered perfect by the procession of penitents, by their appropriate dirge, and by the dead stillness of the multitude assembled to witness the execution.

We hasten from the *Juive* to the *Huguenots*, the last work of M. Meyer-Beer, and, as we think, the most extraordinary musical production of the present day.

We have seen, in his preceding opera, with what success this gifted composer has exhibited a perpetual struggle between the principles of good and of evil. Still, the legend of *Robert* possesses intrinsic elements of interest, and its musical translation was listened to, its dramatic positions observed and admired by the audience, with the same attentive curiosity and with the same breathless anxiety that any intelligent auditory would bestow on the recital of a highly wrought fiction, or with which any crowd of spectators would await the issue of an eventful combat. Rarely has the supernatural been turned to such

advantage, and there are many passages in the music of *Robert* which rank with the renowned supper scene of *Don Giovanni*.

But when Meyer-Beer proclaimed to all Europe that he had produced another *chef d'œuvre*, and that the massacre of Bartholemew had furnished the materials of this new and ambitious fabric, the musical world knew hardly whether to admire the audacity of the *maestro*, or tremblingly and sorrowfully to anticipate a failure. Yet the universal interest in the fate of this new drama was, for a season, doomed to disappointment.

The *Huguenots* had been promised for rehearsal in the fall of 1834, and a compact to this effect signed by M. Meyer-Beer on the one hand, and by M. Vêron,<sup>1</sup> the then director of the opera, on the other.

The autumn came, but with it no opera. The composer entreated for a few months' respite—urging illness as a plea for his remissness. Vain prayers! vain excuses! M. Vêron insisted upon a fulfilment of the contract, or the penalty of forfeiture, thirty thousand francs. The opulent composer paid the money, left Paris, and, deeply incensed at this treatment, swore that his new opera should make the fortune of some more deserving theatre. Fortunately for us, and for the world, the recording angel dropped a tear on this, as on the oath of my Uncle Toby.

Eighteen months flew by, and M. Vêron learned that Meyer-Beer was in treaty with the directors of *Feydeau*, the Opera Comique:—he and his treasurer now repented deeply their unhandsome conduct towards the composer. We were soon informed by the Parisian journals that Vêron had gone to Baden to become, in his turn, a suppliant.

His interview with Meyer-Beer was solemn—a treaty was nevertheless soon concluded—its first stipulation being, that the 10,000 francs he had been forced to pay M. Scribe for the libretto should be refunded, together with the 20,000 francs of *dommages interets* which the director had also claimed and received.

This clause once adjusted, matters went on smoothly, and Vêron returned to Paris with *maestro* and massacre in his

<sup>1</sup> The rapid fortune of M. Vêron is a singular combination of good luck, and of clever manœuvring. In his younger days, and while an apothecary's boy, he invented the celebrated *Paté Régnaud*. This discovery furnished him an income of 10,000 francs: he then became physician to, and, finally, director of, the opera. The first piece brought out by the new director secured him an ample fortune. This piece was *Robert le Diable*, and, strange to say! he himself had no confidence in its success. At the end of five-years he retired upon 800,000 francs!

*chaîné de poste*. The coulisses and boards of the grand opera were set in immediate gestation, and in due time produced "the mountain."

The *Huguenots* made their *début* in the month of March last, and the echoes of the lyres which first vibrated with these seraphic strains, have not yet ceased. A chain of harmonic sympathies unites countries hitherto inimical. France and Russia, Paris and St. Petersburg, with all the intermediate cities, join in hailing this first successful endeavour to drown in music the discords of war, of politics, and of diplomacy. Even Spain, poor, persecuted Spain, might repose from her troubles and dissensions, could this opera be brought out at Madrid. If Orpheus drew after him trees and stones, Meyer-Beer might surely entice from their mountain fastnesses, the guerillas of Don Carlos.

But to our purpose—the *Huguenots*, and the immense difficulties which must have encompassed the composer. We have already remarked that *Robert* was a facile theme when compared with its younger and more sober brother. A consideration of the education and habits of the Gallic nation—of their irreligion, and of the gaiety which, with them, converts every frown into its corresponding smile,—

Each tear of sadness to its mate of joy,—

will show that great and splendid talent was requisite to converse with interest, in a religious opera, the same audience beneath the warmth of whose enthusiasm *La Muette de Portici* and *Robert* had budded and bloomed into existence.

Next to liberty, glory, love—and mayhap before the latter—the dramatist may draw his readiest and most felicitous inspirations from the mysterious, the wonderful, the supernatural—from those fancies which seize on the imagination, which nourish it with the vague surmises of superstition, with the soul's curiosity to know more of itself, and with its longings to croach on the forbidden realms of the invisible. From such sources have the Germans derived most of their original poetry, romance, and music. In proof of this, we need only cite *Faust* and *Der Freyschütz*.

It had ever been deemed improper to exhibit religion on the stage, and the enthusiasm of piety had found most seeming issue in oratorios. The great masters in this high department of musical art—Handel, Sebastian Bach, Martini, Haydn, Glück, Mozart, Beethoven—had, moreover, little confidence in the effects of sacred music upon a theatrical audience.

In late years this has changed. The *Muette* has its beau-prayer at the chapel door, and in the market-place. The *Robert* was here in *limine* of the French stage—*Robert*

concludes in a chapel, and the *Juive* opens like the *Mue* the organ uniting most harmoniously the chants of high m within the cathedral to the appropriate chorus of the popul without.

The *Huguenots* is a struggle between the solemn depths severe abstractions of German music, and the gay and lu compositions of the Italian school. A contest between Kl stock and Ariosto, between Goethe and Tasso, between Sch ler and Metastasio, in poetry; between Weber and Rossini, tween *Il Barbiere di Siviglia*, and *Robindes Bois*, betwe the *Faust* of Spohr, and the *Matrimonio Segreto* of Cimaros in music. The partisans of Coligny maintain throughou mixture of martial and of psalmodic harmonies, while the cat hics contrast the momentary devotion of a processional praye now with shouts of mirthful revelry, now with clamours of v re geance, and finally, with the demoniac howlings of blood-thi rs politico-religious fanaticism. The joy of the protestants is so sombre, and the sternest gravity of the catholics of so gay hue, that each seems mockery of the other. To unite the distinct shades of musical conception, to blend them togethe to clothe them with the rarest and richest modulations of ha mony, and to throw unity of light and of colouring over th whole design—such has been the aim of Meyer-Beer. Tl attempt constitutes his audacity, its success his glory.

Let us take, for illustration's sake, the third act of this oper in all probability the richest tissue of dramatic music the worl possesses. It opens with a joyous chorus of gay groupes walkers in a public promenade;

“ C'est le jours du Dimanche  
C'est le jours du repos.”

This glad ebullition of contentment, is soon interrupted by th couplets sung by the protestant soldiers, and to these couple are joined the litanies sung by the female catholics. Thei three chorusses are carried on simultaneously, and we ma readily conceive the difficulty surmounted, when, in lieu of painfully elaborate composition, of a confused mass addressin itself rather to the eye than to the ear, or of one of those tou de force, called by the old school *doubles fugues*, and “ il vented,” says a French writer, “ by old Martini to scare awa the devil,” an individual, *par parenthèse*, whom such music wi well calculated to frighten; in short, when, instead of findin any such imperfections, we are charmed with the natural an distinct preservation of all the unities without apparent effor and without harmonic obscurity.

The first chorus of soldiers—full of energy, of warmth and o frankness—is accompanied syllabically by voices imitating the

drum,' and thus accentuating the measure, and is followed by a sweet prayer, sung by female voices, and which, like the preceding couplet, chanted at first without accompaniment, is blended with it most admirably at the return of the orchestra. Nothing can be more perfect in harmony than the chain which unites these two so dissimilar motives, and yet they are joined at the second measure, by a third chorus of male catholics, who manifest with violent exclamations the horror inspired by the impious songs of the *Huguenots*, at the moment of the passage of the holy images. In this complicated act, which would have been chaos in other hands, do we see light, form and symmetry spring up under the composer's master touch.

As we become warmed into enthusiasm by the remembrance of this opera, and as we recall to mind the splendour of the two last acts, we are fain to repent of the preference we had given to the magnificent combinations of choruses of different characters we have just failed in describing. Despite the harmonic richness of their results, they can scarcely be compared to the passionate scenes which ensue. Yes! love, and even vengeance, fear, and even frenzy, and many of the more pronounced phases of contrasting passions, are more vividly portrayed as the piece approaches its *dénouement*: the composer seeming to acquire fresh strength and elasticity at each onward bar. The three preceding acts are, indeed, but preparatory to the conspiracy of catholics and to the bloody massacre which follows.

In the first act we find *Raoul de Nangis*, a young protestant gentleman, seated at a feast with a joyous company of catholic noblemen. The chorus *à table* is inimitably fresh and vigorous. Then follows a bacchanalian episode *de la Touraine versez les vins*, of the highest rhythmical originality. But *Raoul* is sad, he is bantered by his comrades and provoked by them, he owns that he loves an angel of beauty whom he once rescued from the hands of a troop of students, but without learning her name. After painting her in a series of animated phrases he thus gives vent to his exultation.

"Vierge immortelle!  
Qu'elle était belle  
Et malgré moi devant elle  
M'inclinant—je lui disais  
Belle ange!"

The orchestra stops for a moment as if at a loss to follow him, but re-enters with the return of the singer from his wilder flight into the key he had left—

—Reine des Amours!

<sup>1</sup> Rataplan—plan : Rataplan—plan, &c.



Whilst his auditors are commenting on this romantic pass *Marcel*, the old protestant soldier-servant of Raoul, enters apartment, and is shocked to see his master at table with papists. We are not yet at St. Bartholomew's day, and the catholics solely occupied with amusement are the pleasant fellows in the world. One of them—the Count Nevers, a specimen of the dandy of any age—is summoned to attend a lesson in his oratory; he goes thither complaining *en passant* of feminine persecutions to which he is perpetually subjected. The guests in the mean while, anxious to have a peep at this fair *cognita*, discover a key-hole through which to satisfy their curiosity. Raoul in his turn glances through the aperture—discretion is severely punished—the lady he sees near the unfortunate victim of persecution is his unknown divinity. His illusions are sadly dispelled.

Still, he should have rejoiced in lieu of complaining, for the lady is the affianced bride of Nevers, and came by an express order of Queen Margaret to pray the knight to renounce his claims to her hand. He does indeed seem to have been persecuted, as he returns to the *salle du bestin* with a discontented face. A new personage comes now before us, a pretty peasant (Mdlle. *Marie Flècheux*), who delivers a note to the unfortunate Raoul. A lady of noble birth asks his presence at a rendezvous. The inexperienced cavalier exhibits the epistle to his friends, who—recognising the seal, motto and handwriting—Margaret of Valois—pay their court to the astonished and voluntary favourite. Raoul consents to be led blindfold to the scene of adventure, and the curtain falls. During the whole of this scene the hymns of Marcel, whose refrain throughout the piece is the celebrated *choral* of Luther, contrast strangely with the gay melodies of his young master's associates. His part is conceived in deep bass, and his whole performance is one of mingled energy and pathos. *Lerasseur*, the famous *Bert* of *Robert le Diable*, performs this part, while Nourrit, a countenance and still finer tragedian, enacts the part of Raoul in the Huguenots, and that of *Robert* in its elder brother.

The second act discloses the gardens of Chenonceaux. Queen Margaret reclines upon a bed of verdure, and surrounded by her maids of honour, who are making preparations for a bath in the Cher. The little page runs down a magnificent staircase, announces the arrival of Raoul, and maliciously catches his eyes upon the pretty *baigneuses*. Our hero, fancying a rendezvous a *bonne fortune*, and Marguerite, sporting for the moment with his passion, sings that exquisite cantilène, *ah! si j'étais coquette*. The page slips in the word *majesté*. Raoul recovers from his dream, and the queen avows that she had summoned him thither, solely with a view to propose

illustrious alliance with a young catholic heiress—Valentine, the only daughter of the Count de Saint Bris. The royal council has hit upon intermarriage as a means of restoring harmony between the two dissenting sects which have transfused religion into politics. Raoul consents; at a signal from the queen a band of courtiers approach, and the Count St. Bris comes out from among them, leading his daughter by the hand. But, oh, surprise! it was Valentine, whom Raoul rescued from the students! she it was whom he saw in the oratory of Nevers! and she it is whom he now indignantly refuses to receive at her father's hands. Stupor and anger are depicted in every countenance, and the curtain falls as provocations are exchanged—defiances accepted.

We have already examined the musical wonders of the third act, and, indeed, had designed that our analysis of the *Huguenots* should end here; but our souvenirs have come upon us so thickly that we have been forced to seize them as we best might. Hence the want of systematic arrangement evinced by this *résumé*.

It remains for us to add the link of story which connects the second with the fourth act. The promenade, we have mentioned as the scene of the third act, is the *Pré aux Clercs*—a meadow on the bank of the Seine opposite the Louvre, in days of yore a duelling ground, and one which *Herold* has immortalized in his delightful opera of the same name. Here it is that the troops of students and of grizettes, and bands of Huguenot soldiers and of *clerks de la basoche*, sing the various and bizarre pieces we have glanced at. It is, moreover, the wedding day of the Count Nevers, who, in order to repair the outrage the heretic Raoul has inflicted upon his friend, Saint Bris, demands and obtains the hand of Valentine. The nuptial *cortège* crosses the *Pré aux Clercs*, on its way to the chapel. *Marcel*, the old puritan, is among the spectators—in his pocket he carries a cartel from Raoul to Saint Bris—and as the procession passes, he disdains to doff his beaver. This elicits from the catholics the insulting exclamations already mentioned. Saint Bris having received Raoul's challenge, suffers himself to be led into a project of assassination, to which Raoul is to fall a victim. Certain words are overheard by Valentine, who, under a pretext of remaining to pray, awaits the departure of her father and husband, in order to warn Marcel of the danger which threatens him whom she still loves—Raoul.

It is night, and Marcel is pacing the ground; he hears a step; "*qui va là!*" exclaims the old soldier. "Raoul," replies the challenged maiden. Marcel, cheered by the sound of his master's name, bids her approach, and a duo, full of pathos, ensues. There are tears in the eyes, in the voice, and in the

soul of the old soldier, as he listens to the earnest tale of **one** who loves Raoul as devotedly as he himself does. Soon **his** master arrives, accompanied by his seconds; and a few **minutes** after, Saint Bris and his friends come on the stage. Hardly **has** the combat begun, before a dozen armed men spring forth, **and** surround Raoul and his two friends. At this juncture, **Marcel** gives a piercing shout, when suddenly the windows of a **neigh-**bouring *cabaret* are illumined, and we hear the cheering **chorus** of the Huguenot soldiers,

Rata plan—plan. rata plan—plan,

from within. At the second cry of Marcel, the door opens, **and** a troop of his comrades rush out to his assistance; whilst, **at** signal from one of Saint Bris's seconds, students and cler-**c** precipitate themselves from other *cabarets* to the succour of the **c** catholics. A *melee* is imminent, when instantly all the wiv-**e** and mistresses of both parties rush in between the combatant-**s** and commence an harmonic logomachy. In the midst of this **g** general tumult, and at the height of the feminine quarrel, the **g** Queen Margaret arrives, escorted by a body guard and torch-**e** bearers. The combatants stop through respect for the queen-**s** who enquires into the causes of this dispute. Explanation-**s** ensue; and Marcel designates Valentine as the angel who **s** saved the life of Raoul, by warning him of the plot. Saint Bris **s** is furious—Raoul amazed.

“ . . . . Eh quoi! pour me sauver la vie  
Elle aurait de son père affronté le courroux  
Et sans m'aimer.  
*Marguerite.* Elle n'aimait que vous.”

Raoul is in despair; Saint Bris triumphs at having married his daughter, and at being revenged upon his enemy. At the bottom of the theatre, a large, highly-decorated and illumined barge, filled with musicians, with pages, with ladies of honour, and with the bridal party of Nevers, glides down the Seine. The bridegroom leads his young wife to the barge, in which they are welcomed by blasts of revelry; and the third act terminates with this brilliant spectacle.

The fourth act opens with a scene of reconciliation between Raoul and Valentine, in the house of her father. The passion of our hero has augmented in a direct ratio with his consciousness of the injustice he has done her. Their interview is suddenly interrupted by the arrival of Saint Bris, accompanied by a band of friends of the *catholic persuasion*, who assemble to concert the plan of the massacre. Raoul takes refuge behind some tapestry, and Valentine is forced by her sire to be a witness of this awful ceremony. The conspiracy prospers, all seem to

embrace the hatred and fanaticism of Saint Bris, and Raoul listens to the oath which binds them all to follow the sanguinary chief, who exclaims,

“ Le fer en main, alors levez-vous tous ;  
Que tout maudit expire sous vos coups.  
Ce Dieu qui vous entend et vous bénit d'avance,  
Soldats chrétiens, marchera devant vous.”

**All !** did we say? Aye, save one. Nevers, execrating such treachery, breaks his sword, and casting it to the ground, bursts out in a sublime musical sentence—

“ Tiens, la voilà, que Dieu juge entre nous.”

Then ensues a scene of stupendous power and effect. Three monks advance slowly from the rear of the stage; the orchestra executes, *moderato*, a rhythm of strongly-accentuated triplets upon which the three voices base, *sostenuto*, their sacrilegious hymn—*Gloire au grand Dieu vengeur*. Suddenly this intimidating measure ceases, and the brazen instruments sound, four successive times, the two major chords of E natural, and of A flat, in inharmonic relation, whilst Saint Bris and the three monks sing in unison, the monks in G sharp and the knight in C, the following benediction :—

“ Glaives pieux, saintes épées,  
Qui dans un sang impur serez bientôt trempées ;  
Vous par qui le Très-Haut frappe ses ennemis  
Glaives pieux, par nous soyez bénis.”

At the last line, the voices, separating, merge into an unexpected harmony, the key of C major, unaccompanied by the orchestra, and thence gradually modulate into the key of A flat. In this key, the theme of the hymn is resumed by the whole chorus, accompanied, *fortissimo*, by the triplet measure of stringed instruments, to which we have already alluded. The volume of sound now becomes so terrible, the measure is beaten with so much force, the voices are so wildly discordant, religion and frenzy become so mingled in each onward phrase, that the spectator's anxiety augments to anguish, as he fancies it impossible to wind up such a *crescendo*. He is soon relieved. At a signal from the monks, the conspirators kneel down, and the former thread the groups slowly, and laying hands upon their heads. Then, in a paroxysm of mad exultation and of infuriate fanaticism, the whole band resume the original theme, *pour cette cause sainte* ; but, in lieu of being distributed as before, they are concentrated one half in unison, and the other an octave above. The compact mass, thundering forth this melody, is heard over the orchestra, which, moreover, at every other beat, and in the intervals of vocal silence, swells *fortis-*

*simo*, at which pitch a syncopated beat of the tymbal, aided by the rattling of a drum, contributes to form an unheard-of mixture of all the elements of dissonance and of sublime horror which it is impossible to hear without consternation.

The conspirators have retired to take measures for the execution of their sinister resolves; Raoul emerges from his hiding place, pale, terrified for his friends, and still his arm and soul braced up for the bloody fray. Then follows a *duo* of which the varied modulations of love and of anguish, of revenge and of tenderness, are indescribably touching; *Valentine*, who is the bride of another, yet at heart ever loving Raoul, now avows her passion with a view to dissuade her lover from encountering the thousand perils which beset him.

"*Valentine*. Reste ici cette nuit ! reste dans cette asile

"*Raoul*. Je ne puis

"*Valentine*. Et la mort

"*Raoul*. Je saurai la braver !

"*Valentine*. "Eh bien donc ! si ma voix vainement te supplie

Et si mon malheur seul peut préserver ta vie

Enfin. . . . s'il faut me perdre afin de te sauver

Reste, Raoul, reste. . . . je t'aime !"

His expressions of ecstasy are thrilling—

"Tu l'as dit ; oui tu m'aimes,"

and the mingled song and recitative, exhibit the highest possible musical expression of delicacy and refinement of sentiment.

A cry without turns him from rapture to desolation; the hour has come—in vain does she entreat him to leave to their fate the friends whom his single arm cannot rescue from destruction, to espouse her religion, and for her sake,—she, whom he loves better than life, yet honour is dearer. He bursts loose from her grasp, exclaiming, *Dieu veillez sur ses jours ! Et moi je vais mourir*. The scene terminates with a *septime*, and on the sensible note, which renders it piteous in the extreme. He springs through the window, and she falls in a swoon, and as if struck by Heaven's blast.

We have just seen with what accents the indefatigable author of the *Huguenots* has clothed individual passions, and with what rapidity he passes to these immediately after portraying the clamours and energetic language of popular masses. Let us hasten to the *dénouement* of this terrible drama.

On that eventful night, the leading protestant nobles were assembled at a fête in the *Hôtel de Sens*. At the opening of the fifth act, the curtain accordingly discloses a magnificent ball-room filled with a gay and richly-dressed crowd. The music of the dance is oftentimes begloomed by a plaintive modulation into a minor key. Strange sounds are heard from without. There is a pause. The doors are burst open by Raoul, who

rushes in, covered with blood, and sword in hand, to announce to the protestants the massacre of their brethren.

The scene changes to a cloister, at the bottom of which is a protestant chapel, whither a crowd of women and children fly for refuge. Marcel kneeling among them offers up prayers; wounded in the conflict, he owes his life to the intervention of the Count Nevers, who, himself a catholic, perished in defending him.

Raoul and Valentine now enter; she, freed by the death of her husband, follows her lover every where, and strives to save him by marrying him and by converting him to her belief. He, on the point of yielding to this new temptation, is suddenly recalled to a sense of duty by a word from his old servant. Valentine, whose love is doubtless superior to her piety, declares to her lover that in order to be united to him she will embrace a religion whose sublimity, in this awful moment of danger, sheds light upon the soul.

Marcel, in the absence of a divine, and himself a priest, *par le droit des vertus et par le droit de l'âge*, blesses this hasty rite. His severe interrogatories, and the pious response of the united voices of the two lovers; the solemn yet plaintive tones of the *bass-clarinet*, which form the only accompaniment; the very silence of the orchestra, all contribute to the unexpected grandeur and solemnity of this scene. In the adjoining temple, the women and children are heard chanting the canticle of Luther—add to this the trio of the three principal personages, and then, in the midst of this solemn harmony, hear the trumpets of the murderers without—their atrocious flourishes form a thrilling contrast. A single note of the *major* mode introduced into a *minor* phrase lends this fierceness to their mingled blast. At first, they sound G B flat, and D of the chord of G minor; from this they suddenly change to E *natural*, D, C and D, and this sixth note of the *minor* mode raised accidentally half a tone rings upon the ear with diabolical ferocity. It is as if in the key of A *minor*, F *natural*, the sixth note were constantly *sharped*. This occurs in one of the operas of Glück; in the *Iphigénie en Tauride*, at the verse—

“ Ah ! ce n'est plus qu'aux sombres bords,”

where the sudden introduction of this unexpected note sheds gloom over the whole harmony. In the Huguenots, on the contrary, it shines out “like a naked sword”—the savage joy of victorious fanaticism clangs in each fresh blast.

The assassins break into the sanctuary, and as they are about rushing upon Raoul, Marcel and Valentine—these three closely locked together, advance boldly upon the swords of the infuriate wretches. So steadfast is their mien, so exalted their courage, and so sublime the splendid choral of Luther which

they sing in rich unison, and with which they defy death spectators and assassins are for a minute electrified by this magnificent hymn of martyrdom; the latter, however, seeing unarmed, finally drag them out, and, as they refuse to a their faith, murder them.

This *finale*, in which are introduced successively so many emotions,—love, piety, religious exaltation, fanaticism, his frenzy, ferocity, the enthusiastic resignation of the martyrs, and the hideous rage of the populace,—is indeed manifestation of the powerful faculties with which Meyer is gifted.

Let us pause to take breath, and to apologise to our reader the extent of ground we have allowed our recollections to cover. It has been our object to exemplify the advantage of that study—the *sine qua non* of musical success—which is so comprehended by the unskilled, and which constitutes the science of the musician. This it is which forms the *mar* and which in his works enchants the world; for the gayer musical expression, the more it resembles a joyous and ebullition of sentiment, the greater has doubtless been the history labour of the composer. Are we then bold in affirming that, to produce such works of art, not with a puerile view to astonish, but to excite mixed sentiments of delight and of admiration; that to accomplish the arduous task imposed by certain dramatic positions, whence arise myriads of fit and tous contrasts, and which in less skilful hands would result in a chaotic medley; that to present such a musical amalgam we have just cited—such a wonder to artists and joyous surprise to the world, which, even in this age of invention, has yet witnessed so vast an effort; that to surpass the efforts of the orchestras of Don Juan's ball, and, in short, to construct thoroughly musical, and in the main, religious drama of acts and of as many hours long, and to cement symmetrically together a mass of harmonic and of dissonant elements like preceding, may be termed an art little inferior in difficulty to any science—a science unsurpassed in beauty by any art?

We have thus briefly adverted to the history of the *Académie Royale de Musique*, since we first frequented it, and I have striven to embody our impressions of the intimate nature of certain great musical productions, each one of which more than the entire space allotted us for this article. It should be remarked, that it is to M. Scribe that we are indebted for most of the *librettos* we have cited, and that, since this *vaudeville*—with whose writings most of our readers are familiar—has been admitted “one of the forty” of the French academy, even for some years previous to that event, his dramatic productions have, with few exceptions, been but feeble copies

the originals which won him fame and fortune. His genius has become mechanical—perhaps indolently so—and his poems have more especially required the adorning aid of music. Great admiration for the idols of their own creating—for celebrities whom it hath been decreed a *mode* to imitate and a *mythe* to worship—is one of the striking characteristics of French enthusiasm. At Paris no one possesses merit unaided by a *name*. But let distinction be once acquired by him whom they first refused to hear, and—like all converted skeptics—the French become steadfastly blind to the defects of each new divinity. Be faith, pride, obstinacy—one or all—the cause of this, the effect is to dampen all feeble enthusiasm, while it incites to still more energetic exertions the bold and resolute aspirant in science, in literature, or in art.

When the earlier poems of M. Victor Hugo were first communicated to the French Academy, M. de Chateaubriand—to whom, if we mistake not, the modest *recueil* had been tremblingly confided—pronounced the youthful author *un enfant de génie*. He was indeed a *child of genius* who produced the *Odes et Ballades*, the *Orientales*, and the *Feuilles d'Automne*, and we, in common with all the admirers of this poet, deeply regret that promise so rich should have proved precocious. The inferiority of his recent dramas—the catalogue of hideous vices he has enshrined in them—the positive infamy of *Lucrece Borgia*, of *Marie Tudor*, and of the *Roi s'amuse*, which preceded them—the prostitution of such talents to pamper the unnatural cravings of the Parisians for such horrors—all these things warrant our conclusions, for in all of them does M. Hugo, the man, display few or none of the high attributes of M. Hugo, the child of genius, while he evinces a loathsome immorality, such as no talents could atone for.

The Esmeralda lies before us, and, not having witnessed its representation, we shall cursorily examine it as a literary effort, and without other reference to the music of Mademoiselle Bertin than a brief sketch of the various opinions concerning it, which we find in the leading Parisian journals.

The outline of this opera is chalked upon the romance of the same author, which was noticed in our number for December. But *Notre-Dame de Paris*, could with difficulty be condensed into a four act opera, and M. Victor Hugo has consequently—and, as we think, for the worse—much altered the plot and incidents of the novel which is justly regarded as his happiest and most original effort.

The first scene is the *cour des miracles*—it is night, and the Truands, a congregation of thieves, beggars, gipsies, and other vagabonds, are the *dramatis personæ*. Claude Frollo, the infamous priest, leans behind a column—he is there in quest



of the Esmeralda. The act opens with a slang chorus of Truands--the words of which are in very unintelligible, but doubtless, quite appropriate French--which terminates in shout of joy, as that pearl among gipsies, that exquisite and fanciful creation, the Esmeralda, enters dancing. We transcribe her accompanying song, as a happy specimen of M. Hugo's better sentiments:---

*"La Esmeralda.*

"Je suis l'orpheline  
Fille des douleurs,  
Qui sur vous s'incline  
En jetant des fleurs;  
Mon joyeux délire  
Bien souvent soupire;  
Je montre un sourire,  
Je cache des pleurs!  
"Je danse, humble fille,  
Au bord du ruisseau,  
Ma chanson babille  
Comme un jeune oiseau,  
Je suis la colombe  
Qu'on blesse et qui tombe;  
La nuit de la tombe  
Couvre mon berceau.

*"The Esmeralda.*

"I am the orphan  
Daughter of grief,  
Who brings you flowers  
And asks relief.  
My melodies  
Are attuned to sighs,  
And oft on my lips a smile appears  
When my lonely heart is full of tears  
I dance where the voice  
Of the streamlet is heard,  
And the lay I sing  
Is the carolling  
Of some young joyous bird!  
I am the dove who wounded dies;  
In the mystic gloom  
Of the voiceless tomb  
My cradle shrouded lies.

*Chœur.*

Danse, jeune fille!  
Tu nous rends plus doux;  
Prends nous pour famille,  
Et joues avec nous  
Comme l'hirondelle  
A la mer se mêle  
Agaçant de l'aile  
Le flot en courroux!  
C'est la jeune fille,  
L'enfant du malheur!  
Quand son regard brille  
Adieu la douleur!  
Son chant nous rassemble  
De loin, elle semble  
L'abeille qui tremble  
Au bout d'une fleur:  
Danse, jeune fille,  
Tu nous rends plus doux;  
Prends nous pour famille,  
Et joues avec nous.

*Chorus.*

Dance on, young girl,  
Thy magic hath bound us;  
Let us be thy friends  
And sport around us,  
As the swallow skims  
O'er the angry sea  
Fanning the wave  
Caressingly.  
It is the maiden  
The child of sorrow,  
From whose eyes despair  
A sunbeam might borrow;  
At her song we unite  
She seems to our sight  
Like the bee that seeks rest  
From its trembling flight  
In the flowret's breast.  
Maiden, dance on,  
Thy magic hath bound us;  
Let us be thy friends  
And sport around us."

*"Claude Frollo, (à part).*

"Fremis, jeune fille!  
Le prêtre est jaloux!"

*"Claude Frollo, (aside).*

"Tremble, young girl!  
The priest is jealous!"

Quasimodo next appears crowned and mitred as the pope of—he is welcomed by the Truands :—

“ *Chœur.*

“ Saluez ! clerks de la bazoche !  
Hubins, Coquillards, Cagoux !  
Saluez tous ! il approche  
Voici le pape des fous ! ”

The archidiacre, his master, springs forward and indignantly off the rich trappings of Quasimodo. The Truands, in their turn, are about massacring him, when in *Trouillefou*, the Bamfylde Moore-Carew of this Alsanters and rescues “ his superior in magic ” from their hands. The crowd retires, and Claude Frollo and Quasimodo—that epitome of depravities—are left alone in the square. The former communicates his impious design of carrying off the Bohemian girl, and the hunchback’s only reply is—“ Master, I needest me, take my blood—*without explanation.* ” The former retires to watch, and the priest and his conscience are left to hear his highly wrought and highly artificial soliloquy :

“ *Claude Frollo.*

“ O ciel ! avoir donné ma pensée aux abîmes  
Avoir de la magie essayé tous les crimes  
Être tombé plus bas que l’enfer ne descend  
Prêtre, à minuit, dans l’ombre épier une femme,  
Et songer dans l’état où se trouve mon âme  
Que Dieu me regarde à présent !  
Eh bien oui ! q’importe !  
Le destin m’emporte,  
Se chaîne est trop forte  
Je cède à sa loi !  
Mon sort recommence ?  
Le prêtre en démence  
N’a plus d’espérance  
Et n’a plus d’effroi. ”

“ *Claude Frollo.*

“ O heaven !

To have plunged in these dark depths my venturous thought,  
The blackest deeds of magic to have wrought,  
Fallen, thus fallen, than hell itself more low.

A priest ! at midnight hour to dare  
To gaze on one so pure and fair,  
And feel amidst this dark despair  
That God beholds me now !  
Be it so ! stern fate  
Directs my course ;  
It is too late,  
I yield to its force.

’Tis destiny that spurs me on,  
There is nought to be lost,  
There is nought to be won. ”

The remainder of this is positively impious. Why bring such pictures on the stage? Why shun for such horrors the dramatic's legitimate and fertile path?

The patrol approaches—passes by, and the priest and his minion await breathlessly the coming of the Esmeralda—a light footstep is heard—the following couplets are sung so *à la* *voce* by Claude and by Quasimodo :

" *Quasimodo et Claude.*

L'amour conseille  
L'espoir rend fort  
Celui que veille  
Lorsque tout dort  
Je la devine,  
Je l'entrevois,  
Fille divine

Love directs  
And hope empowers  
Him who wakes  
In these sleeping hours,  
I read unseen  
Thy destiny,  
Maiden, approach,  
And fearlessly, &c. &c.

*Quasi.* Viens sans effroi, } *ensemble.*  
*Claude.* Elle est à moi.

She comes, is seized by them, and almost instantly, at her cries, the long-passed patrol returns to rescue her from the hands of her ravishers. The priest escapes, but Quasimodo is arrested. La Esmeralda falls in love with Phœbus, the handsome captain of the watch. We quote the ridiculous dialogue of their first interview. It is untranslatable.

" *La Esm.*—Daignez me dire  
Votre nom sire !  
Je le requiers.

" *Phœbus.*—Phœbus ma fille  
De la famille  
De Chateaupers.

" *La Esm.*—Capitaine ?

" *Phœbus.*—Oui, ma reine.

" *La Esm.*—Reine ! oh non.

" *Phœbus.*—Grace extrême !

" *La Esm.*—Phœbus j'aime  
Votre nom.

" *Phœbus.*—Sur mon âme  
J'ai, madame,  
Une lâme  
De renom."

She glides away from the handsome soldier—the patrol appears with Quasimodo, and the curtain drops.

The first scene of the second act exhibits the *Place de Grève*. Quasimodo is on the pillory. The populace are making all manner of abuse of him. The hunchback asks for water—all laugh at his request—when the Esmeralda emerges from the crowd and presents a gourd of water to his parched lips. The exhibition is over.

The second scene of this act represents a ball-room in the house of *Madame Aloise de Gondelaurier*, the intended mother-

in-law of Phœbus de Chateaupers; a brilliant company is fast assembling; in the mean while, Phœbus, who loves the Esmeralda, is parrying the attacks of his *fiancée*, who suspects him of infidelity.

“*Phœbus.*—(*Avec passion à Fleur-de-Lys, qui boude encore.*)

Je vous jure que je vous aime  
Plus qu'on n'aimerait Venus même.

“*Fleur-de-Lys.*—Pas de serment! pas de serment!

On ne jure que lorsqu'on ment.”

The Esmeralda is seen dancing in the streets, and at a signal from Phœbus ascends to exhibit her graceful feats in the saloon. Imagine Fleur-de-Lys's surprise when she sees around the neck of the Bohemian the very scarf that she herself had embroidered for her lover! There is an éclat, and the company disperse.

The first scene of the third act must be indeed beautiful. The exterior lawn of a *cabaret*. The tavern on the right. Trees on the other side. At the bottom a door and a very low wall which encloses the lawn. In the back-ground the roof of Notre-Dame, with its two towers and its spire, and an outline of the ancient Paris thrown in relief upon the golden sky of the setting sun. The Seine runs at the bottom of the picture.

Phœbus is seated with several of his friends around divers tables. Their occupation is sufficiently explained by the opening bacchanalian.

“*Chorus.*

“*Sois propice et salutaire*  
*Notre-dame de Saint Lo*  
*Au soudard qui sur la terre*  
*N'a de haine que pour l'eau.”*

The handsome captain is in the seventh heaven of anticipation; he has a rendezvous with the Esmeralda, and, to his shame be it said, makes a boast of it to his gay comrades. The concluding chorus is characteristic:—

“*C'est le bonheur suprême*  
*En quelque tems qu'on soit*  
*De boire à ce qu'on aime*  
*Et d'aimer ce qu'on boit.”*

Brief exultation. The priest is there, and with his hand upon his poniard he mutters imprecations and threats. The hour approaches, his companions retire and leave Phœbus. As this latter is wending his way to the scene of adventure, he is accosted by an unknown. The stranger enquires the name of her who awaits the officer, and, singular dramatic improbability! he replies,

"Eh, pardieu ! c'est mon amoureuse  
Celle que m'aime et me plait fort ;  
C'est ma chanteuse, ma danseuse,  
C'est Esmeralda.

"*Claude Frollo.*—C'est la mort."

This contrast is happy. The gay indifference and reckless impulse of the young soldier, and the ominous warning of infamous priest, are strikingly true to the nature of these personages. The counsels of the priest are unheeded, and Phœbus hastens to the rendezvous.

The next scene is the room described in the romance of Hugo. But, in order to dramatise (which means to abbreviate) the incidents of the plot, various false witnesses are concealed in a neighbouring closet, and Claude Frollo takes his station amongst them. Phœbus and the Esmeralda enter the apartment—their interchange of love and admiration, and the jealousy of the priest, are perhaps the finest and at the same time most untranslatable verses in this libretto.

" <i>Esmeralda.</i>	<i>Phœbus.</i>	<i>Claude Frollo.</i>
"Oh ! sois sage !	O ma reine	Les attendre !
Encourage	Ma sirène	Les entendre !
D'un visage	Souveraine	Qu'elle est tendre !
Gracieux	De beauté !	Qu'il est beau !
La petite	Douce fille	Sois joyeuse
Qui palpite	Dont l'œil brille	Sois heureuse !
Interdite	Et pétille	Moi je creuse
Sous tes yeux !	De fierté !	Le tombeau !"

The rage of the priest becomes uncontrollable—he rushes forth from his hiding-place—buries his stiletto in the bosom of Phœbus, and disappears ; at the same moment the concealed men enter the room—accuse the Esmeralda of assassination and carry her off to justice.

At the opening of the fourth act the Esmeralda is in prison—the midst of her chains and misery she sings a *romance* of so much beauty and of great resignation. The priest enters, and proffers of life and liberty—their sole condition being that she will accept his heart—are rejected with scorn. The Egyptian is firm to her purpose, and true to her love as to her hate. So it is easy to produce such characters—villany and crime, well allied to the power of doing evil, are susceptible of an infinite variety of complications. The reason of this is that the catalogue of sins and of their divers phases is infinite,—while vice and the more beautiful attributes of our nature are of exquisite simplicity—like light, or the colourless *white*, they are enumerated in a word, while language fails in describing the shades of darkness or of colour.

The prison walls receding, disclose the square before Notre

Paris—the noble cathedral, with its rich and majestic ornament and of architecture. Quasimodo is direct—how beautiful are the following verses :—

modo.

Quasimodo.

Quel j'aime  
même

How dear to me this lonely spot !  
The breeze that loves to chase  
From memory each trace

asse  
asse

Of my unhappy lot ;  
The swallow which so faithfully  
Among the ruins sings,

le

The chapels which the cross enfolds  
Beneath its holy wings,—

toits !

Each gentle rose that blooms,  
And all that smiles amid the tombs.

lles

iles

xi !

A sketch devoid of form or grace,  
I shudder at my own dark face,

;

!

Nor know one single bliss !  
Yet pass we through the strife

se

!

Of this brief mortal life  
Even as it is.

uche

What if the sky be all unclouded  
Or in night's ebon mantle shrouded,

uche

i

The bright, the darkened road  
Conduct alike to God.

vie

e

I am a noble blade

le est !

In a vile sheath displayed,

ine

Thus joy and grief unmoved I bear

ne

For oh ! in spirit I am fair."

eu

orte

te

ieu

e

eu

Ame

eu !

achback conceals himself behind a column as Claude  
rs with *Clopin Trouillefou*. The king of the beg-  
ructed to spread detachments of armed vagabonds  
*Jour des Miracles* throughout the crowd—for we  
ten to say that it is the morning of the execution—  
listant murmurs warn us of the multitude's approach.  
ude precedes, escorts, and follows the procession.  
cession of the opera is not the least uninteresting  
his magnificent institution. It is a well drilled pan-  
my, schooled to display every shade of wholesale  
ay to the procession, "pray !" and the procession  
ne man—command it to be gay, and you have the  
ace of the Venetian carnival before you—do you  
se your eyes and to awake amid the pageants of

by-gone centuries? speak, and the procession appears in full panoply, on horseback, and armed in steel—do you seek to be thrilled with a display of storied horrors? the procession stalks before you, arrayed in the gloomy habiliments of *l'auto-da-fé*.

At other times the procession of the opera is disbanded—thrown into groups—now in the market-place of the Muette where who has not heard its lively chorus? where who has not watched the gathering of the storm, swelling and darkening into the full tempest of popular fury! then hushed, as if by an unseen power, while it kneels to invoke a blessing? and lastly where who has not watched the struggle of revolution at its most ungovernable height, of mad rebellion with still madder tyranny—and now into the bands of patriots who swell the army of William Tell.

From revolution and vehement tumult, the procession of the opera changes, with the most perfect readiness, to the gay revelry of the ball-room. See it appearing in the brilliant masquerade of *Gustave*! The motley army marches in graceful measure to the majestic *Polonaise*. Every costume is then gay, more—each nation joins, not singly but in troops, the waltz, the mazzy dance. The frigid Laplander, the fiery Andalusian, the barbarous Cossack, the Frenchman of the old *régime*, the Chinese, the Turk, the Persian in rich costume, and then a type of every passion, the happy lovers, the jealous duenna, the bearded magician—all true to nature; *i. e.* to appearances. At a certain bar of the music, the procession of the opera smiles three minutes after, it looks sad; all these symptoms of emotion are regulated by the ballet master—and a well-drilled chorist would be much more likely to sing one, two, three, or a dozen false notes, than would one of the *processionists* of the Grand Opera to smile or sadden out of time.

On Monday the procession of the opera appeared in *La Juive*—it there assumed two distinct characters—the triumphal parade of the emperor and his knights, and the mournful *cortège* which conducts the Juive to execution. On Wednesday the procession of the opera appeared first in *Nathalie*, a Swiss *ballé-pantomime*, wherein Mademoiselle Taglioni plays and dances divinely; it suddenly threw off its gay manners and peaceful costume, and appeared in the third act of *William Tell*; and, strange transformation! the evening's performance winds up with the masquerade of *Gustave*. It is Friday night—the Huguenots are played at the opera, and we have already seen the part which the procession plays in this wonderful drama. One would think that the procession of the opera had here had enough of such horrors—but no! it is again Monday night, and we are at the fourth act of *La Esmeralda*—we are, in fact, where we

or this digression ;—see ! the procession of the opera appears upon the scene. The crowd increases—murmurs—a sinister *cortège* begins to form upon the square before the church ; files of black soldiers, banners of miséricord, torches, archers, officers of police. The soldiers divide the crowd. The Esmeralda appears in white raiment, a halter around her neck, naked, and a large black crape thrown over her. Near her front with a crucifix ; behind her, the executioners and the king's troops. Quasimodo, leaning against the portal, observes every thing with attention. The criminal arrives near the façade, a grave and silent chant is heard from within the closed doors of the cathedral.

“ Omnes fluctus fluminis  
Transierunt super me  
In imo voraginis  
Ubi plorant animæ.”

The crowds gradually draw near, and finally burst forth as the cathedral suddenly opened and reveal the interior of the church, a long procession of priests in sacerdotal garments and banners. The procession is led by Claude Frollo in sacerdotal robes—he advances towards the Esmeralda. The priest draws near his unfortunate victim—the *Truands* of the crowd—a word from him, and the soldiers are ordered and she rescued. The Esmeralda is obstinate—she refuses the apostate, and is delivered by him to the soldiery. To the surprise ! Quasimodo rushes in among the archers, and the ground those engaged in seizing her, and bears off untriedly into the church the rescued maiden.

“ Quasimodo.—Asile ! asile ! asile !”

The people re-echo this cry. This exultation is doomed to disappointment. Claude Frollo proclaims the Egyptian still a pagan—she is a pagan, and Notre-Dame can only save her from the hands of human justice. The archers again appear upon the gipsy—the hunchback prepares to defend her when suddenly a cry is heard from without—and soon Quasimodo enters, on horseback, pale and exhausted. He has come to save the Esmeralda, and denounces the priest as a traitor and a sinner.

One could think that this libretto had already manifested a variety of unnatural contrasts—that we have been alternated to every opposing emotion which the skill of the poet and the nature of the subject could suggest—and that



more especially in this last act the succession of antitheses **had** been rapid and overwhelming. But no ; M. Hugo is as pitiable here as in most of his dramas. The handsome captain **falls** bleeding from his horse. The anxious and loving maiden receives him in her arms.

" Ciel tu pâlis ! Qu'as tu !

" *Phæbus.*—Je meurs

Chaque pas que j'ai fait envers toi, ma bien-aimée

A rouvert ma blessure à peine encore fermée.

J'ai pris pour moi la tombe et te lasse le jour.

J'expire. Le sort te venge

Je vais voir, ô mon pauvre ange

Si le ciel vaut ton amour !

—Adieu !"

(*he expires.*)

The last two lines are beautiful. The Esmeralda falls upon his body—and the piece concludes with the following singular and fantastic *résumé* :

" *Claude Frollo.*—Fatalité !

" *The People.*—Fatalité !"

(*The curtain falls,*)

and we must close our remarks on this opera, omitting entirely to notice the music, concerning the merits of which, the *Journal des Débats* and the *Gazette de France*—the organ of the *juste milieu* and the organ of legitimacy—are still waging a fierce and abusive war ; the former in behalf of and the latter against the music of Mademoiselle Bertin. This lady is a daughter of the well known editor of the *Débats*. There is nevertheless a good *calembourg* in one of the smaller journals respecting it,—

" Le chant—Bertin<sup>1</sup> n'enivre pas."

<sup>1</sup> Pronounced *Chambertin*.

---

The Esmeralda was definitely condemned and driven from the stage on Friday evening, December 17th, 1836.

IX.—*Ion: a tragedy, in five acts.* By THOMAS NOON TALFOURD. New York: 1837.

agedy, although its old form and features have departed, not yet wholly succumbed to the spirit of the age. The , it is true, is fast losing its power, but readers are a thousand increased; and we question very much if the theatre ever gave a modern poet a real, lasting popularity. It is wide enough. What a limited fame would his be whose should only be known through the mouthing of a dozen , however clever. A metropolitan journal, and a metropolitan audience, would swear to its merits, and there an end. Now men write for millions. Each reader, as he passes the performance, makes a little imaginary playhouse, and as it and gives it properties for himself. If he loses a few points, he at least saves many small ones. The Agamemnon of the piece has not it all to himself. Monimia's maid, her impudent stare, and the identical petticoat which we seen so often in the farce, does not destroy the *vraisemblance* of a whole tragedy. Your battles are decently fought, shadow or mountain, not by four boobies of a side, between at and the foot-lamps. The truth is, that the schoolmaster troying the theatre. When men knew less of the realities of a world, and of the every-day progress of affairs, their nations were satisfied with exhibitions in which geography and chronology were infinitely outraged; and, perhaps, the neighbouring nation transplanted to Africa or the New continent. Now, managers are forced to seek other sources of amusement. The rage for melo-drama is the legitimate and necessary result of extended knowledge. *Omne ignotum pro phibitum*—men wonder at what they do not understand. Fish heroes, with crooked cimeters and loose trowsers, to be admired by children in the holidays; now, with big and exaggerated sentiment in their mouths, they are at by the vulgar of a larger growth. The theatre is up to the lower classes, because the higher get better static entertainment from books with less pain and expense. It degenerates because they have not the check of good in their audience. Writers for the stage become writers of a closet. Comedy is banished with the abolition of *caste*, the progress of material science which brings mankind together, and a cheap literature, universally diffused, fills the avenues of entertaining knowledge. It never expect to see the theatre revived. Acting, once it, has degenerated into a trade, to which few men will put selves apprentice. It is a galling, miserable servitude to

the ninety-nine, and little better than a mock triumph to the hundredth. All the *prestige* of the stage is vanished. It *used* to be the daily theme of wits and newspapers, and the nightly resort of critics, fashionables, and literati. Men took sides on the production of a new comedy, and the realm rung with the contest. The actors lived from year to year in the public eye and mind; had their partisans and dependents, and lorded it, if they arrived at any eminence, in a sphere often extended and seldom contemptible. The theatre, up to a recent period, occupied a place in England, in the public interest, scarcely second to the house of commons. The generation now foremost in our own community, remember it here in a most respectable and flourishing condition; and we ourselves have reminiscences of comedies cast from the standing company of Philadelphia in a manner that would astonish now. But it is the fate of every thing human, after completing its cycle, to come back to its point of departure. Tragedy was itinerant with Thespis, in early Greece; and the drama now owes the little vitality which it retains to traveling actors—men and women, who flit hither and thither, finding the stage every where barren, for the especially sound reason that they, and such as they, have made it so. For as there are few players whose parts are so mean that on some scene or other they will not appear transcendent, so there are few that would not prefer the part of Hotspur in a village before that of Scrub in the metropolis. Hence the whole *corps dramatique* is peripatetic—each individual moving in a concentric orb, in which he finds attendant satellites. Occasionally, the Romeo or the Hamlet comes back from spangles and bugles, in a barn on the frontier, to his more appropriate part of Apothecary or Guildenstern at home, but it is only when he is pinched by want, or a fugitive from the constable. There is no keeping him to his business. He learns a few new attitudes, mouths with a more pompous or more pedantic diction, from imitating some freshly imported novelty, and straight is off again, to sell his new wares to distant chapmen. “A forest of feathers, and two Provencal roses on his razed shoes, will at any time get him a fellowship in a cry of players.” Thus is the whole discipline and order of the stage subverted. Actors are untaught in the commonest elements of their art. They are without elocution, without ease, without force or propriety. Having passed through no pupilage, they have acquired no instruction. The standard of excellence thus becomes imperceptibly lowered. The actor looks for an audience (and easily finds it) which will be content with him as he is; the audience, by degrees viewing him as a model, is induced, by time and circumstance, to take some one a little worse; if, by chance, he should be a little better, their wonder

l applause are unbounded, and a promising actor probably  
 iled. Content with the "star" which chances to be in the  
 endant, little attention is paid to the subordinate persons of  
 drama, disapprobation is never expressed, and consequently  
 ver feared. The principal personage, if he play well, is  
 rrounded by a host of ineffective and insignificant, some-  
 nes intoxicated, underlings, who mar his performance; and  
 he play ill, who make bad worse, until at length those  
 idiences who alone can preserve the taste of theatrical enter-  
 inment, and check the tendencies to vice, which the theatre is  
 t to afford, are driven in disgust from attendance upon it, or  
 to it rarely, and it becomes the resort of the dissolute, the  
 sious, and the vulgar.

The effect of this inefficiency of the stage on dramatic  
 thorship may easily be traced. Modern dramas, instead of  
 resenting a variety of characters, each operating to advance  
 interest of the play, to relieve its heavier scenes, or to pro-  
 te its catastrophe, are *written up* to a single part, round  
 hich every thing else revolves in a monotonous and insipid  
 cle. They represent an individual trait rather than an  
 ion; and as to the development of a great theme, which the  
 cients, with wonderful ability and effect, contrived to accom-  
 sh within much narrower limits than the modern stage  
 rds, it is not attempted, or if it be, it is done with no refer-  
 ce to the theatre. Men of genius write "dramatic poems," by  
 ne deemed a spurious species of composition, but in our judg-  
 nt the necessary result of having no stage to write for. The  
 equence is, that sentiments are elaborated, where in former  
 es incident was demanded, and authors come to *paint* their  
 racters instead of presenting them in ripe and living reality.  
 ch of the descriptive and didactic must mingle with the  
 matic, when there is no controlling conviction of the neces-  
 r of a constant advancement of the action, and it is scarcely  
 ssary to say that the descriptive and didactic have little to  
 with the genius of the English theatre. All attempts to per-  
 m Lord Byron's plays to the satisfaction of an audience, we  
 ieve, have failed. In four or five plain words, "they are not  
 upted to the stage," which means neither more nor less than  
 t they want several material elements which successful  
 ys always possess. There is poetry enough in them, but  
 y lack the resemblance to life—the *humanity*, if we may so  
 ak, which a picture of life ought to possess. The best and  
 et successful plays in our language, are those which have  
 ir origin in some popular narrative, or well-known legend,  
 d which adhere closely to their originals. Such are only  
 e remove from the first impression of life, and men recognize  
 e picture. Perhaps one of the best tragedies which has

established itself on the stage for twenty years past, is *Milmar Fazio*; the incidents of which, in the original tale (the fifth novel of Grazzini), are homely enough, but wonderfully simple and true. The beautiful poetry in which the tragic author has enwrapped them, does not conceal one feature or outline, but rather serves to enhance the merit of what it covers, like the maiden's veil in Ariosto:—

“ Which all the beauties of her form discloses,  
As the clear crystal doth the imprison'd roses.”

And yet the success of this very play may in part be owing to the paucity of its *dramatis personæ*, which brings it within the compass of the leading business of any theatre, having the least claims to respectability. *Fazio* and *Bianca*, cleverly played, will carry it off pretty well; although we have heard from a very distinguished person, whose representation of the latter character was certainly a most exquisite and touching specimen of art, guided by genius, that the “*Lady Aldobella*” would in competent hands be the triumph of the piece. This however, we always, with deference to the authority, deem a paradox; though the opinion naturally enough arose from the consciousness of power to give that character a force and consequence, of which the inefficient persons to whom it is commonly committed have no conception.

Knowles has furnished two plays for the stage which, with all their faults, indicate considerable dramatic power and some command of resources. *Master Walter*, in the *Hunchback*, is, we believe, an invention the more meritorious for offering something to the spectator on which the imagination can fix without too strong an effort. There is something material and tangible in him, in which particular Mr. Knowles has much more successfully copied the old dramatists than in his quaint *prithis* and obsolete inversions. The hood does not make the monk nor will adverbs and prepositions, however skilfully arranged, bring back the days of *Queen Bess*. But Mr. Knowles has another merit, and that is, judgment in the selection of situations. His characters occasionally bear admirably upon each other. In former days men were lavish of these points, but now one or two make the fortune of a play, and justly so when a few chilling verses and a violent catastrophe are held sufficient stock for a writer to come before the public with. We consider *S. Pierre*, in “*The Wife*,” as a very successful effort of art on the part of the same author; and the last interview of that character with his employer, in which he extorts the confession as very cleverly conceived. Not that it is not liable to remark on the score of probability—the thing never could have happened—but that is a minor objection, which a caviller might

make to a thousand of the most effective scenes in the language. Hamlet and Laertes never could have throttled each other in a young lady's grave before a whole court, the ministers of religion and the attendant guards, in any country sufficiently civilized to bestow the rites of sepulture at all,—and so of the rest. On this score we are much of the opinion of Voltaire, who told a *débutante* receiving instructions from him in relation to a character in one of his tragedies, and who objected that if she played it according to his wishes the audience would say that she had the devil in her. "That is precisely what I want, madam," replied the author, "an actress ought to have the devil in her." We entertain the same views in relation to writers for the stage. It will not do for them to weigh every minute circumstance of objection before they commit a scene to the prompter's hands. The whole thing is an illusion, and so intended to be. The shadows on the canvass must be larger than life, or the distance to which they are thrown will make them seem smaller. Spectators do not analyse if they can be brought to admire, and the time is past when the critics could outvote the galleries.

But we have been led a little aside from our position relative to the effect of the degeneracy of the stage, upon dramatic authorship and the tendency of dramatic talent to such a new form of address to the imagination. A remarkable instance of this is the very recent one of Mr. Taylor in his "Philip van Artevelde." That performance, if we are not mistaken, partakes more largely of the spirit of epic than of dramatic poetry, and the shape into which it is thrown by the author indicates that he was sensible not only that the age of the epopee is gone, but also that the reign of the drama in its older forms is passing away. Such a subject in the days of Elizabeth would have been compressed into a play, if it came at all under the notice of a man of genius. At an earlier, and perhaps at a later period, it would have been expanded into a heroic poem. In 1835 its author could meet the exigencies of literature no better than by making it a dramatic poem instead of a drama. There is excellent poetry, there are fine situations, and excellent scenes in it; yet the writer has not been induced by all the attractions that a stage-triumph was once thought to carry with it, to risk his venture in the hands of a theatrical company, or to leave it in a shape that by possibility might tempt a manager to try conclusions with it. An author who, in the last century, had evinced capacity for dealing with the difficulties and appropriating the advantages of dramatic situation to an equal extent with Mr. Taylor, and had neglected to carry them to Drury Lane or Covent Garden, would have passed for a prodigy. Such a poet as he, could not have kept away from the boards.

To get his play acted and to put it in a form to be acted would have been his instinctive impulse. Instead of quietly composing and perfecting his piece in the intervals of official duty at length casting it forth unheralded upon the reading of the *St. James's Chronicle* and the *Public Ledger* (if they existed) would have trumpeted the forthcoming play, intrigues with managers and actors, forestalling the favorites and a deal of green-room diplomacy, would have occupied the interval. What a world of humiliation and chagrin Goldsmith went through before he could come at his theatrical triumph! His plays flew like a shuttlecock from Garrick Colman and from Colman back to Garrick, while he, one of England's best, and almost one of her greatest geniuses, busy to pick up the bird and respectfully tender it anew to the players. Then a handful of noisy apprentices, judicious in action, might easily blast what laborious talent had been months perhaps years, in building. We cannot but think that the dignity of authorship is gaining by this appeal from the theatre to the press, from managers to nations. The stage may lose the ignorance and narrowness which have too often prevailed over it, and the mediocrity which now sustain it deserve to be but the public and the author understand each other better in the absence of an officious interpreter. Men of genius, if they lose a speedy triumph, need not apprehend a hasty condemnation, for a reader judges in calmness where an auditor might be hurried into unconscious injustice.

We are far from believing, however, that the form of literary production adopted by Mr. Taylor, and of which there are various examples, is to have a very long abiding place in English literature. We view it but as the *intermezzo*-step of transition—between the old forms of the serious drama and a new form of poetic creations. Between this theory and an absolute surrender of the higher poetry we see no alternative. Cut off from the epic, or the history of an action, by the narrowness of our faith<sup>1</sup> and our advanced social position, and from dramatic, or the representation of an action by conventional rules and the progress of science, the direct effect of which has been to deaden the general mind to impressions received through the imagination, poets must make mind itself their theme, yielding *the material*, (save so far as the mere descriptive of natural forms is concerned,) take refuge deep within *the mind*

<sup>1</sup> We consider the *Paradise Lost* wholly *sui generis*. Milton is set apart from the awful and unapproachable nature of his subject, as Homer is to a less degree from the distance of his era. Milton's heroes are supernatural: Homer's are seen through a medium which vastly augments their proportions.

**Voltaire** somewhere says, "Otez aux Arabes, aux Persans, aux Juifs, le soleil et la lune, les montagnes et les vallées, les dragons et les basilics, il ne leur reste plus de poesie." From this first elemental condition the advance of the art has been more and more incorporated with the intellectual and moral attributes of our nature, and as science has penetrated in its progress the dim and distant realms of ether, so has poetry, aided by philosophy, begun to fathom the recesses of the human microcosm. While the natural elements of society fermented as in a vast caldron, from the revival of learning down to the middle or even to the close of the seventeenth century, the poetry of all nations was but a reflection of the images of actual life. From Dante to Dryden we may trace the hideous turmoil and jarring sound of men in fierce opposition or treacherous alliance. Every thing then was dramatic, for the passions took shape and form; human propensities came out in strong and bold relief; men acted out their griefs and hatred; their vengeance found a stage to play its part on; and Europe was full of various intrigues, deadly feuds, the baseness of pretended friendship, and the cruelty of real animosity; while the political wars of Italy, the religious wars of Germany, the court wars of France, and the civil wars of England, came in succession to exhibit human actors under various and singular impulses. What wonder that the stage found materials for the mimic drama, when each successive day brought a new scene to the complicated drama of life.

It would not be true were we to say that England has not produced a good tragedy since the accession of the house of Hanover, but we may safely assert that the tragic faculty went out soon after the Prince of Orange came in. The period which succeeded the act of settlement, when society became organized, was highly favourable to the growth of the comedy of manners—it was the age of philosophy, of diplomacy, of modes, of reviving arts, of polite studies. The world still retained the strong impress of the past—the drops of the bygone storm were not yet evaporated, but passion had passed over into feeling, and the bloom and the odour began to arise in the track of the tempest. Marlborough's wars themselves always appeared to us more like a game of chess than a bloody struggle between opposing nations—they sat down so gingerly by turns before Dendermond or Liege. The wits of Queen Anne's time, the Bolingbrokes, the Swifts, Pope, Addison, and Sir Richard, ("God 'a mercy, fellow,") were any thing but the successors of Sophocles. True, a sense of duty drives us all at least once over "Cato," (we have read it ourselves for a similar reason since we began this paper), but what a cold and inflated *cabinet* tragedy it is, when placed in comparison with a hundred of



those effusions which a century earlier were thrown so passionately before the groundlings of the London theatres! \ but Voltaire ever called "Cato" a work of genius, with pedantic, measured mannerisms, and Betterton's "wig, flowing gown, and lacquered chair" in every line of it? Even tragedies of Otway and Rowe, belonging as they do to anterior period, we profess not to be able to appreciate highly. There is no play more frequently performed than "Venice Preserved," nor shall we venture wholly to impugn the taste of large communities whose sympathy with Boder's white pocket handkerchief softens them to tears every time it is represented. Still we think that "Venice Preserved" ought to be ranked in the class of the *tragedie bourgeoise*. The inventory of Jaffier's furniture, (who, by the way, a mean-spirited sneaking villain, and a double traitor), is sufficient to degrade it from the heroic list. It is an exceedingly popular play with housemaids, and deservedly so. The gang of broken-down bully conspirators, the gross attempt of Renard so lusciously described, the frivolous insipid character of Jaffier, and, as we said before, the white handkerchief, perfectly within their comprehension. Then there is a song lullaby burden in the versification which tickles the educated ear mightily. But this one thing is certain, that who seeks a model in Otway will never gain the applause the judicious. He, poor wretch, had no time to select more Priuli's curse was almost, in terms, prophetic. He hates plays "and starved."

As to Rowe it is needless to say much. His fame rests principally upon "The Fair Penitent," a play which is but a *refacimento* of "The Fatal Dowry" of Philip Massinger, appropriated without a syllable of acknowledgment. It is difficult at this time, to conceive that a plagiarism so impudent could escape instant exposure, and that it should be left to a remote enquirer to detect it. But it should be remembered that study of the old dramatists (with the exception of Shakspeare and such of his *predecessors* as could elucidate him,) has been revived under Gifford's intelligent and interesting criticism. The fact of the theft is so far important, that it enforces the position that even in the last century the spirit of tragedy must have been greatly degenerate, when the *chef-d'œuvre* of its time was the ghost of the forgotten and neglected effort of an author by no means the most celebrated of his time.

The king's breakfast was the era of Sir Walter Scott's lady of Tillietudlem,—the French revolution is the epoch from which a change in all modern European affairs finds a cause and a date. In the wars consequent upon that bloody business the nations were subject to two intense influences,—the m

one by which every reflecting man became aware that a great strife between antagonist principles was begun—the material one by which, in that strife and the various combinations and collisions growing out of it, the old external forms and features of society were worn away, as the cliff which invites and repels the tide parts, in doing so, with some portion of its identity and outline. In the vastness of the realities of a quarter of a century men lost the art and the heart to mimic. A generation came and went during the whirl of stupendous events. When the stupified nations awoke from their trance of horror, they found around them the elements of a new world, thrown out as material fragments are by a mighty natural convulsion. The car of the destroyer had ploughed the surface of Europe before it, while from behind had dropped the seeds of knowledge and of enquiry, which, springing up, were manured by human blood. Human genius has yet to adapt itself to this genius of a new order of things. The old politics in which individual impulses were every where felt, and when a warrior, a minister, or a priest, might stamp his impress upon an age, have passed away. Equally has passed away the period of maxims and systems, when the world held in high reverence the solecisms of Rochefoucault or the grave paradoxes of Montesquieu. Still more has passed away the day of forms and ceremonies, of garters and ribands, of personal influence, personal corruption, of personal responsibility for the errors of government, and (in some countries at least,) the kindred sentiment, so much belauded, of personal loyalty. All these were aids, and powerful aids, to dramatic effort, which henceforth authors must do without, so far as they can actually feel and know them. They are distant now, and traditional. Hence their impression is weak, and he who would attempt to bring them into his service, must hope for such success, and only such, as a painter might attain who copied from description instead of inspection. In our time men are moved in masses, by a few great and somewhat abstract principles, for very uuromantic and obvious ends. A Birmingham meeting of ninety thousand men, assembled in pursuit of the greatest happiness of the greatest number, with “equal rights” on their banner and a bust of Jeremy Bentham for a standard, may be an important incident in history, but it is not a dramatic one. Francis I. after the battle of Pavia would be worth it twice told.

Perhaps we may go farther than we have hitherto done with our hypothesis, and contend not only that the age of tragedy passed by with the period of natural fermentation and individual influences in Europe, but that successful tragic writers must be in a measure subjected to such impulses—men of action as opposed to mere men of study. Every scholar remembers the

inscription prepared by Æschylus for himself, in which he records only his military exploits, and forgets altogether his more certain claim to immortality :

Αἰσχύλον Εὐφορίωνος Ἀθηναῖον τόδε κεύθει  
Μνημα καταφθίμενον πυροφόροιο Γέλας.  
Ἀλκὴν δ' εὐδόκιμον Μαραθῶνιον ἄλσος ἀν' ἵποι,  
Καὶ βαθυχαιτήεις Μῆδος ἱπισταμένους.

" Athenian Æschylus, Euphorio's son,  
Buried in Gela's fields, these lines declare ;  
His deeds are register'd at Marathon,  
Known to the deep-hair'd Mede who met him there."

It may be that the great father of tragedy felt, and felt rightly too, that the sublime scenes which he depicted with such extraordinary and almost supernatural grandeur, owed much of their power to an imagination early excited by the vast moral influence of such a contest as that of Marathon, the importance of which to his country, must have swelled each patriotic Athenian into a demi-god. Sophocles, too, was a soldier, and Euripides was born at Salamis on the day of the battle with the fleet of Xerxes. These poets lived amidst the most stirring scenes. Their minds were constantly informed, by what was passing around them, how men act in great emergencies, how they are operated on by strong passions, by the force of superstition, and the dictates of piety. Mingling with the actual living word, with its intrigues, its contests, its struggles, and its events—they portrayed the ideal world with a power of probability and truth, which, but for this explanation, would strike us with astonishment. When we first laid hands on the Prometheus of Æschylus, we involuntarily gave utterance to awe and admiration at its magnificent conceptions, the wonderful keeping of its parts, and the perfect correspondence of each and all with the high character of the subject. Without this play it would not be easy to conceive of a poetic faculty which could so present the wonderful abstractions of its great theme, clothing them, at the same time, with an interest higher than human, yet perfectly within the scope of human sympathy. In this latter particular, as well as in the absence of that simplicity which is combined with every thing Grecian, Shelley's substitute for the lost sequel to this great dramatic effort is unsuccessful. In the high power of imagination he approaches his model, and this, perhaps, as well as any other instance, may illustrate our doctrine. Æschylus lived with the real up to the ideal, Shelley scarcely knew any thing of the world as it is, and the little he knew he wished to alter. The consequence is, that in all his beautiful poetry the mind scarcely recognizes a familiar association. This is fatal

dramatic poetry; but it was unavoidable with Shelley, treating such a topic as the Prometheus. He could scarce master the fault in "The Cenci."

What we have affirmed of the Greek dramatists may, with much truth, be predicated of those of the palmy Elizabethan age. Not that they were exposed to the same influences, but they were, with the exception, perhaps, of Jonson, (and he was made so by the pressure of counteracting causes rather than the sense of the impulses to which his fellows were subjected,) natives of the world, rather than of the closet, going forth to observe men, and sharing in the eager pursuits and vicissitudes of their generation. There is a stamp of reality on all their works, which nobody has ever succeeded in counterfeiting. The chronicles of all nations, which they gathered to their crucibles, and by a glorious alchymy reproduced in new and brighter forms, are yet to be known by this, that in them all glows, as in a mirror, the reflection of events in which they participated, or of which they felt the effect. The reader is conscious of a double interest—like that which we sometimes feel in our dreams when in a foreign land. We yet recognise the familiar imagery of the home we have left behind. And this is not the consequence of any violation of verisimilitude, or of a tone and colouring of thought and sentiment, and occasionally of expression, itself the consequence of the modes of life we have alluded to, which recalls us to ourselves and to our native associations, like the music of a well-remembered song. This is legitimate and necessary. We need some link between imagination and reality. It is far different, nevertheless, from that vice of the French school, (the old French school we mean,) which utterly *Gallicized* all foreign subjects, and smothered the heroes of antiquity within the *petitesses* of the court of Louis XIV.<sup>1</sup> The one class of writers merely affixed a moral stamp of their age to the treasures they appropriated, while the other fashioned them into the similitude of conventional manners—modes of conduct, rather than modes of thought. The Duke of Marlborough once said that the only story of England he ever read was contained in Shakspeare's plays. Perhaps those portions of English history which we gather from that source are more deeply impressed upon the mind than such as we obtain from elaborate historical compositions. There is astonishing accuracy in some of his details. The character of Wolsey, for instance, modern investigation has shown to be copied to the life. We have not a reference within our reach, but a biography of the cardinal (we think by a Levendish) shows how minutely the great master had studied his history. The outline is identical, and much of the detail is

<sup>1</sup> Heine's opinion to the contrary, notwithstanding.

reality rather than fiction. But this was a domestic subject, as lay near the time of the poet; nor can we properly vouch as of the historical plays to illustrate our hypothesis—they necessarily bear a deep and vigorous native impress. But let an intelligent reader compare the tragedy of Othello with its original in the novel of Giraldi Cinthio. We cannot here go in the analysis; and we only allude to the two productions to show that, in the creation of Othello, with his perfect individuality and original personal characteristics, out of the rude *Capitane Moro* of the tale, a coarse vulgar soldier, Shakspeare was vast more indebted to the various world of men in which he lived to the gallant spirits (and dangerous spirits, too) of whom he heard as the ornaments of Elizabeth's court—a Raleigh or an Essex, perhaps—than to all the books in Christendom. To touch the subject only—who that studies the history of England can fail to remember the constant naval wars with Spain, when he reads of Othello being summoned to the protection of Cyprus at the beginning of the play, or the death of Leicester's beautiful wife (and the manner of it), when he reaches the shocking catastrophe at the end? In the original tale the Moor and the Ancient, in a joint partnership of murder, *beat the poor lady to death with stockings full of sand*, and then demolish the house over her head to conceal their villany. The change in the mode of death agrees with the gentler character which the author has given the Moor, as well as shows the influences and associations under which he wrote. We might elucidate the same fact by the beautiful piety of Hamlet to his mother, contrasted with the conduct of Orestes to Clitemnestra, which we believe the French retain on their stage in all its ancient moral deformity, garnished only by such figures and ceremonies as a most extraordinary system of sacrificing substance to shadow has suggested to them.

If we are right in our belief that tragedy can only be written by men subjected to active, universal, every-day impulses, (and we have merely suggested our argument without amplifying it) we think it now nearly follows that, in a form adapted to popular representation, it will not much longer be written.

The poetical names of the nineteenth century, with one exception, are essentially undramatic. The poet, whose fortune has been to occupy the largest space in public attention, venturing on a branch of the art without reference to the stage, has produced dramatic poems of extraordinary power and beauty. *Manfred* and *Sardanapalus* will live with the literature of England, but never in the echo of the popular voice. Byron's power did not consist in elucidating character by the operation of co-working or counteracting agents; his heroes are, rather *self-evolved*—his dramas are almost monologues. The moment

you grasp the key to the prominent character of his pieces, you may dispense with all the rest of the persons—the play goes on without them. This Lord Byron well knew not to be the path to the heart of the people, and he therefore dreaded (we believe, in full conviction that the experiment must be desperate) any attempt to bring his tragedies on the stage: it was impossible that they could succeed—being rather the reflection of feeling and sentiment than of action. Byron was busy with the subjective always—exploring one heart by the aid of all the helps he could gather from history and experience, from the turmoil of turbid passions and perverted intellect. This maelstrom sucked within its vortex, and carried down to unknown depths, that which in a smoother sea would have floated placidly and brightly along the surface. But with him the strong denizens of the deep alone came back from that fierce profundity, in a rare integrity of solitude. Every one of his dramatic creations (we refer, of course, to the leading persons) seems to be the result of an intellectual agony—like a first creation from chaos, they know no brotherhood. Even to such a theme as “Werner”—not far away from the probabilities of life—we scarcely become reconciled, because we try in vain to become familiar with the motives of the actors. We read the play, as we do Godwin’s novels, with an ill-defined apprehension that madness might make us familiar with such thoughts and persons. In the old dramatists a touch of human sympathy ever and anon relieves this strong tension—some common chord is struck which, with mournful or joyous vibration, relieves the overcharged functions. But for the fool in *Lear*, it is no exaggeration to say that a reader of strong sensibilities might be wrought to frenzy. Byron, it is true, did not create a *Lear*, but he has drawn highly wrought pictures without a single softened spot of shadow; or if they be shaded, it is by some tree which, like the oak of the poet, retains but its blasted stem to perform the office—

—“Et trunco, non frondibus, efficit umbram.”

The truth is, the tendency of the time is to the high abstract on the one side, and to the extreme of utility on the other. The intermediate ground where the affections used to muster is invaded by either party. Byron scoffed at some of his contemporaries, but their only sin was that they were propelled with the current. It might indeed be made the subject of serious enquiry, if he himself succeeded in keeping out of it. Childe Harold and Peter Bell are nearer akin than the haughty aristocrat would willingly admit. We speak not of design, but of end. But let this pass; what we mean to intimate is, that between the investigation of two mighty principles—the *why* to

live and the *how* to live—which now occupies mankind first its moral and the next its material capacities, there is power adapted to the production of the drama, as there is soil for its reception ; and that this is the natural and necessary result of the absence of those impulses to which we before referred, by which writers were forced to the reproduction of events, and auditors to interest in their repetition. The difference is just the same between the result of the operation of the mind of Shakspeare, in the time of Queen Elizabeth, and the results of a similar mind (if such a similarity could now, as between a picture which satisfies the imagination, means to which the severity of reason cannot wholly ascribe) and one of those mechanical contrivances which give the spectator an image of life, but an image regulated merely upon principles of mathematical truth.

But the great evidence, after all that the power and glory of the drama—its hold upon human attention, and its attraction as an exercise of intellect, are passing away—consists in the history of such a man as Sir Walter Scott. It would be difficult to define dramatic power, if that gifted person did not possess it. Invention of a high order—a glowing, if not fervid imagination—extensive experience and knowledge of mankind—a mind enriched with the best stores of ancient and modern art, and, pervading all, a consummate and commanding judgment, were only some of the qualifications which unite to render him the founder and master-genius of a great school of literature. Yet these qualifications, combined with an acquaintance with natural forms, and a power to reproduce them, instead of the dramatist which, two hundred years earlier they would have made him, made him only (we speak it paradoxically but in comparison with the higher vocation of Shakspeare) the first story-teller of his age. He saw and felt the necessity under which he lay, to address larger masses of mind than a writer of plays could hope to do. He knew the power to please the judicious, and his art to interest the unlearned, and he trusted his fame (whether wisely or not it will show) to the keeping of the many, rather than the care of the few. How the many accepted the trust, it is not necessary to relate. But the example has settled the tribunal to which the appeals of men of genius, who bring the mysteries of the imagination to illustrate the realities of the world, must be referred. The romance and the novel, sparkling with scenes replete with interesting situations, and diversified by the interlocutions of numerous personages, afford advantages to an author which can be appreciated by every one who considers how many thousands of persons derive enjoyment from the perusal of books, who have no access to a theatre. Hence, for one play that of late years

has obtained the public favour, popularity and praise have been awarded to fifty novels; and a long list of successful writers might be named in the one art, while scarce a candidate has appeared to claim the bays in the other.

We do not know that the tragedy, the name of which is placed at the head of this article, impugns, in any manner, the doctrines we have advanced. It is not our intention critically to review that performance, since it has been for some time in the hands of the public, has been noticed in various literary periodicals, and is in full possession of the theatrical companies. Yet it would be deep injustice to its accomplished author not to confess how much he has elevated our hopes in the ability of the age to woo the tragic muse with a new and powerful chord. What a curious anomaly in the history of letters, is suggested by a comparison of this pure, brilliant, and classical production of the English stage with the late monstrosities of Victor Hugo and Dumas on the other side of the channel. How extraordinary the revolution, on the one hand, from the irregular, almost licentious, yet graphic pictures presented by the original English models, to the severe and statuesque, yet gentle beauties of "Ion," and, on the other hand, the reversed process from the cramped and fettered offspring of Racine, when genius wrote by the cord and compasses, to such absolute literary outlaws as Lucrece Borgia and Marian de Lorme. We look, for this reason, with the more interest on this attempt of Mr. Sergeant Talfourd, and whether it shall succeed, as we hope, or fail, as we fear, we still shall consider the tongue we speak, and the literature we love, as greatly his debtors.

When we mention failure, we do so with reference to what we consider experimental in Mr. Sergeant Talfourd's attempt. A very just verdict of success has been passed upon its literary execution, but it remains to be seen how far the effort to revivify the English theatre by an infusion of the true spirit of the antique can save it from its anticipated fate. By the spirit of the antique we mean any thing but a preposterous adhesion to the unity of place, which Addison seems to have mistaken for the distinctive characteristic of the ancient drama, or a restoration of the chorus with all its mazes of strophe and anti-strophe, which we believe Mason tried (and which, by the way, as the science of music and a taste for the opera advances is worth another trial), or finally an obvious and uniform struggle between some superior and controlling influence, (whether it be the DESTINY of the Greeks, or some substitute for it which may be found in modern superstition, fable, or religion) and the human will and affections. By the spirit of the antique we rather mean a combination of the elements of beauty, sublimity, and strength, refined and harmonized to the nearest approach



to the ideal; the same spirit which pervaded all the arts of Greece and which gave adequate form and expression to the emotions of the soul in glowing words as it did in breathless marble. In essaying to distinguish it from the principles of modern tragic composition, we should say that it addressed a higher order of perceptions, and disdained all compromises with false or unworthy motives. It dealt less with times and modes and more with unalterable precepts. It struggled after the great master-tones of the universal human heart, and made music with them which universal humanity must recognise. It dealt with distinguished actions (good or evil) rather as great events marking the relations between man and superior agencies, than as the result of particular individual qualities. Finally it always operated by the aid of a controlling and religious love for the true, the venerable, and, so far as ancient ethics were enlightened for the just. The spirit of the antique was the first-born of Truth and Beauty—of a high moral essence and a perfect material form. It is this spirit which the author of *Ion* ventured to invoke at this dying day of English tragedy, and breathe on its effete and failing form, that it may live again in hope, if not of immortality, at least of a vigorous and worthy decline.

The leading idea of *Ion* is certainly not a new one. The conduct of the plot differs wholly from that of the *Ion* of Euripides, but the principal personage in each drama appears under similar circumstances of local position, with a similar antecedent history, and so far as the discovery of parentage is concerned, a similar destiny. Still that a foundling should prove to be the son of a king is common to so many histories that the resemblance goes for nothing. For imitations of the play of Euripides, to which we have referred, (if the reader is fond of tracing poetical coincidences,) we may mention the *Athalie* of Racine; the *Giulio* of Metastasio; or, to come nearer home, that direct paraphrase of it—Whitehead's *Creusa, Queen of Athens*. We need scarcely say that all these are productions of a different character from the one before us.

As we have already remarked, the play of Mr. Talfourd is well known to the public that it seems almost supererogatory to give any account of it. Yet we shall venture a very slight analysis of the plot, and a few specimens of the author's style, in order to illustrate the remarks we have made and such as may still make upon it.

The city of Argos is afflicted with a fearful pestilence, the duration of which, it is oracularly announced, is limited only by the lives of the actual reigning family. Adrastus, the king, is insensible to the terror and affliction of his subjects, and, deaf to all their complaints, shuts himself up in his palace and

indulges in a career of fierce intemperance and riot, the result of his despair at the doom to which he is condemned. Messenger after messenger is sent to the king to induce him to join in some religious rite to alleviate the common calamity. The last brings back in answer to his errand the royal declaration, that the next who comes shall suffer death.

“ When we dared disturb  
His dreadful feastings with a humble prayer  
That he would meet us, the poor slave, who bore  
The message, flew back smarting from the scourge,  
And muttered a decree that he who next  
Unbidden met the tyrant’s glance should die.”

Two or three of the sages of Argos express their willingness to dare this danger, when a youth, nurtured in the temple of Apollo, of unknown parentage, but recently of high and remarkable bearing, solicits the office for himself.

“ *Ion*.—O sages, do not think my prayer  
Bespeaks unseemly forwardness—send me !  
The coarsest reed that trembles in the marsh,  
If heaven select it for its instrument,  
May shed celestial music on the breeze  
As clearly as the pipe whose virgin gold  
Befits the lip of Phœbus ;—ye are wise,  
And needed by your country ; ye are fathers :  
I am a lone stray thing, whose little life,  
By strangers’ bounty cherish’d, like a wave  
That from the summer sea a wanton breeze  
Lifts for a moment’s sparkle, will subside  
Light as it rose, nor leave a sigh in breaking.”

His request is acceded to, and he but craves to bid farewell to Clemanthe, the daughter of his patron, the high priest of the temple, ere he will be prepared to depart. It is scarcely necessary to say that the interview reveals what the young lovers scarcely were before aware of themselves, a mutual and fond affection. We quote from a portion of the dialogue a most poetical passage, relating to a scene of pestilence. Ion has not yet communicated his intention to go to the palace.

“ *Clem*.—Oh thou canst never bear these mournful offices !  
So blithe, so merry once ! Will not the sight  
Of frenzied agonies unfix thy reason,  
Or the dumb wo congeal thee ?

“ *Ion*.—No, Clemanthe ;  
They are the patient sorrows that touch nearest !  
If thou hadst seen the warrior, when he writhed

<sup>1</sup> Some of our readers may call to mind Ford’s exquisite line in “ *The Broken Heart* ”—

“ They are the silent griefs which cut the heart-strings.”

In the last grapple of his sinewy frame,  
 With conquering anguish, strive to cast a smile  
 (And not in vain) upon his fragile wife,  
 Waning beside him,—and, his limbs composed,  
 The widow of the moment fix her gaze  
 Of longing, speechless love, upon the babe,  
 The only living thing which yet was hers,  
 Spreading its arms for its own resting-place,  
 Yet with attenuated hand wave off  
 The unstricken child, and so embraceless die,  
 Stifling the mighty hunger of the heart;  
 Thou couldst endure the sight of selfish grief  
 In sullenness or frenzy ;—but to-day  
 Another lot falls on me.”

In the next act Ion appears in the presence of the king after warning him by his crimes, his power, and the manner the past, proceeds after this manner :—

“ *Ion*.—If thou hast ever loved—

“ *Adrastus*.—Beware ! beware !

“ *Ion*.—Thou hast ! I see thou hast ! Thou art not  
 And thou shalt hear me !—Think upon the time  
 When the clear depths of thy yet lucid soul  
 Were ruffled with the troublings of strange joy,  
 As if some unseen visitant from heaven  
 Touch'd the calm lake and wreath'd its images  
 In sparkling waves ;—recall the dallying hope  
 That on the margin of assurance trembled,  
 As loth to lose in certainty too bless'd  
 Its happy being ;—taste in thought again  
 Of the stolen sweetness of those evening walks,  
 When panted turf was air to winged feet,  
 And circling forests, by ethereal touch  
 Enchanted, wore the livery of the sky,  
 As if about to melt in golden light  
 Shapes of one heavenly vision ; and thy heart,  
 Enlarged by its new sympathy with one,  
 Grew bountiful to all !

“ *Adrastus*.—That tone ! that tone !

Whence came it ? from thy lips ? It cannot be—  
 The long hush'd music of the only voice  
 That ever spake unbought affection to me,  
 And waked my soul to blessing !—O sweet hours  
 Of golden joy, ye come ! your glories break  
 Through my pavilion'd spirit's sable folds !  
 Roll on ! roll on !—Stranger thou dost enforce me  
 To speak of things unbreathed by lip of mine  
 To human ear :—wilt listen ?

“ *Ion*.—As a child.—

“ *Adr*.—Again ! that voice again !—thou hast seen me  
 As never mortal saw me, by a tone  
 Which some light breeze, enamour'd of the sound,  
 Hath wafted through the woods, till thy young voice  
 Caught it to rive and melt me. At my birth  
 This city, which, expectant of its prince,

Lay hush'd, broke out in clamorous ecstasies ;  
 Yet, in that moment, while the uplifted cups  
 Foam'd with the choicest product of the sun,  
 And welcome thundered from a thousand throats,  
 My doom was seal'd. From the hearth's vacant space,  
 In the dark chamber where my mother lay,  
 Faint with the sense of pain-bought happiness,  
 Came forth, in heart-appalling tone, these words,  
 Of me, the nursling—"Wo unto the babe!  
 Against the life which now begins shall life  
 Lighted from thence be armed, and both, soon quench'd,  
 End this great line in sorrow !"

**This prophecy forms, so far as Ion is concerned, the *destiny* of the play, as will soon be seen. Adrastus goes on to say that persecuted and oppressed in his father's palace, accused, moreover, of the murder of his brother, he fled to the mountains and through the waves for relief from the evils that surrounded him, but in vain.**

"*Ion*.—Yet succour came to thee ?

"*Adrastus*.—A blessed one !

Which the strange magic of thy voice revives,  
 And thus unlocks my soul. My rapid steps  
 Were in a wood-encircled valley stayed  
 By the bright vision of a maid, whose face  
 Most lovely more than loveliness reveal'd,  
 In touch of patient grief, which dearer seem'd  
 Than happiness to spirit sear'd like mine.  
 With feeble hands she strove to lay in earth  
 The body of her aged sire, whose death  
 Left her alone. I aided her sad work,  
 And soon two lonely ones by holy rites  
 Became one happy being. Days, weeks, months,  
 In streamlike unity flow'd silent by us  
 In our delightful nest. My father's spies—  
 Slaves, whom my nod should have consign'd to stripes  
 Or the swift falchion—track'd our sylvan home  
 Just as my bosom knew its second joy,  
 And, spite of fortune, I embrac'd a son.

"*Ion*.—Urged by thy trembling parents to avert  
 That dreadful prophecy ?

*Adrastus*.—Fools ! did they deem  
 Its worst accomplishment could match the ill  
 Which they wrought on me ? It had left unharm'd  
 A thousand ecstasies of passion'd years,  
 Which, tasted once, live ever, and disdain  
 Fate's iron grapple ! Could I now behold  
 That son with knife uplifted at my heart,  
 A moment ere my life-blood followed it,  
 I would embrace him with my dying eyes,  
 And pardon destiny ! While jocund smiles  
 Wreathed on the infant's face, as if sweet spirits  
 Suggested pleasant fancies to its soul,  
 The ruffians broke upon us ; seized the child ;  
 Dash'd through the thicket to the beetling rock

'Neath which the deep wave eddies : I stood still  
As stricken into stone : I heard him cry,  
Press'd by the rudeness of the murderer's gripe,  
Severer ill unfearing—then the plash  
Of waters that shall cover him for ever ;  
And could not stir to save him !

" *Ion.*—And the mother—

" *Adr.*—She spake no word, but clasped me in her arms,  
And lay her down to die. A lingering gaze  
Of love she fix'd on me—none other loved,  
And so pass'd hence. By Jupiter, her look !  
Her dying patience glimmers in thy face !  
She lives again ! She looks upon me now !  
There's magic in 't. Bear with me—I am childish.

[*Enter Crythes and Guards.*]

" *Adr.*—Why art thou here ?

" *Crythes.*—The dial points the hour.

" *Adr.*—Dost thou not see that horrid purpose pass'd ?  
Hast thou no heart—no sense ?

" *Crythes.*—Scarce half an hour  
Hath flown since the command on which I wait.

" *Adr.*—Scarce half an hour !—years—years have roll'd sin  
then.

Begone ! remove that pageantry of death—  
It blasts my sight—and hearken ! Touch a hair  
Of this brave youth, or look on him as now  
With thy cold headsman's eye, and yonder band  
Shall not expect a fearful show in vain.  
Hence without word."

[*Exit Crythes.*]

The king at length meets the sages in consequence of entreaties of Ion, but relents not at the assembly from his hi unalterable resolution, still to "pledge his great defiance despair." Before the assembly breaks up, however, the ansv of the Delphic oracle, which had just been received, is announ to him :

" Argos ne'er shall find release  
Till her monarch's race shall cease."

The king repels the authority of the response with indignati and returns to the palace. The Argive youths, and amo them Ion, repair to a neighbouring grove and cast lots for t office of saving their country by his destruction :

" *Phocion.*—The name ! Why dost thou pause ?

" *Ctes.*—'Tis Ion !

" *Ion.*—Well I knew it would be mine !"

We cannot help adding here the speech of the youth after t high duty has been imposed upon him—it is worthy of Gree and breathes the truest spirit of the ancient sublime :

" [*Ion approaches the altar, and, lifting up the knife, speaks.*]

" Ye eldest gods,  
Who in no statues of exactest form  
Are palpable ; who shun the azure heights

Of beautiful Olympus, and the sound  
 Of ever-young Apollo's minstrelsy ;  
 Yet, mindful of the empire which ye held  
 Over dim Chaos, keep revengeful watch  
 On falling nations, and on kingly lines  
 About to sink for ever ; ye, who shed  
 Into the passions of earth's giant brood  
 And their fierce usages the sense of justice ;  
 Who clothe the faded battlements of tyranny  
 With blackness as a funeral pall, and breathe  
 Through the proud halls of time-embolden'd guilt  
 Portents of ruin, hear me !—In your presence,  
 For now I feel ye nigh, I dedicate  
 This arm to the destruction of the king  
 And of his race ! O keep me pitiless ;  
 Expel all human weakness from my frame,  
 That this keen weapon shake not when his heart  
 Should feel its point ; and if he has a child  
 Whose blood is needful to the sacrifice  
 My country asks, harden my soul to shed it !—  
 Was not that thunder ?”

After Ion departs upon his errand to the palace, the fact of his descent from Adrastus, which the reader has already guessed, is communicated to Medon, the high priest, from a person (one of those who had been commissioned to destroy him) accidentally in Argos, and who is there seized with the mortal pestilence. Ion is however already in the king's apartment and but a faint hope is left that Medon may reach it by a private passage in season to prevent the parricide. The dialogue between Ion and Adrastus is very dignified and affecting, but it requires all the sternness of Grecian virtue to reconcile us to the apparent obduracy of the young patriot. He is however resolved, but at the moment when his arm is uplifted to strike, Medon rushes in, exclaiming:—

“ Ion, forbear !

Behold thy son, Adrastus !

[*Ion stands for a moment stupified with horror, drops the knife, and falls senseless on the ground.*]

“ *Adrastus.*—What strange words

Are these which call my senses from the death  
 They were composed to welcome ? Son ! 'tis false—  
 I had but one—and the deep wave rolls o'er him !

“ *Med.*—That wave received, instead of the fair nursling,  
 One of the slaves who bore him from thy sight  
 In wicked haste to slay ;—I'll give thee proofs.

“ *Adr.*—Great Jove, I thank thee !—raise him gently—proofs !  
 Are there not here the lineaments of her  
 Who made me happy once—the voice, now still,  
 That bade the long-seal'd fount of love gush out,  
 While with a prince's constancy he came  
 To lay his noble life down ; and the sure,  
 The dreadful proof, that he whose guileless brow

Is instinct with her spirit, stood above me,  
 Arm'd for the traitor's deed?—It is my child!  
 [*Ion, reviving, sinks on one knee before Adrastus.*]  
 “*Ion.*—Father!”

The reprieve is but momentary, Ctesiphon and the other co-  
 spirators succeed in accomplishing the sacrifice, and Adrastus  
 lays down his life for the relief of Argos. The closing int-  
 view between the father—

— “A man who has embraced  
 His child for the first time since infancy,  
 And presently must part with him for ever”——

and the son, is indescribably touching.

Ion of course succeeds to the vacant crown, and is full  
 mindful of the one great duty the inheritance brings with  
 He strives not wholly to banish from his heart its tender em-  
 tions and old associations. He recalls the image of Cleman-  
 though he fain would not see her, and when, on repairing  
 the temple to perform the necessary rites before his coronat-  
 he meets her there, he puts on a tone of distance to save  
 gentle nature from the shock that is to follow. “Dark a  
 cold,” says he,

“Stretches the path, which, when I wear the crown,  
 I needs must enter:—the great gods forbid  
 That thou shouldst follow in it!”

“*Clemanthe.*—O unkind!  
 And shall we never see each other?”

“*Ion.* [*After a pause.*] Yes!  
 I have ask'd that dreadful question of the hills  
 That look eternal; of the flowing streams  
 That lucid flow for ever; of the stars,  
 Amid whose fields of azure my raised spirit  
 Hath trod in glory: all were dumb; but now,  
 While I thus gaze upon thy living face,  
 I feel the love that kindles through its beauty  
 Can never wholly perish;—we *shall* meet  
 Again, *Clemanthe*!”

True to the tenderness of woman's nature, however, she clings  
 to him to the last, and believes any thing rather than that  
 love has been unworthily bestowed.

“*Clemanthe.*—The last embrace!  
 Then he has cast me off!—No, 'tis not so;  
 Some mournful secret of his fate divides us:  
 I'll struggle to bear that, and snatch a comfort  
 From seeing him uplifted. I will look  
 Upon him in his throne; Minerva's shrine  
 Will shelter me from vulgar gaze; I'll hasten  
 And feast my sad eyes with his greatness there!”

The last scene finds the youthful king surrounded by  
 guards and courtiers in the great square of Argos to assist

ceremony of enthronement. He enters upon the duties of occasion with unwonted solemnity, distributes offices, awards punishment, and confers honours. At length, approaching the altar, he solemnly and finally devotes himself for the welfare of country, and "after the manner of his country makes himself immortal." Mr. Sergeant Talfourd must speak the rest in his own pure and beautiful language.

"*Ion*.—Gracious gods!

In whose mild service my glad youth was spent,  
Look on me now;—and if there is a power,  
As at this solemn time I feel there is,  
Beyond ye, that hath breathed through all your shapes  
The spirit of the beautiful that lives  
In earth and heaven;—to ye I offer up  
This conscious being, full of life and love  
For my dear country's welfare. Let this blow  
End all her sorrows!"

[*Stabs himself, and falls. Ctesiphon rushes to support him.*]

Ctesiphon, thou art

Avenged, and wilt forgive me.

"*Ctesiphon*.—Thou hast pluck'd

The poor disguise of hatred from my soul,  
And made me feel how shallow is the wish  
Of vengeance. Could I die to save thee!

[*Clemanthe rushes forward.*]

"*Clemanthe*.—Hold!

Let me support him—stand away—indeed  
I have best right, although ye know it not,  
To cling to him in death.

"*Ion*.—This is a joy

I did not hope for—this is sweet indeed.—  
Bend thine eyes on me!

"*Clemanthe*.—And for this it was

Thou wouldst have wean'd me from thee! Couldst thou think  
I would be so divorced?

"*Ion*.—Thou art right, Clemanthe,—

It was a shallow and an idle thought!

'Tis past; no show of coldness frets us now;  
No vain disguise, my love. Yet thou wilt think  
On that which when I feign'd I truly said—  
Wilt thou not, sweet one?

"*Clemanthe*.—I will treasure all.

[*Enter Irus.*]

"*Irus*.—I bring you glorious tidings—Ha! no joy  
Can enter here.

"*Ion*.—Yes—is it as I hope?

"*Irus*.—The pestilence abates.

"*Ion*.—[*springs upon his feet.*] Do ye not hear?  
Why shout ye not?—ye are strong—think not of me;  
Hearken! the curse my ancestry had spread  
O'er Argos is dispell'd—Agenor, give  
This gentle youth his freedom, who hath brought  
Sweet tidings that I shall not die in vain—



And Medon! cherish him as thou hast one  
 Who dying blesses thee;—my own Clemanthe!  
 Let this console thee also—Argos lives—  
 The offering is accepted—all is well!" [Dies.]  
 [The curtain falls.]

The history of the play, as well as its peculiar beauties of language and simplicity of plot, certainly indicate rare power in the author, and abilities to form a school of English tragedy which, if it shall not obtain complete possession of the stage, will always address itself successfully to the mind of almost all classes of readers. The author of *Ion*, it is true, exercised common forbearance and modesty in doubling, to the delay of his own fame, the *nonum prematur in annum* of Horace. He kept his play *twenty years* instead of nine, and every exhibit exhibits the result of that careful and assiduous detail which only can produce a finished work of art. The gratification with which we contemplate such a work is akin to that which the mind retires satisfied and filled with the prophecies of the Apollo. Ancient criticism might require the sacrifice of Clemanthe to the unity of the action, but to modern taste, at least to modern affections, she seems a necessary adjunct. Were we strictly to scan the development of the action we might condemn her as unnecessary, yet she is a being so pure and gentle, so trustful and confiding, that for woman's sake we could not cast her off. If the character be false to Greece it is not false to nature; nor do we know why the softest passion the heart might not flourish in that same Argos where friendship and filial affection were found or fabled to have dwelt, whose local charms embittered by the very recollection of the loss the last moments of Virgil's dying soldier:

"Sternitur infelix alieno vulnere, cœlumque  
 Aspicit, et dulces moriens reminiscitur Argos."

If Clemanthe is superfluous, she is the only superfluity of the piece, the principal person in which is developed with uncommon skill and success. The purity of *Ion*'s original character, the entire transparency of his nature, and the gentleness of his feelings, are felt by the reader intuitively the instant he hears his ministering unhurt to the plague-struck Argives. The power of innocence to confront danger is no fable, for it arises from a perfect unconsciousness of its presence. The spot where the virgin wanders in the enchanted wood is but an emblem of an untainted moral nature, safe in its own purity:

"She feared no danger for she knew no sin,"

is Dryden's beautiful expression. This characteristic of the play is an exquisite introduction to the subsequent phases of the

which he is presented. There would have been something so shocking to the moral sense in imposing the solemn task of egicide and parricide, even in compliance with religious duty, on any but unstained and pure hands. This is one reason (the passion to be gratified is another,) why the tragic duty executed by Orestes seems so atrocious to us, and was so abhorrent to the ancients themselves, though actually performed under divine command, that the tragic writers were compelled to subject him to that horrible punishment, which, even in the mimicry of the stage, excited the lively imaginations of the Athenians almost to frenzy. But Ion's natural characteristics and his religious training admirably qualify him for the high action for which he is destined. In this he may be cited to illustrate the opposite of Hamlet's character, of whom Goethe, in a celebrated simile, so finely speaks, as of a person on whom a duty too great for his powers was laid by means of an awful behest. Born in the purple, nurtured in a luxurious court, educated amid the foolish and empty disputations of Wittemberg, the friend of Horatio, the lover of Ophelia, sporting away his time between jests upon Polonius and the society of a company of players, the playfellow of Yorick, and the idol of the commonalty, no wonder Hamlet's amiable but somewhat unschooled nature vibrated and quailed under the dread mandate of his dead father. It was not courage he wanted, for he followed the ghostly visitant whithersoever he led, but

— “ the native hue of resolution  
Was sicklied o'er by the pale cast of thought ;”

the enterprise took new shapes and colours under the application of his Wittemberg logic. It grew upon him like some monstrous and distorted vision ; he procrastinated, he dallied with the time, he went about the court like a soul awry, casting himself in mockery upon every object whose vice, whose fatuity, or even whose affection, enabled him to forget for an instant the incubus that overweighed his spirit. We say that in this respect Ion is in beautiful contrast with Hamlet. Prepared by an education mysteriously secluded, free from those selfish passions which intercourse with the world fosters and strengthens, shackled but by a single tie, and that scarce known to himself, he enters modestly, but with perfect consciousness of the peril of his mission, on his errand to the king. Fortified by the result of that errand in his conviction of a high destiny, he claims the honour of the more dangerous enterprise almost before the lot is decided. Saved from the conflict between filial affection and patriotic duty, he advances to the final scene of his fate with a high port and descends to the altar a perfectly voluntary, self-possessed, and conscious sacrifice, on the holiday

of his enthronement. So admirably has the author sustained the *destiny* of the piece, that the conclusion seems but the inevitable and quiet close of an actual event, so free is the sacrifice of Ion from all the turgid commonplaces usual on such occasions. It is but the necessary end of a career in which self has had no share; in which a being, born for others, lays down his life in one great act of devotion, which at once crowns and consummates its purposes. We know of but a single instance of self-sacrifice which is more adequately conducted than this of Ion, and that (it is no disparagement to Mr. Sergeant Talfourd to say) is the *Departure of Regulus*, in Horace, a picture wonderfully sublime, unequalled for the condensation of its images and for the simplicity with which its great elements are brought before the eye. The *morale* of the Roman subject is to moderns higher than that of the Grecian, the act of Regulus being strictly consonant to the injunctions of the Christian code.

With all the beauties of "Ion," however, we fear that Mr. Talfourd has not done any thing to invalidate the theory, that in its operation on the general mind by means of the stage tragedy has lost its day. The uniform delicacy and polish of his language, the judgment with which his principal character is elaborated, the purity of taste and purity of moral by which the play is distinguished, and the total absence of the *larmoyante* women and fustian men, which have never been superseded from Otway to Home and from Home to the present time, save, perhaps, in the extremely clever play by Milman, to which we have already alluded, leave his tragedy without points for the grasp or contact of the general mind. We have heard it said, and experience seems to countenance the observation, that no man can write a successful tragedy who is not practically familiar with the stage. If the opinion be correct, it is so more because the stage is pregnant with the reflected sentiments of miscellaneous audiences, and catches intuitively the tastes of those who form the mass of theatre-goers, than from any necessity an author is under of learning mere points of stage business. A man of genius finds his mind imbued with traditional maxims there, he learns the calibre of his audiences, and finds out how to modify his own rules and reduce his own standard of dramatic construction. What a strangely different play would Mr. Sheridan Knowles have made of the conception of Ion—how uneven, how occasionally unworthy would it have proved, and yet it might have contained situations of great force, and have told with strong effect in the hands of the actors.

It has been recently stated in the newspapers, that an accomplished lady, formerly attached to the theatrical profession, has in preparation a tragedy from an incident of Spanish romance,

called "The Star of Seville." If such an undertaking were projected, it is doubtless founded on Lope de Vega's *Llana de Sevilla*—a beautiful work, replete with all the most attractive characteristics of the Spanish stage, in the extremes of loyalty, love and honour, are depicted a variety of incident and passion, and yet with a degree of grandeur and eloquence, which Shakspeare alone could surpass. The characters of Bustos Tabera, Ortiz, and Estrella, and the relations which they bear to each other, as developed in the course of the play, furnish materials for a drama of great force and beauty. Such a production, (if it followed the original,) directed under the active mind and ardent imagination of a gifted woman, with all the advantages of protracted experience, would form a fine specimen of a school in contrast to that in which Mr. Talfourd has practised. The literary studies, the course of life, and the maxims of common sense of the respective authors, as well as the diverse models which may be supposed to consult, would result in qualities of excellence very widely distinguished. We doubt not that the modern play (we use the term for want of a better, in reference to Mad. de Stael's somewhat fanciful division) would find a permanent place on the stage than its classic (classical) rival (at least) rival, precisely as the unpractised eye prefers the Egyptian to Grecian architecture, because it appreciates detail rather than proportion. There is, moreover, an affinity between the modern Spanish and English theatres, of which the writers of the former have largely availed themselves, but which has been neglected by tragic authors. If the play we speak of touches that vein to advantage, it will do much for its popularity. It will address sympathies and feelings which a subject from antiquity, treated almost with the simplicity of the antique, never touches. The principles of the latter, and the mode of development, are too refined and abstract.

I have prepared an analysis of Lope's play, with a view to illustration, to some extent, of the contrast to which we alluded, but we suppress it, feeling that, if we are right in our conjecture that the *Estrella* is the basis of the projected play, it would hardly be courteous to the fair authoress to appropriate her in any use which she may make of its plot. In the events we anticipate the appearance of the play with pleasure; for we entertain a fervent conviction that she will be able to exert her fine talents with vigour and earnestness, in order to sustain as a writer the art she has so much adorned in her capacity.

**ART. X.**—*Report of the Select Committee of the Senate of the United States; to whom were referred the address of certain British, and the petition of certain American Authors: Mr. Clay, chairman.*—Read in the senate, February 16, 1837.

A revision of the law of copyright is demanded alike by public opinion, the sound interests of learning, and a due regard to the rights of property. The United States and Great Britain present the singular spectacle of two enlightened nations, speaking the same language and cherishing the same great names in a common literature. The works of British writers form a part—how large and how valuable!—of the rich treasures to which the American student and man of letters resort, as to their own domestic store; and which they regard as the never fading ornaments of their mother tongue. To us, the strains of the English poet sound as sweetly and as familiarly as to the inhabitants of his native isle; and the voice of the English orator reaches the ears of auditors on the shore of a new world, who recognize no foreign idiom in the spirit stirring accents.

This community or rather identity of literary treasures has been overlooked in the formation of regulations for the government of literary property in our country, and British authors have been, we think, most improperly placed upon the same footing with those who speak a language unintelligible to the great mass of our population. The effects of the present law of copyright have been eminently injurious to the interests of those very authors whose works we are so exceedingly eager and justly, too, to claim as honourable to our own tongue; and this result, we are persuaded, was not at all contemplated by congress, when the laws were passed professing to secure to authors the fruits of the labours of their heads.

This subject has for some time past engaged public attention, but has lately assumed a more imposing appearance, by the presentation to congress of an address, couched in respectful but decided language, and signed by most of the distinguished living writers of Great Britain. The appeal of such a body, who have contributed so largely to our instruction and amusement, should certainly not pass unheeded; and as the document is somewhat of a literary curiosity, and worthy of permanent preservation, we give it entire.

*Address of certain Authors of Great Britain to the Senate of the United States, in congress assembled, respectfully showing:*

“That authors of Great Britain have long been exposed to injury, in their reputation and property, from the want of a law

by which the exclusive right to their respective writings may be secured to them in the United States of America.

“That, for want of such law, deep and extensive injuries have of late been inflicted on their reputation and property, and on the interests of literature and science, which ought to constitute a bond of union and friendship between the United States and Great Britain.

“That from the circumstance of the English language being common to both nations, the works of British authors are extensively read throughout the United States of America, while the profits arising from the sale of their works may be wholly appropriated by American booksellers, not only without the consent of the authors, but even contrary to their express desire—a grievance under which they have, at present, no redress.

“That the works thus appropriated by American booksellers are liable to be mutilated and altered at the pleasure of the said booksellers, or any other persons who may have an interest in reducing the price of the works, or in conciliating the supposed principles or prejudices of purchasers, in the respective sections of your Union; and that the names of the authors being retained, they may be made responsible for works which they no longer recognize as their own.

“That such mutilation and alteration, with the retention of the authors’ names, have been of late actually perpetrated by citizens of the United States, under which grievance such authors have, at present, no redress.

“That certain authors of Great Britain have recently made an effort in defence of their literary reputation and property, by declaring a respectable firm of publishers in New York to be the sole authorized possessors and issuers of the said works, and by publishing in certain American newspapers their authority to this effect.

“That the object of the said authors has been defeated by the act of certain persons, citizens of the United States, who have unjustly published, for their own advantage, the works sought to be thus protected; under which grievance the said authors have, at present, no redress.

“That American authors are injured by the non-existence of the desired law: while American publishers can provide themselves with works for publication, by unjust appropriation instead of by equitable purchase, they are under no inducement to afford to American authors a fair remuneration for their labours; under which grievance, American authors have no redress, but in sending over their works to England to be published—an expedient which has become an established practice with some of whom their country has reason to be proud.

"That the American public is injured by the non-existence of the desired law. The American public suffers not only the discouragement afforded to native authors, as above stated, but from the uncertainty now existing as to whether the productions presented to them as the works of British authors, are the original and complete productions of the writers whose names they bear."

"That, in proof of the evil complained of, the case of V. Scott might be referred to, as stated by an esteemed citizen of the United States; that while the works of this author, alike to your country and to ours, were read from Maine to Georgia, from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, he received no remuneration from the American public for his labours; equitable remuneration might have saved his life, and would at least, have relieved its closing years from the burden of poverty and destructive toils."

"That deeply impressed with the conviction that the firm ground of friendship between nations is a strict regard to simple justice, the undersigned earnestly request the Senate of the United States, in Congress assembled, speedily to take the behalf of the authors of Great Britain, their power of securing to the authors the exclusive right to their respective writings."

"Thomas Moore,  
J. D'Israeli,  
Benjamin D'Israeli,  
Amelia Opie,  
Thomas Campbell,  
Charles Lyell,  
Harriet Martineau,  
Mary Somerville.  
Henry H. Milman,  
Peter Mark Roget, M. D.,  
Maria Edgeworth,  
J. Bostock, M. D.,  
Henry Hallam,  
T. N. Talfourd, M. P.,  
Edmd. Lodge, Norroy,  
E. L. Bulwer, M. P.,  
Marguerite Blessington,  
J. P. Potter,  
Charles MacFarlane,  
William Kirby,  
Thomas Carlyle,  
J. S. H. Pardoe,  
T. S. Grimshawe,  
Charles White,  
Henry Lytton Bulwer,

Samuel Rogers,  
Thomas Chalmers,  
Charles Bell,  
J. C. Loudon,  
Anne Marsh,  
Thomas Keightley,  
William Howitt,  
Mary Howitt,  
S. C. Hall,  
Anna Maria Hall,  
J. Montgomery,  
Joanna Baillie,  
M. M. Mitford,  
Allan Cunningham,  
Charles Babbage,  
L. Bonaparte,  
G. P. R. James,  
William Buckland,  
Grenville T. Temple,  
William Prout, M. D.,  
Maria Calcott,  
G. Griffin,  
Henry F. Chorley,  
W. Whewell,  
Edward Tagart, F. G. S.

Emeline C. E. Stuart Wortley, The Rev. G. Skinner, Can-  
 Robert Murchison, bridge University, Eng.  
 Rev. Prof. Vaughan, D. D., J. H. Caunter,  
 Glasgow, Robert Southey."

No right of property is now more universally admitted as reasonable and just, than that of literary property. There is no other species which is so peculiarly a man's own, by creation, as this. The visible and tangible things of earth, already in existence, he merely appropriates to his use; though when appropriated rightfully, they are very properly secured to him against the encroachments of others. But the ideas, most truly termed children, of his brain are additions to the stock of thought—new existences; which their master and originator has a right, by the laws of nature, to consider and claim as his own, in every way in which dominion can be exercised over them. They are not, necessarily, merely because promulgated, therefore given to the public and made common property, unless the originator so chooses to dedicate them. He may do as he pleases with his own; but, against his consent, they could not be appropriated by another to his use. Such conduct is a robbery of thought—a pilfering of the wealth of mind, a stealing—a piracy of property which has as clear and definite a value in money, as any other kind of property; and is infinitely more valuable than much which is protected under the extremest penalties.

There was a time when positions of the above character were not understood. Happily, now, the ingenuously poor author, who vindicates the rights of nature in his own person, addresses those who recognize his claim; he is no longer a man of great possessions, though paternal wealth descended to him, and nature have denied him the physical power to lay up treasures by active exertions. His dominion over his energies are exerted over the spiritual part of creation, and the justice of modern times allows both the reality and the extent of the sovereignty.

We do not propose, however, to discuss, at present, the question of the extent of the title of an author to his work without regard to the language in which they are written.

Our space forbids this; and we touch, therefore, only upon the question as connected with British authors. We speak, and use in composition, the same language, and are considered, with reference to the law of copyright, as one nation. In this matter, we are one with the British. The distance of three thousand miles is nothing but a few weeks in the time of publication.

In the following argument, then, in favour of securing to British authors the same rights,  
 —no. 41. 28



authors an interest in their works when published in this country, is that derived from consideration of respect to genius and learning, and regard for the rights of literary property. Surely it little becomes a great nation to use and enjoy the productions of foreign talent, without any equivalent, availing herself of the accidental and peculiar circumstance of a common language. It has become a familiar mode to speak of literati as constituting the *republic* of letters. The phrase is a compliment to the form of government which we have adopted, and implies the dignified equality of all the members of the great commonwealth. Protection to literary property throughout every portion of such a community, would seem to be an essential part of its constitution. Men of letters themselves have, of course, no power of enforcing their rights or wishes independently of the governments of the world, their country included; and magnanimity and courtesy, on the part of a nation, should induce the extension of efficient protection to a confederacy with every claim to regard, and essential to the renown of the age, though powerless in itself. The nation which should be foremost in this honourable work would secure undying renown. Athens was wise in her generation. Her fame is brighter than that of her sterner rival.

Right glad are we that the constitution of our country recognizes this great duty and noble ambition of nations. It gives congress power "to promote the progress of science and of useful arts;" and it designates the mode by which this may best be attained, "by securing to authors and inventors the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries." The phraseology of this great instrument asserts the natural right of the class in question to the exclusive ownership of their productions, and invites congress to secure the enjoyment of it to them. It also looks upon authors, in general, as constituting the great community we have spoken of, because it intimates no partial benefits to such as are natives or residents of America. There is no exclusion, either in its terms or spirit, of foreign writers or inventors. They are benefactors of the whole human race, and the object of the power given by the constitution was to promote the progress of those great interests which belong to mankind at large. The great men who founded our government looked forward to America as the seat of the arts and the home of science, liberalized and enlightened by the labours and works of the bright spirits of the world.

The only plausible objection to acquiescence in the request of the foreign authors in question, is the probable injury to the people of our country, from the exclusion of the valuable literature of the British isles, which is now disseminated at a trifling cost throughout our land. We think that the force of a

objection upon this head is much lessened by the fact that the proposed law does not in the slightest degree interfere with the free republication of all the works which have been hitherto issued from the press. The goodly heritage of foreign genius, which has descended to our days, is left untouched and undiminished. That mass of mind, monumental and eternal, which makes us glory in our descent from English ancestors, and which we would not exchange for the productions of any other clime, is ours by gift. It has been cast before us with prodigal generosity, and we should receive the boon with thankful gratitude, nor permit the gratuitous enjoyment of so much, in time past, to render us too grasping after other's wealth in future. It is only upon the appropriation of contemporary literature that any check is proposed. It is but for living authors that justice is asked.

Admitting, however, that some diminution in the profits of American publishers, and in the conveniences and enjoyment of American readers, would be the consequence, could any one hesitate in assenting to the position that it is not for us to enrich ourselves at the expense of strangers? Better never to pluck the fruit than to take it clandestinely or unjustly. Or, what applies more closely to the proposed alteration, better to pay its value than deprive the author of the reward of his labour. It is not a question between total deprivation of this literature, and obtaining it gratuitously; but between the latter alternative and paying for it what it is reasonably worth. Authors are too anxious for fame, and too eager to have their works widely disseminated, to prevent both by affixing to them a price which would deter a publisher from undertaking to issue them from the press. Books which were worth the purchase would readily, on the other hand, secure publishers in this country, whose interests in their turn would induce them to place the work at a sum that might easily command a sale. Really worthless productions would be, undoubtedly, excluded from general circulation; and it would be for the best interests of morals and literature in this country, if such were the case. This would certainly happen, unless a limitation of time, as proposed by the senate committee, during which the book should be issued here, were adopted. If, however, no bookseller could be found willing to pay any thing for a work, that very circumstance might deter any from publishing it, after the limited period, as an experiment, and might be considered as a very likely test of the real value of the book.

Unless, then, it be contended that the dissemination of English literature is to be secured in this country, without any regard to the rights of others, it is impossible to avoid being sensible of the paramount claims of the authors themselves.

America is a market which the fortunate extension of the English tongue has given them—to which they have a real and natural claim—and of which they ought not to be deprived.

But let us consider for a moment the effect of requiring the American publisher to pay the author for his book, and of course securing to the latter the right of taking out for it copyright here. Would the public really pay more for the book? The affirmative is very questionable. It is well-known how great the scramble is to secure the first copy of the English work, or its first impression here. Competition increases very considerably to the publisher the expense of issuing it. That of course, would be avoided, if more time were allowed, which would be the case to him who had fairly purchased the right from the English proprietor. There would be no necessity for the race-horse speed of publication which is now essential. But is the price paid for a book the only consideration of value? Is the care with which it is printed nothing? Is the neatness and finish of binding nothing? Is the whole style with which the book is got up nothing? Surely not. Every one accustomed to handle books knows the superiority of English printing and binding—the superior comfort in reading them—the superior pleasure in preserving them—in a word, their greatly superior value. We would immediately approximate somewhat to this. Instead of the miserably flimsy and careless editions daily issuing from the American presses, and which hardly survive their perusal, we should behold books whose outward man would be honourable to the workmanship of the country, and which there would be some ambition to preserve.

Under the present system there can scarcely be such a thing as a careful or beautiful edition of a popular work. It is printed to be read as hastily as it was issued; not to be preserved; and, after the public curiosity is gratified, there is not sufficient encouragement to authorize the issuing of a corrected, well-bound edition. It would not remunerate the publisher for his care and expenditure. Some new *Cynthia* of the minute demands his attention—the public is awaiting with impatience to see and skim lightly over a romance of horrors, or a tale of the affections; and as this feeling can be gratified at a trifling cost to them, and at great gain to the publisher, every other consideration is of inferior moment.

A fitting sense, then, of what is due to justice and the rights of property demands the change. Literary property, being as entirely capable of definition and just as reasonable as the ownership of any other thing, the committee very properly ask the distinction in reason between extending protection to merchandise transmitted here by its owner, and refusing it to

ook. There exists none whatever. The owner should have the same right to trace and reclaim the one as the other—whereas the latter is absolutely abstracted from him without his consent, and without the slightest compensation. But if a sense of justice will not grant the protection, and if the persuasions of magnanimity and courtesy are not effectual, reciprocity at least should demand attention. We should not be backward in yielding to the subjects of a foreign country the same advantages which our citizens there possess. An American author can, in both England and France, place his productions above the reach of injustice. The laws of those countries recognize this high and honourable species of property, though existing in a stranger, and allow him to make what disposition of it he may see fit. Let us not continue to enjoy from the magnanimity of foreigners what we might ask of them as a right, if we did not withhold it ourselves. Let us meet them on the lofty ground which they have assumed, and from which they have not suffered themselves to be driven by our partial legislation.

In a collateral branch of international law, we have acted more wisely and equitably. Foreign inventions or improvements may be patented here; and the committee very properly consider the proposed change as a mere extension of the same principle. Shall less regard be paid to purely literary productions than to mechanical contrivances? Shall we pay more deference to the mode and means of enriching ourselves, than to what tends to the cultivation of the mind—to the education of the youth of our country? We hope not—but, on the contrary, that a free and enlightened nation will omit no opportunity of evincing her reverence for letters and literary men.

We are pleased to see what we fancy to be a growing taste for the fine arts and the encouragement of science, in our land. It has been evident in our legislative halls, and in our national councils. Let equal and growing attention be afforded to our men of letters, and let the right hand of fellowship be extended to them the civilized world over. It is becoming to a republic—suitable to the genius of her institutions—and will redound more than any other quality to her glory in all future time. It is a mark of extreme refinement—an evidence of graceful, as well as of solid acquisition.

Most of the above views, which we have very briefly hinted at, are the arguments which brought the committee of the United States senate to a conclusion favourable to the views of the petitioners. Still the report embodies but a partial consideration of the subject, preserving a total silence upon the probable benefit to our native writers, which would be produced by a provision of the description they recommend. We are

persuaded that this course was more becoming the committee of a high branch of the government, particularly upon an address of the foreign authors themselves. It was more dignified to place their conclusion upon the rights of the petitioners, and the claims of equity and courtesy, than upon any selfish ground of benefit derivable to our own citizens from the change. It would perhaps have sounded ill from the lips of distinguished senators to proclaim that American talent stood in need of protection; and we should ourselves have been very sorry to be forced to take this ground, not being disposed to consider genius and learning as *tariffable* commodities, either for revenue or encouragement. Whatever our sentiments might be (and we do not here express any) upon the subject of protection to American industry, we should be very averse to advocate any measures which might compel our countrymen to read American books without regard to their quality, from a mere spirit of patriotism; or deprive them of good foreign works and place in their reach but bad domestic productions. Mine is of no particular nation—genius belongs to the universe and that country would be barbarous indeed which should exclude the literary labours of any other people, through apprehension of their coming into competition upon an equal footing with her own. Free, untrammelled competition is the soul of talent—let the world be the theatre, and let superior genius achieve the victory and maintain the ascendancy.

But we do advocate (particularly, let it be borne in mind when the contrary is of no benefit, but the reverse, to the authors themselves) the placing of the productions of American talent upon an equal footing with those of British writers. How are they not so? We will give the reason, if it be not already apparent. The American bookseller can publish the work of an English author without paying him a farthing for it. He can select the production of a gentleman whose established reputation is a sufficient guaranty of the sale of his book; and having all this within his reach, what inducement is held out to any publisher to attempt the experiment of buying the manuscript of a native author, unknown, perhaps, as yet to fame, and of undergoing the additional expense of its publication? The hazard of remuneration in the one case is very great—in the other, profit is almost certain. The native manuscript is therefore thrown by, neglected; and native genius depressed, because it is not the interest of American publishers and booksellers to encourage its efforts. It would be expecting too much of patriotism in these days, to look for a different course of conduct, nor should we be disposed to ask it of any man of business. This is no fanciful sketch—the case must be of constant recurrence.

ke again the instance of American periodicals. What  
agement is extended to a publisher to undertake the  
g of a monthly, or quarterly, containing original articles,  
he can republish the best British Reviews at the mere  
f paper, printing, and binding? Nothing is paid to the  
s—nothing to the contributors—nothing to the English  
her. Whereas, in the case of a native production, editors  
receive an equivalent for their services—original articles  
be compensated—the risk must be incurred of the work  
ing a favourite with the public. With the other, on the  
ry, its former reputation is a sufficient warrant—it may  
sure one—of its present value; or, at least, is esteemed so  
it numerous class who take all things upon trust, provided  
re of foreign origin.

der this state of things, then, American genius languishes  
merican enterprise is depressed. The preference is given to  
n literature, not from regard to foreign literati, nor, as  
eral rule, because the publications themselves are of a  
r order, (we speak now in reference to publishers,) but  
se they can be got at a cheaper rate, or rather for nothing,  
the efforts of native talent must be paid for.

at these are facts, no one acquainted with the subject can

What, then, is asked? 'To foster American productions  
expense of foreign? By no means. But to place them  
an equality, and by doing so, to render justice to their  
rs, at the same time that we spare the sacrifice of our

ery thing which has been said with respect to the claims  
rary men upon the public—the encouragement they  
d receive in an enlightened republic—and the just equiva-  
hich they should reap for their labours—may be urged  
additional force, and a freedom, too, from the charge of  
al selfishness, when applied to the case of our own wri-

It is the duty of every government to protect and foster  
wn citizens—if in the arts, or sciences, or manufactures,  
eminently so in literature. Especially is this a duty in a  
aratively young nation, with an infant literature; where  
whose minds are directed to such pursuits, have much to  
nd against, and who have a right to expect that their  
ry will at least adopt no line of policy which will subject  
to additional embarrassments and difficulties.

ould, however, not stop at an alteration even of the  
proposed. To do complete justice both to British authors  
to our own countrymen, all duties upon the importation  
oks, in the English language, should be abolished. This  
d render the system uniform and complete. Every con-  
sition of public policy and regard to the interests of litera-

ture requires this course. The present is a period when difficulties arise not from a deficient but a redundant treasury. The ingenuity and the skill of our legislators are constantly taxed to devise measures towards the reduction of the public income without material injury to vested interests. The duty upon foreign books is called for by no motive either of revenue or encouragement to domestic industry. It is a tax—and a most unrighteous one—upon literature. It prevents the most careful and the most beautiful editions of books, which would be in the hands of a great portion of our people who are now deprived of them, from being generally disseminated; and it shuts up the market of great extent against the foreign publishers, who, if it were opened, and of course the demand proportionately increased, would be able to issue their editions at a much cheaper rate. It may be said that it operates as an encouragement to our own printers and book-binders. We do not think so; nor, if it did, do we consider their interests paramount to those of the class who purchase and read the books. Books are (unfortunately it may be said,) with the great mass of the people not considered as necessities. The cheaper form therefore in which they may be presented, the more acceptable are they to them. They will of course always give the preference to the less expensive and necessarily inferior editions, which answer their purpose of being read just as well as the most costly editions—the demand on the latter being confined to the more wealthy classes, to more refined tastes, and to public institutions. The American publisher has therefore but little inducement to issue the finer editions of works, and seeks rather to supply the popular demand in a way suited to it. Those who choose to furnish themselves with works in a more elegant dress ought not to be prevented from doing so by a heavy tax. The arts in England are, in this branch, ahead of ours; not at all owing to our fault, nor admitted to our shame; for doubtless in time we shall rival our British brethren in this particular as we have in many others. But before this happens, a general taste must be encouraged and must become prevalent, for the ornamental and finer branches of book-making, and nothing would conduce more to this than the general dissemination of English editions in this country. All tastes thus would have the means of gratification within their reach. The English edition would be procured by those who preferred it; and the American, and cheaper, such again as were influenced by other and equally praiseworthy motives. The competition, too, between the two issues would cheapen both; and in progress of time, from natural causes easy to be perceived, the ability of American publishers to compete with foreign in the style of their editions would be securely established. This competition that we speak of seems

one of the essential means of preventing the publisher who may secure the copyright of a new work, and has therefore the monopoly of it, from charging too high a price for it. We think, indeed, that his best interests would be promoted by a different course, and that it is always the wisest plan for every bookseller to put his stock at the lowest rates consistent with a reasonable remuneration for his trouble, and a moderate profit. Still it might be better to guard against the temptation by such an abolition of the duty as we have suggested.

The actual revenue derived from this source must be comparatively trifling,—too small to be an object, merely under this aspect, with a great nation. The inconvenience and positive injury to men of science and letters, on the contrary, are very great. Their interests and comfort, we have before said, deserve encouragement at the hand of government. What practical benefit is derived then from the tax to any branch of business or any class of our fellow citizens? We can see none. Has it operated to improve the arts of printing and book-binding? What is the actual experience upon this point? In the affirmative? We express our opinion here also the other way. That there has been an improvement in these respects, we acknowledge, and have been glad and proud to see, but it is not owing to the mere duty upon foreign books; it has arisen from the natural progress of improvement which takes place in every art from lapse of time, from experience, and consequent growing skill, from the increasing taste for the refinements of art, which we have said in regard to books will be enhanced by the dissemination of superior foreign specimens among us. Let the taste of the people be improved and strengthened, and there will be ample encouragement extended to this and every other branch of the fine arts.

It needed scarcely the emphatic language of the British memorialists to convince any one who would take the trouble to reflect upon the subject, of the deep and extensive injuries sustained by them in the unjust spoliation of their property. Let but a moment's thought be expended upon the vast number of readers of works of fiction and of the lighter departments of literature in this immensely extended country, and he will be at once sensible of the magnitude of the market to which the complainants were clearly entitled and of which they have been deprived. And for whose advantage? For that of a few publishers, who had no more right to appropriate the works of Walter Scott, for example, to their own use, than they had to do so with his estate at Abbotsford, which finally fell under the hammer for want of those means that would have been amply supplied had the large receipts, arising from the sale of his works in America, found their way into his pockets instead



of those not entitled to receive them. While the whole of our extensive country was perusing with delight those pages which have solaced many a weary hour, and have in turn brightened the face with smiles or bedewed it in tears at the will of the writer, he himself was struggling under a load of debts and sinking under a depression of spirits, which would have been alike removed by the grant of that justice which, we trust though late indeed, will be accorded by our legislators to those who are happily capable of enjoying the boon.

We have briefly and hastily thrown together the views which presented themselves to our minds upon this topic; one of interest, not only to authors and those connected with the American press, but to every citizen zealous for the honour of his country. We are anxious to let our brethren across the water see that their claims are not disregarded here; and that the profession at least, in this country is willing to do them justice. We would advocate with all our humble ability any proposition to draw closer the bonds of amity and union between the United States and England, and particularly between the members of a literary community. In regard to the fate of the proposed bill at this present session of congress we were not disappointed, because it was introduced at a very late period of the session, and when there was a vast amount of very important business pressing upon the attention of that body, which required instant action. It was to be expected also that time would be required to consider the effect of the measure upon interests which, it is supposed by some, might be injuriously operated upon, and to correct any prejudices that may have been hastily assumed in regard to it. One chief object has been gained in bringing the matter into tangible shape before congress, and we trust that it will receive an early and favourable reception hereafter.

The report of the committee we shall also extract at length. We wish to preserve all that has passed upon so interesting a topic, and shall therefore offer no apology for transcribing it. The views and sentiments of the committee are more commendable than the literary execution of the report, which is not so happy as most of the efforts of the distinguished chairman. It answers the purpose, however, of inducing congress to grant the prayer of the memorialists it will have done its work to our entire satisfaction.

The committee say:—

“That, by the act of congress of 1831, being the law now in force regulating copyrights, the benefits of the act are restricted to citizens or residents of the United States; so that no foreigner residing abroad, can secure a copyright in the United States for any work of which he is the author, however important and valuable it may be. The object of the address and petition

therefore, is to remove this restriction as to British authors, and to allow them to enjoy the benefits of our law.

“ That authors and inventors have, according to the practice among civilized nations, a property in the respective productions of their genius, is incontestable ; and that this property should be protected as effectually as any other property is, by law, follows as a legitimate consequence. Authors and inventors are among the greatest benefactors of mankind. They are often dependent, exclusively, upon their own mental labours for the means of subsistence ; and are frequently, from the nature of their pursuits, or the constitution of their minds, incapable of applying that provident care to worldly affairs which other classes of society are in the habit of bestowing. These considerations give additional strength to their just title to the protection of the law.

“ It being established that literary property is entitled to legal protection, it results that this protection ought to be afforded wherever the property is situated. A British merchant brings or transmits to the United States a bale of merchandise, and the moment it comes within the jurisdiction of our laws, they throw around it effectual security. But if the work of a British author is brought to the United States, it may be appropriated by any resident here, and republished, without any compensation whatever being made to the author. We should be all shocked if the law tolerated the least invasion of the rights of property, in the case of the merchandise, whilst those which justly belong to the works of authors are exposed to daily violation, without the possibility of their invoking the aid of the laws.

“ The committee think that this distinction in the condition of the two descriptions of property is not just, and that it ought to be remedied by some safe and cautious amendment of the law. Already the principle has been adopted in the patent laws, of extending their benefits to foreign inventions or improvements. It is but carrying out the same principle to extend the benefit of our copyright laws to foreign authors. In relation to the subjects of Great Britain and France, it will be but a measure of reciprocal justice ; for, in both of those countries, our authors may enjoy that protection of their laws for literary property which is denied to their subjects here.

“ Entertaining these views, the committee have been anxious to devise some measures which, without too great a disturbance of interests, or affecting too seriously arrangements which have grown out of the present state of things, may, without hazard, be subjected to the test of practical experience. Of the works which have heretofore issued from the foreign press, many have already been republished in the United States, others are in progress of republication, and some probably have been stereo-

typed. A copyright law which should embrace any of these works, might injuriously affect American publishers, and lead to collision and litigation between them and foreign authors.

"Acting, then, on the principles of prudence and caution, by which the committee have thought it best to be governed, the bill which the committee intend proposing provides that the protection which it secures shall extend to those works only which shall be published after its passage. It is also limited to the subjects of Great Britain and France; among other reasons because the committee have information that, by their laws American authors can obtain protection for their productions but they have no information that such is the case in any other foreign country. But, in principle, the committee perceive no objection to considering the republic of letters as one great community, and adopting a system of protection for literary property which should be common to all parts of it. The bill also provides that an American edition of the foreign work for which an American copyright has been obtained, shall be published within reasonable time.

"If the bill should pass, its operation in this country would be to leave the public, without any charge for copyright, in the undisturbed possession of all scientific and literary works published prior to its passage—in other words, the great mass of the science and literature of the world; and to entitle the British or French author only to the benefit of copyright in respect to works which may be published subsequent to the passage of the law.

"The committee cannot anticipate any reasonable or just objection to a measure thus guarded and restricted. It may, indeed, be contended, and it is possible, that the new work, when charged with the expense incident to the copyright, may come into the hands of the purchaser at a small advance beyond what would be its price, if there were no such charge; but this is by no means certain. It is, on the contrary, highly probable that, when the American publisher has adequate time to issue carefully an edition of the foreign work, without incurring the extraordinary expense which he now has to sustain to make a hurried publication of it, and to guard himself against dangerous competition, he will be able to bring it into the market as cheaply as if the bill were not to pass. But, if that should not prove to be the case, and if the American reader should have to pay a few cents to compensate the author for composing a work by which he is instructed and profited, would it not be just in itself? Has any reader a right to the use, without remuneration, of intellectual productions which have not yet been brought into existence, but lie buried in the mind of genius? The committee think not; and they believe that no American citizen would not

quite as unjust, in reference to future publications, to attribute to himself their use, without any consideration paid to their foreign proprietors, as he would to take the merchandise, in the case stated, without paying for it; would the more readily make this trifling contribution, secured to him, instead of the imperfect and slovenly now often issued, a neat and valuable work, worthy of attention,

With respect to the constitutional power to pass the proposed bill, the committee entertain no doubt, and congress as before has acted on it. The constitution authorises congress to promote the progress of science and useful arts, by securing, for limited times, to authors and inventors, the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries." There is no limit to the power to natives or residents of this country. Such an extension would have been hostile to the object of the power. That object was to PROMOTE the progress of science and useful arts. They belong to no particular country, but to mankind generally. And it cannot be doubted that the stimulus which it was intended to give to mind and genius, in other words, the promotion of the progress of science and the arts, is increased by the motives which the bill offers to the artists of Great Britain and France.

The committee conclude by asking leave to introduce the following which accompanies this report."

Unnecessary to copy the bill, which in a few words seeks effect to the views of the committee.

---

II.—*The Great Metropolis.* By the author of "Random Selections of the Lords and Commons." In two volumes. 1., second edition. London and New York: 1837.

The second volume of the work before us is exclusively devoted to the subject of the newspaper press and periodical literature of London. This is the most interesting part of the work, but at present we shall not notice it farther than may be necessary in making a few remarks upon the literary merits of the author; confining ourselves principally to the first volume, in which the range of subjects treated is wider, although not so extensive.

Mr. Grant, before known quite generally and favourably by his "Random Recollections of the Lords and Commons," is, or was, a reporter for one of the London newspapers. Of course he has been conversant with many of the scenes and subjects of which he writes. The parliamentary reporting corps of the daily press have been jocularly called "The Fourth Estate;" certainly they are much superior, both as regards their organization and the character of the persons employed, to any kindred establishment in the world. Many of the most eminent literary men of "the Great Metropolis" have commenced their career as reporters, and some of them have long laboured in that avocation. We will quote a few paragraphs on this subject from the work in hand.

"Some of the reporters at present in the gallery are well known in the literary world. Mr. O'Dwyer, of 'The Morning Herald,' has written several works which have been well received by the public. Mr. Charles Dickens, the author of 'Sketches by Boz' and the 'Pickwick Club,' is a reporter on the establishment of 'The Morning Chronicle.' . . . Mr. Hazlitt, son of the late celebrated William Hazlitt, who has just published the 'Life and Correspondence of his Father,' is also a reporter on 'The Morning Chronicle.'

"Among the reporters of a previous period are to be numbered some of the most distinguished men which the country has produced. Dr. Johnson was among the earliest reporters of the debates in parliament; he was any thing, according to his own admission, but a fair reporter. He says that, in reporting the debates in parliament, he always 'took care that the whig rascals should not have the best of the argument.' This is tantamount to saying that he purposely weakened the arguments of the whigs, and improved those of the tories—which argued a great want of principle. It is fortunate the doctor did not attempt to write the history of his country: a pretty concealment, and colouring, and mutilation, we should, in that case, have had of it. The lexicographer's reports appear to have been very laboured; there is about them all the pomposity which we see in all the works which have emanated from his pen. He preserves none of the peculiarities in the style of the different speakers he reported, but makes them all speak alike: in other words, the doctor makes them all speak as he himself was accustomed to write. He reports the speeches of Lord Lyttleton, Mr. Pulteney, Lord Chatham, Horace Walpole, and other eminent men, in such a way as if all their speeches had proceeded from the mouth of one person—though every body knows that they thought and expressed themselves as differently from each other as it was possible for men to do.

"Many of the best known authors in cotemporary literature have also been parliamentary reporters. Among the number may be mentioned the late Sir James Macintosh, Allan Cunningham, Mr. S. C. Hall, editor of 'The New Monthly,' and Mr. Jerdan, the editor of 'The Literary Gazette.' Of persons holding important offices, or who are distinguished at the English bar, that have been in the gallery, I may name Mr. Justice Dowling, of New South Wales; Sir John Campbell, the attorney-general; Mr. Stevens, one of the masters in chancery; Mr. Serjeant Spinkie, and Mr. Sidney Taylor. Almost all the editors of the daily papers have been reporters: Mr. Barnes, of 'The Times;' Mr. Black, of 'The Morning Chronicle;' Mr. Biddleston, of 'The Morning Post;' Mr. Anderson,

The Morning Advertiser; and Mr. Stevens, of 'The Public Ledger;' have been in the gallery. Mr. Sidney Taylor, of 'The Morning Herald,' we already mentioned as having been a reporter. Almost all the editors of the daily papers have also been reporters. Mr. Bacon, of 'The Times;' Mr. Haines, of 'The Herald;' Mr. Fraser, of 'The Oracle;' Mr. Francis, of 'The Post;' and Mr. Harwood, of 'The Register,' are among the number. Of the gentlemen connected with the daily papers, who have been reporters, it is unnecessary to speak." II. pp. 226—229.

Certain it is, that the literary habits of newspaper editors and reporters are not favourable to the formation of a correct and finished style. At the same time we agree, entirely, with the author in admiring the wonderful excellence of English newspaper articles—wonderful, because of the circumstances of hurry and interruption under which they are produced. Dr. Johnson's reports were laboured, and the characteristics of a style already formed were infused into them; but we venture to say, that if the doctor had *acquired* his style from the habit of reporting—at least, under the reporting system of the present time—he never would have been distinguished as a correct writer. It is true that he composed very rapidly, and knew the value of the *limæ labor*; but, in earlier life, he had always been careful to speak and write with extreme correctness, even at the expense of being slow. We should suppose that Mr. Grant had *formed* his style in "the gallery," and, from the hurry and bustle of his avocation, had never been accustomed to that careful revision of his labour, which Dr. Johnson's early habits of correctness had rendered unnecessary in his case. Most any part of the work before us would appear polished and handsomely written in the ephemeral pages of a newspaper, where they would not undergo much scrutiny—the writer's object being rather to know *what* was said of passing events, than *how* it was said; but it is very evident, even from the short extract which we have already copied, that there is a great deficiency of neatness and elegance in Mr. Grant's style. Grammatical errors are not infrequent, and every page is loaded with offences against good taste. This has been the character of all his writings, and there can be little wonder that, in the case, when we consider the rapidity with which one theme has followed another from under his prolific pen. In his first work, "Random Recollections of the House of Commons," Mr. Grant subscribes himself "one of no party," in no instance has he been able to preserve the incognito. Whig principles peep out from a thousand rents in their covering—in fact, we begin to doubt whether he really wishes to appear neutral. Yet, notwithstanding these frequent and unguarded expressions of opinion, he speaks of party men and measures with more impartiality than might be expected from

one whose habits of thought and feeling must have been formed in the very arena of political strife.

Our author is accused, and with justice, of making many inaccurate statements. We, of course, are not able to judge, regard to this point, so well as his own countrymen; but, nevertheless, even we could point out unfounded assertions, not few, and may have occasion, further on, to advert to some of them. The author tells us in his preface, that, "in his anxiety to procure correct information on the various subjects he has treated, he has, in several instances, visited places, and mixed with classes of men, before unknown to him." According to his own showing, then, his opinions and statements must sometimes be advanced on the strength of a very limited personal experience; and it would be well if he had not made assertions resting on still slighter foundations.

In many of his "Scenes," Mr. Grant is particularly happy. Some of the best are contained in the chapter headed "Parliamentary Reporting." There is a life and force in these delineations, which every reader must admire.

"Random Recollections of the House of Commons" was, as we have said, the first work in which this author appeared before the public. He was well received. There was a vivid freshness in many of his sketches which gave interest to the whole volume, though some parts of his subject (such, for example, as the formal rules and regulations of the house) were rather unmanageable in a book intended for general readers. The flattering reception which thus met his first attempt, gave a new impulse to his pen, and in a very short time appeared his "Random Recollections of the House of Lords." This volume was less successful than its predecessor. It was, probably, written in a hurry, under the excitement produced by popular favour. Besides, the subject was less interesting. It was impossible to impart that life and expression to details of the formal and dignified deliberations of the peers, which seems natural to a description of scenes in the hall of the representative "mob." The character, too, of the grave and haughty lord, is not so interesting as that of the boisterous and factious popular leader. In short, Mr. Grant's second attempt, though not an utter failure, did not materially increase his credit with the public.

"The Great Metropolis," take it as a whole, we like better than either of his former works. But, as yet, he has written nothing which can yield him a lasting fame. The composition of these books has, apparently, cost him little labour, and the existence must be ephemeral.

Mr. Grant avoids both the minute details of the guide-book and the superficial sentimentality of the traveller, or foreign

pendent. He does not pretend to give a complete description of the metropolis, and the manners of its inhabitants, but to delineate a few features of general interest, in the vast field spread before him. His selection has been very happy, embracing many subjects which a stranger to London freely hears alluded to, but about which he is at a loss to find information. He introduces us at once into the theatres, the rooms, and the hells—places which we had often heard of, but could never before picture to ourselves with any distinctness.

Above all, have we been interested in the volume describing the present state of periodical literature in the metropolis. The wonder-working power of the London press, and through the medium of newspapers and magazines, we are long known in its effects; but here we enjoy a peep behind the scenes—we examine the vast machinery, with all its intricacies, viewing it in detail, from the application of the motive power to the grand result. Unlike the spectator, who raises the curtain of the puppet show, and traces the secret wires and strings, we have risen from the perusal of these pages with increased wonder and admiration.

The first chapter, headed "General Characteristics," though it is the most tedious in the book. The author seems principally intent on impressing his readers with the "enormous size" of London; the dense crowds of human beings which it contains; and the everlasting din of its great thoroughfares. He has laboured "commonplaces" by which he strives to accomplish his object, are sometimes truly ridiculous. The amount of information which we derive from the first page and a half, is as if a person walk from one end of London to the other—once of eight miles—he will be "quite wearied with the journey performed." Then we are told that in consequence of the rapid increase of population, "a great number of new streets are being constantly built;" and, again, that although the thoroughfares are so crowded, there are some streets, in the retired parts of the town, in which there is little bustle, or interference of business.

The present population of London, and its suburbs, is here stated at about two millions; but supposing the author's statement to be correct—that, according to the census of 1831, the population was 1,646,288, and that in five years it has increased 25 per cent.—a very simple calculation will show that at present the city must contain about 1,810,916 inhabitants, and not far as can be no less than 2,000,000." Such a palpable

error can account for these sapient remarks, only by the supposition that the author's lower extremities were, at the time he penned it, stiffened from his first serious experiment at walking, since he left the strings.



blunder evinces great negligence, to use a very mild term; nor is our respect for the author's arithmetical skill increased by his assumption, that an increase of twenty per cent. every ten years, is the same thing as one of ten per cent. every five: there is, in our humble opinion, a material difference between these two rates. Some of the other calculations which he makes, with a view to excite the reader's wonder at the size of the city, and the constant change in its inhabitants, should, we suspect, be admitted with some grains of allowance, though we have not the means of determining the exact degree of credit which they deserve.

The following paragraph strikes us as evincing that the author was little observant of what passes every day under his eyes in "the Great Metropolis."

"There is no place in which the injunction, 'Mind your own business,' is so scrupulously attended to as in London. There is none of that prying into a neighbour's affairs, which is one of the great evils of all small towns. In fact, there is no such thing as neighbours in London—in the usual meaning of the word. You may live for half a century in one house, without knowing the name of the person who lives next door; it is quite possible, indeed, you may not even know him by sight. So intent is every one on his own business, and so little interested in that of others, that you may, if you please, walk on all fours in the public streets, without any one staying to bestow a look on you. The Irishman in America, who stood in an inverted position in order that he might be able to read a sign-board, turned upside down, would not, in all probability, had the circumstance occurred in London, have attracted the attention of a single passer-by." p. 10.

It was Garrick, we think, who, having made a bet upon cockney curiosity, collected a crowd around him in one of the principal thoroughfares of London, simply by walking into the middle of the street, and, with his eyes raised and fixed intently upon some pretended object, making exclamations of surprise or admiration. We ourselves remember seeing both sides of Fleet street lined with such a dense mass of wayfarers, who had stopped merely to look at the operation of paving the carriage way, that it was almost impossible to pass; and this during every hour of the day for at least a week. We ourselves have seen crowds of Londoners borne along by the stir of some trifling occurrence, when scarcely one in ten could tell, if asked, the object of his curiosity. In fact, the inhabitants of great cities are notoriously of gregarious propensities—the most trivial cause is often sufficient to collect a mob.

We cannot help noticing the encomiums which the author bestows upon the London police. They are certainly well deserved. Never was there a more efficient body organised. You meet a police-man at almost every corner, and a crowd cannot any where collect, which is not kept in awe by the

nice of a formidable number of these guardians of the law. They are so numerous and well disciplined, that each man has the support of a whole company, and therefore acts with promptitude and energy. They use their power with such moderation, and, at the same time, such resoluteness, that it is scarcely ever disordered for a moment. If, on Holborn Hill, the most crowded street in the whole city, two vehicles come in contact, and their collision has obstructed a hundred others, which are all intermingled in an apparently inextricable maze, the presence of a police-man soon restores order; they command and are obeyed, each movement is guided by their voices, and, in a few minutes, every thing goes on peaceably as before the accident.

How can we help contrasting this admirable establishment with the wretchedly inefficient systems of police in our own country? The history of every year affords the most convincing and humiliating evidence that a mob can, at pleasure, take complete possession of New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, or any other city in the Union:—wreak their vengeance on odious public authorities, burn and pillage private property, shed the blood of obnoxious citizens on their own thresholds, or hang them on gibbets erected in the streets, or anticipate the arm of justice, by executing Lynch-law upon untried criminals. This is a melancholy—a frightful—but not an exaggerated picture.

The houses of London, with the exception of the public edifices, are generally built of dark brown-coloured brick. At the south end there are many modern erections of considerable splendour, but, in other parts of the city, little elegance or taste is displayed in the exterior of private buildings. The streets are well paved with stone—the ample side walks with large flag-stones—the carriage way, excepting in a number of streets, is bare and Macadamised, with blocks of about nine inches cube, laid closely to each other, and forming a bed of solid marble.

It is curious to trace the gradual progress of fashion towards the west and north of the city. There seem to have always been certain precincts, beyond which the sensitive-plant of "respectability" could not flourish. Not a century has elapsed since Lincoln-Inn Fields, Covent Garden, Soho, and the neighbouring streets, which are but a short distance west of the city proper—London within the walls—were the fashionable district; but the aristocratic tide has since set westward, and left its old channels perfectly dry. All have been carried off with the current or have lost caste. Now it is not "respectable" to reside east of Charing Cross or Leicester Square, and from thence westward to Hyde Park, and north-

ward to Regent's Park, is the fashionable district. Some of the finest private edifices in the city are on Regent's street, near the park last mentioned. There is also a fashionable shopping district. Formerly Tavistock street, Covent Garden, enjoyed this distinction; then, Bond street became the favourite resort, but has of late been "supplanted in the good graces of the fashionables" by Regent's street. In every city, but more especially in those which possess a thriving and increasing commerce, these revolutions are continually taking place. Those parts which are occupied for purposes of trade, are neither a pleasant nor convenient residence for the votaries of high life. The dance of pleasure gives way to the bustle of business, and must grace a new quarter, until it is again interrupted and obliged to retreat by its untiring adversary.

In the second chapter, the theatres of the metropolis come into notice. Much statistical information is given in regard to their operations and present condition, with remarks on actors, dramatic writers, and other kindred subjects.

There are in London twenty-two theatres. First in rank stands the Italian Opera, or King's theatre, which is principally supported by the aristocracy of the west end. Next on the list are Drury Lane and Covent Garden, rivals in size, in reputation, and by locality; for they are by far the largest, and, after the Opera, the most fashionable houses, and are within a stone's throw of each other. All the rest are called minor theatres, though several of them are well deserving of notice, not only on the score of their present importance, but also of historical recollections and associations. With the Haymarket were connected as managers, at different times, Cibber, Fielding, the novelist, Foot, and Mr. George Colman. Among the distinguished actors and actresses who have made their *début* at this theatre, the author enumerates "Foot, Palmer, Jack Bannister, Matthews, Ellison, Liston, Young, Terry, &c. and Miss Fenton, (who afterwards became the Duchess of Bolton,) Mrs. Abingdon, Miss Farren, (the present Countess of Derby,) Mrs. Gibbs, Miss Wilkinson," &c. The English Opera House is a small but elegant building, in which repeated endeavours have been made to sustain the character of national operas against the rage for the Italian, which has so long predominated. This attempt, however, though the prospect was flattering at first, has entirely failed. Next we may mention Braham's theatre, which, "from its locality, is chiefly frequented by the fashionable world." The Olympic theatre was built by Mr. Astley, and originally intended for equestrian performances. From his hands it fell into those of Mr. Ellison, and is now held by Madam Vestris, who is herself the grand attraction, and draws crowded houses. Liston plays on this stage. It is at the Adelphi

at Mr. Matthews, who was one of its managers, performed own inimitable characters. The Garrick theatre "is famed for being the house in which Garrick made his *début* on his arrival in London."

The Italian Opera is more handsomely fitted up, as to the interior, than any of the other houses, but can accommodate only two thousand persons with comfort, while in Drury Lane there are seats for upwards of three thousand spectators, and Covent Garden have sometimes been crammed into it; and Covent Garden, though only intended to contain about two thousand eight hundred, has on several occasions held about five thousand.

"The persons who visit the King's theatre," says the author, "must go in full dress. Any disregard of this regulation will be inevitably attended by the exclusion of the party, no matter what his rank. Some years ago, it was necessary for gentlemen to have three-cornered hats; but that regulation has been departed from, and gentlemen wearing hats of the usual shape are now admitted. It was customary, a short time since, for ladies and gentlemen to go, on levee and drawing-room days, to the opera in full dress. The display of fashion, when the house is full, is still imposing; on those occasions, it was magnificent in the extreme. It was absolutely dazzling to behold."

In Drury Lane and Covent Garden theatres, the first tiers of boxes are open only to persons in full dress, and are hence called the dress-circles. The other parts of the houses are free to all who can pay the price of admission.

There seems to be some inconsistency between the author's representations of the great passion for theatrical performances, among all classes, in the metropolis, and of the great losses which nearly all the managers have sustained. He tells us the number of persons visiting the various theatres, every evening, averages at least twenty thousand, and yet we are afterwards informed that the last seasons have been very unproductive. Perhaps those who are better acquainted with the subject will be able to reconcile these apparently contradictory state-

prices paid by some of the nobility for the indulgence of theatre-going propensities are enormous. "The late Duke of Devonshire, who was passionately fond of the Italian Opera, used to pay three hundred guineas for his box every season. This sum is understood to be still paid by the Duke of Devonshire, and several other noblemen." Mr. Grant gives us singular illustrations of the manner in which many of the personages contrive to lessen these heavy expenses, by foregoing the gratification of their pride and passion for theatrical exhibitions. We will make one or two extracts.

Supposing, for example, that Lord John Russell were relieved of office, and were disposed to enjoy the pleasures of the

opera, and that he had taken a box for himself and his lady for the season, but that, in the middle of that season, circumstances made it necessary or desirable that he should spend some months in the country; he would, in that case, provided he could not get his box more privately disposed of, (and he at the same time knew too well the value of money to pay for a box he could not occupy,) go to Mr. Sams, or some other opera bookseller, and tell him to let it at whatever terms he could procure." p. 32.

—"In no case, perhaps, does this (struggle between pride and purse) more strikingly show itself than in that of the Italian Opera. The Honourable Miss Singleton, though verging on three score and ten, must have the opportunity of displaying her charms, faded and antiquated though they be, in the Opera House, on every occasion she thinks fit. To be deprived of this opportunity would be a lowering of her dignity, in her own estimation, far below zero. Her poverty, however, is at war with her pride; she cannot afford the price of a season-ticket. What, then, is to be done? How are her notions of dignity to be maintained without betraying the scantiness of her pecuniary resources? She falls on this plan. She engages a whole box for the season, with the view of disposing of it to others, as people sometimes let houses to sub-tenants, on such terms as will enable herself to sit rent-free, and, if possible, pocket something by the transaction. She can boast among her acquaintances of some spirited young nobleman with plenty of money at his disposal. She says to him, 'My Lord So-and-so, you intend, of course, to go to the opera this season?'

"'Most certainly, Miss Singleton; I mean to do myself that pleasure.'

"'You have not yet, I presume, provided yourself with a bone<sup>1</sup> for that purpose?'

"'Not yet, madam.'

"'Then, perhaps, as I have got a spare one to dispose of, you will oblige me by taking it from me?'

"'Miss Singleton,' says the young gentleman, giving a most gracious smile, and making one of his politest bows—'Miss Singleton, I am perfectly delighted at the thought. Nothing, I assure you, could afford me greater pleasure.' And so saying, the youthful aristocrat immediately gives her a check for the amount. She disposes of another sitting, or two sittings, according to circumstances, in a similar way. But how is she to make up, or nearly make up, for the sittings she retains for herself? She does it in this way:—When there is a drawing-room, or any great attraction announced, and it is expected there will be an unusual demand for boxes, she hastens in the morning to Mr. Sams, or any other bookseller in the habit of selling opera tickets, and says she wishes to dispose of her—the Honourable Miss Singleton's—box for that evening. After a great deal of huckstering about the terms, she asking one sum, and the bookseller refusing to give more than another, which he mentions, she at last accepts his offer. He lets the entire box for that night to some party; they make a point of taking possession of it the moment the doors are opened. A short time after the performances have commenced, the young scion of nobility knocks at the door of the box. It is opened. He puts his glass to his right eye, and asks if the Honourable Miss Singleton is there. He is told by the party she is not. He makes a gracious bow, takes the glass from his eye, and hurries down to the pit, taking it for granted that the Honourable Miss Singleton had so far presumed on his good-

<sup>1</sup> The tickets of admission to the opera are all made of bone, being a little larger than a penny.

ure, as to send some of her own particular friends to her box that  
ht; which, by the way, he considers a very great compliment to him-  
[ Or possibly his associates are congregated in the pit, and he never  
ts into the box at all. Such is the way in which old maids with  
ited means, in the fashionable world, keep up their dignity."  
44—46.

The popular taste in London, according to our author, seems  
be for Italian operas, melo-dramas, and mere showy pageants.  
eces which, with their accompaniments of sound and scenery,  
ase only the eye and ear, without occupying the mind, are gene-  
lly most successful. "Horses, dogs, and other quadrupeds, are  
w, at certain seasons, among the most popular 'performers.'  
orses prance and gallop, and carriages drive about, on the  
ards of Drury Lane, as if in the streets. The author laments  
at the "legitimate drama" is thus supplanted, as he seems to  
ink it has been, in the public favour; but does not the recent  
ccess of our countryman, Forrest, in Shakspeare's tragedies,  
ow that the popular taste is not irremediably vitiated?  
rury Lane, Covent Garden, and a few, we know not how  
any, of the minor theatres, are alone licensed for the perform-  
ce of Shakspeare's plays; all the rest must confine themselves  
humbler exhibitions. Some years since, the proprietor of the  
ictoria theatre was heavily amerced for a violation of this  
le, at the suit of the lessee of Drury Lane.

We were amused by reading some remarks made by the  
uthor, on the authority of "Grant Thorburn, the *great* ori-  
inal of Galt's 'Lawrie Todd,' in regard to this country. "In  
merica," he says, "where respect for the female sex is carried  
'a much greater extent than in Great Britain, or perhaps in  
y other country, the female dancer—even were she Taglioni  
rself—who would assume the positions and perform the evo-  
utions which are applauded to the echo on the boards of the  
ing's theatre, *would have ample cause for gratitude if she  
aped being torn in pieces!*" Our amusement at the simple-  
minded credulity of the author was indeed mingled with pain  
the thought of his commendation being so totally undeserved.  
he days of which Lawrie Todd wrote are long since past. A  
use coming to this country from Europe, with an esta-  
ished reputation, might, we fear, be guilty of indelicacy which  
e boards of the King's theatre never witnessed, without draw-  
g down any signal mark of popular displeasure.

The most noted actors of the London stage are, at present,  
r. Macready in tragedy, and Mr. Farren in comedy; they are  
aid thirty pounds per week as their usual salary. "Catalani,  
hen in the zenith of her fame, received upwards of 5000*l.* in  
ne season for her services at the Italian Opera, independently  
f what she obtained by her benefits, concerts, &c. In the

short space of seven or eight months, at the period referred to, she is understood to have cleared, in one way or other, 14,000*l*." Madam Malibran was engaged, in May and June last, at the rate of 125*l*. per night, with a right to a benefit worth 500*l*. or more. What a contrast between these rates and eight shillings sixpence per week—the salaries of Ben Jonson and William Shakspeare!

Our author places Mr. Sheridan Knowles at the head of the tragic writers of the present day, and indeed expresses a doubt whether any one, since the time of Shakspeare, has equalled him. This is not a proper place to enter into an examination of such an opinion, but perhaps many of our readers will dissent from it. Mr. Serjeant Talfourd, Miss Mitford, and Miss Baillie, have distinguished themselves in the same class of literature; while, in comedies and farces, the names of Poole, Theodore Hook, Planche, and Reynolds, with some others, are well known.

Neither in England nor in this country do the copyright laws prevent a dramatic author's pieces being acted without remuneration. In France, the author receives a certain amount every time that his production is represented. Victor Hugo, M. Scribe, and some other French writers, are said to have received large sums under the operation of this law.

All theatrical compositions are, in England, subjected to a rigid censorship, before they can be performed on any stage. Would it not be well if the fashionable *danseuses* were compelled, before being permitted to appear in public, to go through their steps and evolutions in presence of a board of matrons, who might give a few imperative hints on the subject of female delicacy?

From the theatres we pass to the clubs of the metropolis. The clubs are of two kinds: subscription clubs—such as Brookes's, White's, and Boodle's, where keepers of public houses agree, in consideration of a certain sum from each, to entertain any number of members, leaving it to them to form such an organization as to other matters as they think proper: and, again, a more numerous class, formed by persons uniting together, and, by means of a committee of their own number, providing rooms and all other necessities. In general the entrance money to these clubs is about twenty, and the yearly subscription from five to ten pounds. New members are elected by means of black and white balls, and the prevailing regulation is, that there must be ten white balls for one black, in order to an applicant's admission. Some of the clubs number beyond one thousand members.

Gambling was carried on to a large extent in many of these associations at their first establishment, but now these minor

ells" have given place to the grand aristocratic pandæmonium—Crockford's—which, in its original, was a club like the others. To this last we will introduce the reader, further on, aided by the work before us.

We are reminded of the Spectator's notions in regard to clubs. His remarks—"Man is said to be a social animal, and as an instance of it we may observe that we take all occasions and pretences of forming ourselves into those little nocturnal assemblies, which are commonly known by the name of clubs. When a set of men find themselves agree in any particular, though ever so trivial, they establish themselves into a kind of fraternity, and meet once or twice a week, upon the account of such fantastic resemblance."<sup>1</sup> Many, perhaps the most, of these associations in the metropolis are political establishments, formed for the purpose of concentrating party efforts: such, among others, are Brookes's, White's, and the Reform clubs, composed of whigs; and Boodle's, and Carlton clubs, of tories. But in some cases, the mutual resemblance which draws together these allies of men is extremely "fantastic." There is the Oxford and Cambridge University Club, composed of equal numbers of graduates at these two universities; the Oriental Club, consisting of nabobs who have resided some time in the East; the Travellers' Club, into which no one is admitted who has not won "a certain distance beyond the Pyrenees," or, we suppose, performed an equivalent journey in some other direction. As the author remarks, "some men glory in one thing, some in another: Lord John Russell glories in being the leader of the high house of commons; Mr. O'Connell glories in agitation; Mr. Hume, in figures; Colonel Sibthorpe, in his mustaches; Mount D'Orsay, in his whiskers; and Lord Ellenborough, in his curls; but the members of the Travellers' Club glory in having travelled, and in nothing else." One of the most important of all these fraternities is the Athenæum Club, composed together of literary and scientific men, or persons distinguished as patrons of the arts and sciences.

All these clubs have suitable apartments for the social meetings of the members, with reading-rooms, and in some cases libraries, attached. But the most important part of these establishments is their well-furnished larders and capacious cellars. Many of the members are in the constant habit of dining and supping in the club-rooms, which can be done at less expense than elsewhere. The wines belonging to the Union Club are estimated to be of the value of 7,150*l.*, and those of the United Service Club of 7,722*l.* We may truly say with the Spectator, "Our modern celebrated clubs are founded upon eating and

<sup>1</sup> Spectator, No. 9.



drinking, which are points wherein most men agree—in which the learned and illiterate, the dull and the airy, the philosopher and the buffoon, can all of them bear a part.”

What is the influence of these institutions—is it good or bad? Our author decides that they are highly beneficial. Bulwer, in his “*England and the English*,” comes to the same conclusion. From these opinions we must dissent. The last mentioned writer laments the unsociable disposition of the English, and thinks that the clubs have a tendency to correct this defect. We believe that a merely social institution, which excludes female society, is an evident effect of the very national characteristic which Mr. Bulwer deploras. Considering the political clubs great party engines, as Mr. Grant represents them—for he says that the Carlton Club raised half a million of pounds among its members, in aid of the tory interests, at the last parliamentary election—they exert a most pernicious influence upon the freedom and purity of electors. We remember that when Mr. O’Connell, not long since, refused to fight a duel, it was proposed that he should be expelled from Brookes’s. If the clubs thus constitute so many courts to enforce the laws of honour, they are, beyond dispute, a curse to the community. Farther, if they offer facilities for gambling, as many of them do, they are in direct opposition to the laws of the land, and the good morals of society. We would speak less decidedly of clubs composed of literary and scientific persons—they certainly are, of all, least obnoxious to our censure. However, considering the whole number of these establishments—political, literary, and gambling—we fervently pray that America may never know their ban. It is certainly remarkable, that few such institutions have been established in this country; our English descent, we should suppose, would have given us an hereditary taste for them.

In this chapter the author gives vent to his political feelings, with entirely too much acrimony. There is a great difference in the tone in which he speaks of the whig clubs, and that in which he notices those of the tories. He openly accuses the latter of having lived at the expense of the state when their party was in power. His treatment of the poet Campbell, whether he tells the exact truth or no, is gross in the extreme. In short, throughout the whole book he indulges, to an unpardonable extent, in personalities, both by allusions which must be perfectly understood in England, and, more openly, employing names without hesitation. We know that such personalities add to the piquancy of a book, and increase its sale—in other words, that they suit the public taste; but this does not make the author less a pander to a debased passion,—

ted appetite. He thus describes certain "eccentric character" in the United Service Club:—

One gentleman, who takes a lively interest in the affairs of the club, as all its members do, goes among the other members by the ugly cognomen of 'The Dog of War.' He is celebrated for his love of a good fish dinner, and, in order that his taste in that way may be gratified, he is in the habit every day of making the descent of the kitchen, for the purpose of choosing the largest and best portion of the fish. His olfactory nerves are always on duty on such occasions, put in requisition to ascertain the comparative quality of the various 'lots,' as he calls them, of fish exhibited to his delighted gaze. And when once he has nosed out the best 'lot,' which he does with infallible certainty, he takes care to give positive orders for a portion of it to be reserved for him. So undeniably worthy of confidence are the testing capabilities of his olfactory nerves, that several other members, also fond of good fish dinners, but not altogether liking to resort to the same means to gratify their taste, make a point of finding out what kind of fish 'The Dog of War' has singled out for his meal, and forthwith, without asking any questions of the waiters, order the same quantity of the same.

Another member, a well-known colonel, is a great admirer and a very able practitioner of economy. He is anxious also to see others practise his economical notions; and knowing, as every true philosopher knows, that example is, in all such matters, better than precept, he always orders two mutton chops, with the annexed proviso, that they be 'cut small, and well done.' He likewise takes care to have them 'up before six o'clock,' by which means he saves a sixpence, technically called, in the case, the expenses of the table."

Of course the persons thus alluded to must be well known in London; but Mr. Grant does not always think it necessary to supply a description to identify his characters, as appears in numberless instances:—

When the Earl of Winchelsea has worked himself into 'a heat,' by the force of his violent speeches in the house of lords, he has only to go to the Carlton Club, and cool himself in one of these baths. Colonel Peel, again, can at any time purify himself—his body at least—from the contamination caught in a 'reformed' house of commons, by a session in one of the baths of the Junior United Service Club. Or when Mr. Thomas Attwood, the member from 'Brummagem,' as he himself always pronounces the word, feels feverish while he witnesses the stupidity and criminality of the legislature in not returning to a small currency—he has only to adopt the advice of the Honourable Mrs. Norton to her husband, and stepping into the Reform Club, 'take a bath and be better.'" p. 155.

One very great advantage of the clubs is, that the members can dine much more cheaply there than any where else. Every thing is furnished at a low cost price, and they can order as little of any thing as they like. The Duke of Wellington sometimes dines on his joint at the Reform Club, at an expense of one shilling, and Mr. Hume does the same at the Reform Club. Though his grace and the honourable member for Middlesex are very different persons, as regards their political opinions, there is a remarkable harmony between them on all matters relating to economy. The advantage of these one-shilling dinners at the clubs, over dining at an eating or chop-house, is that you save the penny

*to the waiter, which both the duke and Mr. Hume consider a matter of great importance."* p. 158.

With our author we ask, "Who has not heard of Crockford's? Crockford's—the great gambling establishment—the most splendid "hell" in the world. This house, with its furniture and decorations, cost little less than £100,000, and is represented as exhibiting, in its interior, a greater degree of splendour than any of the mansions of the nobility. It is the resort of aristocratic gamblers, and is patronised by great numbers of noble lords and honourable M. Ps. In fact there is a large club connected with it, which, ostensibly, has the whole management of the establishment, though, in reality, Crockford himself is the deity of the place. The club-rooms are entirely separate from the gambling apartments. He gives "superb suppers," gratis, to all who frequent the house, in which he finds his account, from the effect which his delicious wines produce upon the passions of his dupes, for when "the wine's in, the wit's out." But there are other uses of the suppers in the saloon. There are a certain number of persons called "Greeks," or "Spiders," attached to the establishment, ostensibly members of the club, but without a penny in the world—who are found to be eminently serviceable to the "concern." Is it asked, "In what way?" Why, in catching flats, or, to use their own phraseology, "in bringing in pigeons to be plucked." These persons must, of course, be well treated; and as a supper at home is a rare thing with them, one at Crockford's is so much the greater object." Count D'Orsay, the well-known gallant of the Countess of Blessington, is represented in this unenviable character of a "stool-pigeon," or "Greek" in technical language. The celebrated Monsieur Oude, Crockford's cook, receives a yearly salary of a thousand guineas, though he seldom superintends the culinary process, leaving this business to an under-cook, whose pay is *only* five hundred guineas. Crockford's wines, contained in 300,000 bottles, and a large number of hogsheads, are valued at about £70,000. There are thirty-three servants constantly employed in the establishment.

The history of the proprietor of this "hell" is curious. Crockford was once a small fishmonger, in the neighbourhood of Temple Bar. He had a particular talent for the calculation of chances, and commenced gambling in an humble way. Success crowned his adventures, and with his spoils he increased his stock in trade at the fish-market. At length he was able to purchase, for £100, the fourth share of a gambling bank. From this time he gradually grew rich in this unholy avocation, until, in 1825, he was able to build the immense and splendid house where he now sets all laws at defiance. He is

impotent, lame in one leg, and exceedingly illiterate and stupid. The following is given as a specimen of his manners of conversation :—

— One night in June last, Lord Ashgrove lost 4000*l.*, which, he lent to the Earl of Linkwood, was the last farthing of ready cash in command. The noble lord, however, had undeniable prospective gains. ‘Excuse me, my lud,’ said Crockford, making a very clumsy attempt still it was the best at his disposal—‘excuse me, my lud, did you say as how you had no more ready money? My lud, this is the bank (pointing at the bank); if your ludship wishes it, 1000*l.* is at your ludship’s service.’

‘Well, Mr. Crockford, you are very obliging; but I don’t think I wish any more to-night.’

‘Ashgrove,’ said Count Whiskero—‘Ashgrove, do accept Mr. Crockford’s offer of the 2000*l.*; perhaps you may win back all you have

lost, I assure your ludship, will give me greater pleasure than to have the money,’ said Crockford.

‘Well, let me have 2000*l.*’

Crockford dipped his fingers into the bank, took out the 2000*l.*, and gave it to his lordship.

‘Perhaps your ludship would oblige me with an I O U, and pay the same at your conveniences.’

‘You will be able to pay it you in a couple of months,’ said his lordship, handing the ex-fishmonger the I O U.

‘Your ludship’s very kind—werry.’

Lord Ashgrove resumed the game; in an hour and a half he was ruined anyless.”

There are near twenty other hells in the metropolis, of all kinds beneath that of Crockford’s. The author reckons that over eight millions of pounds are every year lost in these gambles. At least one million, it is said, has been turned to nothing, of course, not all lost—at Crockford’s in a single day.

The amount of crime and misery which these institutions produce is incalculable; and the passions which urge on men to their ruin—stifling every good feeling of his soul, brutalizing him in body and mind—are the most ungoverned and all-absorbing which ever riot upon weak human nature. The author has written several thrilling pages on this subject, the object, we believe, of opening the eyes of his fellow countrymen. Would that his power were commensurate with his purpose. But parliament will never take a step to eradicate an evil only countenanced by so many members of both houses; individuals cannot denounce, to judicial condemnation, the scenes of infamy and crime, so long as there is money to be made by bullies and assassins to terrify or murder informers.

The remaining chapters of this volume contain an examination of the social condition of the metropolis:—first, of the lower; secondly, of the middle; and, lastly, of the lower

The chapter on the aristocracy is a formal bill of

indictment, accusing them of the most heinous offences against good manners and good morals. Their character stands out from Mr. Grant's canvass in the darkest colours, with scarcely a trace of light to relieve the picture. He has certainly written with too little discrimination; he has permitted feeling and prejudice to get the better of his reason. At the same time, we are fully prepared to admit the truth of many of his representations, making some allowance for party antipathies. There can be no doubt that luxury ministers to every sort of licentiousness, and that it blunts some of the finest feelings of the soul. The higher and lower classes—the two extremes—are, in every community, the most profligate; and the reason is evident. The rich are tempted by the multitude of seducing pleasures which glitter, all around, within their reach; they go astray, because the ways of vice are spread with flowers. "The destruction of the poor is their poverty." While sin is not presented before them in such alluring colours, their inducement to the practice of virtue is less strong than with their superiors. The necessities of life, too, are so sparingly allotted to them, that crime is the natural resort for improving their condition: crime and profligacy are always inseparable companions.

We have called the first chapter, devoted to the subject of "Metropolitan Society," a formal bill of indictment against the higher classes: let us examine its several counts. *Imprimis*, comes a charge of a great disregard of truth among the aristocracy. The principal evidence to support this charge is the practice of being "not at home" to visitors. We agree perfectly with Mr. Grant in condemning the habit, but do not think it will support his broad accusations. As nearly allied to their alleged disregard of truth, and indeed as springing from it, he animadverts upon the insincerity which characterizes social intercourse in the higher circles. The substance of his complaint is, that conventional forms of politeness are used between persons who hate each other—that "the greatest bore" is greeted with "My dear"—and that men, before and after fighting a duel, shake hands. Wealth and rank always entail upon their possessors a multitude of heartless forms and ceremonies; but we are by no means sure that society would be benefited if all conventional civilities were abolished, and no one used any expression of common politeness, in which the feelings of his heart would not bear him out.

A large part of this chapter is taken up with observations on the profligacy of the higher classes, as exhibited in conjugal infidelity, and the decided preference given, in society, to the character of the *roué*. We do not admire the author's taste, exhibited in dwelling so long on this subject, neither can we

an implicit belief to all his statements. He quotes the Countess of Blessington as an authority on this point. In her conversations with Lord Byron she says, that "the crime of conjugal infidelity on the part of aristocratical ladies does, in the estimation of the members of their sex, consist in the *re fact* itself, but in allowing it to be *detected*." We are not disposed to take Lady Blessington's dictum as decisive; this is an delicate subject for her ladyship to give testimony upon.

But then the dishonesty of the aristocracy—noble lords do not pay their tradesmen's bills regularly. Again, they disregard the precepts of religion; they profane the Sabbath. In these remarks we think the author is too sweeping. Every species of irreligion and profligacy may exist to a frightful extent among the higher classes, and yet we believe that there are many—very many—to whom these charges are by no means applicable.

We have already spoken of some of the natural and inevitable consequences of wealth and rank; another, is the notions they produce in regard to the marriage contract—that it ought to be a mere bargain and sale. The author portrays, in strong colours, the mischiefs which arise from the chaperoning system, prevalent. No doubt he is correct here in the main. But is it not using rather strong language to say that where a noble husband really loves his wife, he draws down ridicule upon himself for so doing?

Again, the aristocracy are represented as entirely devoid of benevolent feelings, of sympathy with the woes of their fellow-men. It is said that all benevolent schemes originate among the middle classes, and are supported by them. This subject was the author an opportunity of venting his wrath upon the case of lords, by whom he confidently asserts that no measure, serving the good of the people for its object, has ever been set on foot, or heartily supported. Literary men are patronized by nobility, and invited to their houses, as he contends, merely on account of their talent of entertaining by brilliant conversation, just as Malibran was patronized because of her splendid vocal powers. The author complains further of the treatment which all below them, and servants especially, meet at the hands of aristocratic superiors and masters. All this, and much more it he says, which it would be needless to repeat, we receive with many grains of allowance.

Again, the amusements of the higher classes are frivolous. These are the amusements of every class. Of course, where a man's station in life makes it unnecessary for him to work, his whole time must be spent in the search for pleasure; and at which, as a casual amusement, appears well enough, becomes frivolous when it becomes a business. Lord Brougham's

opinion, in regard to the conversational powers of modern aristocrats, is quoted by our author in the following words :—

“Whoever, after passing an evening in this (aristocratic) society, shall attempt to recollect the substance of the conversation, will find himself engaged in a hopeless task. It would be easier to record the changes of colour in a pigeon's neck, or the series of sounds made by an *Æolian* harp, or the forms and hues of an *aurora-borealis*. All is pleasing—all is pretty—all serviceable in passing the time; but all unsubstantial. If man had nothing to do here below, but to spend, without pain or uneasiness, the hours not devoted to sleep, certainly there would be no reason to complain of these coteries. But if he is accountable for his time, then surely he has no right to pass it thus. Compared with this, chess becomes a science; draughts and backgammon are highly respectable;—compared with this, dancing is exercise, and every game of romps a rational mode of passing the hours;—compared with this, it is worthy of a rational being to read the most frivolous romance that was ever penned, or gaze upon the poorest mimic that ever strutted on the stage.” pp. 256—7.

While we admit the force of the foregoing, we contend that frivolous conversation is peculiar to no class of society. Wherever men and women are collected together, merely to pass away the time agreeably, no matter what their rank or fortune, they will indulge in much light talk. To be sure, the nobility, on account of their greater advantages, are supposed to receive a more polished education than commoners; more, therefore, is expected from them. We think the author's specimens of vulgar talking among aristocratic ladies must be caricatures.

We shall mention only one other item in the category—the charge that the society of foreigners is so much courted, especially by the female part of the nobility. It is a charge, applicable, in all its extent, to American fashionable society, and with the view of thus applying it, we notice it here. Foreigners landing in this country, and pretending to respectability, are instantly, without any vouchers of their claim being required, admitted into the first circles. A Frenchman, a Spaniard, but above all, an Italian, especially if he has had the sense to annex a title to his sonorous name, wherewith to astonish us plain republicans, is received almost as an angel visitant from another sphere. There may be some excuse in the fact that all who can speak a foreign language are usually glad of an opportunity to exercise their powers therein. But this is not a sufficient reason for the national characteristic. Besides, we ape foreign manners and customs to a ridiculous extent. Even those who do not understand a word of the language, nor a note, are clamorous in declaring their preference of Italian music. On this head we need not enlarge. All who frequent fashionable society must be aware of the justice of the above remarks, and can extend them, each for himself.

The middle classes of every country are its bone and sinew. They are more moral, and more enterprising, than either of the other classes. From them spring, in most instances, those who distinguish themselves in the literary world. The arts and sciences flourish best where fortune smiles, without being lavish of her gifts. Such the author represents the middle classes of London. They contain the best citizens, the sincerest friends, the most sympathizing philanthropists. Still they are not perfect. Mr. Grant finds some ground of reproof; principally in insincerity, and their imitating the style and courting the acquaintance of their superiors in rank.

Last of all, and worst of all, come the lower classes. Of these, the author draws a melancholy picture, exhibiting them in their multitude, their vices, and their destitution. He describes them as still more licentious than the rich, entirely regardless of conjugal fidelity, and addicted to beastly drunkenness. All our readers have heard of the gin palaces of London, those gilded sepulchres of foul corruption. The statistics here given of the numbers frequenting these establishments, and the amount annually expended by the lower classes in gin alone, are truly frightful. He says,

—"Little creatures, before they can well talk or walk, can quaff a glass of 'blue ruin' without making a wry face. When they get a little older, and chance to earn a trifle in any way, it is no uncommon thing to see a father and son clubbing their few half-pence together to get a quartern of gin."

Of such a scene the author gives a graphic sketch:—

"Charlie, my boy," said an old haggard-looking man, the other day, to his son, as he stood opposite to one of the bacchanalian temples in my Lane,— "Charlie, my boy, have you *arned* any blunt to-day?"

"Yes, father, three-pence," said the little urchin, who was apparently not eight years of age.

"Bless your little heart; come, let's have a join; give me the browns, and we'll have a quartern of the right sort."

"The very best, then, father," said Charlie, transferring the three-pence 'to his dad.'

"Holloa, Jim!" said the father, to a tottering-looking character on the opposite side of the street, with his clothes hanging in rags about him, and rejoicing in a brimless and crownless hat,— "holloa, Jim! won't you come and have a little drop with us?"

"Oh, father!" exclaimed the little rascal, as if he had been a tippler fifty years' standing,— "oh, father, don't ask *him*. That's a quartern of three of us." pp. 301—2.

The remarks that Mr. Grant makes in regard to city missions, which he thinks ought to engage the attention of the friends of religion and morality before missions to foreign lands, do not agree with our creed. The history of the church and the world will show that every effort made, in a right spirit,



to carry the blessings of civilization and Christianity to the heathen has had a vast reflex influence upon domestic benevolence. That expansive philanthropy which is nurtured by the contemplation and relief of a suffering world is, in every sphere, the most active.

The higher classes were described as heartless among themselves, and wanting sympathy for the woes of their inferiors. The *bas peuple* are represented as equally wanting in sensibility. The author remarks, "Eight or ten families may live in the same house, though in different apartments, and yet no two of these families entertain the slightest friendship towards each other. Hence, though one family be contending with all the horrors of want, none of the others, though in passably good circumstances, will afford that family the slightest relief." This characteristic, common to the two classes, arises in each from a different cause; the rich are wanting in sympathy for distress, because they never knew, and cannot, therefore, properly estimate, the pangs of suffering humanity: the poor, on the other hand, are too much engrossed by their own woes, to look round them for objects of compassion.

Before closing this volume, we may remark, that Mr. Grant's views of London society, as here given, are by no means profound or comprehensive. His division, too, of the people into classes, is not complete. They may perhaps be sufficiently numerous, but each class is not made to embrace all who naturally fall under it. The space between the nobility and those whom he describes as the middle classes, is too great, and cannot be unoccupied. Then, from the middle classes, he stoops directly to the licentious, drunken, suffering dregs of the community, as the next grade of metropolitan society. He notices the two extremities and the middle of an extended chain, regardless of the connecting links.

# AMERICAN QUARTERLY REVIEW.

No. XLII.

---

JUNE, 1837.

---

ART. I.—POEMS BY MRS. FELICIA HEMANS. *A new collection.* Boston: 1828. *Songs of the Affections, with other Poems.* 12mo. Edinburgh: 1830. *Scenes and Hymns of Life, with other Religious Poems.* 12mo. Edinburgh; 1834. *The Poetical Works of Mrs. Felicia Hemans.* Complete. 8vo. Philadelphia: 1835.

Did we deem it necessary, at this time of day, to offer an apology for admiration of the great and gifted in song, we should offer ourselves at once to the tribute that has been paid to poetic genius from the earliest times to our own. The high rank held by poets, in almost every country, during the infancy of its civilization, or of its letters, has been retained, with those modifications, to be sure, which might be expected in the progress of society, so that we find it essentially unchanged and undisputed even among ourselves. The ancient superstition that invested the bard with a character of divinity, and his song with all the authority and sacredness of the oracles, was the natural result of the frequent exhibition of lofty and enthusiastic spirits, in a powerful struggle with their strong conceptions, before a people comparatively simple and uncultivated. It is not astonishing that the flight of birds, the responses of the Sybil, or even the propitiatory thunders of Jove—the *intonuit lævum*—should be deemed less infallible tokens of a present inspiration, than the kindling strains of the poet, when he appealed, in glowing numbers, to the feelings or the patriotism of his auditory; or when he sang of deeds that touched their memories with an electric interest; or, more than all, when he bore them with him into the shadowy future, and there unveiled to his followers visions of glory and greatness, which by the contrivance of his wizard power, were transformed from the mere pageantry of imagination into splendid realities. It is matter familiar with our classic

associations, that bards, as well as conquerors, were followed, and courted, and crowned. It is not an easy thing to decide, whether Æschylus was less honoured than Miltiades; or whether he might not have borne additional renown from Marathon, while he was gazed at as the father of tragedy.

Indeed the triumphs of kings and consuls sink to the level of common spectacles beside the classical ovations that were awarded to successful poets. There was every thing intellectual in those early tributes to mental power returned from mental victory. There is an ever-during recollection that attaches itself to honours so won and so rendered. Considered as offerings to genius, they reflect glory alike on those who brought and those who received them. A dawn of moral light seems to be coincident with the morning of social life which such homage serves to indicate; and, though the tribute is purely mental, there comes with it a hope that the heart may awaken to truth, where there is such a stirring and pressing towards the shrine of mind. Certain it is that such exertions of powerful men, demanding such honours as they proceeded, were the first causes as well as the first proofs of improvement among the people from whom they stood distinguished: and it is to the poets of Greece and Italy, triumphing in laurel-wreath, or the plaudits of their countrymen, that we are to look, we had almost said, as the solitary men who first kindled that spark, which eventually caused an illumination of their age, and has continued to transmit its light to the world.

The influence of poetry, in the hands of the masters of antiquity, was carried to an extent that may seem almost incredible. They may be said to have formed and trained the virtues of those who heard them. They shaped the national sentiment, and moulded the opinions and wielded the sympathies of their listeners, to a degree that cannot be surpassed. They interwove public events with the drama. They excited an ambition to excel in wisdom and valour; and, by force of genius and skill, they generated among the aspiring and young the sentiments of glory that fell from the lips of their heroes. Euripides was the idol of his time. By promoting a more effectual union than had yet subsisted between moral philosophy and tragic representation, he became an object of praise and admiration with his contemporaries. His verses were on the lips of all who answered to the name of Greek. History relates, with an air of romance, that the appropriate introduction of some of his stanzas released the soldiers of Nicias from the slavery which they incurred in the expedition of that general to Syracuse; and, as if to carry the magic of his name beyond all rivalry, it has been pleasantly said, that, of old, the prisoner always found freedom by drafting his plea in the language of Euripides.

Surpassing, as these instances would seem almost to do, the fabled enchantment of Orpheus, we are not left to them, and like ancient sources, alone, for proof of the high distinction ever held by the poet and his art. The golden age of every country, since the revival of letters, has been signalized by the light that poetry has shed upon it, and by the honours rendered to the inspired men who may be regarded as its stars. Italy, Spain, France, England, as the new morning of mind dawned upon them, successively beheld their mighty geniuses springing upon their paths, with a power which they delighted to reverence, and a brilliancy that could not fail to captivate. The history of literature, in all these lands, proves, to satisfaction, the talent which this class of men possessed of infusing their own into the public sentiment, as well as of fixing the public eye on themselves: it is enough, also, to convince us of the fact, that such men held important place on the scale of society, and that they are calculated to exert an influence on the growing character of their country.

But, while we perceive a singular power to have been sustained by the poets of high accomplishment in all ages, it is evident that, in modern times, the same power is either greatly modified, or holds a more quiet sway over the minds of the people. The principle of the power is the same. It is the power of an ardent, bold, creative nature, over spirits that cannot follow its march, but still bow to the dominion that has attended it. It is the power of a high-reaching, imaginative intellect over a passive one, yielded to the beautiful illusion that is thrown around it. It is the power of genius—penetrating to that subtle portion of the soul, which alone can claim sympathy, how remote soever it may be, with the master spirit that spells it—breathing upon it the breath of a new life, and calling it to the love of high deeds and splendid virtues, of which, before, it had but dull conception, or drowsy remembrance. Such is the power of poetry. Such is the gift of the poet: and to such power and such gifts has the world ever paid its admiration, where there have been poets to sing, or men to listen.

In the progress of things, the unity of this power has passed away. Its distinctiveness has been lost in the crowding interests of life; but its agency, though more secret and diffused, is still felt, with a vigour, indestructible as ever, and almost as wonderful, when we consider the vast sphere in which it is called to operate. In the simplicity of the early, and the comparative moral inaction of the middle ages, it was a necessary consequence of the state of the times, that the poet should hold a more discernible elevation, and that the exercise of his power should be more direct, and consequently more effectual, upon the mass of mankind. As society advanced, he also, as the depositary of

this power, lost his original superiority among men. They turned from *him*, to the sublime and uplifting things which he had eloquently revealed—no longer to dream over, but to study, and pant after, and pursue them; until, by a gradation, the most natural in the world, the poet descended to diffuse among his fellows those beautiful and kindly influences, that, in olden times, he had dispensed as favours from a superior to his followers. Then, it may be said, poetry was leagued with superstitious dread. Now, it goes hand and hand with the charities of life. It was then a thing to wonder and tremble at; heard in terrible distinctness, as a revelation, amid the forests and sacred groves of the gods. Now, it makes a part of the music of the world. It enters into our dwellings, and our hearts: it mingles with our social duties, and ennobles—purifies—endears our spirits and our memories. Then, the poet was honoured, as almost a deity, and his numbers listened to as the breathings of prophecy, or with the chastened delight of hearts bowed continually to threatening and commanding genius. Now, he is honoured, where he should be, as a man; and his works come abroad to animate us to our duties, or to cheer us in solitude; to charm us by their power, or to woo us by their beauty. Then, he was like a monarch on his throne, lording it over the kingdom of unawakened intellect. Now, he is but a gifted brother of the great family, bearing indeed the same brow of inspiration, and the same wand of genius; but he mingles with the busy throng, and, with his harp upon his shoulders, scatters his music to his fellows, as he passes onward in the common pilgrimage.

As the mode in which the poetic influence was accustomed to operate has changed with the changes of time and things, so has the popularity of the poet found new sources in the altered inclinations and feelings of his readers. Hence no modern writer may be said to bear at once and incontestably the palm of superiority, or is, like one of the ancient masters, placed, as it were by acclamation, upon the pinnacle of poetic renown. Though his genius may entitle him to high rank, yet the conflicting struggles of the thousand aspirants round him, and the collisions of as many different tastes and favouritisms, render his right for a season questionable, and his fame less brilliant. This is a natural consequence where there are so many to share in the splendid rivalry.

It is evident that there are *schools* of poetry. We have heard some of them talked of, till their names have come to be familiar words. And these schools have actually engendered a party spirit in poetry—so that we find something like *clanism* meeting us even on the pathway of Parnassus. If Wordsworth, and Leigh Hunt, and Coleridge, may be said to constitute the head of the Lake school, Pope was as certainly the head of the philo-

phical, or metaphysical. We know not, in short, that Byron could be unaptly termed, by the sentimental, or sickly, the leader of the demoniac order. Certain it is, that each of these writers is distinguished by something peculiar to himself, and each one has his partisans. We know not, again, that this can be helped; nor, on the whole, that it is fair subject of complaint.

As a general rule, every man has a right to his taste, and a consequent privilege of praising him who best suits it. Still there is something to be regretted even in this. There is, after all, hardly as much latitude allowable in relation to governing principles, in the republic of letters, as in the body politic. It is desirable to have such things as style and taste more fixed, and amenable to a standard, than it is to have faith in matters of government squared by any particular creed. With regard to the *etical schools*, this evil of partisanship—a partisanship which is carried to laboured articles, and even to the enlistment of journals in favour of their different leaders—is decidedly destructive. It has made, and it still makes, *mannerists* of writers, and, as far as this goes, it is fatal to the fine spirit of poetry.

It has been said, as though by way of excuse for its most unaccountable irregularities, that genius always has its characteristics. It may be so: but they are always essentially the same, there high and holy enthusiasm animates the votary. As to poetry, we believe that the glorious art receives no additional dignity, either from the noisy blazonry of the merits of some who profess it, and whose claim to *genius* consists only in their peculiarities, or from consenting to submit itself to any of the working-day methods of gaining popularity. It strikes us, that far from conforming itself to the demands of a diseased taste, or the unhealthy fancies of society, poetry has but one eminent object before it—and that is to make men better by the divine spirit which it breathes around them. We believe that mere trickery of phrase, gilded imagery, and prettinesses of thought, constitute no vital portion of poetry; and we are unwilling to think that that verse is destined to live, which, at best, is a mere attempt at originality, or a mass of laboured simplicity, according to the worst signification of the word. We wish to see that kind of metrical composition alone recognised as poetry, which is such in the true sense of the term; that is constituted such by the combination of great thought with harmony of numbers; and whose music derives its greatest attractiveness from the sentiment. This we hold to be the true criterion; and by this standard we should point to him as the true Roscius of his art, who, in the best strains, best sings the deathless charms of virtue and honour; who stamps, in golden lines, upon his age those sublime lessons of moral power, that, of old, sometimes lured the great to glory, and the good to heaven; who comes upon the world in

the swift coinage of thoughts that shall die only with time, because they bear about them, and in them, the vitality of truth. High place, it is true, has been attained by intellectual energy, where the moral principle had no visible ascendancy in the individual. But it is false and inconclusive logic, to argue from the height that has been reached by certain powers, the impossibility of gaining one still above, by the help of additional ones. The true reasoning is the reverse. Shakspeare is an exception to the remark that will apply here. Though of a spirit that made no pretension, certainly, to unction, still the wonderful lessons which his poetry embalms come home to our sympathies and our consciences with the effect of so many saintly homilies. His truths search us like sermons pregnant with holiness. But Shakspeare is an anomaly. Who can speak in this strain of Burns or Byron? And yet who does not see what mighty things, above all that either has effected for the world, would have been accomplished by Burns and Byron, had the moral taken precedence of the intellectual principle in their poetry! No one can deny, that, with the same mental energy at work, and under the precedence referred to, there certainly would have been nothing to diminish it: in both cases, the poet would have been so much greater as the man had been better. The triumph had been contemporaneous and parallel. But we pass to another consideration.

Simplicity, when under the direction of good taste, is undoubtedly a virtue of good poetry. But we hold it not to be the cardinal one to which some would elevate it. There are others certainly before it. As an ingredient, it has its value; but when the higher properties of the composition are made subservient to it, there is great danger of failure. Manliness and power should never wait upon simplicity. As it is, indeed, it is a fault, and, we conceive, a childish one, among some of the poetic brotherhood on this side the water. Cowper, on the other, may be said to have set the example of the plain, domestic poetry of modern days. But, since his time, the mania, that in him was delightful, has spread, gathering sad symptoms, till it has passed from the character of simple-hearted, to that of simple-headed; until, indeed, in some instances, it has degenerated from pure simplicity, to something worse than weakness—to folly, and almost to grossness. Now this is the joint effect of a proneness to imitate English standards—of a mistaken notion in the writers themselves, and of public opinion; that is, so far as criticism may be said to express it. It would be idle, we think, to go gravely to work to prove the inclination, with ten out of twelve of our native poets, to conform themselves to some British copy, whenever they give themselves to verse. It is, and has long been, matter of common knowledge and common

complaint. We mean to be understood that the imitation has been of what will one day be, if they are not now, decried as the very worst faults of the originals. Of high and commanding models we cannot have too much imitation, if imitation it may be called, that is but a sympathetic expression of strong mind in strong language. In the great features of power, all great writers will have a resemblance; and so far as this is concerned, it is no imitation. It is coincidence.

Our own poets, in some instances, have mistaken the spirit of simplicity altogether; or, if they have not mistaken it, they have, like some of their prototypes, suffered themselves to commit various poetical felonies, under the name. We too frequently meet extreme quaintness, or a train of thought teeming with improvable devices, or bad conclusions; but the writer tells us this is simplicity. Again, we are struck with the degree of quietness that marks his style—perchance it may be sleepiness; there seems to be a continual aim at suppression of thought, as though it were unrefined to give it play—as some men hold it to be natural and hearty in society; but the author tells us again, this is simplicity. Still again we fall in company with a writer who travels perpetually in a mist; who loses himself and his readers in his own metaphysical labyrinth, and who torments us with a display of what Mr. Pollock calls merely the ‘tops of thoughts;’ and here our only consolation is that everything about us is simplicity.

To these causes need scarcely be added the tone of criticism, to account for the present character of a great portion of our poetry. Writers have been reviewed into a refinement and polish that has ended frequently in an absolute frittering of their thoughts, and a total loss of that better energy of which they are capable. They write, as though they were writing with restraint, for a drawing-room, and not with freedom, for a world. But we shall recur to this consideration directly. Meanwhile, it is observable that this very condition of our poetry is as much a consequence of the increase of readers and intelligence—with the variety of taste incident thereto—as it is of a change of times and people. These may be added as remoter causes, to those already referred to. This change, we would add, is greater than we, who have gone along with it, are apt to perceive. A more material one has not accompanied human improvement than that which literature has undergone from one period to another; and in no one department of literature has it been more effectual or more striking than in poetry—the poetry of our own day. View writing at large, and instead of the mystical and laboured style that ran through the best productions of earlier times, and which, moreover, was so accordant with the comparative seclusion and silence of letters, we now hear both the



philosopher and the elegant scholar delivering themselves with that free and graceful expression which so well comports with the liberal character of the age; and as to poetry, a popular air has been breathed into the best works of the best writers, imparting to them a freshness and meaning that come home with the attractiveness of domestic story to all who are capable of any intellectual delight. Poetry, we may be suffered to repeat it, has become a part of our lives. It has, in a sense, conformed itself to our conditions; and it speaks to us in the direct language of an acquaintance, who is accustomed to converse with us at all seasons and in all places. Divested of the heroics and the pomp with which it once awed and overshadowed the children of men, it now comes to us like a kind, but superior spirit, enlivening, beguiling and instructing us, amidst the offices and sympathies of life. This is the true character of poetry. This, too, is the character of the genuine poetry of the present day. Let us not be misunderstood. We would not qualify any of our preceding remarks. They refer to no such poetry as we refer to here—the poetry of the unchastened and fearless spirit—the poetry that stirs us while it blesses us—the poetry that carries all its persuasiveness, without relinquishing any of its power. It may be said we lay great stress upon this quality of strength. We do so; but not more than it deserves; and we do so because there is a disposition to make it a secondary affair in poetic composition. With those who hold this doctrine, we utterly disagree; and whenever poetry departs from its primitive and natural dignity, to become the medium of ephemeral fancies, or the minister to a sickly taste; when it parts with its better properties merely to flaunt in the colours of sentiment, or effeminacy, or something worse, we hold that it has no longer a title to the name of poetry. Genius disowns it for ever.

If it be true that public opinion may sometimes happily interfere to correct or modify the works of art, it is equally certain, that, under some form or other, its interference may go far to injure or destroy them. There are traits of nature too closely allied to the most accomplished efforts of mind, ever to yield to the requisitions of an artificial state of society. What would we think of the sculptor who should bring us forth a statue robed in the fashion of our drawing-rooms, and call it the true Apollo; the very Belvidere! The truth is, these traits need never be, they never *must* be, surrendered. There exists no necessity for their surrender, as, in politics, there does for the relinquishment of individual natural rights, for the good of the whole body. They are the holy things of nature; thrice holy in poetry; which, if once associated with what is uncongenial or irrelevant, lose their virtue and their beauty; and the

: they were thought to adorn, is miserably and utterly  
oyed.

e think it cannot have escaped even passing observation,  
there is a class of people who profess to be great admirers  
etry, and many of whom assume to be its critical high  
ts and dissectors, who would set aside the hallowed inspir-  
of the poet in favour of elaborateness or mere stratagems of

With them, finish, polish, is every thing; and the greater  
egree of attenuation, the better. Now, did we believe  
public sentiment on this subject was to be met by such  
anation of the high offices of poetry, we should say indeed  
the sublime art was approaching a fearful crisis. But  
allelujahs of partisans do not constitute public sentiment.  
reading public demands no such relinquishment; and the  
ines of those critics who would make poets so unfaithful  
emselves and their divinity, by maintaining this system of  
cal mechanics—by encouraging them in it, and praising  
for it, under the grave sanction of a review, totally mis-  
sent the prevailing feeling of the community in this matter.  
tless the spirit of poetry has been outraged by the very  
as which have been used, by mistaken heads and unskilful  
ls, to give it a direction, and to propound to it rules and pro-  
ies. Still we believe that this same spirit, though circulating  
ag grosser materials, is yet virtually unsullied; that it still  
sits wizard power undisputed, though not untroubled. We  
only to lament that in its nearer companionship with man,  
as to endure the unsatisfying things it meets there. But we  
for a good issue. Better were it, indeed, that poetry, and  
spirit of poetry, should pass from the world, than suffer  
continued shame of such sacrifice as this to which we  
alluded; and we would willingly forego, for ever, the  
ht of realizing it when in its purity, like some sweet friend,  
g abroad with us in our wanderings, and again returning  
ake glad our hearts and hearths, rather than see it casting  
its nobler properties, to conform itself to the childish and  
id tastes of those who cannot appreciate its hidden power  
better attributes; who, calling themselves its judges, are  
ing but its bane. Rather would we, than witness such  
ement, be compelled to seek it in the blind old masters of  
uity—rather be driven back, to see it again, like jewels in  
ket, locked in the shrine of the idolized men who ruled and  
ced the simple but strong hearts of their hearers, in earlier  
etter times.

leaving this part of our subject, we would merely observe,  
ference to the spirit of criticism, that it is one of the strong  
ies which poetry is doomed to encounter. In the same  
n the critical and the poetic faculties are not only distinct,  
L. XXI.—NO. 42.

but they have no particular and observable sympathy. It would seem natural—indeed we hardly see how it could be otherwise—that the calm and continuous exercise of judgment, in the matter of the execution, should be incompatible with that excitement which the fervour of inspiration supposes; that the “thoughts that breathe and words that burn” will not wait upon any minister of language, whose business it is solely to square and gauge, with an ever-accompanying readiness to be astonished at any disregard of the fixtures of style, those received manners of expression, which literal spirits view as unalterable as a truth of mathematics. True poetry is too inartificial, as well as too irrepressible, to suffer itself to lose the peculiarities of its character in those of its guise. In the same individual then, we repeat it, the critical and poetical faculties are evidently distinct. So it is in literary collision, where one, as may be supposed, in these days of writers and reviewers, is arrayed against the other; and we believe that the unsatisfactory and dangerous business of verbal criticism has done more to make a mannerist of the poet, and to blast the natural and healthy purity of his verse, than all other things combined. It has compelled him to second thoughts. It has driven him to artifice. It has made him, what he ought never to be, a mere courtier in his art.

In another view of the subject, the poetic taste of our time has been, and still is, in many respects, essentially bad. It lingers with more complacency upon the morbid and melancholy character of poetry, than upon its kindling and transcendent attributes. It has been taught that the sad, complaining spirit of genius was the legitimate object of admiration, because it sang of afflictions that it could not designate, and of which it would have us believe it held solitary endurance. It has been told by the worshippers of diseased sensibility, that the self-tortured mind was the only home of true poetry; that there can be no better romance than that which haunts the ruins of great, restless, and unhappy, because unsettled spirit; and that imagination cannot busy itself better than in talking musically to the world of fancied wrongs, or, it may be, of personal deformities, while it is admitted, on all hands, that there are round us, unsung, still new and strange beauties, springing continually from a vast and inexhaustible creation.

The influence which the character and poetry of Lord Byron exercised upon his time, will warrant the foregoing remarks. That influence is not yet dispelled. Great as was his beautiful and splendid genius, he was not unwilling to submit it to the employment of trickery altogether unworthy of its rank, but to which it was induced as much perhaps by the measureless flattery of certain readers of a green and lack-a-daisical romance

by any natural impulsion. He thought that there was no other way to become famous than to be sad ; and the frequently natural and healthless hue, that pervaded his writings, appealed to the hearts, and of course to the tastes, of many of weaker-minded or weaker-hearted readers. His genius *lived*, but it breathed round them a tainted atmosphere. If it shone with an uncommon light upon his age, it was too soon to weak and exquisite admirers, the light of a lurid and deadly sun, glaring through a medium of unwholesome dews, or a layer of sad and lowering clouds. This is no unattainable thing. It is no sure proof of great powers to bring about this artificial fog, for the bard to light up with a mellowed and arresting illumination ; and to play lord of the disconsolate in this fashion, is, to our minds, but a poor intellectual capacity. There are times, indeed, when the bursts of a misanthropic spirit may bear out upon them the soul of poetry ; but when the sick overflow of a full but bitter heart gives place to the continuous, deadly, but still *contrived*, factitious, current of morbid feeling, we are apt to question the reality of the suffering, or to be disgusted, where we are not amused, with the tedious, repeated tale of its endurance. It is not the character of true grief to talk loudly or long of its extremities. No one, year after year, of secret woes to the world, if he be really a martyr to them. The poetry which such sorrow employs is poetry of selfishness : the taste it begets is a false one ; and sorrow itself is a false sorrow. That such poetry should be favourably received, is a wonder ; but the continuance of its use must ever be questionable. The world is too busy to condescend itself to the dark things of a single, isolated mind. It wants companionship—it wants delight—it wants instruction. Byron will find his celebrity yet, we believe, in those nobler strains in which *himself* has least to do ; in the sublime sentiments that he has caught from nature and from sympathy, and adorned with the peculiar and classic beauty of his genius. Rousseau may captivate the infected imagination by his pictures of self-inflicted misery and ruinous excitement ; but who would rather remember him in his abstractions from himself, and his revelations of nature among the woods and waters of Geneva !

Poetry, then, has become a matter in which the people, as a mass, claim to be heard. It is something in which they claim interest, as a reading, thinking, and understanding public. This is not new ; nor does the remark point to any thing new. It has ever been so, in a degree ; for every human being is alive to poetry, and is speaking or acting it every day of his life, and there is excitement about him : and this we say, notwithstanding the material, manufacturing, utilitarian character of

the age. We are not, we trust, unaware of the disposition prevalent among all classes to ask concerning every thing else as well as poetry, with all the pertinacity of the mathematician, "what does it *prove*?" What we intend to say is, that, as an agent, it is operating more generally upon mankind. It enters into their sympathies, and makes a part of their necessary enjoyment. It has become the vehicle of information to their minds, and of new influences to their hearts. Holding such a rank among the pleasurable resources of life, it is certainly important that the spirit which shall animate it be of that elevating quality, of that unsullied, unadulterated character, to which the inspiration of well regulated genius alone can attain.

What, then, it may be asked, is the style of poetry adapted to the taste and feelings of the age? We do not say the taste and feelings of England, or of America, alone—for we believe, upon this topic, that the sentiment is nearly the same in both countries. Unity of literary pursuit has generated between this and the fatherland an unity of opinion, in this instance, among many others, that cannot escape our notice. In answer, we should say, without hesitation, that, so far as the common consent of its intelligent admirers can indicate the popularity of any species of literature, that appears to be the favoured poetry of the time which recommends itself by the power and richness of its versification. We now speak naturally of its extrinsic character. It is not the age that takes particular delight in the cæsural melody of the stanza, as we find it in the poetry of Pope; nor yet in the patriarchal and gothic measure of Spenser. In these respects it is more of a golden age than that of either of those poetic fathers. Among the masters of the art, it is the time of vigorous conception, leagued with a chastened and graceful style, but not subservient to it; of high and beautiful thought, finding utterance in language suited to its character, and adorned with the attractions of a pure, manly and polished taste. We much doubt the lasting influence or value of that sort of poetry which busies itself in the intricacies of thought, bright and delicate as it may be; which hurries us along, with a strange pertinacity, after the subtle imaginings of the excited mind, until we are lost in the mazes of the journey, or tired of the attenuated fancies that we are compelled to follow. It is not the time for metaphysical poetry. Images standing out in bold and naked relief—descriptions of nature as she reveals herself in her simplicity and grandeur—and, above all, the palpable and strong emotions of the spirit, are, we believe, the instruments of that poetry which shall leave the impression of its power upon the age. The mighty spell of mind that brings before us in startling reality the dread alarm of Waterloo, when

"there was mounting in hot haste," or the rattling tempest of the hills, when

—"Jura answers from her misty shroud  
Back to the joyous Alps who call to her aloud"—

disclose, after all, the stateliest magic of Byron—just as his pathos is more strikingly exhibited in those clear and unsullied escapes of feeling which his subject, and not himself, has produced. Campbell has stirred the hearts of half the world by a tale of his Battle of the Baltic; while Moore has given us whole volumes on the dissection of a rainbow.

Of course we would not be understood to maintain that the real attributes of poetry have not heretofore been comprehended; or that new ones have been discovered. We not only do not maintain it—we do not say it. It would be ridiculous to do so, of what we consider to be an original ingredient, as it were, in the human constitution. On the contrary, we hold that the grand properties of good poetry have ever showed themselves the same, from Homer's day to our own. But it has been reserved for modern times to bring them to exercise with a power and purity and elevation, which they would never boast before. Once, genius would deign to linger among none but vast and marvellous creations. Now, she has found a wider field for her efforts or for her revels, among the most prominent, but not, on that account, less interesting objects that are ever about us. If, in some temple of finished and most breathing statuary, or in some stern exhibition of heroic fortitude and valour, poetry once found all it could hope for of beauty and sublimity, she now recognises them in the great living models of moral power and loveliness; in the solitary but ever-varying and wonderful works of nature; and in the wide varieties of virtuous and peaceful life. If she found strength in her images of Jove, or in the achievements of the mighty in war, she finds it now in her conceptions of a higher and holier sovereignty, or in the struggles of brave and good hearts in the use of humanity. If she found pathos in the tragic sufferings of imaginary queens and heroes, or, again, in the lamentations of our first parents, driven from the gates of Paradise, she now finds it in the language of Nature; in the unfeigned trials of the great and devoted who have not lived in vain; in the sorrows of man, since Paradise closed on him for ever; and in the power of those peculiar and commanding griefs that history has assured for the instruction of the world, and which are often, once, the lot and lesson of mankind.

While upon this portion of our subject, we would revert to a consideration that seems to deserve some notice. We think it cannot have escaped observation, that poetical writers, in passing

from the more royal and solitary walks of the art, have gone to the other extreme, and are now found circulating freely in the various childish resorts and play-grounds that philanthropic spirits are continually throwing open to the footsteps of youth. Without doubt this passage from the one sphere to the other is partly the result of that temper of the times to which we before referred, and which operates to bring down the mind to popular contact—if we may so express ourselves—in almost all its departments; but very much, we apprehend, is to be attributed to the strong disposition, at present manifested, to encourage the manufacture of verse of exceeding simplicity, “*for the use of children.*” The Annuals, not yet of age, draw largely even on many of our stronger spirits, and the poetical principle, when it finds itself devoted to this peculiar service, finds itself also, *ex necessitate*, essentially divested of the leading features of stateliness and command, which were once considered its indispensable properties. To all this we have no objection, so it be managed within due bounds: the danger, if so grave a word need be used, consists in the liability to which poetry may be subject to be frittered away and reduced—not refined—by this process of simplification. For there are two kinds of simplicity: one consisting in the direct, disenthralled language which distinguishes great and forcible thoughts; and the other in the unpretending, juvenile strain that strips thought of all dignity whatever, and forces it down to the comparative nursery diction which marks the multiplying volumes of our youthful libraries. Many minds are disposed to regard the simplicity of Wordsworth as something as ineffable and insufferable as it is uncommon. With them, the word, in its application to this truly rare genius, is used in its worst sense. Now, for ourselves, we are inclined to point to Wordsworth as an instance of the quality most admirably exhibited. The sublime singleness of his conceptions suffers nothing by the bold relief into which they are thrown by his language. There is no weakness, though his thoughts have not the parading support of words. There is no influence lost in the unincumbered beauty in which they go triumphantly home to the heart.

We are the more anxious that the true meaning of this term should be perceived and understood, from the chance we think it may have to abide of passing to the service of something far beyond it—to something that has much of the appearance of simplicity, without any of its virtues. There is a *natural* chord in the bosoms of us all. It ever responds in sympathy to the noble music of a spirit deeply and sincerely stirred. Here the vibrations of the heart, if they be expressed in poetry, will also be expressed in the language of true simplicity. And this is the kind of simplicity we would cultivate; and that too without

condemning, so it be kept within bounds, the infantile guise in which poetry is introduced to the companionship of children. We only protest against confounding the simplicity of great thoughts with the simplicity of little ones. But we proceed.

The higher range of poetical exertion, to which it is our attention to direct our remarks more particularly, supposes those qualities in him who moves in it successfully that constitute him a poet in the loftiest meaning of the term, as well as a certain set of sympathies in those who accompany him with satisfaction. To write a song and compose an epic are two things. The author of a national lay, or a ballad, may have the power to quicken our pulses or start our tears, by the witchery of his verse, but prove an actual soporific in his attempts to charm by efforts of high pretension. The reason of this it may not be difficult to assign. It consists in the simple fact that different endowments are required for the two species of writing. True, the possession of one does not imply the absence of the other. There are instances of their perfect and happy combination; but the combination is rare in comparison with the gift of the poetic faculty. Most of us can recal our experience of the different emotions we have felt on surrendering ourselves to the mellow music of a beautiful rhythmical composition, and the commanding blank verse of a masterly and unkindling tragedy. With this recollection in mind, the force of our observation will be perceived, as connected with the less and the more pretending efforts of the muse. They who have not poetry enough in their intellectuals to lead them to admit the truth of our doctrine as drawn from their own perception, would hardly be reached by any argument we might build upon it.

Tragedy has ever been considered one of the Olympian walks of the poet. It is certain, that in the cause of the drama genius has put forth some of its masterly efforts. Requiring uncommon vigour of style, a heroic strain of thought, and an adventurous spirit of imagination, an attempt at this species of writing may well rank among the most daring of all poetical undertakings.

When we speak of the drama, we would be understood to refer to the drama in its purity. It would be easy to point to many modern instances, and some among ourselves, in which the neglect or absence of the distinguishing properties which constitute its legitimacy is but too evident. The departure from first principles in this department, indeed, has been frequently unpardonable; and such is the feeling of the age, in connection with this style of poetry, there is little hope, we fear, of a return to them. It is well known that a long and wordy war was engendered, aforetime, upon the matter of the technical



rules to be observed in the construction and conduct of drama. It was a dispute almost as serious as any upon the propriety of a poetical and symbolical presence. It became a settled conviction, however, that such things as time and place, and the probabilities of life, were affairs which poets, as well as readers, were bound to observe. Genius, it is true, so often leaped the barrier of the unities, and, in a few royal instances, roamed in uncontrolled and uncontrollable liberty through the fields of fancy. But the examples have not sanctioned the custom. Notwithstanding, however, the poetic spirit, which respects, has felt the restraint of public opinion, it has found a new escape in the form in which it has latterly chosen to appear. Under the guise of a dramatic poem, it enjoys a latitude in conception and execution, which offers almost all the advantages of the old freedom from technical canons. Accordingly, much of the finest poetry that has flowed upon English stages, has been through this new channel. To mention only others, Byron and Mrs. Hemans have done enough in this department to prove the truth of this observation.

There is a simplicity and unity—an unity of purpose in this model of the drama, which, while they render the work more fit for representation, enable the artist to step forward into a wider world indeed for his ardent and excursive fancy. Tragedies under this modification, are properly tragedies for the stage. They appeal to our taste and to our poetic sympathies more than to our passions or our animal excitability.

And we are content that it should be so. We are content that the beautiful works of genius should be fashioned for the eye only—the intellectual eye—to be scanned in solitude, and to delight us at our firesides. We have never been anxious to summon Mysteries and Moralities from the recesses of ages. "They sleep well." We have never been anxious to perpetuate any thing that recalls them, or to countenance the enormities of the scene that sometimes bring the stage into too decided rivalry with those monstrous spectacles. With equal reason we have no disposition to subject the grand and perfection of lofty tragedy to the present mutilated and fantastic spirit of the theatres. We shall not be undersold, in course, to speak disparagingly of those standard plays and tragedies indeed, and as such have been honoured for centuries; and which will bear representation and deserve a place so long as the old fountains of inspiration are remembered. We would keep this sublime department of poetry free from encroachments of the popular demand for stage effect.

We have mentioned Byron and Mrs. Hemans as a good illustration of modern English literature in the dramatic department. We do not maintain that their dramas are

be best of their poetry. We think not—but we believe that they are as good specimens as can be produced of the high conception and vigorous versification which this sort of writing demands. Yet they insensibly take their place in our minds among the class of dramatic poems—those rather abstract works of this kind, wherein the poetry is more a lofty and melodious disquisition upon some prominent property of our nature, than the illustration of any single instance of a ruling passion, or of an isolated history, through the medium of so many acts and scenes. We are aware, moreover, that when we give the writers referred to the praise of priority among the constructors of modern English drama, we are rendering no uncommon honour. The glorious days of British tragedy are gone by; and we might trace, did our limits allow, an outline of its history, to show its declension, and the causes that produced it, and which now almost forbid a hope of its revival. But we must refrain. It is enough to say, that as the spirit of the Grecian drama lived in the lyrics, so the spirit of that of England early lurked in those admirable old ballads that constitute so considerable a mass of its dawning poetry; and that from these fountains the first draughts were the purest. The drama of our language has seen no day more promising than that which shone upon the morning devotees at its shrine. To follow its changes and its deterioration would be to tread in a beaten track, or to linger on a topic that has been amply treated by far worthier pens than our own. Of course we shall be understood as speaking of the general tendency of this species of poetry. An exception like Shakspeare is not to be considered as affecting the rule. It is sufficient to know that the temper of the times and the dispositions of writers have led them astray from the ancient high pathway; and it is quite an event to see a drama among us that can, even in some distant manner, bring back the old and good times of the splendid art. Let the dramas of these authors not infrequently recall better days. The spirit of the ancient Greek occasionally gleams through them; and in the simplicity and passion, the vigour and the sensibility, which distinguish those of Mrs. Hemans, we think we see as near an approach to the mingled genius of Sophocles and Euripides, as any, in this department, which the annals of English literature present.<sup>1</sup> True, there is here no busy mythology mingling itself with the plot, and no all-pervading, all-powerful destiny, working out its triumph, as in

<sup>1</sup> This may seem strong language; but we speak advisedly, and are not disposed to qualify it. There may not be many points upon which we can institute a comparison—and it is to the *spirit* of the poetry we refer, and not to its externals.

the Greek drama; but there is an unity of purpose—of high and almost religious determination, that well supplies that peculiar principle of the ancient tragedy, while it imparts to this a character still more elevated.

It has been said, and maintained with a degree of plausibility, that the progress of Christianity has been no help to that poetry. It has been argued, that religion, or religious feeling, as a principle or ingredient, has not been particularly favourable to the development of poetic genius, under its best forms of attractiveness or energy. Doubtless this remark, to a certain extent, is true. *In extenso*, we do not subscribe to it. Though there be no subject on which men are so strenuous or so sensitive as their religion; though there be no one thing which you may not with less chance of resentment charge them with being without, or more safely attempt to take from them, yet make that jewel of their lives a prominent constituent of the subject—matter that you present to their minds for consideration, and it seems to lose half its sacredness and value by the transfer—although what must be worshipped as a faith, deserved to be overlooked or depreciated as an influence—as though the sublime object of veneration in the temple were deprived of its intrinsic importance by its association with the best efforts of human thought, under the form of some stirring history or poem. This is a part of the common inconsistency of our nature.

Still, though the Christian religion, in its simple and severe exhibitions, may fail to render the poetry which embodies them less attractive than the common worldly principles on which most works of fancy are accustomed to turn, it would be unphilosophical to deny that illustrations of strong moral energy or power or endurance form the most popular as well as the most elevating efforts of the dramatic artist. As far, then, as these may go, they are instances of a modification of the religious principle after all. We see not how this can be denied, if any connection or sympathy is to be allowed between religion and morality; and we feel safe in maintaining that this spirit—call it a moral or religious one as you please—which forms its principle, its nucleus, as in the tragedies of Miss Baillie and Mrs. Hemans, is the true spirit of the drama.

Yet we are hardly ready to admit that the religious sentiment of our own time can be employed as an ingredient of the drama with a degree of success by any means commensurate with that which accompanied it in its earlier introduction—while religion was an influence that awed mankind, without arraying man against his brother—while it was held to be a holy and resistless spirit of good, that pointed and led the way to happiness, rather than a spirit of contention, that is too often thought to hallow a warfare that bends all our passions to its service

without distinction. If the drama be founded upon the exhibition of this principle as it at present obtains among us, it would seem that most of its success, should it win any, would be confined to that class of believers who sympathized exactly with the writer. No large, embracing principle of faith will serve to nullify technical differences, and bring the mind, by a sort of centripetal force, to an acknowledgment of a centering power of genius, in spite of a particular and differing creed in him who manifests it. This is melancholy. It is a weakness. Thus Pollock, the author of the *Course of Time*—no drama, though a poem—found his worshippers, and those who passed by on the other side, not only among those of the same generation, but even of the same circle. It was his religious sentiment that gave him notoriety, we are disposed to believe—not the exhibition of religion as a principle, in the simple, severe, and commanding features which all men insensibly obey, and the strong inspired language of poetry to which all hearts invariably respond. Even Shakspeare, we have all observed, has in latter times been driven from the high place of his “propriety,” in souls worthy of better things, before the all-pervading, all-requiring influence of religious enthusiasm, until they who once held him the master-spirit of his species, see nothing in his genius, now, but something fraught with evil; nothing but a lurking devil in his dialogue, and in his bosom a heart miserably and fatally estranged from Heaven. For our own parts, did we believe that this illiberal, destructive spirit was destined to exercise, in connection with the loftier inspirations of poetry, that sad influence which we have adverted to, we should have no hesitation in declaring our preference of the ancient though unsanctified principle, under the shadow of which every character of the early drama passed through its various scenes, as though filled with the peculiar energies of a religious feeling. Certainly this was better, for all the higher purposes of poetry, than the narrow unforgiving doctrines of the time, that would bring the art, and every feeling with which it holds association, into subserviency to the uncompromising demands of a peculiar dogma, and meanwhile give to the winds those searching and noble properties of the soul, which find their proudest and most effective exercise under the hands of the master of song. The Roman satirist, we fear, would have been slow to admit the modern religious sentiment as an ingredient of the poetic art, however humble its pretensions. He would have seen at once, and seeing, he would not have been backward to visit with severity the absurd spectacle of the human mind, plucked from its most exalted sphere—from its worthiest, purest, divinest aspirations, to be put in leading-strings to a spirit whose circle is of the earth, whose tendency is downward, and whose joy it

is to see genius despoiled of its most brilliant and commanding elements. We think it was Bolingbroke who said to Voltaire of the ecclesiastical dissensions between the Jesuits and Jansenists, that "the priests reminded him of the nurses of Jupiter, who raised a deafening clamour, that in the noise they might drown the voice of their god." How well may this illustration be applied to our own day of polemical theology! How often is the voice of their God unheard—how often his nature forgotten, in the disputes, of those who call themselves his champions, about his mode of existence, and his attributes! That this spirit should encroach upon the ground of Parnassus is hardly matter of surprise; but we think it *can*, and therefore *should*, be kept from tainting the true hearts that find a home there. Let us, however, resume the subject from which we have thus been drawn quite insensibly.

The Greek tragedy was peculiar; but it was certainly pure and perfect compared with that which succeeded it. It was grand and heroic, for it sprang from the lyrics. It glowed with passion; it abounded in rugged but natural conceptions; and it formed the very religion of the time. It is not our object at this time to do more than barely refer to the great masters of the Grecian drama. The names of Æschylus, Sophocles, and Euripides are familiar as household words; and their history is very generally and pleasantly remembered. Ancient poetry is embalmed with them; and themselves were embalmed in the pride and gratitude of their countrymen. These great spirits interwove the public events of Greece into their dramatic poetry, and made national concerns of their tragedies; thus at the same time registering the glories of their heroes, and presenting to the young men of their time the best models by which they should shape themselves in sentiment and character. In reward for this devotion to the art, their ambition was ministered to in a manner, or at least in a degree, peculiar to the age. They were the honoured and the observed of their generation. It is not to be wondered at, to use the sentiment of a sensible French writer, that the Athenians, distinguished as they were by a lively imagination, a noble and musical language, singular fertility of genius, and eminent abilities, exercised by the most vigorous emulation, should be excessively fond of poetry, and no less attached to those who displayed a strong spirit of ambition in that art, and a determination to excel in any of the employments that tended to illustrate or give it effect. For these reasons they honoured, as a matter of course, not only dramatic poets, but actors.

The regard was reciprocal. From feelings thus generated and thus directed, much was to be expected, that should advance the public mind on one side, and high-reaching vigor-

our poetry on the other. But all this prospect, bright as it was with promise, was doomed to be clouded. The Grecian theatre fell from its high estate, so soon as comedy established itself upon the stage. The early form it assumed there was the most unamiable one in which it has ever appeared; and, saving only the interval during which Menander appeared to dignify it, and rescue the drama, there is little that presents itself upon which it is either pleasant or profitable to linger. We accordingly pass to a consideration of it as developed under auspices totally different, in another land.

The close connection with the stage held in early times by the drama, renders quite natural an application to the former of the passing remarks which we are submitting upon the prominent points in the history of the latter. In Rome, to which we insensibly turn, as the light of poetry expires on the plains of Greece—in Rome, Plautus and Terence were identified with the stage. Yet these two were among the first and most prominent of the Latin dramatic writers. Both were writers of surpassing power in their peculiar sphere. So pure and energetic was the language of Plautus, that Varro, a Roman of acknowledged learning and judgment, declared that if the Muses were inclined to speak Latin, they would speak in the language of Plautus. Indeed, were more wanting to show the celebrity in which he was held, Varro has left, in addition, the following stanza upon his death :

Postquam morte captus est Plautus,  
Comœdia luget, scena est deserta ;  
Deinde Risus, Ludus, Jocusque, et numeri  
Innumeri simul omnes collachrymarunt.

Horace held opinions respecting this author totally different, to be sure. But Horace lived in the Augustan age, when the Roman taste was at its height of refinement. The only commentary upon his criticism which we deem it necessary just now to suggest, is the fact that for five hundred years Plautus continued to be the principal favourite of the stage. Still we would by no means be considered the advocate of the drama and stage at this crisis. Both were exceedingly corrupt, and in that lamentable state they remained, exhibiting, to a luxurious and dissolute people, every variety of extravagance and licentiousness which could be brought forth under the shadow of imperial patronage in its high places. Thus passed even the age of Roscius; and thus continued the theatre, even in what was then considered the home of its splendour and popularity, until genius withdrew from it, and, under the vile and ridiculous personations of Nero, it fell into utter decay and dissolution.

The appearance of the drama in Spain was accompanied by

that strange mixture of gloomy superstition and provincial farce, which was too peculiar to escape the notice of any mind that busied itself with the early literature of that country. The great basis of the drama there was religion ; and not only the ineffable absurdities, but the absolute blasphemies which were constructed upon it, are almost beyond belief. Lope de Vega and Calderon may indeed, in many respects, be exceptions from the mass of Spanish writers who have made themselves so conspicuous by their extravagance ; but even these, though so justly held up as the poetic pride of that romantic land, must be reckoned among those dramatists of whom Dr. Johnson says, they “gain attention by hyperbolic or aggravated characters, by fabulous or unexampled excellence or depravity ; as the writers of barbarous romances invigorated the reader by a giant and a dwarf ; and he that should form his expectations of human affairs from the play or from the tale, would be equally deceived.”

Much of this general remark will apply to the drama as it appeared in Italy. It was distinguished by its inconsistencies, and by a ridiculous management of the most contemptible materials. In point of looseness and extravagance, it rivalled that of ancient Rome ; rarely boasting a virtue to redeem the mass of littleness and vice which seemed to be its prevailing ingredients.

It will be at once perceived that the course of observation in which we are here indulging is of that comprehensive character which our limits render proper, though it is not the one which, under other circumstances, we should incline to adopt. We speak, of course, of the state of poetry as it existed in those dramas which issued from the hands of the mass of writers, and not of the masters. They who may be termed such, of which each land we have adverted to could certainly boast, gave birth to works whose range is the civilized world, and whose celebrity will remain while language endures. Still, even they can hardly be said to redeem their age, and though, in some leading instances, their genius strode proud and unshackled before the confusion of their time, they were not destined to escape it altogether, and necessarily partake, from their position, of some portion of the literary infirmities which distinguish their era. Such exceptions, while they serve only to bring into still stronger relief the moral and literary condition of the people from which they stand forth, cannot but “make the judicious grieve,” when it is seen how much they might have done for their country’s reputation and the cause of letters, had they not been subjected to such unhappy influences. How little, however, could be hoped for the progress of true learning in any department, when the common mind was ruled by the grossest

superstition, and all that rose, by the force of native endowments, above the general level of degradation, were more solicitous to take advantage of their condition for selfish purposes, than to enlighten the mass that heaved dimly and heavily below them !

In France, the drama remained without form and void till Corneille and Racine rose to illumine their age. Between these master spirits and the great Greeks, Sophocles and Euripides, a comparison might be instituted, by no means unapt, and followed out successfully. Sophocles was distinguished by his power—so was Corneille. Euripides melted by his pathos—so did Racine. Each saw his leading trait in his mighty prototype. Yet the shape which the drama assumed under the magical genius of even such men, was so decidedly national as to forbid any recognition of it as the drama of Greece in her glory. The French drama, it is well known, is the drama of criticism. The character of the people formed an everlasting barrier to the progress of the true dramatic spirit among them. Its fervour degenerated to coldness; impassioned action was sacrificed to the passion of etiquette; and France and her poetic champions saw nothing of the Greek drama, on the theatres, but the model. Corneille lived too late for his age; and though it was not till the noon of his fame—we think it was in *Cinna*—that he condescended to respect the unities, yet the great influence of the court and of popular character were at work before him, and though he might for ever have spurned or worshipped the technical rules of the art which he adorned, yet, in either case, he would have struggled unavailingly against the indomitable spirit of his time. Voltaire has somewhere said that the French were the least poetical people in the world; and offered it as a reason why no epic poem had been produced among them. It may with equal truth, perhaps, be said that legitimate pathos and a tragic sense are matters too incomprehensible with that people, ever to allow a hope for the success of genuine tragedy among them.

But it is not our object to discuss the subject of poetry under its dramatic development in France, or indeed to review its history under any presentation in that country. We are rather desirous of examining its claims to consideration in instances of commanding popularity in our own language, and of contemporaneous celebrity; contenting ourselves with the above cursory observations, which were naturally suggested from a glance at the art, as it exhibited itself in the different periods and lands to which we have adverted in our progress from the past to the present.

It may be thought that we have too long neglected the writer and works, to which reference is had at the head of this article;



and we accordingly proceed to some remarks of a more particular bearing.

We have no hesitation in placing Mrs. Hemans in the highest rank of those who profess her beautiful art. Her productions have been long before the public; and it is not by any means our intention, at this time, to go into a grave review of her works, for they have been subjected to the full ordeal of criticism; but to refer to them more particularly in connection with the sentiments we entertain relating to the drama, and as exemplifying any notions we may hold upon the general subject of poetry. Still we cannot let this lady pass without offering here something of our testimony.

For a considerable period she appeared only through the medium of periodicals; and that, oftentimes, under a disguise, which, though it could not screen her from regard among the numberless masks that are accustomed to figure in those literary drawing-rooms, somewhat retarded the unequivocal and general tribute of admiration that is now rendered to her on both sides of the Atlantic. Her verse, it seems to us, is distinguished by those properties which we have mentioned as characteristic of the true poetry of our time; of that poetry, moreover, which the age appears to demand; and we know not that we could point to a higher sample of that pure and powerful writing which we hold to be the most captivating species in this department of literature. Endowed with a vivid imagination, she has a ready faculty of investing with a rich and harmonious colouring every object in nature or art, of mind or matter, upon which she exercises the spell of her fancy. She grasps the prominent points of her subject with a bold hand; and, under the rapid and beautiful analysis of genius, unfolds its various combinations, that rise like lights upon her march of inspiration. She delights in the simple but energetic emotions; in the deep but strong movements of pure hearts and great spirits; in the joy of happy memories, and the contemplation of high and invigorating realities. Her visions are generally distinct, and the picture which she draws in her glowing but delicate colours, is one that attracts us from the magic by which it brings back some of the dearest dreams of our other years, and some of the holiest feelings which we have been accustomed to cherish. Her pathos and strength are uncommon, and her taste, on almost all occasions, faultless. She rather prefers, in bold, vigorous outline, to bare the soul in some one absorbing excitement, to indulging in refined speculations upon its nature, its mysterious movements, its subtle affections. She avoids swelling into bombast, or sinking into the commonplace of mere sentiment. She depicts strongly, but with truth. Her pathos is not the pathos of a heart surrendered to its desolate feelings, but of one still

left to the persuasion and guidance of its better ones. With many, nothing constitutes this quality, but a sort of restless, talkative, and consequential melancholy. With others, the colouring of the picture must be of that mellow, tearful character which the mere gazing at makes us sad. Now, true pathos is something far better and greater than this ; something distinct and determined ; our feelings are awakened under it, as under the fine flow of music, swelling on us like an organ at that low chant in which we can hear our hearts throb to the intonations. This is the effect of true genius. It is the true melancholy. There is another that is easily inspired. It is drawn from common objects by common powers. But it requires more than common powers to stir the fathomless places of our nature, until they heave in sympathetic commotion with the spirit that rules them, even as deep answers unto deep. To return. Our writer is not apt to forget the majesty of her art. She presents us a fine statue in the full grace of its proportions ; but she remembers the drapery, and arranges it with the ease and taste of one whose genius is true to its work. Her fervour is that of a mind impressed with the importance of things higher and better than those of earth ; and it ever burns upward, like the flame from the holy altar. It comes to sanctify the kindest and best of the affections, and delights in the grand and deep revelations of those principles that honour and elevate man. Her strength lies mainly in an excellent fitness of language to express the lofty and brilliant conceptions with which her imagination seems to abound. It is the combined strength of words and thoughts. Her simplicity is not that of a person striving to be simple. It is not the simplicity of Wordsworth. It is not the simplicity of a heart unacquainted with the world and its trials. It is the expressive singleness of a mind accustomed to linger with the grandeur and power of the natural and intellectual worlds, and using its experience of the sorrows that lie beneath them, to regulate its emotions, or to "point the moral" it would enforce. It is to the exhibition of this delicate endowment to an unusual degree, that one great charm of her poetry is to be attributed. It influences her, not only in the choice of thought, but in the choice of language—in the happy perception of which, as appropriate to sentiment, we may observe, lies the grand secret of much, very much, that is graceful and admirable in poetry. It is a commanding quality ; and, we apprehend, not fully appreciated. It is the only redeeming quality of that work which is exceptionable in its spirit, and the beauty and enchantment of that which is honourable to the artist. It is next to genius ; and, on every occasion, its most effective minister. In short, it is in compo-

sition what conscience is in morals—keeping the writer ever within the bounds of propriety, or at least of good taste ; and operating as a continual rebuke whenever he is inclined to swerve from purity and harmony of expression. It was a taste in execution, rarely at fault, that gave to Byron much of his superiority in the higher strains of his verse ; and it is no less the ruling spirit of Mrs. Hemans, in her extremest abandonment to the stormy passions she sometimes chooses to portray. She seems to be governed by a sense of purity throughout—imparting to the most rigorous portraits of her fancy a chasteness equal to their power.

Classical ornament still holds its place as an important property of poetical composition. Antiquity has long afforded a principal fountain whence poetry draws many of her choicest associations, and much of that material with which she illustrates and adorns her conceptions. This is a familiar truth. But though such embellishment, under the direction of a good taste, undoubtedly has its value, at the present day we are disposed to believe that it does not retain its early importance as a literary ingredient. We are not aware that the writer of whom we are speaking was ever, by any means, wanting in classical resources ; but it is evident that her poetry does not recommend itself, eminently, by classical allusion. It has—we say it freely—something of a nature full as valuable, and full as commanding, to bring it home to the bosom of the enthusiast—and why not of the scholar?—even its favourite and frequent allusions to those animating everlasting principles that actuate us in the sublimest and best of causes, and its intimacy with the fadeless features of nature in her alternate moods of loveliness and magnificence.

That the sphere of tragedy should be admirably suited to the high conceptions and vigorous versification of Mrs. Hemans, is readily presumed. It was a natural anticipation. Nor have we been disappointed in the result. With the exception of some of those short pieces that are so eminently beautiful and spirited, the *Siege of Valencia* and the *Vespers of Palermo* stand unrivalled among her productions. They must also rank, we think, among the best portions of English literature in this department. Meanwhile the minor poems, to which we have just adverted, will be considered, we suspect, as betraying all the prominent properties, powers and graces that distinguish her works. Such detached portions of inspiration—full, as they sometimes are, of exquisite beauty, it is ever pleasant to dwell upon, when one is content to turn to them even from the most diffusive productions of the writer. It is like passing from a wide field, waving, indeed, in the luxury of bloom, and where a thousand sweets are scattered on the atmosphere, to the garden

where the perfume is concentrated, and where nothing but dour is breathed.

On the whole, view her in whatever light we may, as a poetical writer, we hold Mrs. Hemans to be second to none of her contemporaries. Her lyrical genius has proved itself of high order, and it must be admitted that her enthusiasm was ever regulated by a moral sense, that operates, eminently and ever, with all the influence of a governing principle. It may be observed that she never allows that enthusiasm to compromise the melody of her verse. Hence she is rarely abrupt—and on few occasions, save in the necessary breaks of the dialogue, meets us with those chromatics of poetry, in which some writers are apt to indulge, and which, fantastic as they are, are frequently cited as indications of genius. Still there is such a thing as an extreme in harmony. We like not this continuous music; and, though it may deliver itself in rich and soft chords, it is kept up at the hazard of monotony. Even Milton or Ossian will not answer by the hour or the quantity. We would have Scylla and Charybdis equally avoided by the writer. It should be remembered—unfortunate fact or not—that the human heart is apt to tire of the same bright waters, longing to the same dream-inspiring cadences. We weary of the garden of flowers and perfume, and pant to spring forth upon the hills, to the greeting of the rude healthy winds of heaven. The writer under our notice allows not her imagination to carry us thither at a bound. We must be led forth—through a pleasant pathway, it is certain, but still at a measured step—to the music of her own heart, which she cannot escape from, but which she forgets that we can dispense with.

We repeat, then, that we consider her poetry as well exemplifying what we believe to be the best properties of this material, and well adapted for the delight and instruction of the age. The chasteness and unity of its fervour are calculated to do good continually. It is the spirit of her muse that we honour; and we always conceived, that, with such a spirit to animate her, she was on her successful way to the best eminence to which she or her art could attain.

It is no part of our intention to illustrate the sentiments or doctrines we have advanced upon the subject of poetry; or to prove their soundness by a series of extracts from the writer whose name we have set at the commencement of our article. We deem a resort to this exhibition of specimens needless, while the works of the author afford them so freely to the most casual reader. Besides this indisposition to bear about the stick in our palm, we would observe—though, in doing it, we repeat what we suggested in a previous paragraph—that a review of the works of Mrs. Hemans was not so much our

object as that of the extensive subject to which they relate, and whose varied beauties, power and influences they exemplify with such attractiveness and purity. We pretend not to have escaped the charge of being *out of order*, if we allow ourselves to be judged according to the grave rules of parliamentary usage; but as keeping to *the question*, in that sense, was no part of our profession, we presume further remark upon this point will be superfluous.

The history of the mind and of the literary career of Mrs. Hemans, must certainly be pleasing to any one who loves to contemplate the progress of a singularly industrious, pure, and aspiring spirit, through its several stages, to a high and valuable reputation. Her intellect, though strong, and full of that which was as high-toned as it was poetical, was always essentially feminine in its developments. It has been justly said by Mrs. Jameson, that Mrs. Hemans' poems, "could not have been written by a man; their love is without selfishness; their passion without a stain of this world's coarseness; their high heroism unsullied by any grosser alloy of mean ambition."

We have no fear about the increasing fame of Mrs. Hemans. Her poetry is of a kind to live. It is of a kind to gain honour with the lapse of years; and it may well be a peculiar and pleasing reflection with her admirers, that all who become the friends of her muse will come up to a good cause, and rank themselves as the friends of virtue. We lament that her light is extinguished, and her harp still. But even as we lament, we cannot but remember that there may be a selfishness in our sorrow, as we repeat to ourselves,

"Wo unto us—not" her—"for" she "sleeps well."

Meanwhile we would not carry our critical gallantry quite so far as to induce a belief that we consider this fair author, upon whose poetical example we have so amplified, in no degree liable to imperfections, under the common ban of genius, as well as of humanity. We could find fault in this, and all like cases, with perfect ease; but we doubt whether it would result in any thing like utility to the cause of literature. We hold it to be vain to torture ourselves—though it may gratify some bilious readers—in finding fault, where we have more than tolerable reason to be thankful and delighted. Verbal criticism we abjure, save in instances of high criminality. The purest language under heaven lies open to the animadversions of a caviling, misconstruing, uneasy spirit of scrutiny. Where thought goes far to redeem the work, we are fain, therefore, to let words alone. As to poetry, viewed as the subject-matter upon which severe criticism is to sit in judgment, we are free to

may that we think it has been hardly dealt by, very unfairly examined, very unjustly judged, and very ignorantly sentenced. We have taken occasion, in another place, to speak of the critical and poetical sentiments as rarely combined, and as affording, in most instances where they are assumed, very natural exhibitions of a want of sympathy. We have seen cases which may be called extremely hard ones, in this particular. The court in which they were tried had no title to its jurisdiction drawn from any portion of any healthy literary charter whatever, or from common sense itself; yet prosaic, unimaginative, and unlearned as it was, it presumed to sit upon the matter it had irreverently brought to its tribunal, with all the circumstance and pretension with which it would pass upon subjects to which it might lay some claim of knowledge and authority. No one will deny that this is a highly dangerous proceeding in the business of criticism. It is dangerous as regards both the writer and the reviewer; for the former may be made bitter by the harsh and undeserved judgment to which he is subjected; or on the other hand expanded beyond all rational dimensions by the flattery with which he is dismissed; while the latter is sure to render himself eminently ridiculous by his criticism in the minds of all whose literary judgment is untrammelled.

But let us pass from this to a few closing considerations suggested by our still expanding subject. Poetry has seen times of greater veneration, indeed, than our own. Time was when its votary was all but deified. The oaken crowns of Homer and Virgil proved the enthusiastic worship of their countrymen. But it was the worship of a listening and excited, not of a reading and thinking people. They were triumphs indeed that Racine and Voltaire could boast, when theatres rose up to them, and welcomed them as the poetic fathers of their country. It was high honour that encircled Petrarca, thought of as divine in his shadowy Vacluse, and received as divine amidst the plaudits of all Italy. It was a proud thing for Tasso to be set apart to be crowned with laurel at the Capitol, in the midst of popes and prelates and cardinals. Yet the fame of the blind bard of the isles was not full, till temples and statues rose upon his ashes, and cities contended for the honour of his birth-place. The Latin poet commanded an admiration that derived its chief glory from the patronage and power of Augustus. The Euripides of France enjoyed a literary renown as great as a taste so decidedly national would admit, while the poet was torn between the struggles of his great genius and the tyranny of court criticism. Petrarch retains, in many of our recollections, but a romantic celebrity; and it is not the honours rendered, nor yet the coronation decreed him, that can blind us to the

belief, that, in poetry, the highest moral elevation was not reached even by 'Tasso the Repentant.'

Though the art, then, and its successful and commanding votaries, may find that the period of their more peculiar and unqualified veneration has passed by, they need indulge no apprehensions about the destruction or decay of the principle of their influence. That principle is imperishable. It is founded as deeply and as securely as human nature itself. It appeals to feelings and sympathies that are born with us, and that go with us to the grave. We cannot escape from its power if we would. It stirs the heart like music, and finds its response as unfailing as its pulsations. Those instances of submission to its enchantment, and of honour paid to its supremacy, to which we have adverted, though not repeated to the eye in this our day, are still no strange tribute in the spirit-land of sympathetic and uncorrupted natures.

In this wholesome and honourable consciousness, then, let the poet find his unfailing satisfaction. His is a high duty; for he strikes his harp for the world—for the benefit as well as delight of his fellows, with whom he mingles on the broad pathway of life. His, too, is a high reward; for he finds it in the applause of the good and great, who render it to his genius in a still more unqualified strain, where the brilliancy of the poet is rendered yet brighter by the worth of the man. Such duty and such reward are surely better than those of an earlier, though perhaps a more romantic age, and surely the best, disconnected with his art, which can await him on the common journey; and though to the mighty masters of a more enthusiastic but less enlightened period, the tribute of praise was rendered with more direct and almost royal manifestations, the regard with which the writer, of true poetic power—of the true inspiration, is now met by an admiring people—a whole land—the world, may well be deemed equivalent to the best admiration of which genius has been the recipient on its most triumphant way.

---

<sup>1</sup> " Il fut reçu dans l'académie des Aetherei de Padoue sous le nom de Pentito, du Repentant, pour marquer, qu'il se repentait du temps qu'il croyait avoir perdu dans l'étude du droit, et dans les autres, ou son inclination ne l'avait pas appelé.—*Voltaire : Essai sur le Poesie epique. Le Tasse.*

ART. II.—*Memoires biographiques, litteraires et politiques de MIRABEAU ; écrits par lui même ; par son frère ; son oncle ; et son fils adoptif.* 8 vols. 8vo. Paris : 1834-6.

Eloquence, like poetry, seems a natural gift, and not an acquired talent. Efficiency, and even superiority, may be attained in both, without decided genius ; though no one will rise, by mere labour, to the highest development of the powers and resources of these arts, without some talent greater than the acquired. Cicero, with that true fidelity and affection which every one feels for the means of his elevation, ranks eloquence as the first of the arts ; and, without acceding to this opinion in its full extent, but making some allowance for prejudice and vanity, it cannot be denied that it is a very great possession—a tremendous instrument for talent to hold, and one of the highest and noblest attainments the human mind can reach, or to which human genius can aspire. It is then no condescension, with the greatest mind, if it lie within the direction of its pursuits and purposes, to attempt, if nature is deficient, the increase of its resources, by adding the accomplishment of oratory. Still there can be no doubt that the elements of eloquence are gifts of nature ; that it is a peculiar and uncommon power ; that the different faculties which are required in its creation, seldom meet in one individual, and are beyond the reach of most men, even in the humblest degree. The great Roman orator says, with some exultation, see how many mathematicians there are—how many poets—how many distinguished in every department of knowledge—but how few orators ; and the assertion appears as true as it is forcible. It is borne out by the history of nations. Whether it is the creature of circumstance, a mere accident of intellect, or the production of a highly cultivated condition of society, or to whatever cause our speculations may extend, the fact appears to be, that a great orator is a very infrequent and extraordinary event.

*Multo tamen pauciores oratores, quam poetæ boni reperiuntur*, which, as it is true, elevates oratory to a higher place than is usually assigned to it ; though it does not depress, at the same time, its noble sister art. Greece, in the midst of her refinement, through all the struggles of ambition, with all her magnificent attainments in every department in which the human intellect has excelled or can excel—in the beauty and perfection of her philosophy—her political changes and convulsions—her freedom—and with a people of the most apt and acute genius, and possessing every other attribute that has made her the admiration of ages—had, or has left, but few orators. There was every variety of incident in her career to



call forth all the various powers of mind—all those hues of hope, and shades of depression, that excite and gladden, or try the firmness and energies of the soul. Nothing was wanting, in her character or condition, to aid and exalt every display of intellect, and nurture into greatness every aspirant for fame. Yet she had but one great orator ; though, indeed, one whose existence is an era, and whose name stands as the emblem of perfection in his art ; whose glory not only surpasses, but overshadows and consumes the merit of every contemporary, and has come down to the present time with the brilliancy of fame and vivid reality, which belong to a living power. The great rival of Greece had but two of high reputation, and only one of the first order. This certainly bears out Cicero, and proves that the gift of eloquence is seldom granted ; or that there are difficulties to contend with, in its attainment, that are insuperable to most minds. Like most things in which the highest efforts of intellect are concerned, there must be, to develop them fully, a correspondence between the moral, mental and political condition of society ; or, in other words, the highest degree of civilization is, if not essential, still extremely important in bringing out the refinements of art. An individual of extraordinary genius, governed by that irrepressible instinct that leads him on in pursuit of the object he is best fitted to attain, may succeed in his design. He does it in defiance of society, in defiance of all the obstacles of a rude age or personal circumstances. He acts not through his will, but by an impulse of nature, to which his will is obedient. He is in so far an inspired person—one who is beyond the common relations of men, and forms no example of the necessity or the value of an improved social state, in drawing forth and shaping the objects and aspirations of intellect. Great minds do not, to all appearance, come when they are the most wanted. They visit the earth at times when their whole career must be a struggle ; when the difficulties they must surmount, task all their powers ; when the conflict is not only with those external influences that are strong, but with their effects, that control and overlay every energy. They must war not only with the prejudices of others, but with their own ; hold a contest, hand to hand, not with the peculiar feelings alone that society regards as its great defences, but with all the corruptions with which time and ignorance incrust it, and, what is still more painful, and demands still greater exertion, with all those impressions that are found associated with every movement and every emotion of the individual's own heart and faculties. A mind that conquers such difficulties, and issues from so desperate a struggle, not only victorious, but with its character stamped indelibly on the age, and affecting those which succeed it, is not to be brought within

d by common rules. He sets forth his own decrees :  
 tes his own judgments. The world is guided by him,  
 he by the world. There is no mutual relation between  
 society; no influence on the one side—no dependence  
 ther. It is difficult, then, to say how far such a man  
 injured or improved by living in times of more refine-  
 ut one thing is certain, that the nature, if not the quality,  
 he does, would be much affected by the circumstances  
 h he lives. The poet is, perhaps, the only form in  
 enius appears, that would be exempt from this influence:  
 not altogether, yet quite enough so to preserve his  
 unbiassed, and his claims to originality entire. It is  
 to conceive Shakspeare, if he had lived in the age of  
 , more extraordinary than he is, or very different. His  
 s would not have been more perfect, though his lan-  
 ught have been more polished. We should have had  
 our, his knowledge of human nature, all the strength of  
 ination, the brilliancy of his fancy, and acuteness of his  
 me other shape. He would have moulded the spiritual-  
 ndeur, that appears an attribute in the drama of Greece,  
 pes as stately and lovely as any we now have, though  
 ght have been imbued with more of the passions and  
 ies of our nature. Still, it is a deep homage to pay to  
 ight of great genius, to suppose that even Shakspeare  
 ot have undergone some serious change, if he had lived  
 emarkable era. The imagination rests upon it with  
 asure and amazement, that a species of awe and venera-  
 gles with our thoughts. There is a visionary splendour  
 to that period, a halo of intellect and glory, that makes  
 It to individualize our associations, and not to elevate,  
 ething more than mortal, the men of that time. The  
 wever, is less dependent on things around him, than any  
 the cultivators of intellect. He models himself by no  
 e is no part of the commonplace of society. He stands,  
 loof, still distinct, from those minor regulations which  
 e thoughts of others. His movements are in a sphere  
 rn. He is the type of his own errors—the master and  
 of his own pursuits. In what way then is he likely to  
 ted by the conduct or condition of those minor and  
 matters which hold, but are only meant to hold in  
 e inferior minds? We do not, by this, design to say  
 e is no reaction, even on the greatest genius, by circum-  
 for the fact is too evident to be denied. It is altered  
 ; it is withered by them ; it seems to lose all sense of  
 endent existence, beneath the weight of the opposing  
 and counteracting laws and feelings of the position in  
 is cast. Yet, we think, poetry feels these less than the

rest of its kindred arts. The wild and wilful child of song bears no dictation. He trusts to himself: he meets and subdues difficulties by surrendering his mind to the impulses of his nature. He does not betray the powers which are entrusted to him; or show a want of confidence in their strength and guidance, by submitting to the checks which circumstances or the cold rules and unequal decisions of social regulation would have thrown in his way. Would Homer have been less or more a great poet, if, instead of being born in the rudest age of the world, and on the rocky shores of an obscure island, he had been nurtured among the great spirits of the most refined period in Grecian annals, and been bathed in the pure and exalting air of her intellectual glory? Or would Dante, if thrown back to the times of the greatness of Rome, but to the ruins of her virtue, and commencement of her decline, or thrown forward to the present period of her wreck, instead of being cast among the petty jealousies, the distraction and agitation of rival republics and their factions, have given birth the less to some great work? It might not have been the dark and extravagant fiction we now have; in so far, he would have yielded to circumstances; but it would have been some other, equal in power, and, perhaps, analogous in character. If, then, we relieve poetry from the disastrous suspicion that its very being depends on the state of things in which it happens to exist, we cannot do the same with the other fine arts. They seem, beyond a doubt, to depend on some general power, acting equally on society and the individual—the result of a due and intimate relation between those external influences which act on and through the mass, and those internal impulses that form the peculiar nature of the individual. This complete correspondence between the intellect of the man and the many, is one of the advantages of civilization, and the cultivation which follows it; and it is probably the source of all that calling forth of genius, which gives splendour to, and renders illustrious, certain eras of the world. Nothing then is forbidden to mind; it may be pampered and over refined, but it still can pursue its inclinations, and find an audience in the incessant desire of excitement and morbid love of novelty, which, at such times, so widely prevails; the two principles which always accompany a high state of improvement, that come forth in the midst of the grandeur of states—that prove the utmost bound to which the human mind can reach—the nearness of perfection, and that the limit between the ideal and the actual, towards which genius is ever extending itself, has at length been met; but which, as truly as the flight of vultures, indicate commencing decay, and that nations have outlived their energies.

If, then, we relieve poetry from the necessity of the hothouse nursing of high excitement for its excellence, if not existence, and

choose to regard it as a plant that will grow on any soil, spread its leaves, and throw its perfume among the rocks and across the Warrens of social life, not only as well, but with far more strength and beauty than in the extreme of artificial cultivation, we do not depress but elevate it in the scale of intellectual attainments. It shows consideration and homage for human genius, to conceive that its lustre and almost perfection come from a loftier source than mere culture ; that if inspiration is too strong a term to apply to the result and exercise of mind devoted to things of the world alone, yet that so noble a possession as great poetic power is a gift of infinite importance, and evidently designed for some extraordinary purpose. It needs no analysis of its value to make this evident. The most superficial observation shows it clearly enough. The admiration with which men receive it ; the wonder with which they regard it ; the exquisite pleasure that it produces ; the echo with which it bounds from bosom to bosom ; the hold with which it grasps our affections, and the murmur of delight with which it runs through the present and the dark revolutions of ages—are all sufficient testimony that, like the incendiary's firebrand, it is not thrown at random among the inflammable matter of human passion, but is directed towards some deep and mysterious but still useful and necessary end. It matters not, then, when or where the individual being is brought out. Whether it be in the heavy forest gloom of barbarous times ; under the soul-crushing sway and deadening influence of ignorance and superstition ; in the untutored simplicity of rural life, or among all the resources of the most perfect civilization ; still the poet fulfils his purpose. The elements of his character are the same ; the true extent and bearing of his faculties are unchanged by the waywardness of fortune. He builds on the iron foundation and solid ground of nature ; and, wherever the heather blooms, or a blossom or a flower opens to the spring ; wherever the mountain streams roll, the notes of birds chime upon the air ; wherever he is told, by the sympathy of his emotions, that his spirit holds alliance throughout the whole broad surface of nature—the poet finds opportunity for his existence. It is in his favour that poverty rocks his cradle—virtue is the more likely to be his companion ; that humility ushers him on the stage of life—the false glare of pride is the less likely to charm or dazzle. It is in his favour that no friend counsels as to his course—he chooses his own ; that there is no dictation, no restraint—the spirit then bounds forward, with perhaps an intractable and irregular impetuosity, but with decision and vigour. There is then room for the swell of his emotions—a wild freedom for his thoughts. He escapes the early blasts of vice ; he is not the ampered fondling of a dangerous admiration ; his feelings are

not corrupted ; his impressions are not perverted ; he is not stimulated by too early excitement ; his knowledge of mankind and of himself is not made to develope itself through the violence of bad passions ; while the contrary of all these may happen where the mind first puts forth its strength amid the voluptuous languor and withering apathy of luxury and over-refinement.

We do not, then, regard poetry as an art, in the lower meaning of the word. It is the first and the most exalted of the fine arts ; it is not improved, but injured, by all that tends to make it artificial. It is not so with painting, sculpture, or oratory. They are the result or are fostered by certain states of society. They are, in part, sciences as well as arts : therefore, they are necessarily, in some degree, artificial. Their real power is displayed where they possess the truth, the charm of nature, and all the beauty and high-wrought effect of science. They then strike the balance of good and bad taste, when the conception and the execution are in harmony ; when the ideal is heightened and more fully brought out by mechanical skill ; and all that is absurd or exaggerated is reduced, and the real and the natural are in correspondence. This is the perfection of art ; and it results from that condition of society, which is civilization in the highest meaning of the term. All these arts—poetry, painting, sculpture, and oratory—are nearly allied. They are kindred natures, though not directed to the same end. They require almost the same faculties, though accident may have given to these a different destination. The same strength and vividness of conception ; the same power of expressing passion ; the same knowledge of the human heart ; the same fertility of invention ; and a strong, if not an equal, imagination, are their several elements. The forms in which they embody their thoughts and visions, and through which they give life and figure to their creations, are the same in character. The poet takes the pen, and makes language the medium of uttering the energy of his feelings. He transcribes, in words, the force and depth of his own sensations ; and, in this way, gives vent to the fiery host of teeming fancies that pour in upon his mind, animated and called up by the incessant action of an excited imagination, and the heated zeal of an ardent sensibility. The sculptor takes the marble. He makes matter express the life of mind. He chisels the block into thought. Sublimity of conception—brilliancy of fancy—strength of passion—all the loftiest elements of intellect, stand out on the hewn mass of stone. It is the written record of his genius ; it is his appeal to the sympathies of a common nature ; it is the triumph of art over sense and feeling ; the silent voice which speaks to the heart of man through all time. The chiselled marble is as lasting as the

written page. The wrought stone has as much harmony as the laboured verse. The poetry of feeling lives and breathes from the senseless rock as vividly as from the written memorials of the poet. Who, on looking on the statue of Niobe, does not feel as deeply as if her condition had been portrayed in words? Would her situation of transcendent misery, her look of utter and remediless despair—when there comes across her the complete hopelessness of appeasing the vengeance of a god, and the struggles between the icy languor of resignation and the instinctive effort to preserve her children; would her sorrow, which in the awfulness of its reality, rises to the sublime—could this have been heightened by language? and do we not listen to her last appeal—the heart broken exclamation of her agony?

Unam, minimamque relinque ;  
De multis minimam posco, clamavit, et unam.

Poetry cannot do more than marble has done in this. The sister art here fully equals her rival, as, also, in the dying agonies of the Laocoon, and in the majesty of the Apollo, and the surpassing and voluptuous loveliness of the Venus. The painter places his conceptions on the canvass. At every movement of his hand, he sketches a part of some new creation. He pursues the idea he has conceived, and attempts to transfer it, yet glowing with the warmth of imagination. His colours are the hues of his mind. He transfuses into his otherwise lifeless forms, the vitality of his own soul; and he makes to live and breathe with the Promethean fire of its energies, the sketches of his fancy. Though he follow nature, yet he tries for something beyond. In his execution, he is necessarily an imitator; for he is here confined to the material; but, in his conceptions, he may soar to the spiritual, and strive to convey to the senses of men resemblances of things that are neither of or on the earth—representations of existence that are without shape—beings whose home is with the immortal. In the exercise of an art of which he is master, but borne on by impulses he cannot control, with the ease and daring power of genius, but dazzled by the vivid splendour, elevated by the grandeur, of his thoughts, he may attempt this; and the whole conception is so much beyond that which other men can reach—the sense of sublimity is so strongly awakened, that all idea of absurdity, or exaggeration, or hardihood, is lost in the rapturous elevation of our own feelings. We forget that we are looking on what no human mind can conceive, no human eye can see—formless visions of unearthly natures—creatures, whose life is with the Deity, whose essence is of him. In looking on the Transfiguration, or the scripture subjects of the same master, we are so far carried away, by the imposing grandeur of the representation,

as to forget that what we see before us is, in reality, absurd ; that the painter has overstepped the bounds of his art, and that he has deluded himself, as well as us, with the utmost exaltation of conception the imagination of man can reach, and with the most perfect idea of execution. What idea have we of God ? If he had left the space Deity now occupies untouched, the effect would have been the same ; for the influence over us is derived from within ourselves, from the awe with which we regard that being, and not from seeing him sketched upon the canvass, though it be with all the power and beauty of which art is capable. We can go beyond it in our own imaginations. We can clothe him in more majesty, and array him in all the mighty attributes of authority, without the invocation of the artist. He appeals to sense alone ; it withers in the contemplation. He envelopes, in all the gaudy decorations of colour, the Being who tints the heavens ; he strives to reduce within the compass of human thought, Him who is beyond all conception ; he tries to bring the infinite to the measure of the finite—the spiritual to the appreciation of the material—the Creator before the created—the immortal before the mortal ; to make apparent the Being, to whom a thousand years are but as a day, to creatures whose existence is but as vapour. Yet the absurdity of this is neglected in our admiration of the skill and genius which are displayed, and our gratification subdues our judgment. We give our homage to the painter, for showing how far art can go, and how it fails, in subjects that transcend mortal knowledge and human capacity. Each of these arts is thus made, in the hands of masters, to speak a language of its own. Each has its peculiar eloquence, its mode of reaching the human heart, and exciting its various emotions. Oratory—which comes next to poetry, from having more of passion and genius, and those attributes which ally it with poetry, and less of the qualities that make it a science, and show it, in some degree, a thing less shaped by the will, and less subject to the humbler elements of intellect, than either painting or sculpture—has also an eloquence of its own : but it takes a wider space than an appeal to our imagination. It addresses the affections, the interests, the passions. It does not confine itself to one faculty, but speaks not only to every thing which agitates the human mind, but to all that belongs to human life. It thus, of necessity, ranges through a wider circle of the sympathies of our nature than either of the fine arts, except poetry, and, perhaps, even through a wider than this. Its purpose and its influence, though somewhat less exalted, are far more direct ; for the orator must descend, at times, from the elevation of his thoughts, the lofty position to which he has raised his own feelings, to address, and interest, and engage in his favour, those more

common and humbler sentiments that connect the vast majority of human beings, one with another. Poetry need not do this ; nor perhaps is it the more lasting if it should. Men, indeed, expect from it sympathy ; but not sympathy with the ordinary and humiliating relations of life, that belong to its dull and irksome though anxious commonplace ; which disgust while we go through them, and which we desire to be rid of, though they are not only important, but essential. Men expect from it a sympathy with those deeper emotions, with those nobler faculties, which unfold to us that we are something more than our condition would imply. They desire to see in it the reflection of their conceptions ; they desire to feel it as imaging those immense and boundless wishes, those soul-enrapturing hopes, that open, at times, on the humblest creature, and are not the exclusive privilege of any ; those elevating instincts which nothing seems to annihilate, which burst through the dense obscurity of ignorance, break in upon the intervals of retreating passion, and spread resignation over all the misfortunes and bitter necessities of existence. This men desire to find in poetry ; they regard it as one of its duties ; and there is a sense of disappointment, if, instead of appealing to these sublime affections, instead of its being the mirror of the soul in its moods of power, it makes itself a mere translation of human littleness, and lowers itself to little more than the representative of base passions, the vehicle of ordinary sentiment. It may be that such poetry is not common, and that it would be of the higher order ; but it is only such poetry that can throw light and splendour across the gloom of life ; that can give increased vigour to those hopes and resolves which come unexpectedly, and seem to result from movements so deep within us, as to be no part of our volition or our reason. The orator has a task of less difficulty. He very seldom, if ever, can find an audience of so impassioned and elevated a character ; for these moods of mind, these humours of our intelligence, are not readily evoked, and do not lie so superficially as to be at the call of every one who wishes to rouse them into action. They are for the hours of silent contemplation, for those moments of self-communing, when passion cannot reach us, and all our energies are as much beyond the drift and direction of common impulse, are as far removed from the influences which usually beset and distract us, as if our nature had been suddenly changed. They are not then within the sphere of the orator. His vocation and purpose are not so elevated. However mighty the emotions he may stir, however fearful the effects he may produce, he must still adhere to the highway on which all are moving. Common life is his element ; every-day thoughts, every-day actions, the circle in which he must tread. Human passion is the force to which



he must appeal, and the lever with which he must gain his ends. He must usurp an authority over the will, throw himself into the very bosoms of those he wishes to command, and, for the time, make every listener feel as if abstracted from self, and existing only in and through another. There may be great difficulty in this; but great eloquence is impossible, unless it thus strip those to whom it is addressed of their independence, invest them with its own life, make them obedient to a strange nature, divest them of their peculiar qualities and affections, and turn a multitude into one man; changing all their usual sympathies and affections, giving to the mass but one heart, and one pulse, and one voice. This is the highest reach of the orator, and the most powerful concentration of his faculties. His address then becomes little less than an impassioned soliloquy, in which he hears only the echo of his own language, feels the throb of his own emotions, and, through the airy volume of his own breath, listens to the reverberation of his own words.

In saying that the orator must deal with, and make use of, the common feelings under whose impulses he finds men acting, we in no way lower his art, or the power of the individual. If there are great obstacles created by this necessity, admiration and astonishment are enhanced; for in an art that so many profess, and in which so few succeed, to conquer its difficulties is the test of ability, and an evidence that all its resources are wielded by a master. We have placed the mind of the orator as high as we know how to place any mind. We have given him every thing, except the first order of poetic talent, and ranked him as little inferior to the poet; and no one, who is fully alive to this majestic form of genius, can, for a moment, make any other its rival or equal. It is beyond all doubt the most sublime existence in which we are permitted to view the beauty and power of intellect, and through which a faint conception comes to us of the glory of that after state which seems reflected in its lustre. It is the type not of man, but of his spiritual nature, of all that is pure and perfect, and far removed from a condition where most things are gained through the medium of sense, and but little through the diviner energies of inspiration. We do not place the orator on a level with the poet, because we do not think the faculties are equal. Yet nature, in the extremely economical dispensation she has made of the one as well as the other, seems to have designed for the orator a lofty position on the scale of mind. But she has done the same with all extraordinary intellectual favours; and it is only by their utility, and the importance of the results which are effected, that we are able to judge where it was intended their position should be fixed. There are two points of view

by which we are enabled to decide upon this. In the one, the question meets us, whether man is fulfilling the highest offices of his nature and his destiny in confining his efforts to the affairs of the world—and whether there is not something beyond these? and whether the being who moves in a sphere without them, is not of a superior character to him who makes them the limit and the sole sphere of action of his intelligence? There can be no hesitation in our answer. It is evident that the creation of great genius is for command and direction; that the humbler are to follow and obey; that the one sends the light of its power over the broad surface of human life and its destinies; while the other is meant to creep and glean on the track that has been passed, and collect and compile, with its own skill and labour, the fragments and portions which have been struck off from the mass of men's interests and duties by the greater wisdom, as well as greater strength, of a mighty mind. It is with an assurance of this, an involuntary consciousness that such are the objects of intellect, that we are led to give to it so much admiration and homage: and it is through this feeling, this awe of power, and the mystery attached to it, that we view those constellations which cluster on the firmament of human thought. With this feeling, we regard all, whose proportions expand instead of being reduced, as we contemplate and study them; whose nature seems higher and more refined, in so far as there is nothing associated with it which holds an intimate relation with men's common and narrow sympathies; but whose whole existence seems to be allied with another and more elevated condition. But a sentiment like this would be checked and broken if men could feel that they were able to compass and fathom the motives, and design, and mental range, of those who claimed a superiority. The rights and position of genius would then be humbled and altered. There would be constant dispute as to their pretensions—a constant disregard and a general disparagement of them. These, the very polar lights of all knowledge, would vanish for the want of appreciation, and from allowing the blaze of their intelligence to be obscured by the too near approach of inferiors. In the height at which they are placed, they are enveloped in a visionary splendour that gives increased loftiness and dignity. Their dimensions, though truly great, are enlarged by the wide shadow with which they shroud the multitude beneath them. Their real power, embosomed in a deep halo that issues from the dazzling grandeur of their fame, is, perhaps, magnified by the distance where our wonder has fixed them. There are but few intellects which have won from man this intense and almost blind admiration; those few undoubtedly merit it; but would mere greatness have gained it, if they had been submitted to the

keen scrutiny and coarse observation of more common natures; or if they had wasted themselves among the ordinary interests and passions of mankind, and thrown their energies away upon the business of the world? It is to the great poet, more than to any other individual, that this homage is yielded. It is to him that is almost confined this involuntary offering of our respect and affection; and it is here the broad distinction arises between the first order of genius and that of the orator. The one—we cannot rid ourselves of the idea—is something more than man; he seems the representative of mind: while the other never appears of a loftier grade than that of a great human being like ourselves, and no higher, except in endowments, which, however they distinguish him, are still within the range of our comprehension; and thus, though eloquence is a proud and powerful talent, it never seizes time with the same strong and unyielding grasp as the more sublime efforts of reason and imagination. It interests as much from being connected with eras and events, as of itself. It belongs and is mingled so much with the affairs of general history; it divides so nicely the line between art and nature—striking almost as near to the artificial and occasional energies of the one, as to the vigour, and boldness, and unpretending impulse of the other—that it never takes a deep hold of the heart, or becomes to us a matter of feeling as well as astonishment.

It is true, that this arises from the necessity of the case. An orator is a man of action, and not a dreamer or a theorist. His whole power, and nearly all his value, consist in the direct influence he exerts, and which it is his duty to attain, over the will of men. He has to contend, not with shadows, but human beings. He does not address a class, but mankind at large. He does not find among them an audience already attentive and fitted for his purposes, but it is to be created. All his thoughts and faculties must exert themselves to this end; and they must learn to bend and accommodate themselves to its accomplishment. This throws in his way extraordinary obstacles; for he has to divest himself of his nature, or rather to multiply it, so that it may reach all those on whom he is trying to work. They are not only the wealthy and the wise, but the beggar and the fool, the stubborn, the dull and unimpassioned—all the materials that compose the great mass of men, are to be moulded to his designs; for these constitute his subjects and his instruments. He has no choice; he cannot ascend the tribune, and send forth his voice among beings of the air; but he takes the mass before him, and tries to stir the pulse, to quicken the feelings, to rouse the passions of the whole as if they were one individual. To effect this, prejudices must be subdued, animosities allayed, anger appeased, and interests conciliated; or, to secure complete

control, the opposite of these must be brought about—dislike must be heightened into hatred, concealed hostility into open contention, friendship turned to enmity, and every emotion, of which the human bosom is capable, made to vary at his pleasure. This mastery includes a large portion of the objects of oratory ; it is, if not its sole end, one of its most important ; for it is the only mode by which one man can sway the minds and passions of a multitude, and gain that complete ascendancy which makes them as children in his hands. This is not, however, the highest reach of the art. There is an eloquence of the reason, as well as of the passions, in which no art, or qualities of an art, exist. The appeal is made neither to our senses nor our interests. We are not overpowered or carried away, nor, in any degree, made the tools of trick or design, and fooled by our own weaknesses. We are charmed by a syren voice, that speaks with a calm strength to our minds ; that makes directly to the sphere of thought ; that holds us within the circle of its influence, as if enchanted, and yet neither moves nor excites—for these are not its objects—but it elevates and exalts. It does not do this by benumbing our faculties with the orator's torpedo power, by distracting us with emotion, and harassing us with every resource and energy of various excitement ; but it effects it with simpler though far grander means—by spiritualizing all thought and feeling ; by expanding our idea of our nature, and enlarging the realm of intellect ; by carrying us beyond the mere instincts of life and necessities of the world, to regions in which the soul, in the ethereality of its nature, loves to bathe as in a sea of new enjoyment, but where our conceptions and our capacity find their limit. Such was the eloquence that issued from the groves of the Academy, when, from its recesses, the voice of philosophy, as if under the influence of inspiration, came with its deep, mild tones, and spoke not of man, or human interests, but of things which transcend all knowledge—of the future—of immortality—of the joys, of the character, of an hereafter. But these things do not belong to the workings of mighty passions—to those affections which linger round and never rise beyond the realities of existence. They are the privilege of high natures—of minds that can conceive and pursue the idea of perfection ; who can chase the ideal through its loftiest soarings, and float, with easy strength, among the wide and wild realms to which imagination has borne them. These are mere images of thought, dark abstractions, deep visions, which, at times, seem to raise the obscurity shadowing our belief, and give a gleam of light and truth beyond ; but, at length, only hurl us back on the bleak and barren certainty of our finite and mortal condition. With such as these, the orator has nothing to do. He may possess the

power to rise into such speculations; but there are few occasions in which he can use them. Demosthenes listened to Plato, and, perhaps, strengthened and extended his capacity, by attempting to follow the philosopher in the depth and beauty of his reflection, and keep pace with him in the vastness and energy of his conceptions. It is true, also, that the nearer an orator may approach to a philosopher the more probable is it that he will enlarge his utility. The habit of generalizing—of labouring an idea till its very last vein is exhausted—unfolding all the particulars to which it extends, and developing all with which it is remotely associated—gives very great additional force to the exertions of the mind. A habit of this kind belongs to all superior intellect; it is natural and necessary, and, therefore, every orator of the first class will possess it, though it may not be important in the exercise of his art. The heavy task is imposed on him of descending to the level of his audience, to endeavour to convince the humblest intelligence, to persuade the most stubborn, to instruct the most ignorant; and, to do this, he must lower his mind, and bring down all his sympathies, to the grade and range of his auditors. It is his design to make men act; he must, to effect this, open every avenue to the passions, and through them to the will. He must find the readiest mode of making himself master of all the hearts that pulsate near him, and strive to win the affections, which, however common and superficial, are the surest, if not the sole, way of producing harmony of action. They form the direct path to those more violent and deep emotions, which cannot, and should not, be touched, except on occasions where great deeds are to be wrought. They are the smouldering and smothered volcanoes of feelings that cannot be approached without hazard, and, when roused, burst into fury and desolation. They are to be managed and controlled, and not let loose, but under the decree of some terrible necessity. It is not with the passions alone, however, that the orator has to do. His character as patriot and statesman imposes on him other duties than the attempt to agitate these instruments of crime and danger. An appeal must but occasionally be made to them. When tyranny is to be crushed—when a general decay of the love of freedom, and a general corruption of morals, are eating away the life of a people, or an enemy is at the gates—an appeal to them then is safe and necessary; and it is on occasions like these, that the greatest eloquence has been produced, and wrought results at which ages still marvel. The mere excitement of feeling is a task of no great difficulty. It involves no great effort of genius. It consists in little more than the offer of opportunities to the base points of our nature—to the malice and envy, the pride, and ambition, and revenge, that have their home, to some

extent, within the bosoms of all. It is but to touch those chords which range through the circle of human interests, and cling, by such innumerable fibres, to the whole social fabric. But such effects as these should be left to the labours of the demagogue. They are his by right, as the guilt and selfishness of his purposes allow him no farther reach than the movement of these active and ever-ready elements of mischief and ruin. They are the materials of disappointed ambition—the inflammable matter to which unsuccessful and unprincipled talent applies the torch—the levers with which the Catilines, the Clodii, and Gracchi, of free countries, heave from their base the principles that oppose and thwart them—which virtue has moulded, which patriotism is struggling to establish, and liberty alone can dwell in ; which, at the last, quicken with a life of their own ; and if the very soul of a people is not dead within them, fall back on their disturbers with the reaction of opinion, and press them down with the mountain-load of human curses. Cicero laments the loss of Tiberius Gracchus to his country and the cause of eloquence—that one so gifted should be seduced by the idle though sweet voice of popularity, and attempt, in conceding to its influence, and at the hazard of life and fame, the breaking in upon the laws of the republic. “*Utinam in Ti. Graccho, talis mens ad rempublicam bene quemdam fuisset, quale ingenium ad bene dicendum fuit !*”

The orator, in the best meaning of the term, has another office than this agitation of popular feeling, for effecting designs of his own, and the gratification of his revenge. He has duties, as a lover of his country, that demand from him the severest effort, the strongest and most extended exercise of his talent. Possessing the ear of a people, having not a mere mob, but a nation, for his audience, and concentrating their whole attention and interest on himself; he moves under a greater weight of responsibility than any other member of society. He carries with him the minds and hearts of millions. He has open to him every sympathy and every chord by which an impulse or an impression can be made to reach the bosoms of men ; and, wherever or whenever his voice is heard, the response is given to it in the murmur of national applause. This is especially the case in free countries, and under popular governments—the only fields for eloquence, in the best meaning of the word. He can there wield a power of which a monarch might be proud ; for his fellow citizens are the instruments of his ambition ; his equals pay him free homage ; and the adulation he receives is from those who honour, not those who fear him. His influence extends to their very destinies ; for a power that is so completely personal, and which gives such consideration to the individual, makes his character, his virtues, and his vices, a

moral centre, around which the opinions of men will circulate, and from which they will receive a taint or a lustre. This control is of far higher importance than his political weight. The last dies with him ; the first lives while the nation lives. It may be to them their life or death. It reaches beyond his own grave to that of his country. He thus rules the welfare of generations ; and his existence becomes a curse or a benefit, a disgrace or an honour ; for nations live or die by their principles, and not through the genius of individuals. A great mind, in its ascendancy, establishes or overturns these principles. It develops, to the utmost, their purity, or it shows their deficiency. It graduates the whole extent of human thought, and, of course, of human action. Multitudes, in this way, come under the domination of a single man ; and no other testimony is wanted of the infinite importance of the kind of principles he inculcates, or of the value of great virtues in himself. Men cannot be governed by cold and vague generalities. These are mere armed shadows, and have no command in the excitement of passion to which nations are liable. They require something to which they can turn in these moments of peril ; that brings before them the dignity and glory of the past ; something that flatters them, as representing their own greatness ; something that insures to them the purest conduct ; that figures to them the most consummate virtue. This is found in the names and characters of their great men. They are the safest and noblest monuments of national worth—the simplest, but sublimest records of the fame and honour of a people. Every succeeding generation turns to them as the type and standard of all that is worthy and all that is illustrious. In every crisis, and in every misfortune, their example cheers or frowns upon their course. In every danger, it is pointed out and called upon as the rallying point of their exertions and their hopes. In every struggle, it animates despair, and stirs the spirit, like a trumpet-call. During the growth of a young people, its influence is their guide ; in their prosperity and grandeur, it should be fixed in their hearts ; in their decline, though it cannot conquer nature, it spreads a lustre over their dying greatness, and beams with a full light upon their ruin. There are periods in the career of nations, in which the importance of great names and the authority of great examples are deeply felt. A long line of events may rest entirely on their moral influence ; though there has never been an extraordinary era, when the fate of nations was in the balance, which has not brought out some mind equal to the occasion. Eloquence, or action, frequently the two together, have been the sum of its properties and powers. The orator, the living combination and representative of these two sources of authority over men, has

generally been the instrument at such periods. Times of disaster, moments of convulsion, conspiracies against the state, and revolutions, seem the moments when he is called forth to take the direction of the destinies of men. This would apparently show that he was intended for great purposes ; or it may be, that then excitement adds tenfold strength to every energy. 'The calm of prosperity is only favourable for the arts of peace ; but when principle is at war with principle—when the oppressed and oppressor are waging a deadly contest—when soul is confronting soul, not only in the senate, but on the field of battle—then is required some great spirit to still the storm ; some one who will restore or renew the shattered elements of men's moral and political condition. Men have seldom been disappointed in this. The times have ever brought up some one to command them ; and the daring genius of an individual has grappled with and subdued the strife. The histories of free countries offer the best evidence of this, as it is in such that the returns of dangerous eras are the most frequent ; and it is for this reason that, in them, the examples of great eloquence are to be found. We need not turn to Greece or Rome to testify to the fact. England and France will verify it. Both were deficient in orators till their revolutions. The first, though ever a free country, to a great degree, was always too far overlaid by the forms, and privileges, and principles of a monarchy, ever to admit of the freedom of thought, which is the first element of eloquence. But these were broken through by revolution ; and all her impetuous and strong spirits were let loose under a republic. From that time to the present, the house of commons has contained some one man of considerable, if not great, oratorical abilities. The French revolution, however, produced in the two countries four men of immense talent ; two of them the equals of the most celebrated of antiquity ; and we purpose to show the importance of that event in the calling forth of the best powers of such men, and to mingle, with our remarks, opinions on their character as orators.

Perhaps the chief of these, as an orator, was Mirabeau. At times, we are disposed to think him the greatest the world has known ; for the only way to compare remarkable characters, is either by the results they produce, which may be accidental, or the occasion that calls them into action. There can be no dispute, on these two points, as respects this individual. The results he laboured at, and which he was the main mover and instrument in executing, were of a nature that all time must feel : the occasion was a portion of the most astonishing epoch that has ever involved the welfare of human interests, or engaged the speculations of the mind of man. So far as these go, there can be no hesitation in assigning to him the loftiest



position, not only among orators, but among every other class of agents who have swayed the affairs of mankind. He undoubtedly possessed qualities which would have made him a fearful instrument of good or evil, at any era—qualities which are not often centred in one man, and which, by their own force, must, at all times, have carried him to the level of his desires. An audacity, as unbounded as the circumstances were awful in which it was called forth; a personal courage that nothing daunted; a tact and readiness in speaking, that never made it necessary for him to concede to a better prepared adversary; and a vehemence that overwhelmed, if it did not convince—that silenced, awed, and confounded the undecided, the timid, and hesitating. Let one bring before him the scenes of the revolution, and he will at once appreciate the nature of the energies of Mirabeau. We will make due allowance for a man in the midst of danger not being able to judge of its degree, and admit that the coward may see too much, the brave too little. But Mirabeau not only saw the crisis, but foresaw its consequences. He took a wide view of the vast scene before him. His mind encircled the whole future. He felt the character of the moment. He knew that the long arrears of ages were to be then settled; that irresponsible power was at length at the mercy of those it had so long oppressed; that its battlements, fenced round as they were by usurped privileges, might now, in an instant, be overturned. He was, therefore, fully aware of his own and his country's danger; and must have felt, when the powers of his soul were brought into action to advance or restrain a project, to give or stay an impulse, that he was acting with the world as spectators, and posterity as his judges. There was then every reason for the most anxious caution, and most consummate prudence; and he fully acted upon both. But they were not evinced in a timid reserve, or shuffling policy of expedients, with which weak men attempt to resist the progress of events beyond their comprehension and their courage. It was too late for these. The blast blew too loudly for the voice of experience to be heard; and the danger was too imminent for the suggestions of reflection. No human power could resist the onward course of things. It was the season for action, and action alone. The heated lava of human feeling was flooding from its volcanic source, and all that could be done was to give way or to direct it. Mirabeau chose the latter course. He confronted the danger, and offered himself as the victim of the power he hated, for the liberty he loved; and stood in the front, before the furious excitement of a nation, warring with law and order, and attempting to crush every recollection of the past. At one time, the progress of the revolution depended on his will. The throne, the monarchy, the

cause of the people, were within his power. Yet with these momentous interests, balanced and supported by his caprice, and altogether relying on the course he took, he never withdrew from his principles or position, or retreated from responsibility, or for a moment seemed to despair. "Slave, go tell your master we are here by the power of the people, and nothing shall expel us but the power of the bayonet," was his exclamation from the tribune of the national assembly, to the astonished emissary of the king, and with some reservation for something theatrical in the manner, it was still an extraordinary instance of daring. The king of France had been regarded as holding almost unlimited power, and there was, in consequence, the long habit of submission and respect for his authority weighing on men's spirits. Yet, in the face of these, a bold member of the "tiers état," a body as yet unacknowledged, and only then beginning to assume independence of action, and still considered as in nearly feudal servitude, sends forth defiance to his sovereign, and, before his country, thus breaks the bondage of a nation. Whether it was done from mere impulse, or was an effort of politic courage, or one of those sudden gleams of thought that open, in an instant, a wider view of distant consequences than the ponderings of deep sagacity—it was, in any light, a remarkable exclamation, and, from its results, in the taking of a weight from men's minds, and that long and anxious suspense which grew naturally from the crisis and the awful position of the nation, and thus at once putting the revolution in motion, it became even sublime. It was all that was wanted; and, from that moment, the destiny of France was fixed. "Slave," and this to a messenger from a monarch whom law, and habit still stronger than law, made almost despotic, followed by language of the utmost contempt, as if the emissary, and he who sent him, were the meanest of mankind; and then the assertion, which must have sounded like a thunder-clap to all Europe, that the people had assumed rights no earthly power could thenceforth remove, and the relations between kings and subjects were to be altered or for ever separated—give to the words a majesty that nothing can exceed. Mirabeau, from that time, became the champion of the liberties of France. He took on himself the duties attached to the character, with the ease and strength of a great mind; and he performed them with a fidelity and a spirit which proved that all the desires of personal ambition were merged in his patriotism.

There is another and a colder view to be taken of this man. It may be said, and perhaps with truth, that this magnificent display of lofty daring was rather the recklessness of a ruffian than either fortitude or moral courage. We admit that there is nothing sublime in this display of an energy which may

be mere desperation; that men can look upon it with no respect, or take for an example a boldness, derived not from the intensity of deep emotion, but from the callousness of vice and villany. We concede all this to the moralist, yet, with a full sense of its truth, we do not entirely bow to the decision. Admitting all the baseness that made him contemptible, we still think that there is much to admire. There is a moral sublimity in great courage that carries us away with admiration; and the feeling is strengthened infinitely where, as in his case, the conduct of the man was equal to the circumstances by which he was surrounded. It could not be insensibility to danger, or mere desperate bravado—the occasion hardly admitted of these; but it appeared the highest degree of fearlessness which a man can show, who is emboldened by his cause, and made intrepid by the hope of producing great results, and the determination to make the attempt. There was much, certainly, in the early part of Mirabeau's life, that made men look with suspicion on his course. They could not conceive the existence of purity of motive, where there was great depravity of moral character. It was impossible to hope for great excellence where the passions had been uncontrolled, and had borne the individual into the worst of youthful vice. It was difficult to imagine that the man could issue from the poisonous vapour of low dissipation with pure principles, or a disposition for good; though there seems a sort of law in morals that the same ardour and energy which a youth has displayed in gratifying his inclinations, however immoral, may, under a change of circumstances, accompany actions of virtue. There is sometimes a pride of character in this unsteady whirl of the passions, that forbids the performance of a base thing; and which, when once made to act in situations where the object is honourable, gives force and dignity to the efforts of the man. Shakspeare's Henry the Fifth is an example.

“ The breath no sooner left his father's body,  
But that his wildness, mortified in him,  
Seemed to die too; yea, at that very moment,  
Consideration like an angel came  
And whipped the offending Adam out of him;  
Leaving his body as a paradise,  
To envelope and contain celestial spirits;  
Never was such a sudden scholar made;  
Never came reformation in a flood,  
With such a heady current, scouring faults;  
Nor never hydra-headed wilfulness  
So soon did lose his seat, and all at once,  
As in this king.”

And yet this change took place after the indulgence of every vicious excess—

"Since his addiction was to courses vain ;  
His companies unlettered, rude and shallow ;  
His hours filled up with riots, banquets, sports ;  
And never noted in him any study,  
Any retirement, any sequestration  
From open haunts and popularity."

But it should be remembered, by those who may compare themselves and their present circumstances with Mirabeau or Henry the Fifth, and found a hope of future excellence upon their example, that they were extraordinary men. The one, heir to a crown ; the other, an actor in such scenes as the world had never before witnessed, and may never again. Indeed there are but few instances of the disuse or misuse of talent in early life being made up by after study : Alfieri is, perhaps, the most remarkable ; but, as we have said, extraordinary men should never be taken as examples. They have the power to supply deficiencies, and even turn to an advantage all that seems destructive, and which, with other men, would be certainly ruinous. The mind is with them intensely active. It siezes and ponders over all that comes before it. Its own operations are its study ; and the moral tendency of certain courses of conduct, as they affect the individual and the many, do not escape its observation. It will, therefore, sit in judgment on itself, and reclaim and reform its vices and its misconceptions. All this is beyond the feebleness of weaker spirits ; for it is energy of will which gives to these remarkable persons this complete command over their minds and their moral conduct, and which draws between them and the rest of mankind, a broad line of distinction. But it is very possible for vice to become a habit, and corrode the vitality of all moral sense. Not only all principle becomes extinct, but its very perception is dead within them. The barrier, which the instinct of our nature raises between vice and virtue, is broken down, and the whole being approaches the brute. But this cannot happen with these highly endowed natures. They still feel and still perceive all the beauty that lies around them. They are not and cannot be dead to the sources of those emotions which impel them to action ; which are ever at work in the depths of their souls ; whose violence, though they do not resist it, and though it drive them on to the path of danger, yet, from the suffering it creates, keeps them alive to the powers they possess, to the duties they have forsaken, to the time they have wasted, to the wrong they are committing to themselves and their fellow men. Great genius is ever conscious of its importance, and has fixed within itself a lofty idea of its destiny. It cannot rid itself of this feeling, that grows from the comparison it makes between its own powers and those of other men ; and it is, therefore,

ever seeking a field of exertion in proportion to these energies, and in obedience to the strength of the passions which master and impel it. This desire for action cannot be subdued, but it depends on circumstances as to its direction, and on the principles which the individual imbibes from education. It may take the path of pleasure, or that of ambition; it may give way to every impulse, and seek the gratification of every vicious propensity; or it may permit itself to be enchained within the bounds of social and moral laws, and become a gentle and submissive subject to the wide tyranny of opinion. Still, whatever track it chooses, the will always preserves a command over the mind, and can open for it a field of intellectual action whenever an object is in view worthy of its efforts. This was the case with Mirabeau.

In the early part of his career he was guilty of every species of vice and even crime. He was persecuted by his father, and expelled from his country; but he still laboriously exerted every faculty of his mind. This came of the long and severe trials he endured; and the conflict with his passions, to which the forced restraint and inaction from his repeated incarcerations subjected him, invigorated and made him capable of more concentrated effort. There was probably a great moral impression left by these personal sufferings. His love of liberty, that seemed to glow as intensely as if he had been born in a republic; his deep and unmitigated disgust and detestation of all oppression; his putting forward what at that time must have been regarded as a wild and even criminal idea, the power and rights of the people, as distinguished from and as beyond the privileges of royalty—all those sentiments of constitutional and representative government that were then new in the place where he gave them utterance, and with which a large portion of the world is still battling—a part urging, a part resisting—may be traced to the solitary reflection, the wearing and oppressive agony, the gloom and desolation of a prison. It was there that his genius was schooled into patience, and taught to weigh and consider its capacity. It was there, perhaps, he pondered on schemes of future action, and fostered and treasured up the measures of his hate and indignation. It was there he determined on being revenged for his own wrongs, by making himself the avenger of those of his country; and, though issuing from the bosom of an aristocracy, with all the prejudices of birth, and the privileges of rank multiplied by feudal rights, he cast them off, and plunged at once amid the body of the people. The powers of his mind that had been strengthened by solitude, and his passions which had been envenomed by injury, and made still fiercer, though more direct, in their purpose and action, were henceforth devoted to freeing

he people of France from the servitude of ages. His voice was heard even above the shouts of a nation, and the strains of his eloquence were listened to in the anarchy and convulsion of revolution. It floated to the bosoms of monarchs as well as people, and awoke Europe from a lethargy.

We have not said, nor do we assert, that virtue was developed in Mirabeau equally with his talents. The fact was otherwise. He continued to the last the victim of low passions, a mark of contempt to the good, of fear to the timid, and of hate to his rivals. But he was the man for the times. They required action, not principle. The lawless and ferocious advocate of the liberties of the people was of more service than the honest but hesitating and scrupulous man of virtue. The object was to hurry on the revolution, and drive to an extremity the king and aristocracy. One such thunderbolt as Mirabeau, was of more use than many cautious and censorious Catos. There are periods when good retreats before evil. Men treasure up, by misconduct, long arrears of mischief, and though the "sensual and the dark rebel in vain," yet they wear the laurel for a season. They are the agents of retributive justice, and from the hot steam of the desolation they create, comes an atmosphere of more purity. The French revolution was the result of disturbing the elements of evil. It did not want and would have overpowered all good. Great virtue could not confront it; blood was the river of its baptism—Robespierre the type of its character. We do not allude to its effects on the liberties of men—they are undoubtedly beneficial, though time must confirm them—but to its conduct alone, and the kind of persons it brought out as essential to its cause. Mirabeau will always rank among the first of orators, but as nothing else. His course is too abhorrent to the better feelings of society, to make him more than an object of admiration for his genius; and nearly all the influence of this is destroyed by disgust at his vices, and suspicion of his motives. He sought power by flattering the people, and was flattered in return. He cajoled them, and they complimented him. He stood forward as their advocate, and they embraced him as their defender. But his passions and his pleasures created wants; the heated breath of men frenzied by his intemperance, the shouts and the applause of the mob, were only for the ear. The court stepped in and relieved him, and the whole charm of his intellectual greatness is broken by the baseness of receiving a bribe.

As to the character of his eloquence, there is no difficulty in deciding. Strength and vehemence are its chief elements—the two qualities absolutely necessary at that period. He is beyond what we supposed a Frenchman could be; there being far less labouring for effect, and less desire for display,

than is thought to belong to the French nation. One would hardly look among them for a popular orator; nor are we sure that Mirabeau's manner would be thought, in this country or in England, as fitted for a popular assembly. It is difficult to conceive, judging from the nature of his countrymen, that he could have escaped rant and declamation. They are too lively and excitable a people to listen to the deep dulness of wire-drawn logic, for the true republican length of time. They must have excitement; and no speaker can claim among them, as his peculiar right, or as a duty to his constituents, the determination to put them to sleep with a drowsy discourse. It is probable, however, that, in all particulars, Mirabeau would have appeared as well in congress or the house of commons as in the tribune of the national assembly. He had evidently great power of adapting himself to circumstances. He had been taught very early the value of practical ability, and not to suppose that the ideal superseded the actual in the affairs of life; or that metaphysics or profound philosophy were wanted in the management of a nation or a mob. He was in truth an actor—one who assumed a character, and put all his best points foremost; but he had a thorough knowledge of himself, and perfect acquaintance with men, and knew how to draw them into his designs without using force, or alarming their self-love; though he could, if it suited his purpose, menace like Jove, and still the roar of opposing factions with the thunder of his voice, and a shake of what he called "his boar's head," or, like Belial, please the ear with soft persuasion. His opinion of himself was, at one time, that, though his youth had been stormy, and through the fault of others, as well as his own, he had committed great errors, yet he defied any one to show that he had not always acted upon the noblest sentiments, and from the most disinterested motives, and been guided by a proud independence and uniformly inflexible principles. This opinion of himself and his political conduct, might, at that time, have been correct, as it was before his necessities drove him to accept a pension from the court, which, as he said, was to give him power over them, and not to increase theirs over him; and it must be confessed that his zeal for the cause of the revolution does not seem for a moment to have yielded to the influence of the king, or been governed, in any way, by this suspicious course. A late publication by an intimate companion, who was near him during the wild and furious scenes of the time, somewhat lowers his intellectual character. It considers him an extraordinary though not a great man; and this would be certainly just, if all the circumstances mentioned really occurred. The establishing a fame upon the labours of other men—the becoming merely a mouth-piece for others' reflections—the

ing to the world, an astonished and wondering world, too, on occasions the most momentous, and from an arena that was the battle field of all thought, opinions he had not considered—shows a want of principle, as well as a want of grasp of mind, and a want of principle, we must say, that no admiration of his genius, if we allow that he possessed any, can, in the slightest degree, extenuate. But taking for a fact that Mirabeau did usher to the world this plagiarism from the conceptions of others, though we cannot pardon, we can easily account for it. His youth had been one of extreme agitation, and consumed in the violence of passion. His career had, as he says of himself, far better fitted him for an adventurer than a philosopher: this was an assumed character—the other his nature; and he certainly possessed the two qualities most valuable and most successful for those who are to make their way out of society—boldness and impudence. He had gone through no patient and continued course of study by which the mind secures a strong control over its movements, acquires the habit of investigation and reflection, and meets with calmness every obstacle. But if his intellect had been of the very highest order, it is very possible that it would not have met with vigour, or managed with facility, the variety of new and important subjects that came before it. The sudden outbreak of strange ideas, feelings, and principles—the overflow of wild ideas that flooded the ordinary pathway of mind, would have embarrassed the most extraordinary intelligence. Mirabeau is, therefore, excusable in not fully comprehending all the matters that so suddenly broke upon him and France, and the role of which he was obliged to advocate or oppose; but he was utterly without excuse in palming on that time and the name, under the sanction of his name, a host of what were then dangerous and terrible doctrines, and which are even now under dispute, and in doing it with a decision and apparently deep conviction of their truth, supported as they were by a surpassing eloquence that made them irresistible; while, at the same time, he could only have conceived them matters of necessity or expediency, and not founded on wisdom or experience. But we will now turn to another celebrated character, called, or rather fortunately existing at this same time, of another nation, though of similar temperament—a man not of the occasion, but capable of being illustrious whenever his powers were committed to a sufficiently extended field of action; possessing, as they seem to have done, similar natures, they are remarkable examples of the difference education may make in the tendencies and operations of the mind. Both were accused during their lives of unprincipled ambition; the one, at aiming to destroy the institutions of his country by the opportunity of a



revolution that existed without his agency; the other, of effecting the same purpose by bringing on, by his own efforts, a similar catastrophe. Time is avenging both their memories; both are now patriots—neither a traitor. The world is coming round to their opinions, and has not made them the outcasts and marks for scorn that it was prophesied by their enemies they would be.

Next to Mirabeau, perhaps his superior, and certainly, in many particulars, much beyond him as a popular orator, is Charles Fox. The essential difference between them arises from the habits of their two nations, more than from the habits of their intellects. Sounder and better founded principles, more extended knowledge, the development of the reason rather than of the imagination—all that can give assurance of honourable distinction, especially to one intended from his birth for the legislature of a free country, are the natural consequences of an English education. These constitute the dividing qualities between the two men. There was the same violence of passion, the same ambition, the same love of country; though the one had never gone through such misfortunes, or been thrown among so many agitating scenes, as the other, nor acquired that deep intimacy with the worst portions of human nature which is gathered by indiscriminate association with the elements of society, and which was of such importance to Mirabeau in the management of the materials of the assembly. He knew the geography of that body perfectly—where to find the unscrupulous, the designing, the ambitious, or the honest—for what men were working, and how they were working: he became himself a part of each man's design, by placing himself as an obstacle in his way, or urging him with some of his own boldness and warmth of impulse. This was the secret of his sway, as it made him far more dreaded than any exertion of genius or display of logic could have done. The arena of Fox was altogether different. He had only to inspire men with his own generosity and liberality, to make them throw by the trammels of custom; in truth, his only object and sole labour were to open their bosoms to the spirit of the times. He only partially succeeded, as his countrymen are the least malleable or excitable of people, and require not only length of time, but a deep conviction, before they will give way, and let feeling surmount and subdue interest. We are not sure that the term popular orator applies to him, or defines his rank. Burke called him the most brilliant debater the world had ever seen, which does not imply the talents of an orator, but rather the possession of argumentative and logical abilities. He has been called the Demosthenes of the house of commons, from being supposed to possess some of the attributes of the celebrated Athenian,

whose name calls up the impression of the highest powers, and the great ends for which they can be exerted. All contemporary accounts declare him the most impassioned and vehement speaker ever seen in the house of commons; and, in truth, his speeches are full of a warmth and impetuosity of feeling that convince you of his sincerity, and, from the seeming imprudence of his remarks, strengthen very much the idea of integrity. He appears to repress nothing, but to give way to the moment, as if it were all important, and the last opportunity he should have of making known his opinions. This disposition to exaggerate present circumstances, at times perhaps from conviction, but more frequently for producing effect, is the usual mode with those who address popular assemblies, or intend their language for the popular ear. Fox had some excuse, however, in the nature of the times, that were undoubtedly dangerously excited, though his latent object might have been to rouse the feelings of the nation by popular topics, and change the current that then set so strong for the minister. We are willing to acquit him of the bad ambition, the traitorous and revolutionary designs, with which his enemies charged him. Except in the broad accusations of his opponents, we can detect no trace of even suspicious motives. His conduct, in the midst of all the exasperation of the moment, the disappointment of his hopes, the sneers of his foes, and desertion of his friends, appears to us patriotic and magnanimous. But his violence, accompanied as it was by a determined and even captious assault on the measures of government, has encouraged the idea of his being instigated by personal objects. Any other mode of accounting for that, may be as near the truth; for private slander, or the calumnies of political hostility, should not enter into historical evidence. The condition of the times may offer the best apology for Fox and his rival; and the conduct of both can be as well justified on the basis of the purest intention, when that is considered, as in assuming that the one acted from an unprincipled ambition, and the other was directed by a narrow-minded policy, and governed by inflexibility of temper. Europe was convulsed; its strongest and most dangerous nation fearfully excited, and warring with every neighbour in its principles, and ready to fight to the last for their diffusion and defence. It was not then the part of kings or cabinets to go into an argument as to whether they were right or wrong. They saw that, wherever the truth might lie, their thrones and lives were at hazard. Their aim was then to save themselves; and to do this, involved the necessity of resisting to the utmost the crusade France had undertaken against all who did not acknowledge the doctrines she put forth. Her gigantic efforts, her tremendous excitement, compelled other nations either to the degrading

course of concession, or decided resistance to French ferocity, and supplicants for mercy ; or else of pledging every resource and every energy against the foe, and a determination to conquer or be conquered. At the commencement of the struggle, many or most of the powers of Europe took this lofty ground, and the war was declared "*bellum internecinum*." It was forgotten that it was a war of principle, in which the parties were the governed and their governors ; the one seizing the occasion to put forward claims to which heretofore all expression had been closed ; the other driven for their own preservation, however they might feel the justice of those demands, to oppose them through all extremities. In England the abuses under which men suffered, and the restraints they produced, made the freedom they really enjoyed a source of danger ; for the people knew what they had, and what they had not, what they should have, and what was kept from them ; and, in this way, adding to excitement, by making their wants and deficiencies yet more evident. This appeared at the opening of the French revolution. The discontented of England took advantage of the occasion to urge their claims on the government. All classes had some wish to gratify ; the disappointed and profligate, rich and poor, wanted power, and the government, in the midst of this turbulent state of feeling, was compelled to strengthen itself by appealing to patriotism, ambition, and fear. The great question was, whether the way in which this was done, under existing or under any circumstances, was justifiable. On this point the party in power and the opposition divided ; and on this ground the two champions of things as they were, and things as they ought to be, the rivals in ability and desire of power, took their position, and fought foot to foot for more than twenty years.

Pitt chose to consider the revolution in France as an accident ; that it had not been produced by a long course of oppression ; and that its seeds had not been for a long time taking root in the minds of men ; but that it was the result of mere temporary excitement, and instigated by a band of visionary philosophers, while its chief actors were a body of ferocious assassins. He saw nothing in it but the subversion of all government—the downfall of law and order—the obliteration of the prerogatives of time and every vestige of the past ; and ridiculed the idea that it was the opening of a new era in the history of man. Fox took a directly opposite view. He regarded it as the greatest event that had ever occurred—a revolution in man's civil and intellectual life—a complete change in his destinies and his hopes. However the manner in which it was conducted was open to abhorrence—however fierce and bloody its scenes—he looked beyond these, and did not hesitate to approve, with his whole

soul, the event itself. His opponent saw, under the false pretence of justice, the innocent, the virtuous, all whose wealth made them objects of envy, whose qualities dignified human nature, perish on the scaffold. He drew back from the contemplation of the future in the view of the present, and permitted the disgust and horror roused by the scenes before him, to turn him from the perception of the developments of time. The other lamented the wide ruin and reckless havoc that accompanied the event; but considered them as the natural and necessary consequences of a long oppressed people suddenly and by violence acquiring their rights, without understanding or knowing how to make use of them. The blame of these excesses was not with the people of France, but with those who had kept them under the basest of all servitude—the vassalage of ignorance; and who now deemed that from a condition of such degradation they were at once to become a mild and enlightened nation. Was it to be supposed that they would not act up to the character thus impressed upon them, and seek retribution, without regard to any thing but the gratification of their revenge? To hope the contrary, was to expect too much from men; and it was on this ground that Fox looked from the manner in which France conducted the revolution, to the principles it involved; and in these he saw freedom to men, equal rights, and all by which human character can be elevated, all by which men and nations can be advanced in moral excellence and intellectual greatness. This was a natural view with a mind so enlarged and liberal as that of Mr. Fox, and which ever took the favourable side of human character. But Pitt thought this romantic or untrue; or, from his situation of first minister, he had formed very different conclusions concerning men from those of his opponent, or he might have been really alarmed for England, or, what is as probable, his mind was not expanded and warmed by his heart, but narrowed by the extreme caution his position required, and its tremendous responsibility. There was this difference in the character of the two men; the one ever advocated the most generous principles, and carried all his ideas of government to an extreme: he wished an entirely new era, in which men and minds should be able to exist by themselves and for themselves, without the control of self-constituted power; in fact, he upheld the sovereignty of the people. Pitt clung to old habits of thinking, and conceived that men could only be governed by their interests or corruption. From the sketch here given of the characters and principles of these two individuals, it is not difficult to declare which of the two was the better orator—the one who opened the heart, who warmed its benevolence, who excited its best and purest feelings, who elevated men's views of himself

and his fellow men, who struggled to awaken his hope of attaining excellence, and to improve his capacity for it, and who, to sum his virtues as a man, in the words of Burke, was born to be loved; or he who called forth men's patriotism by stimulating their cupidity and pandering to their ambition, who relied upon corruptness of motive and selfish design as the basis of human action, and the conceding to these as the surest if not only means of making men subserve his purposes.

It would be unjust to create an impression that Pitt acted on these principles with any personal object; he is universally acquitted of this, though he is charged with political corruption in all its extremes. This might be, and probably was, essential for the preservation of his power; but whether power so preserved is for the moral or political advantage of a nation, is another question. He may have regarded himself (and it is best if not safest in judging men to concede to them honourable motives) as the defender of his country and its constitution; and with this feeling and for such ends, that any mode of supporting himself in authority was lawful and necessary. But, however we may view Pitt, it is impossible to conceive him to be as great an orator as his rival. His dignified manner, his well modulated voice, his beautiful language and polished periods, heightened as they were by his father's fame, his own talents and moral character, must have made him effective in any body; though, through the idea one forms of the cold concentration of his manners and disposition, the heart and imagination do not warm to him as they do to Fox. We cannot conceive him to have been a popular orator, or as more than a debater—the term Burke applies to Fox, though he qualifies its meagreness, and the minor rank it seems to assign him, by the words, “the most brilliant and accomplished the world has seen.” But perhaps the best example of what an orator should be, is Burke. He cannot be cut down to the narrow sphere of a debater, but moves in the full orbit of a great orator. His fine philosophical spirit, his capacity, more enlarged than any other of his time, his acquirements, the richness of his imagination, and brilliancy of his fancy, made him pre-eminent among the great spirits of his time, not as an orator alone, but as a man. No one approached his intellectual dimensions; no one could encounter him without being humbled; and no one could listen to him without being instructed. To this we have the testimony of Fox after their rupture, “that if he were to put all the political information which he had learned from books, all which he had gained from science, and all which any knowledge of the world and its affairs had taught him, into one scale, and the improvement which he had derived from his right honourable friend in the other, he should be at a loss to decide to which to give the

reference." Yet, with all these extraordinary qualities, his influence in the house of commons was very trifling; in part, because they could not appreciate him; in part, because he overlooked many of those minor acquisitions, as they really are, though of importance, where common minds are to be addressed and common feelings to be influenced. But much of this want of influence was owing to a want of discretion. He does not appear to have understood the management of himself; and, of course, was unable to acquire a control over others. His exhibitions of ill temper and irritable feeling were, at times, almost disgusting, and they took from him at last the moral weight which belonged to him from the greatness of his talents and excellence of his character, and which, in itself, forms a powerful instrument in creating authority and attracting attention. To one who is not favoured with a good temper, or who has not a bad one under control, all contradiction or opposition is a source of agitation. To one who, with this defect, possesses, at the same time, commanding abilities, and who, from the nature of his mind, is led to regard little things with contempt, the small opposition of small minds, with their various modes of irritating and thwarting, becomes something more than an inconvenience. Insignificant as they may be, when brought to their true measure, they still can fling their venomous weapons with effect, and it is a mistake, not unfrequently made by these great capacities, to lay themselves open to these petty attacks by the neglect of parts, degrees, and elements of a matter with which they may be occupied, and to presume, because they have perfectly mastered it, that inferior minds will be equally ready and equally able. It was in little things, if in any thing, that Burke exposed himself to the ridicule of the silly and ignorant. In all that constituted true greatness, in all that showed strength and extent of capacity, he was beyond the jealousy or detracting of any one. His eminence could not be denied in these points; and it was from this elevation that he was made to overlook those details in affairs and individual differences in character, that the practical statesman and man of the world observe and employ, and which are with them all or nearly all they know or conceive to be important. His mind was not of the nature that would have made him a useful minister. He took too large a view, and generalized too much, to have that ready adaptation of means to ends, that quick insight into motives, and the rapid glance and keen penetration into times and occasions, which form almost the sole value of one who directs the details of government. He perhaps judged too well of mankind, or despised them too much, to be ever watching conduct, and prying into feeling, or trying to gratify their desires. He could not, which is all important in one who undertakes the

government of men, appreciate or make use of those minor exigencies and small opportunities in affairs which constantly occur; nor, perhaps, was it possible for him to turn to his advantage those foibles in character by which men are controlled far more easily than through uncommon virtues or great vices. There is no necessity for drawing a comparison between the three men to whom we have alluded as examples in oratory. Burke was, beyond a doubt, the first mind of his day, and the first orator of his nation at any time. We can thus easily fix his position as respects his intellectual character, but where does he rank as an orator? He was not a popular orator, as that term is generally understood. He could not have addressed a mob from the hustings with effect—certainly not with half the effect of Fox. He could not have commanded their feelings, or carried them with him through a long oration. He could not have met in any way the ignorance and stupidity of the mass; but, like Cæsar, he would have swooned, not from the stinking atmosphere, but with indignation at their dulness or indifference. He was not, in this low meaning of the word, a popular orator, nor was he such if we carry him to the house of commons, where, in the best sense, a man may be considered a popular orator—where the majesty of the people of Great Britain is addressed—where their power is expressed and their will given forth. Yet here, except to very few, who listened to the overflowings of his genius, who sought information, and who knew that they had before them, in one sense, the wisest and greatest man of the times, it does not appear that he commanded the minds or feelings of the house. He did not arouse the dull, stir the lazy, or attract the indifferent; but, on the contrary, he fatigued his audience by not meeting the tone of their minds: all his splendid eloquence was wasted; they could not rise to the height where he soared; there was no sympathy between them—the one moving on a barren level, and interested only in commonplace; the other assuming a wide range, and circling a vast sphere of thought. There could of course be no communion between natures so different.

“ Who, too deep for his hearers, still went on refining,  
And thought of convincing while they thought of dining;  
Though equal to all things, yet for all things unfit,  
Too nice for a statesman, too proud for a wit.”

These lines contain the sources of Burke's deficiencies as a public man, and the real cause of his failure in political life. The being too deep for his hearers, the refining, the trying to convince while they thought of dining, were, in a body like the house of commons, insuperable difficulties in the path of success. A popular assembly is not the place such a man

should have chosen for creating or retaining power. It is too gross in its sentiments, and too fierce in its passions, and too variable in their degree, to be congenial with elevated or refined feeling. In a free country it is the arena of rival factions, not the council board of the nation. Men go there with their minds already made up, and not open to conviction, or within the reach of reason. Ambition enters there upon its struggles, and all are too strongly excited by their own selfish objects, to be reached by the broader views but less alluring demonstrations of philosophical thought. With the aspiring, the great aim is to touch the chords of national feeling, to respond to its vibrations, to discover and make use of the excitements of the moment, and to be ever in front of the desires and ever ready to express the tendencies of the popular will. Philosophy has no seat assigned to her. She does not meet the fickle feeling of the hour, or endeavour to show a false sympathy with the whims and fancies which rise and sink with the passions and fashions of the moment. To represent her then, as Mr. Burke did, and not the passions or interests of men, and never to be directed by personal ambition, was to remove himself from the means of gaining political authority; and thence all the exhibitions of his genius, put forward with an eloquence altogether unequalled, were regarded with astonishment, but fell on the ears of a cold audience, and echoed from the walls of the house of commons, as the voice rolls through the forsaken chambers of a ruin. If we endeavour to find a cause for this, the only one which seems satisfactory is that he was beyond his audience. It was not that he did not go into detail, that he did not display clearly all the parts and bearings of a subject; for he did this with as much fidelity or ability as any of his contemporaries, but that his sentiments were too refined, his eloquence too elevated, his thoughts too philosophical, to be attained by the grosser perceptions and lower habits of thought that entered into the intellectual formation of his listeners. As a body, the house of commons possesses but little variety of talent. There are generally a few men of great ability, who take the lead, and do all the business; but, beyond these, the indulgences of mind seldom vary from mediocrity. There are few badly educated, and few highly cultivated; and, in such a number, the beauties or the grandeur of eloquence could not for an instant be appreciated. The entrance to the heart, or the power which could awaken the souls of such men, must take the direction of self-interest. The noblest evidences of reason, the grandest bursts of passion, the most polished and most dignified declamation, would not awaken an echo of applause; and the appeals of Chatham, Burke, and Fox, before the American war, the ghastly horrors that were pictured of the slave



trade, and all the transactions of barbarity committed in the East Indies through the connivance and under the authority of Englishmen, set before them with a pathos such as no nation ever before witnessed, drew no expression of indignation, nor altered a single vote of a single court minion or hireling of ministerial corruption. How could Burke or any one act on such materials, which no heart could stir, no soul of fire quicken into passion, no appeal, no eloquence, move from the listlessness of their leaden sensibility? It never will be the case that a popular body is the best position for the development of the finest powers of the finest minds. Too much is lost by being carried away by the prevailing interest of the moment; too much by being compelled, for the sake of influence, to adapt themselves to the shifting scenes and incidents that grow from the circumstances of the times, and from the various hopes and designs of men. We mean that a popular body is not the best field for the efforts of extraordinary talent, where the individual is seduced by his ambition to look no farther than that, and to rest upon it all his hopes of fame. Where this is the case, temporary reputation is all that can be looked for. It is, perhaps, to the fact of Burke not gaining or seeking office, and always standing to his principles, and entering into no ambitious struggle for power, that he owes his present eminence, and will owe his future glory. Each day shows the gradually receding fame of his contemporaries, while to his is added greater brilliancy. No one now turns to a speech of Pitt or Fox for specimens of splendid diction, profound reflection, or original thought. They were intended for the day, and are embodied in its history.

With Burke it was far otherwise. He stands forward, beyond all others, not only as the most perfect orator, but as the first mind of his age. His speeches, though produced by the moment, and now no longer interesting, except as great intellectual efforts, and as parts of the history of the man, are remarkable for every thing that can make such efforts efficient or enduring. In extent of information, in knowledge of mankind and the affairs of life, in beauty of language and depth of thought, and in all which can fit man's labours for a lasting fame, they are unrivalled. They will be turned to as models in the same way that we open a page of Cicero, and would have been sufficient to establish and perpetuate his reputation, even if there were no collateral sources of glory. But it is by his literary productions that the world knows him best, and it is these which confer on him the highest title to admiration, as it is in them we see more thoroughly the completeness of his intellect, and the astonishing vigour with which he grasped every subject.

We must here close our remarks, though it was our intention

bring the subject home to ourselves, and attempt to show what chances we have of being distinguished for oratory, and whether our institutions are favourable or not for that object. We may recur to this on a future occasion.

---

RT. III.—*Lettres sur l'Amérique du Nord, par MICHEL CHEVALIER, avec une carte des Etats-Unis d'Amérique.* Paris : 1836.

*Letters upon North America, by MICHAEL CHEVALIER, with a map of the United States.*

It is worthy of remark that the work of De Tocqueville on the United States has been translated into several languages, and circulated through various nations of Europe, whilst in the country of which it speaks it has not been republished, though the admirable version made in England is ready at hand. What is the inference to be drawn from this? Is it that the work is unworthy of our notice as feeble or erroneous? No; for it is undeniably the ablest, most philosophical, and most correct, that has been written upon the subject? Is it that we are heedless as to what is said about us by foreigners? Let this be answered by the editions of your Halls, your Hamiltons, your Trollopes, your Kembles, multiplied *ad infinitum* and *ad nauseam*, and penetrating to every corner of the land. Is it that our reading public is too small to authorize publishers to sue many works? Any one whose pursuits bring him into contact with the press, will be perfectly sure that such is not the case, when, before he has read the title-page of one book, his attention is called to another. What then is the cause of this singular circumstance alluded to? It is unfortunately obvious enough to one who considers the character of the productions which alone find favour with the community. The book is literally too good. "He's not too wicked but too just to live." It is too instructive, too well fitted to make the reader think and learn. Were it only calculated to amuse a leisure hour; were it well spiced with slander and misrepresentation, or sugared all over with blarney; did it not contain a single idea by which a really just and profound appreciation of our institutions was evinced, and a beneficial feeling of pride or regret might be awakened, there is scarce a bookseller's window in the land that would not have its advertisement displayed with

all the attractions of variegated type and magnificent puffs. So we go. Now is not this a melancholy truth? And are not melancholy consequences to be apprehended from it for the people? "Drink beer, think beer," said a wise man—read trash, think trash, aye, and act trash, say experience and common sense.

For the same reason that "Democracy in America" found no introduction here, are these "Letters on North America," now before us, likely to be known here only in their foreign dress. We wonder, however, that they have not been translated ere this in England, as, with the exception of De Tocqueville's work, they are beyond question the best effusions concerning our country that have appeared. In some respects, indeed, Mr. Chevalier has the advantage of his compatriot. If not so profound and elaborate, he seems to have studied with equal zeal the nature of our institutions, and to have entered as successfully into their spirit and scope, whilst he writes in a more popular style, and often with a fuller knowledge of details, arising from a longer residence and more varied opportunities. He is also a more decided admirer of them—more disposed, from, we suspect, previous republican hankerings, to look upon them and us with a kindly eye. His friendliness is certainly unquestionable, though it does not in general lead him to extenuate any more than to set down in malice. On the whole, we think he has exhibited as much impartiality, and fallen into as few mistakes, either of fact or opinion, as is possible for a stranger whose sojourn is of limited duration; and no one can read his book without deriving a great deal of entertainment and profit, and forming a high idea of its writer's intelligence, knowledge, and dispositions.

Mr. Chevalier arrived in this country at the period when the war against the bank of the United States was raging in all its violence, and several of his first and best letters are devoted to that subject. They manifest a perfect appreciation of the character of the extraordinary contest, showing him to have studied it with the interest it was so well calculated to awaken, and with an adequate comprehension of our banking system in particular, as well as of the general principles involved in the case. He was infinitely surprised, as well he might be, at the spectacle he beheld; and truly remarks, in more than one place, that had such proceedings been witnessed in a monarchical nation of Europe, those who are eager to establish every where a republican form of government, without regard to the condition of the country, or to the wealth and intelligence, the character and customs, of the people, would have seized upon them as a text against the monarchical system. "Unfolding the picture of an unexampled commercial prosperity all at once arrested by a caprice of power, they would demonstrate that

such is one of the inevitable consequences of the opposition of a dynastic interest to that of the nation. They would prove, by geometrical syllogisms, how completely it is the essence of monarchy to place authority in unskilful and imprudent hands, which, in order to gratify a feeling of personal vengeance, would not hesitate to endanger the welfare of millions. They would raise an outcry of a '*camarilla*,' which, according to them, is one of the distinctive attributes of royalty. Unhappily for this theory, it is belied by what I have now before my eyes in the most flourishing republic that has ever existed."

Our author had good reason to be convinced that ignorance or contempt of the true interests of the country is not the exclusive appanage of royalty, and that it is not alone in monarchies that a mountebank may be found in the place where a mathematician is required. "The official papers which have emanated from the executive upon the subject of the bank, are, as far as their exhibition of administrative science and knowledge of the springs of public prosperity is concerned, about upon a par with the acts of the Spanish government." As to the *camarilla*—"never have I heard aught of the kind so much spoken of as since my arrival in the United States. It is here called the *kitchen*, and, admitting only the fourth of what the opposition say about it, it is difficult not to believe that the influence of the kitchen cabinet upon public affairs surpasses that of the council of ministers."

We can imagine the sensations of an accomplished foreigner smitten with the love of republican institutions, and embarking for our shores with his imagination inflamed by all he had heard, and read, and fancied, of our miraculous condition of prosperity, order, and freedom, when, on reaching our land, he finds himself in the midst of universal confusion and distress, and learns that all is owing to the willing submission of the enlightened and virtuous people he had so much admired, to the most extraordinary pranks of ignorance and perverseness united which ever astonished a rational mind, or tortured a helpless slave. He learns that, not very long before his arrival, the country was in the situation in which he had pictured it to himself; that every thing then fully justified the boast that the grand problem of self-government was satisfactorily solved; that each citizen, as he contemplated the results which attended the efforts of his enterprise, his industry, and his skill, had ample reason to congratulate himself upon living in a land where no unnatural obstacles obstructed his onward course—where all inspired the utmost buoyancy of hope, all created the fullest confidence of merited success, all lent the most efficacious assistance to laudable undertakings—where all, in short, whilst it imparted that aspect of independence and erectness to the

inhabitants, which only there, perhaps, could be seen in complete verification of the boast of the ancient, "*os homini sublime dedit, cœlumque tueri*," at the same time developed, in their widest extent, the most useful and powerful energies of our nature. He learns that almost in a moment the whole face of things was changed "as if by touch of some enchanter's wand," as if some foul magician had breathed the breath of destruction over the land; and that this was the work of one whom the nation, in gratitude for services of a kind which ought never to have been rewarded in that way, invested with its highest honours—of one who, disqualified by temperament, education, and habits, for the post he was called to fill, and acting under the dictates of ignorance and passion, had conceived a bitter hostility to a principal instrument of the country's welfare, and assaulted it with all the eagerness and blindness of personal malice, hugging the idea that he was but executing the commands of patriotism. He learns that the infatuation of their favourite had communicated itself to the people, and that instead of staying the profane hand which was scattering their happiness to the winds, and desecrating their institutions, they had leagued with him in the fierce crusade against their own interests and their own reputation, and at the moment were even urging him on in the career of ruin. He hears cries of distress which are echoed by the laugh of scorn; he beholds turmoil made confusion worse confounded by those who might have calmed the tempest and poured oil upon the waves; he sees himself surrounded by all the mischief which results from the perversion of the best materials of prosperity, by all the consequences of ignorance, and vice, and delusion; and, if he does not, in a fit of disappointment and disgust, return at once to whence he came, but remains and endeavours to understand the causes of a spectacle so melancholy and so unexpected, he at length discovers, like Mr. Chevalier, that "an absolute people may, as well as an absolute king, disdain for a while the counsels of experience and wisdom; that a people as well as a king may have its courtiers; that a people that rules, when its authority is limited by no counterpoise, may also espouse blindly, and at every risk, the quarrels of its favourites of the moment." A mournful lesson to learn for those who have cherished the fond belief that a majority can do no wrong; that there is no such thing as that "worst of tyrants an usurping crowd," in countries where the people are recognised as sovereign. But it is a useful lesson for that people especially to learn, and, if duly remembered, must be their best preservative against the perils to which they are exposed by the freedom which is given to the evil as well as to the good attributes of their nature. Self-distrust, to a certain extent, is as necessary

for them as self-confidence. The intoxication of national presumption must make them reel, if not fall, in the path before them; and when once the idea that all they do is right because they do it, obtains possession of their minds, clouds will soon gather upon their horizon, and the storm will burst upon unprotected heads. Sincerely is it to be hoped, that the experience we have had will not realize the wise man's remark, that experience is like the stern-light of a vessel, only illuminating the track behind. May it cast its brightest effulgence before our feet, for dearly have we purchased the lamp.

Mr. Chevalier thinks that the unpopularity of the banking system, resulting from the injury which had been produced by the mismanagement of various banks, was so great and so general as to have been a principal cause of the eagerness of the people for the destruction of the bank of the United States. To a certain extent, undoubtedly, there was a strong dislike to the whole system, and some, if not many, would have rejoiced to see it entirely eradicated; but we are confident in the belief that, at the period of the late president's first election, had the vote of the country been taken, there would have been found a decided, perhaps an overwhelming, majority in favour of the institution. Its benefits had been too important, too palpable, not to have created a sentiment of good-will towards it among a people who, when not labouring under one of those illusions to which even the clearest sighted may at times be subject, have too keen a perception of their interests to be indifferent or hostile to the sources of their prosperity. Nothing but a fit of what may be termed insanity could have prompted them to the determination to dry those sources up; and, if ever there was an instance of national insanity, that was certainly one which the good people of the United States have just exhibited. It was not until they had become so enamoured of the idol they had fashioned with their own hands as to be willing to sacrifice even themselves upon its altar—it was not until fascinated with the idea that a single individual comprised all the wisdom and virtue of the country, they hesitated not to believe aught, however preposterous or monstrous, at his bidding—it was not until overtaken by this wretched delirium, that they loosed the silver cord of their tranquillity, and broke the golden bowl of their happiness. The *people's* president could not deceive the people. Those whom *he* chose to select as *his* enemies, must be *their* enemies. Those whom *he* denounced, *they* should denounce. Those whom *he* would destroy, *they* should destroy.

Our author mentions two striking instances of the degree in which every thing, whatever its real colour, looks yellow to jaundiced eyes. It may be useful to recur to them as samples of the whole treatment of the "*faultless monster*."

"Last year the government of the United States sold to the bank a bill upon the French government that the latter refused to accept, which caused a protest, the result of which was that the correspondent of the bank took up the bill in order to prevent the signature of the institution from being discredited. In this affair the executive of the United States was wrong. 1st. He committed an act of indiscretion in drawing upon the French government before the chambers had appropriated the funds necessary to pay the indemnity agreed upon of twenty-five millions. 2d. Instead of drawing by a bill of exchange upon the French government, and selling this bill to the bank without knowing whether it would be accepted, the executive would have acted more suitably towards itself, towards France, and towards the bank, by authorizing the last to receive the payments of the French government in its quality of agent or of *fondé de pouvoir*. In virtue of commercial usages in all countries, and the United States in particular, the bank was entitled to a claim for damages. She made it. Her object in this was doubtless much more to exhibit all that was censurable in the executive proceedings than to put a sum of fifty or eighty thousand dollars into her coffers. But immediately the adversaries of the bank began to exclaim that, not satisfied with extorting from the sweat of the people immense sums for the benefit of its stockholders, (remark that the dividends of the bank are moderate compared with those of the other financial associations of the country, and the federal government is the largest of its stockholders,) it wished, in its cupidity, by means of miserable chicanery, to seize upon still more of the public revenue, and bury 'the money of the people in the breeches-pockets of Mr. Biddle.' To this reasoning, for it is considered perfectly demonstrative reasoning, the multitude answered by imprecations against monopoly and the aristocracy of money, and by the cry, a thousand times repeated, of *Hurrah for Jackson!*"

"A few days since, another episode of a similar kind occurred. The bank is charged, by act of congress, with the care of paying the pensions decreed to the old soldiers of the revolution. It is a service which it performs gratuitously, and which is notoriously onerous. It has received various sums for this purpose, and has at present about five hundred thousand dollars ready for the next payment of the pensions. The administration wished to deprive it of the duty, and demanded the funds, books, and papers, appertaining to it. The bank replied, that, having been constituted the depositary of them by congress, she neither could, nor should, nor would give them up, except directed to do so by the authority of congress. The bank was right; but hear what happened. Its adversaries set up dolorous lamentations upon the hard fate of the illustrious remnants of the army of Independence, whom the *outré* conduct of the bank, they say, is about to plunge into the most frightful destitution at the close of their lives. They uttered pathetic groans over these glorious defenders of the country, from whom a *monied corporation* wishes to ravish the gifts which a grateful country delighted to offer them in the days of their old age. You may imagine all the inflated arguments, all the patriotic tirades, which may be put forth on this text. The fourth of February the president sent a message to congress in this spirit. All this, however, is sheer declamation of the vulgarest and most hypocritical kind; for who is to hinder the liberators of America from receiving their pensions, but those who will refuse them drafts upon the

---

<sup>1</sup> An admirable commentary upon this "demonstrative reasoning" has been recently furnished by the unanimous acknowledgment by congress of the rights of the bank in regard to the damages.

bank, which the bank would immediately honour? But an infatuated people does not wait for logic. It is, therefore, ascertained now by the multitude that the bank has resolved to starve to death the noble veterans of independence; and again, anathema upon monopoly! curses upon monied aristocracies! Hurrah for Jackson! Jackson for ever!"

It is almost impossible, at this time especially, when the country is suffering from the full effects of the disastrous course that has been pursued, to speak of it with the requisite calmness; but we hazard little in affirming that future historians will consider the matter with no less astonishment than reprobation. They will say that, though less in degree, the infatuation of the people was of the same kind as that which drove the French during their first revolution to the destruction of what was indispensable for their welfare, as well as to the most degrading submission to ignorant, fool-hardy, unscrupulous despotism. They will be struck, as was Mr. Chevalier, "with the resemblance between most of the speeches and newspaper articles against the bank and the republican tirades in France in '91 and '92—the same declamatory, turgid style, the same appeal to popular passions, with this difference, indeed, that the facts alleged in the one case are vague, crude, and intangible; whilst in the other the griefs were real." They will say, that, in both instances, the demon of mischief seemed to have gained absolute sway over the minds of men, and to have filled them with that mania for devastation which could only be appeased by the sight of the smouldering ruins of the temples of their prosperity, to which they themselves had applied the ruthless torch of destructo. They will remark the evidence afforded in both instances of the profanity of the assertion that the vox populi is always the vox dei, as well as of the manner in which men, when labouring under such paroxysms, appear to revel in the commission of the follies and the crimes most opposed to their predominant characteristics of virtue. How true is the observation of Luther, that the human mind is like a drunken man on horseback; put him up on one side he is sure to fall on the other.

We are now experiencing, in all their bitterness, the consequences of our frenzy. The fury of the tempest that howled so fiercely has subsided to a degree, but the sky is still overcast, and the swell of the ocean which ever succeeds is more terrible in its destructiveness than all the raging of the wind.

The conclusion of Mr. Chevalier's sixth letter is worthy here of translation.

"I am more and more convinced that the United States will turn this crisis to profit. Sooner or later, a principle of organization will issue from it for the system of banks. Very probably the national bank, if it be retained, and the local banks, will thenceforward be less isolated from the federal authority and the local powers; that is to say, the general and state governments will enter into the constitution of the banks;



and, in consequence, the banks will enter into that of the government of the country. Thus many of the abuses of the banking system will be reformed, and the normal and legitimate influence of the banks reinforced. It would be easy to cite a crowd of facts which already concur towards this result. It is thus that in some states the legislatures have established, or are busied in establishing, banks in which the state is a stockholder to the amount of one half or two fifths of the capital, names a large number of the directors, and reserves for itself an extensive control. I have already mentioned that there are states, such as Illinois, where every other species of bank has been formally forbidden by the constitution.

"Writers on the representative form of government recognise only the executive, legislative, and judiciary powers. In the United States there will soon be also the financial power; or at least the banks will there soon form a branch of the government as vigorous as any other. The bank of the United States is more essential to the prosperity of the country than the executive power such as it exists. The latter does a little diplomacy, good or bad, with the European governments, appoints and removes modest functionaries, manœuvres an army of six thousand men in the deserts of the west, adds from time to time some bits of wood to a dozen vessels upon the stocks at Portsmouth, Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Washington, Norfolk, and Pensacola, (the seven arsenals of the federal navy).<sup>1</sup> All this might, in effect, cease to exist without endangering the security of the country, and without seriously shaking its prosperity, that is to say, its industry. On the contrary, take from the country its institutions of credit, or only that one which rules and regulates all the rest, the bank of the United States, and you plunge it into a state of commercial anarchy which might end by producing political anarchy.

"The word *policy* cannot have the same meaning in the United States as in Europe. They are not engaged like the Europeans in combinations of territory and continental equilibrium. They have nothing to unravel in any treaty of Westphalia or Vienna. They are free from all those difficulties which in Europe spring from differences of origin and religion, from the conflict of rival pretensions, of old and new interests. They have no neighbour to give them umbrage. The *policy* of the United States is the extension of their commerce, and the invasion by their agriculture of the immense domain which nature has granted them. The mass of their general and particular interests is there. There is the object which excites their political and personal feelings. As the banks are the soul of their commerce, of their growing manufactures, and even of their agriculture, it is evident that the success of their policy is intimately and directly linked with the proper organization of their system of banks. The true and real government of the country, that is to say, the direction of its essential interests, resides as much in the banks as in any other body or power created by the constitution. The moment has arrived when this fact should be acknowledged and sanctioned. In the same way as among a warlike people the office of grand constable or field marshal is first in the kingdom, so among a people whose business is industry, that of president of the central bank, for instance, ought to be a public *political* post, in the acceptation of the word political which is best adapted to the character of this people, as well as a post of the highest order.

"In this point of view it may be said that what is passing in the

---

<sup>1</sup> This of course is a picture of *constitutional* executive power—not of the "responsibility taking" system, which truly, in our author's phrase, "might cease without endangering the security of the country."

United States is a struggle in which the combatants are, on the one side, the military and forensic interests, which have heretofore shared the domain of public affairs between themselves, and on the other, the financial interest, which claims its portion. The two first have combined against the last to oppose its pretensions. They have succeeded in exciting the multitude against it for the moment ; but they will succumb in the end, for the multitude has more to gain with it than with them. It is asserted that when the deputation sent by the merchants of New York came to Washington to present a petition with ten thousand signatures, President Jackson told the committee that they only expressed the griefs of the capitalists, brokers, and merchants, of Wall street and Pearl street ; but that Wall street and Pearl street were not the people. I do not know whether the phrase really was uttered ; but I do know that it expresses the opinion of the dominant party. In contrast to the old school of European Tories by whom the people is restricted to the upper classes, there is here a school which eliminates the rich from the people. Nothing is more unjust ; for if it be wished to estimate the real importance of the inhabitants of Wall and Pearl streets, it need only be asked what would New York be without them ?

“ In fifty years the population of New York has centupled. Its wealth also, perhaps, has centupled. Its vivifying influence has fertilized the country for a hundred leagues around. This unheard of development is not the work of lawyers or soldiers. The merit of it belongs chiefly to labour, to capital, to the inventive and enterprising spirit of this minority (an imperceptible one numerically speaking) of Wall and Pearl streets. It is very easy to declaim against the aristocracy of dollars, and against those base metals called gold and silver. Nevertheless do you not believe that these base metals have ceased to be base when in the hands of those who possess them they are the fruit of labour and industry ? If there is a country in the world where it is preposterous to talk against the aristocracy of money and the base metals, it is this. For here, much more than elsewhere, every body has a profession. Whoever has capital makes use of it, and only succeeds in increasing or even reserving it, by means of great activity and vigilance. In consequence, the wealth of a man is here generally in proportion to his agricultural, manufacturing, or commercial importance, and even capacity. Merchants have their defects ; they are inclined to weigh every thing in their money scales ; and a people are to be pitied who should be governed by merchants alone. But a people governed by soldiers or lawyers would not be either happier or freer. The act of the senate of Hamburgh, in merely delivering up to the English executioner proscribed individuals, merits the contempt of every man of heart ; but is the rule of the Russian or even Neapolitan bayonets, or the babbling anarchy of the Directory, less obnoxious to those in whose breasts the chord of freedom, or that of national and individual dignity, vibrates strongly ?

“ The revolutions of ages which remodel religion, customs, and manners, modify also the nature of social powers. Providence casts from their seat the powerful when they persist in misconceiving the new spirit of the people, and exalts the humble whom this new spirit animates. Four thousand years ago the functions of embalming the sacred birds, and preparing the litter of the bull Apis, must have been deemed highly important. In the empire of the East, the post of *protovestiar*y was one of the chief dignities of the state. And, without going so far back, scarcely four years have elapsed since in France the object of the ambition of a great number was to become a ‘ *gentilhomme de la chambre* ;’

and now, even, among the grand dignitaries of the English monarchy figures the *groom of the stole*.

"Nobody now-a-days embalms sacred birds; nobody prepares the litter of the bull Apis. Intrigues are no longer carried on for the posts of *protovestiar*y or lord of the bed-chamber; and, in the way in which matters are going in England, I don't believe they will be thought of much longer for that of groom of the stole. There are no longer grand constables, nor great vassals, nor *preux chevaliers*, nor peers of France, in the former sense of the word. The French aristocracy, so brilliant even fifty years ago, has disappeared. The manors of ancient heroes have become factories; convents are changed into weaving establishments; and I have seen Gothic cathedrals of the best style transformed into workshops or magazines for storage. Our brave soldiers are metamorphosed into pacific cantonniers, and open roads.

"Assemblages of small clerks whom the nobles used to employ to record the decrees of their sovereign justice, became rivals of kings, and guardians of the laws of the kingdom. Now the master of the forges of Burgundy and Nivernais, the distillers of Montpellier, the drapers of Sédon and Elbeuf, have taken the place of the parliaments. German princes with fifty quarterings wait in the antechambers of emperors, kings, and ministers, whilst their majesties or their excellencies are conversing familiarly with some banker who has no parchments, or who has but deigned to accept them to oblige his royal friends. The East India Company, a company of merchants if ever there was one, has more subjects than the emperors of Russia and Austria put together. If in the old world, where the ancient interest had stamped every corner of earth with its seal, that interest, under all its forms, is thus obliged to compromise with the new interest of industry, with the power of money, how is it possible that in the new world, where the institutions of the past have never taken deep root, where all thoughts are turned to business, to money, this power should not play its part upon the political stage, in spite of its adversaries and rivals?"

How just is the remark that "take from the country its institutions of credit, or only that one which rules and regulates all the rest, the bank of the United States, and you plunge it into a state of commercial anarchy, which might end by producing political anarchy;" and to how mournful an extent has it been verified. The national bank has been destroyed, and what has been the consequence? Well for us is it that its place was immediately taken by a successor, which, though it could only partially supply the desideratum, has yet been most beneficial in preventing much of the evil that might have been experienced. Had we been left altogether to the tender mercies of the worthies who were so eager to provide "the better currency," who can say whether the consummation of political anarchy, as predicted by our author, might not have been brought about? Who can tell what might have been the full effects of the unresisted rushing in of fools where angels fear to tread? Who can tell what might have been the ravages of the billows of ignorance and corruption that have been dashing against our shores, had their fury not been repressed by a barrier of some description, however insufficient it may have proved to

stay altogether their course? The debt which we owe to this safeguard will sooner or later be acknowledged throughout the land, and choruses of grateful praise will be heard where nothing has resounded but the howl of frantic denunciation. We are confident that but a short time will elapse before an entire reaction takes place, and that men's eyes will be opened to the real sources of their sufferings and of their prosperity.

Justice will then be done to those who have fought for the country against itself, and especially to the eminent man whose situation exposed him to the brunt of the battle, and to whose integrity, moderation, firmness, and abilities, we shall be so deeply indebted for our ultimate triumph. The contrast which his upright and gentlemanly deportment presented to that of his principal foes—the manner in which he foiled the most atrocious onsets, not less by the ægis of his self-possession and courtesy, than by the superior strength and skill with which he handled his intellectual weapons; and the remarkable mode in which the increase of the difficulties which beset him only served to develop his power of overcoming them—in short, the singular combination he displayed of faculties adapted to the emergency—will then be duly acknowledged and gratefully applauded.

Our traveller was of course struck by the "speculation" which he saw in the eye of almost every one he encountered in the country he had come to visit; and discourses about this national propensity in an epistle from which we must make some extracts as à propos to the times. Every body, he writes, speculates, and every thing is an object of speculation. He corrects himself, however, as to the latter part of this remark, and declares that the American, an essentially positive and practical person, never speculates upon tulips, even at New York, although the inhabitants of that city have Dutch blood in their veins; but he need not have taken the trouble to make the correction. Only let "the positive and practical person" perceive the slightest chance of turning a tulip bed to good account, and we venture to affirm that M. Chevalier might behold him as deeply interested in its cultivation as in "cottons, lots, banks, and rail-roads." The appetite of the speculative monster is by no means epicurean either in the United States or any where else; and flowers would be swallowed with quite as much avidity as more substantial articles, were it but "worth the while." When it has fed and fattened on so ephemeral a thing as ice—fortunes having been made, we believe, by this congealed "notion"—no reason certainly can exist why it should not live on a rose in aromatic bliss. *Nous verrons*, when a fondness for horticulture shall have become general. Old Herrick's stanza will then be every one's motto :

"Gather the rose-buds while ye may,  
Old Time is still a flying,  
And this same flow'r that smiles to day,  
To-morrow will be dying."

The two last lines, by the way, are striking and mournful illustrations of the character of the majority of the speculations which have maddened our countrymen.

"Most of them (says M. Chevalier) are imprudent, many foolish. The rise of to-day may and must be followed by a crisis to-morrow. Large fortunes in great numbers have sprung from the earth since the spring, others will return to it perhaps before the fall of the leaf. The American is not disquieted on this account. To excite his robust frame, he must have violent sensations. Public opinion and the pulpit debar his vigorous organization from sensual pleasures; cards and dice are likewise forbidden; he therefore seeks in business the strong emotions he needs to feel his existence. He adventures with delight upon the rolling sea of speculation. One day the waves elevate him to the skies, and he revels eagerly in this moment of triumph. The next he disappears amid the billows; he troubles himself not, but waits with calmness, and consoles himself with the hope of a better fortune. And moreover, whilst all are speculating, whilst some are making fortunes, and others are ruined, the banks increase and extend credit, rail-roads and canals multiply, steamboats are launched upon the rivers, the lakes, the ocean; the career is always widening itself for speculators, for rail-roads, canals, steamboats, and banks. Some individuals lose, but the country gains—the country is peopled, is developed, advances. *Go ahead!*

"If motion and the rapid succession of sensations and ideas constitute life, here people live a hundred fold. All is circulation, all movement and agitation. To experiments succeed experiments; to enterprises, enterprises. Wealth and poverty tread upon each other's heels, and dislodge one another in turn. Whilst the great men of the day dethrone those of yesterday, they are already half prostrated by the great men of to-morrow. Fortunes last a season; reputations, the duration of a flash. An irresistible current hurries all along, mingles all, and replaces every thing in new forms. Men change residence, climate, occupation, condition, party, sect; the states change laws, magistrates, constitutions. The soil itself, or at least the edifices, partake of the universal instability. The existence of social order amid this whirl seems a prodigy, an inexplicable anomaly. It might be said that, formed of heterogeneous elements which chance has thrown together, and of which each one follows an orbit modified only by its caprice and its interest, this society, after having raised itself for an instant to the heavens, must inevitably fall back prostrate, reduced to nothing. But such will not be its fate. In the midst of this unstable system there is a fixed point—and that is the domestic hearth, or, to speak more clearly, the conjugal bed. An austere sentinel, rough sometimes even to fanaticism, keeps off from this sacred point all that might endanger its safety—I mean the sentiment of religion. So long as this point shall preserve its inviolability, so long as the guard that watches over it shall continue its rigorous vigilance, the system may, without danger, make new evolutions and undergo new changes in appearance; it may be beaten by the tempest; but thanks to its elasticity and the aid of the point to which it is fastened, it will not be overwhelmed. It may even be broken up into different groups almost independent of one another; but it will still spread itself over the earth, will grow in extent, in energy, and in resources."

In addition to the causes adduced by our author for the speculative mania by which our population is afflicted, we might indicate one that strikes us as not the least influential—we mean the early age at which our countrymen plunge into the business of life. Before their minds are at all matured; before they have obtained any thing like a competent knowledge of themselves or the world; with all the rashness of inexperience and confident hope—without, in a word, we will not say a proper, but the slightest noviciate—our youth throw themselves headlong into the turmoil of affairs, eager and determined to acquire wealth at once; lend a willing ear to every suggestion of fancy that seems to bring the glittering object within their immediate grasp; embark in the wildest schemes in pursuance of these delusive promptings; and often find themselves ruined at a period when they ought to be just beginning their career, and when, if they were so to begin it, they would start with comparatively little danger of violating the only safe precept, *festina lente*, and sacrificing the substance for the shadow. But the habits that have now become as it were incorporated with their nature, cannot be shaken off by the most strenuous efforts of experience; the fascinations of “the golden Indies in the air,” which so early and so despotically took possession of their desires, still continue irresistible; the dull, plodding routine of sober industry is still regarded with contempt and disgust; the child is indeed here the father of the man, and the same disastrous results are again experienced when, alas! there is not the same vigour, the same elasticity, the same ability to repair the evil. We are, in truth, a young people in more respects than the mere date of our national existence. In all things we commence too soon—in our professional, political, and social, as well as our mercantile, pursuits. At a time of life when the English youth are about emerging from the academic shades, with their minds fully fitted for the *preparation* of themselves to play their parts upon the one great stage, our youth are already lawyers, doctors, politicians, and leaders of society, acting upon the interests and the lives of individuals, the character and condition of the community and the country. It is this, to a great extent, which renders fashionable intercourse so unprofitable and so insipid;<sup>1</sup> which causes so much intemperance and inconsiderateness in political proceedings; which diffuses so widely that “dangerous thing,” a little learning; which has multiplied the race

---

<sup>1</sup> “How did you like society in America,” was a question put to a distinguished stranger on his return from our shores—“Society!” said he, “I didn’t see any society; I saw a parcel of boys and girls.” ‘Tis true ’tis pity.

of pretenders, sciolists, quacks of all descriptions, speculators, and fools. It is this which should be corrected as soon as may be, and which must be corrected by the very force of the serious lessons it has inflicted and will inflict. Begin not too soon, and hasten not too fast, are maxims of immense importance to our welfare, and should be written in the broadest characters upon every door.

The conclusion of this letter upon speculation has the following remarks in regard to the *strikes* and other such proceedings of what are called the working classes—though it would be a difficult matter to indicate any class in the country to which that epithet is not applicable.

“The philosopher, for whom the present is but a single point, in revolving these facts (the consequences of the trades-unions, &c.) may find cause of rejoicing. Labourers and domestics live in Europe in a state of almost absolute dependence, which is beneficial only to him who commands. Legitimists, republicans, *juste-milieu*, all act towards the workmen they employ, or the domestic who serves them, as if he were a being of an inferior nature who owes all his zeal and efficiency to his master, without there being any thing due to him in return but his meager wages. It is permissible, it is laudable, to wish for social combinations which establish a more equitable proportion between rights and duties. In America the absolute principle of the sovereignty of the people having been applied to the relations of master and servant, employer and labourer, the tradesman, the manufacturer, and the projector, on whom the labourers impose the law, seek, as much as possible, to do without them, and substitute more and more the force of machinery for that of man: thus the most onerous toils weigh less and less upon the human species. The master, whose domestics obey him when they please, and who pays dearly for being badly and unwillingly served, favours, as much as he can, the inventions and improvements which simplify his wants, in order that he may be enabled to economize in the articles of work and servants.

“A curious study would be furnished in this country, not only by the great operative machines, but also by the tools of hand, and the utensils of domestic economy. These utensils, these tools, these machines, exert a powerful influence upon the practical liberty of the largest number. It is by means of them that the most numerous class is freeing itself from a yoke that tends to crush and destroy it. In this point of view, then, what passes here between the master and the servant, the employer and the labourer, contributes to hasten a state of things which every friend of humanity must desire with all his heart. But if philosophic satisfaction is thus ample, material and present satisfaction is almost entirely wanting. For him who is not a workman or a domestic, for him especially who has tasted the existence of the cultivated classes of Europe, practical and real life consists of a series of vexations, uncertainties, and discomforts, I might almost say, of humiliations. The independence of the labourers is sometimes the ruin of the employers; the independence of the domestics entails the dependence of the women, subjects them in their household to occupation little in keeping with the polished education which many of them have received, and keeps them thus enthralled from the day of their marriage to that of their death.

"When the *force novatrice*, for which there is no counterpoise, acts with a great excess of energy, all classes without exception are made to suffer. Not only, then, is the existence of the classes which in Europe are called the superior, and which here ought to take another name, deprived of a thousand little enjoyments which it is the custom to despise in books and set harangues, though every one covets them in reality; it, moreover, the social machine is deranged, discomfort becomes general, and the extravagant claims of him whom I will call the inferior, use the European phrase, fall back heavily upon himself. If the unreasonable pretensions of the workmen should continue, we shall see orders diminished, and labour will be less in demand. Speculations, they are not consolidated by labour, must crumble like balls of soap; and, when the reaction comes, the workman, who economizes little, will feel it more than any other."

How unhappily true is this last observation, let the thousands of labourers who have been recently thrown out of employment and the terrible "reaction" which has desolated the land, bear resistible witness. Never will that class attain "the greatest happiness" until they learn to consider and to treat the rich as friends and not as enemies, as their pretended well-wishers would have them to do for their own base purposes. The fountain from which they must draw the waters of their prosperity, is supplied from that source, and if it be choked or dried up, they must suffer and perish. As yet they are not impressed with this truth, but experience will teach it; and the upper orders who are injured by their ignorance, must, in the mean while, console themselves as well as they may with the "philosophical satisfaction" which Mr. Chevalier points out for the benefit of their philanthropy. The good he indicates will doubtless accrue from the evil, and posterity will reap its benefits; but alas! posterity has done nothing, and is not likely to do any thing, as far as this point is concerned, for the present generation. The "man and woman," therefore, of the parlour must still submit, as in duty bound, to the pleasure of the "ladies and gentlemen" of the kitchen—to Miss Betty and Mr. Cæsar—and the individual who employs a number of "sovereigns" to execute the work he wishes performed, must still acquiesce in their ideas as to the time and mode of its accomplishment, expressed in due accordance with the constitution and laws of the land and the spirit of our free institutions. Well! Horace also tells us that "*non si male nunc et olim sic erit.*"

Let each one, then, whisper to himself what the polite Frenchman said to the minister who told him, in reply to an application for an office, that he should not have one so long as he (the minister) lived—*J'attendrai donc, Monseigneur.* We must wait. It may likewise prove advantageous to bear in mind the philosophical suggestions of the sagacious companion of poor Juan, when the two worthies were up for sale in Turkey:



——— “ You will allow,  
By setting things in their right point of view,  
Knowledge at least is gain'd; for instance, now,  
We know what slavery is, and our disasters  
May teach us better to behave when masters.”

We have observed above that all classes in the United States ought equally to be denominated working classes; and our author in a letter headed “ labour,” expatiates upon this fact in considerable detail. He remarks the universality of material labour, and how fixedly our laws, our habits, our feelings, all look in that direction. The acts, he says, of every local legislative session, at least to the extent of three fourths, have for their objects the facilitation of labour, and the progress of material well-being—the towns are all arranged in reference to business—every American is brought up with the idea of doing something even if he is a member of a wealthy family. “ The man of leisure is a variety of the human species of which the inhabitant of the north, the Yankee, does not suspect the existence; moreover he knows that, however rich to-day, his father may be ruined to-morrow. Besides, the father himself is in business, and not anxious to disburthen himself of his fortune; if the son, therefore, wishes money at once, let him make it. The following extract, though overcharged and wrong in part, is in the main correct:

“ The habits of the people are those of an exclusively working nation. From the moment he rises in the morning, the American is at work; and remains absorbed in it until he retires to rest. He permits not pleasures to draw him from it—public affairs alone have the right of taking some instants from his private concerns. The moment of repast is not for him a recreation where he refreshes his wearied brain in the bosom of soothing intimacy. It is nothing but a disagreeable interruption of his labour; an interruption which he puts up with, because it is inevitable, but which he makes as short as possible. If politics do not engage his attention in the evening; if he be not called to some deliberative or some prayer meeting, he remains at home absorbed in meditation, recapitulating the operations of the day, or preparing those of the morrow. He ceases from labour on Sunday, because his religion commands it; but it specially enjoins upon him, also, to abstain from all amusement, all distraction, music, cards, dice, or billiards, under pain of sacrilege. On Sunday an American would not dare to receive his friends. His servants would refuse to lend their assistance; and it is as much as he can do to get them on that day to wait upon him at table at the hour that suits them. A short time ago the mayor of New York was accused by a journal of giving a dinner on Sunday to some English noblemen who had come from Europe in their yacht in order to give the American democracy a stronger idea of British tastes. He hastened to publish a reply that he was too well acquainted with his duties as a Christian to feast his friends on the Sabbath. Nothing, therefore, can be more lugubrious than that day in this country. By the side of such a Sunday, the work of Monday is a delicious pastime.”

<sup>1</sup> Such might be the case with a person of Mr. Chevalier's views; but

at an English merchant in the morning at his counting-room, will find him harsh and dry, and speaking only in monosyllables ; in the evening, at the hour of the courier, and he will take no pains to overcome his impatience ; he will get rid of you without always troubling himself to do it politely. The same man in the evening in his room, or in the summer at his country seat, will be full of ease and urbanity. This is because the Englishman divides his time ; he does but one thing at a time. In the morning he is full of business ; at evening, he is the man of leisure who reposes and enjoys himself as a gentleman who has before him the day, for the formation of his mind and his instruction in the art of spending nobly his revenue, the model of the English aristocracy.

The modern Frenchman is an indefinite mixture of the Englishman in the morning and of the evening. In the morning, he is a little of the Englishman of the evening, and in the evening somewhat the Englishman of the morning. The Frenchman of former times was the present Englishman of the evening ; or rather, to give every one his due, it was the Englishman, whose type is almost lost in France, upon whom the aristocracy has been moulded.

The American of the northern and northwestern states, he whose type is predominant at present in the Union, is a perpetual man of the evening.

He is always the Englishman of the morning. You may find Englishmen of the evening in the plantations of the south ; but they are beginning to be found in the capitals of the north.

Thin, and careless, in his person, the American seems formed for material labour. He has not his equal for quickness in his mind of business. No one adopts more easily a new practice ; he is ready to modify his proceedings or his tools, and to change his mind. He is a mechanician in his soul. With us there is scarce one of the high schools who has not written his vaudeville, his or his monarchical or republican constitution. There is not a man of Connecticut or Massachusetts who has not invented his

There is not a man of any consideration who has not his project for a rail-road, his plan of a village or city, or who does not nourish some grand speculation upon the lands inundated by the Red River on the cotton grounds of Texas or the Yazoo country, or the corn-lands of Illinois. A colonizer *par excellence*, the model-American, he is neither more nor less Europeanized, the pure Yankee, in a word, he is a labourer—he is a perambulatory labourer. He has no roots in the soil ; he is a stranger to the cultivation of the natal soil and the domain. He is always in the humour to emigrate, always getting off in the first steamboat that passes, from places even where he has established himself. He is devoured with the love of locomotion ; he cannot be still ; he must go and come, must keep his limbs in motion, and his muscles in activity. When his feet are not moving, he twiddles his fingers ; or, with his inseparable knife, cut a piece of wood to serve as the back of a chair, or indent a table ; or employ his teeth in chewing tobacco. Either because the *régime* of competition has given him a habit, or that he is beyond measure impressed with the value of time, that the mobility of every thing around him, as well as of his mind, keep his nervous system in perpetual agitation, or that he is limited by the hand of nature, he has always something to do,

---

it has he to suppose that others, with different ideas and feelings, do not find in what he thus deprecates the highest and purest form of which the human heart is susceptible ?

is always in a hurry. He is fit for all kinds of business except such as require elaborate slowness. These horrify him; these are his notion of the infernal regions.

"'Work,' says American society to the poor man, 'work, and at eighteen years of age, you will gain more, you a simple labourer, than a captain in Europe. You will live in abundance, you will be well clothed, well lodged, and you will save something. Be attentive to your work, be sober and religious, and you will find a devoted and submissive companion; you will have a domestic hearth more comfortable than that of many master workmen in Europe. From a labourer, you will become an employer; you will have apprentices and servants in your turn; you will find credit with open hands; you will manufacture or farm on a large scale; you will speculate and become rich; you will be elected a member of the legislature of your state, or made an alderman of the city, then a member of congress; your son will have as much chance of being chosen president as the son of the president himself. Work, and if fortune should turn against you, and you should succumb, it will be only to raise yourself immediately; for here a failure is viewed in the light of a wound received in battle; it will not deprive you of the esteem nor even of the confidence of any one, provided you have always been careful and temperate, a good Christian, and a faithful husband.'

"'Work,' it says to the rich, 'work without ever thinking of enjoyment. You will increase your income without increasing your expenses. You will augment your fortune, but it will only be to multiply the means of labour in favour of the poor, and extend your power over the material world. Let your appearance be simple and austere. I permit you to have within doors beautiful carpets, the richest plate, the finest linen of Saxony and Scotland; but the exterior of your house must be like that of all the others of the city; you shall neither have liveries nor display luxury in horses; you shall not encourage the theatre, which relaxes morals; you shall fly gaming; you shall sign the articles of the temperance society; you shall abstain even from high living; you shall give an example of attention at church; you shall always exhibit the most profound respect for morality and religion; for the farmer and the workman who are about you, have their eyes upon you, take you for their model, and consider you in fact the arbiter of their manners and customs, although they have wrested from you the sceptre of politics. If you should give yourself up to enjoyment, if you should indulge in luxury, dissipation, and pleasures, they would also give the rein to their passions, necessarily gross, to their violent appetites. It would then be all over with the country; it would be all over with yourself.'"

In the same letter, after speculating upon what would have been the condition of the western country if the French had been victorious in the struggle for its possession with the English in days of yore, and acknowledging that the rapidity and boldness of the movement of civilization would have lost considerably by that result, he pays an eloquent tribute to the marvellous energies of our population.

"With what zeal and what vigour do the Anglo-Americans fulfil their trust of a pioneer people. Behold how they hew their way through rocks and precipices; how they battle, body to body, with the river, the marsh, the primitive forest; how they destroy the wolf and the bear, how they exterminate the savages, who, for them, are but other wild beasts. In this conflict with the external world, with land and water,

with mountains and pestilential air, they seem full of that impetuosity with which Greece cast itself upon Asia at the voice of Alexander; of that frenzied audacity which Mahomet breathed into his Arabs for the conquest of the empire of the East; of that delirious courage which animated our fathers, forty years since, when they overwhelmed Europe. Thus, upon the same rivers where the French colonists floated, singing and satisfied with their conveyance, in the bark canoe of the Indian, they can count whole fleets of splendid steamboats. There, where we fraternized with the red skins, lying with them in the woods, subsisting like them upon the chase, journeying as they did on foot over rugged paths, the resolute American has prostrated the ancient trees, ploughed the soil, enclosed his grounds, substituted the best horned cattle of England for the stags of the forest, established farms, flourishing villages, and opulent cities, constructed canals and roads. Those water-falls which we admired as lovers of the picturesque, and whose height our officers used to measure at the hazard of their lives, they have removed from the landscape and enclosed in the reservoirs of their mills and factories. If these countries had remained French, the population that would have sprung up would have been more joyous than the American; but it would have been surrounded with less of wealth and comfort, and ages would have elapsed before man would have been entitled to call himself master over the same extent of soil as the Americans have subjected in less than fifty years."

The above is certainly an instance of modesty and self-appreciation as commendable as it is rare. If all his compatriots were as sensible as Mr. Chevalier of their peculiar defects, and as solicitous to remedy them, we should not long see France lagging behind in the great race of material improvement. If we Americans, too, would only, in the same manner, open our eyes to the faults and deficiencies of our character and proceedings, there would be soon little scope afforded to malice or those comments, and animadversions, and caricatures, which give us so much unhappiness. And if John Bull, instead of wrapping himself up in the complacent contemplation of the picture which one of his flatterers has drawn of him in lines as striking as, in his opinion, they are correct—

"Pride in their port, defiance in their eye,  
I see the lords of human kind pass by"—

would only suspect that he is not altogether an impeccable personage, it would doubtless be better for himself, his neighbours, and the world. One of the most important advantages of the facility of travelling at the present day, must be deemed to be he means it offers to the different nations of learning their own inferiority to others in some respects, and thus of removing a fruitful source of national evil—contempt for the rest of mankind. On this subject, by the way, of national vanity, our author has written an admirable letter, from which we are tempted to translate a passage, though of considerable length.

"In Europe every nation arrogates to itself the first rank. I do not

see, therefore, why the Americans should be more modest than the people on the other side of the Atlantic. The wonders they have worked in the last fifty years, give them the right to be proud. They, too, are thus persuaded that they are the first nation in the world, and proclaim it loudly.

"The fact is, that there is no chosen people to whom superiority has been enfeoffed for a series of ages. The Jews, in whom this sentiment of an eternal predestination seemed the most deeply rooted, have been subjected for eighteen centuries to a trial which cruelly belies their belief. Since the time of Richelieu, and since the revolution of 1688, that is to say, since Spain began to slumber, France and England have been at the head of civilization, and share the supremacy—the first domineering by theory, the second by practice; giving the tone, the one to politics, the other to arts, taste, and manners. But what were France and England three centuries ago, in the time of Charles V., when the generals of that other emperor and king killed Bayard at Rebecque, captured Francis I. at Pavia and the Pope at Rome, whilst, at two thousand leagues distance on the western coast, Cortez conquered for him the superb empire of Montezuma? What was Prussia three generations since—Prussia who now divides the sceptre of Germany, and who is worthy of it, who is the young Germany, the haughty and ambitious Germany, the Germany anxious to plunge into the future—as Austria is the patriarchal Germany, the mild and sage Germany, the Germany protectress of the past, and guardian of ancient right? What will all of us be—French, English, Prussians, Austrians—in three centuries, in a hundred years, perhaps, hence? Who can say whether some blast from the north, finding us divided, enfeebled by intestine strife, shall not have then forced us to bow our heads, which we now carry so loftily and proudly? Who knows whether the vigorous populations which germinate here upon a virgin soil, shall not have passed us in their turn as we have passed our predecessors? Who can tell whether the two great forms which now stand at the two extremes of the horizon, the first in the east, with one foot on Moscow and the other about to be placed on Constantinople; the second in the west, half hidden still by the vast forests of the new world, and whose outstretched limbs extend from the mouths of the St. Lawrence to those of the Mississippi—who can tell whether these two young giants who gaze on one another from either side of the Atlantic, and almost touch upon the shores of the Pacific, will not soon divide the dominion of the universe?

"Civilization is a treasure to which each generation adds somewhat in transmitting it to its successors, and which passes from hand to hand, from people to people, from country to country. Departing from ancient Asia, it has occupied forty centuries in advancing to the borders of the European ocean. When a people have become the depositaries of it, wo to them if, instead of guarding it with vigilance and labouring to increase it, they drop it by the way side, and consume their time and their strength in useless quarrels! The treasure will be quickly ravished from them, and they will be lost. The Americans are the most enterprising of men, and the most ambitious of nations. If we should remain too long absorbed in our sterile disputes, they would be the people to come suddenly upon us, bear off this precious deposit of the destinies of the human species, and seize upon the first place.

"Each people has its qualities that education developes, which, at certain periods, shine with vivid lustre as a light on which advancing humanity fastens its eyes, and which at all times commend it to the esteem or the affection, the emulation or the respect, of the world. The

people of the United States have incontestably theirs. None are so well adapted by their intrinsic character, by the condition of their territory and of their population, for the democratic form. They thus possess in the highest degree the advantages of democracy; they have also its inseparable defects. But if there be matter for blame among them, there is still more matter for praise. Here is much that a European may glean who comes to seek, not subjects of satire, criticism, or sarcasm, (satire, criticism and sarcasm are, in every country, very vulgar occupations, since so many persons have given us the old money of Voltaire and Byron,) but positive facts, which may be imitated in our old land with the modifications required by circumstances entirely different from those of the Americans. Almost all English travellers have seen here a great deal of evil and scarcely any good. The portrait which they have drawn of America and the Americans is a caricature. It is a likeness, indeed, because a caricature well executed is always such. The Americans are right in rejecting their decisions; one can only be judged by his peers. It is not for the most unalloyed aristocracy of Europe, it is not for the English aristocracy, to pass judgment on a democracy. Now, the English travellers in America have belonged to the aristocracy either by their connections or their opinions, or they were aspirants to enrolment in it, or else theyaped it in order to have the appearance of being members of it.

"Beyond question a farmer of Yorkshire, or a mechanic of Birmingham, would have formed quite another judgment. They would probably have been as exclusive in their encomiums as the most disdainful of the tourists have been in their reprobation. The farmers and mechanics are nevertheless something in the estimate of the English population, and in the elements of the prosperity of Great Britain. Let us suppose that a farmer of Ohio or Illinois, having sold his flour and salt pork at good prices, should go to England and play the *nabob* for six months, and on his return should describe, with the rude eloquence of the west, the distress of the labourers in Great Britain, the law of tithes, the taxes on the poor, the frightful condition of the Irish peasants, the impressment of sailors, the venality of military employments; let us suppose that, as a maintainer of manners, he should add the sale of a wife by her husband, a boxing match, a scene of carousers rolling dead drunk beneath the table at the end of a banquet—if he should give such a picture to his countrymen as that of the moral and political condition of England, the English would shrug their shoulders, and with reason. Nevertheless the substance of the account would be correct; there would not be a fact falsely stated in any material degree. Now, such a book would be precisely the counterpart of what English travellers in general have published as a faithful representation of America. Do not unto others as you would not wish to be done by.

"There is one fact which strikes the stranger on his arrival in the United States, which is well calculated to impose silence on his feelings of national pride, especially if he is an Englishman: it is the aspect of general ease which the country presents. Whilst European societies are all more or less afflicted with the curse of pauperism, which is undermining them without there having been any cure for it discovered by the most skilful, here there are no paupers, at least in the northern and western states, which have been able to rid themselves of the leprosy of slavery. If any are met with, they are but an imperceptible minority of individuals without character, most of them people of colour; or they are adventurers recently arrived, who have not yet succeeded in habituating themselves to a life of labour. Here, nothing is easier than to live

by work, and to live well. The objects of first necessity are generally cheaper than in France, and salaries are double or triple. The other day I found myself upon the line of a rail-road now in progress. The workmen were engaged in grading. This kind of labour, which demands only strength, is habitually executed in the United States by Irishmen lately arrived, who have no other resource than their arms, no other talent than the vigour of their muscles. These Irish are fed and lodged, and this is their nourishment—three meals a day; at all of them meat in abundance, and bread, coffee and sugar at two of them, and once a day butter. During the course of their day's work, six or eight glasses of whiskey are given to them according to the warmth of the weather. They receive, besides, wages in money to the amount of forty cents (two francs, thirteen centimes) under the most unfavourable circumstances, often to that of three and sometimes of four francs. In France, the same work is commonly worth one franc, twenty-five centimes, and the labourers must find themselves.

"This positive, incontestable fact of the general comfort, is here side by side with another, which singularly enhances its importance in the eyes of an European who is a friend of reform, and an enemy of violence. In politics, radicalism is here all the fashion. The word democracy, which elsewhere frightens even republicans, is here run after, hailed with acclamations. The name of the democratic party is an object of dispute; there are three or four shades of opinion that claim it as their exclusive property; but it is the only kind of property unsettled. It is true that material property is quickly melted here, unless preserved by active vigilance, and renewed by constant labour. Nevertheless as long as it subsists, it is the object of a profound respect, which, I confess, has a little surprised me. It might have been expected that the theory of social economy would have borrowed some syllogisms from political theories. One who in Europe would not pass for the boldest in this regard, would be here an audacious innovator."

"From these simple observations it appears natural to believe that the study of this country may furnish precious hints for the solution of the great question which agitates Europe, that of the amelioration of the lot of the greatest number. It would be interesting to seek for the causes of this state of things, and of examining if, by means of some transformation, they could be put into play in the European society, and especially in France."

The influence of money in the United States has afforded the subject of one of our author's best letters. Remarking that in a society devoted to industry and traffic, money must be regarded with a different eye from what it is among a people of military propensities, or one nourished by classical studies and erudite speculations, he asserts that money is here not what it is with the French; that it is of weight here in matters in which it has no power there; that it openly operates here when it would hide itself there. He was astonished in England to see handbills menacing offenders against certain police regulations with fines, with a promise of a moiety to the denouncer—"the blood would boil in our veins if a prefect of police were thus to offer a premium to denunciation"—and here he found the same proceeding still more in vogue. He acknowledges, however, that in England, with the exception of London,

as well as in this country, the police is not organized as it is in France, and that, therefore, measures must be resorted to for supplying the deficiency. The manner in which with us every thing is recompensed with money, attracted his notice, and, in some respects, his commendation. "It puts every one at ease; it facilitates, abridges, and simplifies, relations; and no embarrassment is felt in asking a service when it is understood that it is to be paid for." Punishment by means of money, which is so common, made him think of the times of barbarism when crimes were pardoned for gold—an observation, by the way, not overwise—and induced the remark that the sanction of our laws, and of the regulations and even the simplest ordinances of our police, is the sanction of money.

"I do not know an American," said Talleyrand, "who has not sold his dog or his horse;" and Mr. Chevalier does not dispute the fact. On the contrary, he seems to think we are an exaggeration of the English, whom Napoleon called a nation of shopkeepers. He says we are always *en marché*—with one bargain just made, another about to be concluded, and a couple in contemplation; that all we have and all we see is merchandise to our optics; that at the foundation of all our acts money is to be found; that behind all our words money is still there. In this there is doubtless some overcolouring—an effort to point a phrase, and give an epigrammatic piquancy, even at a little expense of justice; but, in the main, we fear that truth has not been outraged. That we are imbued with an excessive love of lucre; that we are disposed to estimate every thing by its value in dollars and cents; that, with regard to whatever we possess and whatever we behold, we are, in the words of our national song, "ever mindful what it *cost*," is an undeniable defect in our character, which the sooner we acknowledge to ourselves, the sooner we may shake it off; and the sooner we *do* shake it off the better, for it is sadly opposed to the full development of some of the finest attributes of our nature. Of all passions none so completely thwarts itself as the undue thirst of gold, preventing, as it does, the enjoyments and advantages which a proper expenditure produces. None are so unable to spend profitably as those who are most eager to acquire. He who has written so admirably "*de officiis*," says, with his usual *ore rotundo-ism*, "*nihil est tam angusti animi tamque parvi, quam amare divitias: nihil honestius magnificentiusque quam pecuniam contemnere si non habeas; si habeas, ad beneficentiam liberalitatemque conferre.*"

Our author remarks, however, that much as the Americans love money, it would be wrong to suppose that they do not know how to impose upon themselves pecuniary sacrifices.



They are, he continues, even in the habit of subscriptions<sup>1</sup> and voluntary gifts; practise them without regret oftener than the French, and more largely also; but their munificence and largesses he calls affairs of reflection and calculation. He pays us, likewise, the compliment to say, that although it might be supposed that among a people so deeply absorbed in material interests, misers must abound, yet no where in our country is that sordid avarice to be encountered of which the instances are so frequent in Europe. This fact, however, is natural, in our opinion. Where so much importance is attached to the possession and the reputation of wealth, persons will be desirous of exhibiting any claims of the kind they may have to consideration. What may be complained of is, not that the opulent do not spend, but that they do not spend rightly. The *show* more than the *use* of riches is the general object. In Europe, on the contrary, where the mere possession of millions without a liberal and tasteful employment of them, gives comparatively little estimation to the individual, the fondness he may have for hoarding is not counteracted by the advantage of proving the fact of his wealth. Besides, the colossal fortunes which exist there, render it vain for persons of inferior means, which here would be deemed great, but there are moderate, to attempt display.

The principal object of Mr. Chevalier's visit was the inspection of our public works, particularly of our rail-roads, for which indeed he was employed by the French government; and accordingly the most elaborate and carefully prepared letter in his volumes is upon our "means of communication." We regret we have only room for the conclusion of it.

"It is a noble spectacle, that of a young people executing, in the short space of fifteen years, a mass of communications at which the most potent empires of Europe, with a population of triple or quadruple extent, would have been frightened. What the public prosperity has gained and will continue to gain by it, is incalculable. The political world has not less to expect from it. These multiplied and rapid communications will contribute to the maintenance of the Union more even than the balance of the national representation. When New York shall be only six or eight days distant from New Orleans, not merely for the rich, travelling in a privileged way, but for every citizen, and for every workman, separation will be no longer possible. Great distances will then have disappeared, and this colossus, ten times more vast than France, will preserve its unity without effort.

"It is impossible for me not to direct my thoughts to Europe, and make a comparison little favourable to the great monarchies which cover it. The partisans of the monarchical principle assert that it is quite as

---

<sup>1</sup> Not, alas! we are sorry to say, subscriptions to reviews, and such unutilitarian matters, whatever may be the fact in regard to asylums and rail road stocks.

icient for the happiness and greatness of the people, and for the process of the human race, as the principle of independence and *self-government* that predominates on the other side of the Atlantic; and, on my own part, I am willing to believe that such is the fact. But material proofs of it must be afforded if it be wished to prevent the opposite system from making more proselytes. The tree must be judged by its fruit. The European governments dispose of the treasures and the means of more than two hundred and fifty millions of men, that is to say, a population twenty times as large as was that of the United States when they commenced their system of communications. The extent of the country which demands the care of the former, including all the north of Europe, and the regions west of the Oural, is not the fourth of that which is actually covered by the states and the organized territories. The billions which they procure so easily for war, to destroy and to kill, would not be wanting to them for creative enterprises. They have only to will it, and all the European nations will be so blended in their interests, their thoughts, and their feelings—will be so approximated and mixed up together—that Europe will be like one nation, and a European war will be reputed a sacrilege equal to a civil war. In still postponing these useful labours, will they not give countenance to those who pretend that the cause of kings is irreconcilable with that of nations?"

In America, he rightly says in another letter, rail-roads have become a passion, a universal rage.

"When at Liverpool I went to engage a state-room on board the *Acific*; captain Waite offered me the last papers from the United States. The first that I opened was the *Rail-Road Journal*. After we sailed, I became very sea-sick, and continued so until we arrived at New York; and of all the recollections, more or less confused, which I have of the passage, the most decided is, that in the conversations of the passengers I heard the word *rail-road* once every ten minutes. At New York I visited the docks where vessels are built and repaired. When I had seen the dry-dock and two or three others, my guide, who was a great friend himself of rail-roads, took me to the rail-road dock, where vessels are moved upon a rail-road. I found rail-roads in Virginia, at the bottom of coal mines, which, however, is not a novelty for a European. At Philadelphia, I visited the admirable penitentiary, which was so neat, so quiet, so comfortable, (if I may so speak of a prison,) in comparison with our abominable prisons in France, so noisy, dirty, unhealthy, freezing in winter, damp in summer. The warden, Mr. Goddard, who directs the establishment with so much zeal and philanthropy, after showing me the cells of the prisoners, the yards in which they take the air, the steam-kitchen where their food is prepared, and permitting me to visit a poor Alsatian, one of the convicts, said to me when I was about taking leave, 'But you have not seen all; I have still to show you my rail-road.' And, in fact, there is a rail-road in the prison on the first story, along which the car which carries the rations for the prisoners is made to glide.

Some days ago I found myself in a little town in Virginia, near which there is a fine rail-road—Petersburg at the falls of the Appomattox. A merchant of the place, Mr. S. M., conducted me to a manufactory of tobacco, where a peculiar process is employed, and where that sort of tobacco is prepared which most Americans chew, and will continue to grow for a long time, in spite of the severe and, in this case, just complaints of English travellers, unless the fashion of *retoes* should extend, in which the ladies should place one upon the use of tobacco with as strong a

determination not to yield as the president's in regard to the bank. We were walking among the shops in the midst of the poor slaves who people them, and I had stepped back to look at some of the negroes who seemed almost white, and in whose veins the African blood was not an eighth part, when my companion said to me: 'You who interest yourself in rail-roads, you must not omit to see that of our establishment.' We passed into a room where the tobacco is enclosed in barrels and subjected to a considerable pressure. The apparatus which produces this pressure is of a singular construction, the principal part being a movable rail-road suspended from the ceiling. Thus the Americans have made rail-roads in the water, in the bowels of the earth, and have hung them in the air. It is an invention of which their practical sense has so nicely seized all the advantages, that they seek to apply it to every thing, and every where, even at random. When they cannot construct a real one, and especially a productive one, across fields, from river to river, from city to city, from state to state, they provide themselves at all events with one as a plaything whilst waiting for something better."

Our steamboats, of course, come in for a large share of our author's admiration, though this is by no means unalloyed, especially with regard to those which navigate the western waters. Few will contradict him when he asserts that a voyage upon the Mississippi is more dangerous than one upon the ocean—not one merely from Europe to the United States, but one from Europe to China. What with the perils of explosion, of fire, of snags, of concussions with other steamboats, accidents which are constantly happening, there is certainly much more need of making your will before embarking upon the father of waters, than when setting sail for the domains of the brother of the sun and uncle of the stars, or whatever other title he of the celestial empire may just now most delight in. M. Chevalier also particularizes the monotony of the river's course, the solitude of its flat and muddy banks, the dirty aspect of its waters, the strange customs of the passengers, cooped up in the same cage, as doing any thing but increasing the delights of the expedition; and he applauds the wisdom of the Louisiana planters who, when they migrate for the summer to the north to enjoy its cooler and purer atmosphere, choose for their conveyance one or another of the packet ships which sail between New Orleans and New York. As to the accidents that occur on the western rivers, he says that if such deplorable events were to happen with such frequency in Europe, there would be a universal outcry; the police and legislative powers would strenuously interfere; steamboats would become the dread of the traveller; and the public would excommunicate and abandon them altogether. This effect, he thinks, would also be produced, to a certain extent, in the eastern region, where the country is comparatively settled, and the lives of individuals are counted for something. But in the west, the

ood of emigration, pouring down from the Alleghanies, rolls long the plain with overwhelming energy, chasing before it the Indian, the buffalo, and the bear; prostrating gigantic forests as rapidly as the dry grass of the prairies disappears before the torch of the savage; and doing for civilization what the armies of Attila and Genghis Khan effected for barbarism. The law of all armies of invasion is its law, and the mass is thus very thing, the individual nothing. Wo, therefore, to him who takes a false step! he is trampled under foot. Wo to him who encounters a precipice! the crowd, impatient to press on, pushes him over; he is crushed and forgotten. Each one for himself.

"The life of a true American is that of a soldier. Like a soldier he is encamped, and his camp is a flying one—here to-day, and in a month ten hundred miles distant. It is a life of activity and violent sensations. As in a camp, quarrels in the west are summarily despatched upon the spot by a duel with knife, or rifle, or pistol *à bout portant*. It is a life of quick alternations of success and reverse. The wretch of to-day is wealthy to-morrow, and poor again the day following, according to the quarter from which the wind of speculation is blowing; but the collective wealth of the country pursues a constantly progressive march. Like a soldier, the American of the west has for his motto—*conquer or die!* but with him to conquer is to acquire dollars; to make a fortune is nothing; to buy lots at Chicago, Cleveland, or St. Louis, and sell them a year afterwards at a thousand per cent. profit; to bring cotton to New Orleans when it is worth twenty cents the pound. So much the worse for the vanquished; so much the worse for those who perish in a steamboat! The essential point is not to save some, or even some hundred, individuals; it is, as regards steamboats, to have numbers of them; safe or not, well or ill commanded, is of little consequence, provided they go fast and cheap. This circulation of steamboats is as necessary to the west as is the circulation of the blood to the human system. Care is taken not to impede it by any regulations or restrictions. The time for these has not yet arrived. They will be looked to at some later day."

In reference to the kind of people whom the traveller encounters in his steam peregrinations in the west, M. Chevalier is not disposed to be very complimentary. The account given by worthy Mrs. Trollope of the sociability of the good folks of that quarter would not, according to him, be altogether contradicted by foreigners, or even Americans from the capitals of the east, in the first paroxysms of their ill-humour on escaping from those "floating barracks." He complains of the practical quality that there reigns—"not a mock or paper quality"—of the fact that every man there, who has a tolerable coat upon his back, is a gentleman, and that one gentleman is as good as another, and never thinks of putting himself out of the way for his equal. "He attends to himself, and none but himself; he expects no consideration from his neighbour, and does not suspect that the latter desires the least from him." In all this shrewdness, however, our author bids his reader remark that there

was not the slightest tincture of malice; but, on the contrary, a degree of naturalness that disarmed all anger. The man of the west, he tells us, is rough, but not quarrelsome, susceptible, proud of himself and his country to excess, but proud without fatuity or affectation; with a good fund of obligingness and even generosity under his envelope of vanity and egotism; a great calculator, and yet not cold in his temperament, even capable of enthusiasm; loving money as a passion, yet not avaricious, and often prodigal; abrupt and uncouth, because he has not had time to soften his voice and modify his gestures; though unpolished, not so from taking pleasure in impoliteness, as he aspires to become a man of good society, and would already pass for such, but because he has been obliged to devote much more time to the cultivation of his land than of himself. "It is natural that the first generation of the west should bear the impress of the rugged labours it has so perseveringly prosecuted; but, though these reflections may be consoling for the future, they do not render life on board a steamboat upon the Ohio or Mississippi a very charming thing just now; for one attaches value to polite and engaging manners." Infinitely as we admire the west and the people of the west, we must say ditto to this opinion. We certainly have travelled more pleasantly even in that land of despotism and debasement called Italy, in a vehicle with no other and better company than ourselves, than in the very region of independence and equality, with a steamboat full of society, and all *gentlemen* to boot, from the captain to the cook. Most classical, by the way, is always the taste of the gentleman who rejoices in this last appellation; and we are rather surprised, considering the circumstance of our author's being a Frenchman, and, as a matter of course, an amateur of the *cuisine* as well as of the *genre classique*, (unless, indeed—which we are inclined to suspect—he has been bitten by the romantic mania so prevalent just now among his countrymen,) that he has not favoured us with some observations on the personages alluded to. Their achievements are all performed in *Grease* as unquestionably as were any of those of Leonidas or Themistocles, and in equally "*living grease*," too, we are sorry to say. To one who is at all addicted to that aristocratic misery, dyspepsia, it would be difficult to imagine any thing quite so awful as the dinner of a western steamboat.

"In the human heart there is a certain number of sentiments which must of necessity find vent in some mode. Restrain them on one point, they burst forth at another. The sentiment of respect for the depositaries of power, which, until our days of revolution, had so strongly cemented our European societies, has become gradually weakened on the other side of the Atlantic. In the west especially, it is altogether extinct. There, the authorities, so called, have attributes as modest as

their appointments are scant. They are *governors* who govern nothing, and judges who are very liable to be judged. The chief magistrate is pompously styled in the constitutions of these young states, commander of the forces by land and sea—pure mockery! for a reservation of the authority is stipulated in case of war, and even in peace he has scarce the right of making a corporal. But the sentiment of discipline and obedience loses nothing by this; it is manifested instinctively towards the men who are in fact the generals of the expedition, the providence of the volunteers. If little trouble is taken about the governor of the state, the people are docile and submissive towards the tavern keeper, the driver of the stage, and the captain of the steamboat. With regard to them self-government is not in vogue. You rise, you breakfast, you dine, you sup, when it pleases the landlord or his chief of the staff, the barkeeper, to ring the bell or sound the gong. It is just the same as in the army. You eat whatever is set before you, without ever permitting yourself to make an observation. You stop at the pleasure of the driver or the captain, without evincing impatience. You suffer yourself to be upset and have your ribs broken by the former, or to be blown up and drowned by the other, without complaint or recrimination. It is here again the same as in the army. It has been remarked that the existence of the founders of empires, from the companions of Romulus down to the *flibustiers*, consisted of a mixture of absolute independence and passive obedience. The society which is springing up in the west has not escaped from this common law."

With regard to the all-important subject of the permanence of our Union, Mr. Chevalier does not speak with the confidence of one to whom coming events are distinctly shadowed forth. He descries, like all competent observers, many perilous breakers ahead, on which the goodly ship may peradventure rush to her destruction; but he also beholds various signs in the heavens which induce him to believe that the winds will not drive her upon them, and that she will be able to steer her way successfully between Scylla and Charybdis. Yet, though he does not think the Union is in danger of being broken in pieces, he, nevertheless, opines that it may undergo some modifications; and, with all the philanthropy of a citizen of the world, and all the spirit of a citizen of the country where every one is and has been employed, for a long time past, in manufacturing constitutions and systems of government for "*la patrie*" and the universe, he throws out the hint of an improvement which should be submitted as soon as may be to the consideration of our conscript fathers. His suggestion is to subdivide the general confederation into three intermediate confederations, corresponding respectively to the three great "homogeneous masses" of the Atlantic, the West, and the South. This, he thinks, would establish especial bonds among the states of each group; would give satisfaction to the doctrine of states' rights, without compromising the principle of union; and would render the Union itself more elastic. The existence of these three partial confederations he fancies would harmonize perfectly with that

of a central authority invested with the incontestable attributes of the present federal government—an army, a fleet, an external representation, a *droit de cité*, a supreme court, and, as far as possible, a custom-house and a bank. As he says this idea ought to be examined without much delay, would it not be of great value to some of the luminous sages of the assemblage whose deliberations have already given so cheering an earnest of the decorum with which they will be conducted, and the ineffable benefits they will inflict upon the state? Would it not be a more innocent topic than that, for instance, of making Draconic laws? And would it not afford a capital theme, *pro* and *con*, to some of the formidable orators who have evinced their determination to outdo all ancient and modern eloquence, and enlighten mankind upon every and any subject, especially on points of which they themselves are most profoundly ignorant? For our own part, we cannot help believing that M. Chevalier's plan would only make confusion worse confounded. Our system has quite enough wheels within wheels already, and any addition would not be very apt to simplify the machine and preserve its motions from the risk of derangement. With three such strapping, selfish children as our author would thus bestow on the mother Union, we rather fear the poor lady would stand a chance of being treated with a degree of roughness and contempt that might break her heart, and put an end to her wretched days; and then the parricidal villains would, in all probability, fall together by the ears, and end by furnishing the world with another melancholy illustration of the fate of those terrible belligerents, the Kilkenny cats. “*Di talem avertite casum!*” *Grand merci*, Mr. Chevalier, for your hint, but we would not take one of the kind from the Abbé de Sieyes himself.

The great danger to our institutions, it seems to us, may be dreaded from the fact of the little influence, comparatively speaking, which is exercised by the more enlightened and sober classes of the people upon our political proceedings. In a country where numbers are every thing, intelligence and virtue comparatively nothing, where the laws have no stipulations in favour of either natural or acquired superiority, and regard the most ignorant and debased as on a level with the wisest, brightest, purest citizens, it is to be expected that the sway of numbers will often produce effects such as we now have so much reason to deplore. Our present sufferings are, without question, mainly ascribable to the circumstance of the numerical majority (who were a lamentable minority of those best fitted for wielding power) having elevated an incompetent, and worse than incompetent, person to the chair of state, and there supported him, by the mere strength of numbers, in defiance of all the dictates of patriotism and common sense.

re is the great evil—making the high places the rewards, not merit, but of popular favouritism, and, as a consequence, of rty prostitution. Is it not a fact, as indisputable as it is urnful, that he who has the noble ambition *ἀντὶ πάντων ἀρίστην εἶχον ἰμμεναια λαῶν*—always to excel and be superior to others—not enabled to gratify the generous impulse? Is it not a fact it one who wishes to obtain the honours of the republic must sent to sacrifices of his own honour and dignity, which ght to disqualify him for these very honours in the eyes of i compatriots? Can any one who says to himself, like the ench philosopher,

“ Je ne sais ni tromper, ni feindre, ni mentir,  
Et quand je le pourrois, je n’y puis consentir,”

er hope to soar upon the wings of such virtue to the summits our political pyramids? Is it not by creeping alone that those 1 be reached? What is to be the result of this? Why that but tiles, not eagles, will make efforts to place themselves upon elevations—that only those who render themselves un- rthy of the posts they seek, will strive to obtain them. Take, example, a youth who feels both the desire and ability to ieve the loftiest distinction. He embarks in the career of hopes, believing that all the glorious lessons he has learned now to be reduced to practice—that the great models whom has before his eyes, and in whose footsteps it has always n his fondest wish to walk, he may now perchance triumph- ly imitate—that he, too, may one day read his blessings in ation’s eyes. Almost at the first step he finds he must ckle to what he knows to be caprice, or delusion, or vice, ick he will not flatter; he looks around and studies the con- ct and character of those who are outstripping him in the e, of those who are in possession of the eminences over ick the star of his ambition is shining, and he sees what nverts, to his eyes, the glitter of the orb into a sickly repulsive re from which he soon turns in utter disgust; and, with pes and spirits bruised, he retires from the contest, abandon- g it to the mercenaries whose struggles alone are applauded the people, and have a likelihood of ultimate success. This no fancy picture. What has happened, and is happening ound us, affords a melancholy illustration of its truth.

Did we believe that the high places were thus always to be lluted by the exhalations from the foulest fens of corruption— d we believe that we were always to be exposed to the repeti- m of such scenes and deeds as we have witnessed, to the ock of such miseries as we have endured—did we believe at we were always to be cursed with an aristocracy of vul- urity, and ignorance, and profligacy, in lieu of one of refine-



ment and magnificence, in which if there be vice it loses half its evil by losing all its grossness—did we believe all this, we should certainly deem it well for us to take the counsels of those who have only looked at the gloomy side of our institutions, into serious consideration. But such is not our belief.

— “Think'st thou yon darksome cloud,  
Raised by a breath, hath quenched the orb of day?  
To-morrow he repairs the golden flood,  
And warms the nations with redoubled ray.”

We recollect, a few years ago, that upon arriving from Europe, and entering the bay of New York, a sudden storm arose, (the day having been previously beautiful,) and in a few moments immediate destruction seemed to threaten our noble vessel and all on board. Nothing of the kind had occurred during the whole voyage, and apprehensions of being shipwrecked in the very harbour became strong and universal. Had it not been, indeed, for the skill and presence of mind of our veteran commander, the result must have been most disastrous. The boat lashed to the side of the ship was swept away; seats upon an upper deck were literally hurled into the waves by the fury of the wind; and the principal deck was flooded by rain, which poured down in torrents, to a depth that might have created fears of submersion from the waters of heaven as well as those of the sea. The gale however was too fierce to endure long. In an hour, perhaps, the evening sun was again beaming with his mellow effulgence in a cloudless sky, and nothing in the aspect of nature would have told of the scene that had just been witnessed. But proofs of it in mournful abundance were scattered around, and never shall we forget the spectacle they presented. The bay had been studded with vessels of various descriptions—some commencing and others about to terminate their voyage—their sails all spread blithely and confidently to the treacherous skies, “unmindful of the sweeping whirlwind's sway”—and now most were utter wrecks, these dismasted, those upon their beam ends, and several entirely beneath the water, with only a glimpse of their sides or a straggling spar to indicate what they were. In all directions human beings were seen clinging to whatever afforded a chance of salvation. Fortunate was it for them that our ship was near and uninjured. A considerable time was spent in picking them up, and it was not until those had been rescued who had escaped a watery grave, that we pursued our course. Like this storm is the one which has burst upon our land—as sudden, as violent, as fruitful of ruin—and the wrecks it has made are strewn around in heart-sickening numbers. But soon as serene a firmament and as unsullied a sun will smile again over our heads, as gilded the scene of desolation we have described, and whispered

and comfort to the unfortunate beings who have thus brought back to our memory !

need not, however, expect to pursue the tenour of our without encountering these shocks. We are particularly ad to them, in fact, from the identical circumstance which ces that especial superiority we boast over the rest of the . The grovelling plains, the lowly level of despotism may n for ages in uninterrupted calm ; but the cloud-piercing ts of freedom are in the very region of the tempest. Ever non the thunder must roll and the lightning flash about until those who dwell in their midst may dread that the -spirit is abroad for the accomplishment of total ruin. ho would not rather breathe the pure, elastic, invigorat- mosphere that circulates among them, which is thus kept rious by the very convulsions which create so much alarm, he close and stagnant air, tranquil though it may always hich causes every thing to languish and wither ? Our tions, like all other human concerns, have their imper- as ; and, even if they were intrinsically perfect, their ct with human nature—which is the same in the new as old world, at the present as in former times—must mar effect. Here, too, if the amplest scope be afforded to the us qualities of man, the same is also given to his evil ns ; so that if we have a greater probability of happiness, ve also a more serious risk of the reverse. Here, on this the grand battle to be fought between Ebony and Topaz— en the bad and good spirits that are ever struggling for astery of our breasts—and he is no believer in an all-wise, l-just, and omnipotent God, (who would not have com- ed us to strive after perfection had he not provided us he means of at least approaching it,) who fears that the y will be achieved by the former. The contest will indeed rotracted and a close one, but, with a proper trust in the ghty arm which has been promised for our support, we come out from it with equal glory and advantage for ves and the world.

are intimately impressed with the conviction that the ility of retrogradation in human affairs is incompatible he existence of an over-ruling Providence and the pro- of Christianity ; that there must be a gradual, progressive vement. We cannot admit for a moment the idea that our ry has only been raised to the elevation it has attained, to timately thrown prostrate on the earth. That would in- be a fall—

“ Qui cadit in plano (vix hoc tamen evenit ipsum)  
Sic cadit ut tacta surgere possit humo ;

At miser Elpenor, tecto delapsus ab alto,  
Occurrit regi debilis umbra suo."

The whole history of the world proves this gradual advancement of which we speak. It proves that although at times mankind may seem to have lost what they had gained, and to have reverted to ignorance and barbarism, they have only, in the French phrase, *reculé pour mieux sauter*; they were at the moment but in a slumber from which they have always awakened, with renovated strength and spirits, to recommence their march. Thus the ship which now appears buried in the abyss of the ocean, is seen careering the next instant on the summit of a wave still more lofty than that from which it had previously plunged—thus the wanderer among the Alps descends from the eminence he has just reached into the valley which separates it from the more elevated peak beyond, until, after an undulating but constantly ascending course, he at length reaches the heaven-kissing mount from which the wonders he had yearned to behold are spread before his enraptured eyes.

Let us not then for a moment despair of the republic. It is treason to ourselves, to our posterity, and to the hopes of man. The spirit of evil may now be predominant, but his triumph will be short. We must learn how to obtain, how to appreciate, and how to deserve, the happiness in store for us. The uses of adversity are the salutary restoratives which may be extracted from the poisonous herb. "Some," says St. Paul, "shall be saved, yet so as by fire;" and "prosperity," says Lord Bacon, "is the blessing of the Old Testament, adversity is the blessing of the New, which carrieth the greater benediction, and the clearer revelation of God's favour." The check we have received may be of more ultimate benefit to us than years of unalloyed, intoxicating prosperity—and richly did we merit its infliction. Let us always remember that our institutions are not built, like those of the old world, upon the shifting sands of privilege and injustice, but upon a rock—the rock of the eternal, immutable rights which God and nature have granted to man—and that though the edifice may be beaten by the rain and shaken by the blast, its foundations are too strong and too deep to permit it to be overthrown.

---

ART. IV.—*The Lottery System in the United States.* By JOB R. TYSON. 3d edition. 1 vol. pp. 111. Philadelphia: 1837.

The first edition of this little work was prepared by its intelligent author in January, 1833, at the request of a number of the citizens of Philadelphia favourable to the entire abolition of lotteries. A second edition, containing additional facts, was called for in the month of November of that year, and published by order of the same individuals, who were animated with a becoming zeal for the suppression of a crying public evil. A society was soon formed, entitled "the Pennsylvania Society for the suppression of Lotteries," which, in the month of July of the following year, issued an address to the people of Pennsylvania and of the United States, prepared by the same indefatigable gentleman, who was appointed chairman of the committee for that purpose. The efforts of the citizens above referred to, and the writings of Mr. Tyson, (a copy of the first edition of his pamphlet having been sent to the members of every legislature in the Union,) are believed to have mainly contributed to the subsequent entire abolition of lotteries in Pennsylvania, and to the important action which has taken place in some of our sister states upon this topic.

In several of the states societies have been formed upon the model of that in Pennsylvania, which have lent their ready and effectual co-operation to carry out the expressed intention of the legislature. Without this aid, the states of New York and Massachusetts would not have been free, as they are now understood to be, of this bane to the moral health of their citizens. The former of these two states has gone so far as to restrain, by an express constitutional provision, her legislature from making thereafter any lottery grant. Maryland and Tennessee have followed the example of New York; and Ohio, Vermont, Maine, Michigan, Louisiana, and Connecticut, have abolished by legislative acts the entire system. Others of the states, as New Hampshire and New Jersey, have prohibited the sale of foreign lottery tickets, and have repeatedly refused, of late years, to authorize a lottery privilege.

In some of these states, however, where societies of the kind here mentioned do not exist, the traffic in lottery tickets still prevails; and, as the spirit is one which demands constant expression, it was deemed proper to direct public attention again to the subject. Mr. Tyson says in his preface to the third edition:

"Besides presenting reasons for the universal abandonment of a policy so erroneous and destructive, the writer has in view the formation of

societies to aid the execution of the laws in those states in which the system is abolished. While it prevails in any state of the Union, there is ground for apprehension that the protective legislation of the others will claim respect only in proportion to that vigilance which shall assist in guarding it from infringement.

"In Philadelphia and other parts of the state, there is abundant reason to believe that the law, if not openly defied, is *secretly* violated. Nor is it matter of surprise that the lower classes of the people should feel a desire to indulge in the golden dreams inspired by the promises of the lottery, while such announcements as the following find their way into the newspapers of the day :—'A French paper, of February 7th, states that the coachman of Mr. Vandenaelen, of Brussels, has drawn a prize of five millions of florins, (about \$2,000,000,) in a German lottery.'

"The publication of such intelligence cannot but be injurious to the whole tribe of coachmen and servants, in this country, whose ambition, it is well known, is already sufficiently magnificent. 'If God,' says the Arabic proverb, 'purposes the destruction of an ant, he allows wings to grow upon her.' According to Burckhardt, the traveller, the adage implies that the sudden elevation of a person beyond his natural condition usually causes his ruin. Adopting the announcement to be true, we cannot doubt that the glittering prize will prove fatal to the character and peace of its unfortunate holder."

By the efforts of the Pennsylvania society, several offenders against the law of March, 1833, have been brought to trial, conviction, and punishment; and probably, if the institution should continue her efforts with as much ardour as she commenced them, infractions of the law in this respect will not go unpunished, and the system be completely eradicated from the borders of Pennsylvania. This happy state of things might continue, unless the legislature were induced hereafter to adopt a new line of policy, and again authorize the introduction of this enormous system of gambling. In order, if possible, to prevent this, it is proposed to introduce into the new constitution of Pennsylvania (now in process of formation) a clause similar to that in the charters of New York, Maryland, and Tennessee—abolishing altogether legislative discretion upon this head.

It is not our intention to go into either argument or proof upon the subject of the public evil of lotteries. This has been amply performed by others; and by no one better than the author of the little work before us. Public opinion we presume to be made up upon the point, and public feeling requires but to be again aroused, in order to adopt efficacious measures to prevent lotteries taking root with us a second time. The effectual mode, undoubtedly, would be that suggested, of a constitutional prohibition—to be, in its turn, aided and encouraged by the active, zealous co-operation of philanthropic individuals anxious for the preservation of the public morals. Many, we might say most, of the leading measures of Pennsylvania policy have been fostered, if not finally successfully

ed, by means of similar institutions. The great cause of reform and penitentiary discipline is under lasting auspices to such an association. Education, internal improvements, and other valuable objects of our regard as citizens, have derived much of their prosperity to the combined action of good individuals. Equal success has so far attended the efforts of the Pennsylvania society for the suppression of gaming; and it needs but a continuance of their discreet and vigorous energies to secure a complete and effectual triumph. Tyson's description of the origin of lotteries is well known and of much interest.

Gaming, by means of the lottery, is not of very modern origin. It has been tolerated and even fostered by Christian communities its birth so far back as a remote period in the history of the world.

The uses to which it was applied, are faithfully delineated by a Jesuit father, who published the result of his researches in the close of the seventeenth century.

Christian world is indebted to the republic of Genoa for suggesting the idea of resorting to the lottery as a measure of finance. From Genoa it migrated into France, about the year 1580, where its history opens a dark page of poverty, wretchedness, and crime. Its introduction into Great Britain was early, being nurtured and sustained by the liberal hand of government, as an expedient for raising money upon the principle of voluntary taxation. The first lottery mentioned in English history, was established in 1567; and Maitland of Stowe informs us that in 1569, there were but three lottery offices in the kingdom.<sup>1</sup> Thirty years brought an immense accession to the number, and various regulations were made, to diminish, by restrictions and penalties, the malign influence. But no emollient was equal to the emergency. A new genius awoke into being, competent to evade the rigour and stratagem, the provisions of each new law. At length fraud became too obvious and crying for popular favour. An act was made in the house of commons, and, on the recommendation of a committee, new guards were applied. Still checks were found to be a temporary alleviation. Like most mitigating remedies, they had the effect of giving false security to the patient, rather than of counteracting the disease. Nothing less than a kind of legislative reformation could expel a poison so deeply seated and pervading. It may well be supposed, that if it prevailed in England when this country was colonized, the policy would be observable in acts relating to the settlement. Accordingly, the second lottery granted by parliament was authorized in the reign of the first James, for carrying on the colonization of Virginia. The eastern colonies experienced the unhappy effects of the same spirit of legislation. So early as 1699, the 'ministers at Boston' denounced the lottery as a cheat, and its agents as enemies of the people. But, notwithstanding this early denunciation of fraud, and its recent extinction in England, the lottery has taken root and shot its noxious branches into many portions of the American Union. Legislative sanction is here given to this vice under various pretences of excavating canals, building bridges, erecting schools, and endowing colleges, as well as for the construction of

---

<sup>1</sup> The first lottery in England was drawn at the west door of *St. Paul's Cathedral*!

edifices devoted to worshipping the Deity! Unhappy indeed, that the lover of freedom should consent to aim a deliberate blow at his proud institutions; and that the Christian votary should inflict a deep wound upon religion and morality, with the ostensible view of aiding in their promotion!

"But whatever may have been the origin of lottery grants in the United States, the objects to which they have been applied are not more multifarious than the number and amount of schemes have been overwhelming. In the different states, there are no less than twelve or fourteen lotteries which claim the sanction of a legal existence. What sum may be hazarded in a single day, it is difficult to calculate with any thing like precision. That it is alarming in magnitude, may be presumed from the fact that, in the single state of New York, schemes have been issued, since the adoption of her new constitution, to the enormous sum of *thirty-seven millions of dollars!* In Pennsylvania, schemes issued under the authority of seven other states, were, for a long time, vended to an incredible amount, in direct violation of law. It could not have been anticipated by the provincial assembly of 1762, when it prohibited lotteries with a striking preamble and a high penalty, that a few years would witness their multiplication to such an extent.

"This colonial legislation, whilst it displays the domestic feelings of the colonists, at an early period, likewise discovers the exotic source of the lottery system. But this more distinctly appears from the proviso of the act, which *saves* from the general prohibition, 'all state lotteries enacted and licensed by *act of parliament in Great Britain.*' There is no doubt the parent country taught her imitative offspring to domesticate the lottery, by pointing out its manifold uses. The lottery, then, is a weed which is not indigenous to this soil. It did not spring up in this country, the result of necessity or the dictate of pecuniary expediency. In the enactment referred to, our ancestors pronounced it to be a mischievous and unlawful *game*—detrimental to youth, and ruinous to the poor—the source of fraud and dishonesty—alike hurtful to industry, commerce, and trade—and baneful to the interests of good citizenship, morality, and virtue."

After detailing some interesting facts which were elicited by the labours of a committee of the British house of commons in the year 1808, the author proceeds to sketch the progress of public opinion in Great Britain, which finally resulted in the overthrow of the system. He says:

"Other testimony shows what it is here unnecessary to quote—the ingenious and multiplied expedients of the lottery brokers for evading the laws, as well as the perfidy of the government officers in winking at transgressions, and partaking of the fruits of illicit adventures. The whole report discloses a scene of iniquity so multiform, and of misery so hopeless, as to sicken and appal the mind. The restrictions intended by new statutes soon ceased to exhibit any mitigation in their effects, till at last the whole system was absconded as the most noxious and venomous excrescence that could deform the legislation or poison the moral atmosphere of England. This temporary suspension of the system was preceded by events, which, perhaps, will ever be remembered in the annals of self-destruction. A scheme was formed in London, displaying several magnificent prizes of £50,000 and £100,000, which tempted to ventures of very large amount, and the night of the drawing was signalized by fifty cases of suicide! With these tragedies terminated, for a brief period, the career of the lottery in the English isle!

"From such facts, what opinion are we authorized to form of the magnitude of this evil? An evil which paralyzes industry, destroys domestic concord, saps the foundation of correct principles, and leads to the commission of the darkest crimes in the criminal calendar? What ought we to think of those laws which give it protection? As well might a legislature cherish, by the public bounty, a monster whose pestilential and baneful breath scattered deformity, disease, and death, widely over the country.

"But the immense revenue of a million pounds sterling, which the treasury annually derived from the lottery, was too great a temptation to be long resisted. It was soon again introduced into the budget, as an item, which, notwithstanding its plain consequences in the extinction of revenue, 'the state of the finances' could not forego. Large sums were year after year levied upon the people, by this detestable expedient to fill the coffers of the treasury. It is related upon good authority, that the annual subsidy has seldom been less than a *million*, since the period of the revolution. If it required the issuing of schemes in the Union Canal to the amount of *thirty-three millions* for the purpose of collecting \$340,000, we may presume that the annual sales in England must be startling.

"The evils of the system again invoked the attention of the British public in 1819, and gave rise to an interesting debate in parliament. The propriety of its continuance was discussed by such men as Lyttleton, Buxton, Wilberforce, Canning, and Castlereagh. The whole subject was passed in review—its erroneous policy—its irremediable mischiefs—its sure tendencies and ascertained results—but all gave way to its *invincible necessity* as a means of revenue. The committee of 1808 had disclosed one pregnant and overwhelming fact, which furnished to various arguments a convincing and unanswerable reply. It was ascertained that, if the lottery were abolished, the increased consumption of exciseable articles would more than supply its loss to the treasury. In vindication of the system, the chancellor, it is alleged, assumed a position which is irreconcilable with all correct principles of government, and every sound notion of ethics. He is said to have asserted that there was always floating in society a given quantity of vicious inclinations, which he had a right to turn to the best account—that, as the spirit of gambling was rife, it was justifiable, in finance, to make it ancillary to the public burthens. It is not easy to decide whether such a sentiment is more incompatible with policy, considered merely as a matter of profit, or at variance with the plain principles of morality. Shall we pamper vices because they exist! Is it enlightened prudence or true virtue to hold out lures to the simple, the ignorant, and the credulous, which, if successful, must debase their characters, and render them dishonest citizens or dependent paupers? But without formally controverting a dogma which teaches such erroneous doctrines, we may leave it to the silent reflection of the philanthropist, satisfied that he will discard it as unsound, false, and illiberal. In 1823 the lottery was again sought to be propagated, but the tide of popular favour had so violently set against it as to require the salvo that it was proposed for the last time. Whether it has not again been recently revived is not certainly known, but surely the British nation has been abundantly admonished of its intrinsic banefulness to induce its entire relinquishment.<sup>1</sup> Upon the invention of

---

<sup>1</sup> A recent English newspaper informs us that the last state lottery was drawn in England in October, 1826, and that France has also announced her intention to abandon the lottery system.



savings banks for the benefit of the poor, it was found to present the greatest impediment to their success. But, during the period of its temporary discontinuance, these institutions recovered from their languishing condition, and gradually advanced in their deposits and usefulness.

"If the spirit of liberty be indeed rising in Great Britain, let the political sentinel rear aloft and higher the banner of private virtue and enlightened sentiment. If the *people* are to express their power, may it not be a brute, animal force, but may it be tempered by moral restraints and virtuous impulses. Let the *lottery* at least be weeded out as fatal to the true spirit and best interests of freedom.

Mr. Tyson draws the following comparison between gambling by lotteries and the other ordinary modes of dissipating fortune and character in games of hazard :

"Would licensed gambling tables be introductive of so much distress, such variety and blackness of crime? In the first place, the lottery scatters mischief with a more prodigal hand than other kinds of gambling. It holds out enticements which reach every class in the community. It has attractions for the poor as well as the rich, for the concealed speculator no less than the avowed libertine. The subdivision of chances is so minute as to include among the adventurers, the apprentice to a trade, the indentured girl, and the chimney sweep. But it does not stop here. With its own undistinguishing spirit, it sacrifices older victims, and ascends into higher walks. It penetrates into situations which would prove impervious to the contaminating influences of ordinary gambling. While in common games the personal agency which is necessary must expose the infamy of participation, the odium of holding tickets may be prevented by committing to another the charge of the purchase. It is thus that persons pretending to respectability have been known to speculate in lotteries, without incurring the disgrace which, in most communities, is incident to the practice of gambling.

"The risks are greater in the lottery than in other gaming. The chance of the latter may be as one to one, or greater, at the discretion of the player. The hazards of the former are frequently in the proportion of *one to thousands*. In the one, loss of fortune may ensue in a single night; but, in the other, the excitements of hope and the agony of disappointment alternate in such quick succession, that the unhappy adventurer has a protracted struggle with the fickleness of chance, before he can know the result of the contest. In the mean time he is rendered a useless, not to say a pernicious, member of society. His principles are contaminated by familiar association with infamy and guilt, and his habits debauched by indulging in the excesses to which he has been driven.

"The life of a regular gamester may admit of useful employment in the intervals of play. But the adventurer in the lottery broods by day and night over his tickets—his imagination is filled with the grand idea of possessing the *capital prize*—and his mind is held in that state of intensity and excitement which admits of nothing to divert it from the one great and absorbing object of its contemplation. Ordinary gambling may ruin the victim of its infatuation at once, and drive him to suicide; or he may borrow from his successful companion, beyond the possibility of repayment, in the hope of retrieving his broken fortunes. The speculator in the lottery, on the other hand, is not vanquished at a blow, but, in the caprices or accidents of the wheel, though often the loser, he is sometimes the gainer; new stimulus is thus imparted to his cupidity—he is urged on to new ventures—continued ill luck nourishes the hope of

its speedy termination—and great good fortune only whets his appetite for greater ;

‘ As in the dropsy, if indulged the thirst,  
The patient joys, *but his disease is nursed.*’

He soon finds that he is incapable of a higher effort than discussing the merits of a scheme, or lounging upon the counter of a lottery office, so that that which was resorted to as promising a great blessing, has become the bane of his happiness, and the solemn business of his life. When his means are exhausted, and his friends lose their confidence, he cannot gratify his passion for the game, or his pruriency for its successes, by appealing, like the regular gamester, to the fortunate winner for a new supply. Driven, as well by the desperate necessity of ministering to his excitement, as by depraved principles and reckless despair, he is ready for the perpetration of any enormity. Which, then, has the preponderance of evil as an engine of state ? If the risks be greater, by which the prospect of loss must be commensurately increased—if it be more likely to lead to incurable idleness—if its inevitable and certain tendency be to intemperance, to perfidy, to fraud, and to crime—and if its pernicious influence be more widely diffused—we can be at no loss to which to attribute the loathsome superiority.”

The spirit of speculation is indeed one of the evil tendencies of American character, and should be repressed in every possible way, or, at least regulated and kept within proper bounds. When so repressed, it may prove, and has indeed proved, the prompter and the successful agent in the noblest enterprises.

We present a single additional extract on account of the useful information which it contains. It furnishes an abstract of what has been done in other states of this Union in the shape of legislative enactments upon the subject of lotteries.

“ In New York the lottery system has prevailed to an alarming extent. During the year 1830, schemes were drawn, in the city of New York alone, to the overwhelming amount of *nine millions two hundred and seventy thousand dollars*. The year 1833 witnessed its termination in that great commonwealth, by virtue of an act passed in pursuance of the spirit which dictated a salutary provision in her revised constitution. That constitution, in the spirit of enlightened and genuine philanthropy, has disabled the legislature from ever making the grant of a lottery. The provision is in these words :

“ Art. 7. Sec. 11. ‘ No lottery shall hereafter be authorized in this state ; and the legislature shall pass laws to prevent the sale of all lottery tickets within this state, except in lotteries already provided for by law.’ ”

“ Through the statute book of Virginia there are scattered forty or fifty acts of assembly authorizing lotteries for various objects of a local nature, connected for the most part with the cause of improvement. At the session of 1832-3 alone, no less than twelve new ones were enacted. Of this frightful number, it is consolatory to hope, from the diminutive sums mentioned in the grants, that only three or four will be rendered injurious by being carried into execution. An act of 1825 prohibited the sale of foreign tickets, but as it could not be executed, *licenses* were substituted.”

“ It is not a little remarkable that the Virginia legislature at the ses-

sion of 1832-3, should authorize 'twelve new lotteries to be drawn,' while an act to suppress them altogether was substantially passed by both houses! The bill for their suppression had received the sanction of the delegates, and was returned with an unimportant amendment from the senate, which, as it was the last day of the session, the former had not time to consider. It remains for us to hope that it will be revived and concurred in with unanimity.

"In Ohio, Vermont, Maine, and Michigan, the lottery system is destroyed; and in Louisiana, where twenty grants have been authorized since the year 1810, its existence is to terminate on the first day of the coming year.

"The constitutions of Maryland and Tennessee have wisely interfered in the destruction of all power on the part of the legislature, to license so pernicious a species of gambling.

"New Hampshire passed a law in 1791 for the suppression of the evil, the penalty of which was altered in 1807, and this again by an act of 1827, which is still in operation. This statute makes it penal to dispose of any property by means of a lottery, or to sell foreign lottery tickets. There is no grant in existence, but until recently foreign tickets were sold in almost every bookseller's shop in the state in open defiance of the law."

"In North Carolina the system is virtually abandoned by the suspension of schemes, and the absence of lottery offices for the sale of tickets; although the grant for the Neuse river is said still to be in being.

"In Massachusetts the clandestine sale of lottery tickets, which had been extensively carried on in Boston, was arrested at the session of the legislature for 1832-3, with an energy and unanimity of sentiment highly gratifying.

"The legislature of New Jersey, for the last twelve or fifteen years, has uniformly resisted the most urgent applications for grants of lotteries, but in defiance of the penalties annexed to *selling foreign tickets*, they are exposed in every part of the state. We are informed upon the best authority, that extraordinary arts are employed to induce their purchase. Newspaper publications, personal solicitations and importunities, hand-bills thrown in at almost every door, and the exposure of artful and gaudy signs to public view, are among the means resorted to. It is to be hoped that this violation of their laws will be stopped, both from considerations relating to their own citizens, as well as to those of Philadelphia. If the practice be connived at by the authorities of New Jersey, she may expect, now that lotteries in Pennsylvania are terminated, to be darkened by the flight into Camden, and the neighbouring towns, of the numerous lottery brokers with which Philadelphia was recently swarming. Will she consent to receive into her bosom *two hundred* greedy lottery brokers to prey upon the vitals of her national prosperity? Will she consent to render inoperative the legislation of Pennsylvania, by presenting to her citizens an easy opportunity of evading the law in going beyond the reach of its penalties?

"There exists no lottery in Illinois, but, owing to the absence of statutory prohibition against the sale of foreign tickets, they have been offered for sale during the past summer. Bills for the introduction of the lottery system have been from time to time presented to the legislature, but without success. At the last session of the senate, a bill received its sanction for the purpose of improving the condition of *Purgatory*;<sup>1</sup> but a large majority of the house defeated the proposition.

---

<sup>1</sup> The name of a road well known to travellers passing between Vin-

"In Connecticut there are two unexpired grants; the Retreat for the Insane, and the Enfield Bridge Company. The sale of tickets, not authorized by these grants, is prohibited by the revised criminal code of 1830, under the penalty of fine or imprisonment.

"The laws by which lotteries are guarded in this state, are so judicious that we propose to introduce an abstract of their provisions.

"The revised criminal code of 1830, prohibits all *unauthorized* lotteries in any form."

"In Georgia there have been thirteen grants since the year 1825. A penalty exists against the sale of foreign tickets, but the law, from long evasion, is regarded as obsolete. The system which obtains in this state of disposing by lottery of the public lands, is no otherwise pernicious than as it keeps alive a gambling propensity, and has been the means of giving them to unworthy recipients without a just equivalent."

"The last legislature of Missouri granted two lotteries, one for the construction of a rail-road, and the other for the benefit of a hospital at St. Louis, to be under the direction of 'The Sisters of Charity.' It is much to be regretted that Missouri should now for the first time embark in a system which the other states are endeavouring to abolish, under an impression that the cause of improvement or true benevolence can be promoted by it. But the argument in favour of the bills was that, as foreign lottery tickets were not prohibited, they found admission into the state, and there was no way to remedy the evil but by the encouragement of a domestic system!

"In Kentucky and Alabama grants are in being, and foreign lottery tickets sold without any legal impediment. Lotteries exist in Rhode Island and Delaware, but to what extent and under what circumstances, we have no means of ascertaining."

We have remarked above, that the first edition of Mr. Tyson's pamphlet was issued in January 1833, and extensively circulated throughout the Union. Shortly after, the Young Men's Society of Boston—a very praiseworthy institution—invited Mr. George W. Gordon, of that city, to deliver an address upon the subject of lotteries, which had then begun to attract much attention in that quarter. He delivered a lecture on the 12th day of March of the same year, which was very well written, and received justly a favourable consideration at the hands of the critics. Among other notices was a short one in a leading eastern periodical,<sup>1</sup> which passed very considerable encomia upon the interesting facts which Mr. Gordon had collected, and the great industry and research which he had displayed. That gentleman himself had, in his preface and notes, rendered due credit to Mr. Tyson for the array of facts which he had presented in sketching the history of this species of gambling, and the melancholy incidents attendant upon its progress. Many

cennes and St. Louis. It is observed of the *object* of this bill by a correspondent who has kindly given us the information, that 'it would be certainly a very proper application of money raised by means of lotteries, as, through their agency, many are fitted for this dreadful place.'

<sup>1</sup> The North American Review for October 1833, No. 81, Art. 8, entitled "Lotteries."

parts, in fact, of Mr. Gordon's lecture were but copies of passages in Mr. Tyson's "Survey," and others, the same ideas clothed in slightly variant language. Mr. Gordon, as we have remarked, pretended no concealment or denial upon the subject, but freely acknowledged his obligations. His reviewer, however, contented himself with the praise of Mr. Gordon's accuracy and research, without reference to the sources of his information, which were apparent upon the face of the lecture itself. The omission did injustice to the original collector of these facts whose pamphlet had been extensively circulated by those individuals in the city of Philadelphia who had embarked in the cause with so much zeal, and who were fully sensible of the merits of Mr. Tyson's sketch. Those merits should have been recognised in every notice of the subject.

With respect to this new edition, it may be sufficient to say, that the former editions appear to have become exhausted, and the demand for new copies to have increased. The author has nearly rewritten the whole performance, and added many new facts of an interesting nature,

---

ART. V.—*The Complete Gardener, or Directions for Cultivating and right ordering of Fruit and Kitchen Gardens, with divers reflections on several parts of Husbandry.* By the famous M. DE LA QUINTINYE, chief director of the gardens of the French king. Made into English by JOHN EVELYN, Esq.; illustrated with copper plates. London: Matthew Gillyflower, at the Spread Eagle in Westminster Hall, and James Partridge, Charing Cross: 1793.

Tillage is an art of great antiquity, of great importance, and of infinite diversity and use. It comprehends agriculture and horticulture, both of these arts being indebted to the plough and the spade. Horticulture, of which it is our intention to speak, although a distinct branch in itself, has the privilege of referring to the rules of tillage, with which agriculture is more immediately and constantly connected—the plough is the emblem of the latter art, and the spade of the former.

These terms—agriculture and horticulture—were not formerly applied to farming and gardening; nor was a man of education and refinement at all ambitious of engaging in either

of these pursuits. Fifty years ago a farmer stood very low in the scale; but revolutions and wars have driven an entirely new description of artists into the field—not of blood—not of the sword—but of the ploughshare. Revolutions and embargoes are great evils while they last, yet a state of things has arisen from them which shows that a permanent good has been extracted from the evil. But for the revolution, but for the embargo, the non-intercourse, our farmers would still have been stigmatized as clodhoppers; they would still be considered as a thick-headed, heavy-footed, sordid race—stupid and stubborn.

The heavy-footed craft is extinct, or rather the grub has been transformed into an enviable shape; a farmer, now, is frequently a man of education and taste, having a mind stored with knowledge of the most attractive kind. Although the business of farming is the same as it was formerly, yet how differently is it conducted—even the name of the art has changed! There is a charm about it which none but those who cultivate the earth can enjoy, which none but those can comprehend—the charm of independence.

An agriculturist is a maker of fences, a grower of grain and grasses, a breeder of cattle, hogs, and poultry—not of sheep, for that belongs to a separate branch of the art, requiring undivided attention—he is likewise a dairyman, a seller of butter and cheese. All this, with a thousand nameless things which necessarily spring out of these important radicals, are quite enough for the management of one man, if we add to them a bird's-eye knowledge of farriery, carpentry, and natural philosophy. He is likewise a husband and a father, and has to observe the courtesies of hospitality and the rules of good neighbourhood, as well as his duties as a Christian and citizen. All these labours and pleasures, well performed and enjoyed, will send a man tired enough to his ten o'clock bed, and to his dreamless, healthy sleep, without meddling with horticulture, that book of many leaves, each one requiring a distinct and alert faculty to comprehend it.

The horticulturist is likewise a tiller of the earth, but *his* duties and pursuits are of a more varied nature. He frequently uses the plough, but then it requires a different attention. There have to be more doublings and windings—more care in its management, than when in the hands of a farmer. But the additional care required is not that the furrows may be deeper, or the sod turned more evenly, but that the roots of trees may not be injured.

A horticulturist cultivates the ground on a small scale, and depends greatly on the spade; in fact, the period is fast approaching when a labouring horse will never be seen in the

field but at the first ploughing, before the garden is prepared. The horticulturist is a maker and mender of fences—we lay great stress on this branch of rural economy—and although the farmer should have his intersecting fences of cedar, oak, or chestnut rails, sliding into holes made in a well seasoned cedar post, yet a gardener and orchardist may indulge in those that are of a more fanciful description. But we cannot avoid saying that an intersecting fence on the grounds of a horticulturist is a nuisance, not only to the eye, but because it is a nursery for weeds and brambles. There should be a strong, high boundary fence, close enough to turn cattle, as the phrase is, but that is all. If he will indulge in cross fencing, the cedar or wild pear, prim, hawthorn, or the attar rose, make very pretty division lines. Indeed the boundary fence should be lined with close shrubbery, not only that an ugly fence may be hidden, but that the pigs, dogs, and poultry, from the road, may not creep in. When we allude to this branch of tillage, it should be distinctly understood that our remarks apply to those engaged in the pursuit for profit. Gentlemen who pursue it for amusement need not be bound down by rules of this kind.

If it be not fitting, as it certainly is not, for an agriculturist to meddle with orchards, vineyards, and gardens, still less should the horticulturist undertake to breed cattle, or make hay. Neither poultry yard, piggery, nor dairy, must be his; the only animals allowed on his grounds should be horses for the plough and carriage, as many hogs in a pen as the waste of the kitchen and the weeds of the garden will maintain, and, at most, two cows for the use of the family. These cows on no account should be at large, but confined to small grassy enclosures, where there is a plentiful supply of water.

This delightful branch of art cultivates herbs for pharmacy, delicate and nutritious vegetables for the table, orchards and vineyards for their delicious fruits, bees for their honey and wax, forest and ornamental trees for their uses in ship and house building, and, lastly, flowers to regale the senses. This is the occupation that gives vigour to the body, and serenity to the mind. It is a pursuit that places a man above his fellows—for the broad and *living* canals—the ships and warehouses of commerce—the compact ranges of manufactories—the folios of science—the achievements of genius—do not so much perpetuate a man's fame to posterity, as do the noble trees he has planted, which, receiving their sustenance from heaven, and their health from man's care, scatter their abundance and usefulness over the face of the whole earth.

Let him who is engaged in the racking cares of commerce, say in what frame of mind *his* eyes close in sleep, and what are the anxieties of his waking hours. Let the manufacturer tell of his

feverish dreams by night, and his dyspeptic symptoms by day. Let the literary man expose the ills to which the studious are liable from lassitude of body and irritation of mind. Let the professional man descant on unjust preferences, and on the tardiness of rewards. Let the artist speak of envy, jealousy, and want of patronage. Let science, too, open the laboratory, and show the hydra with which she has to contend. Trace them all through their labours, their pleasures, and their perils; pursue them through crowded streets, the deleterious effluvia of gutters, the propinquity of vice, the contagion of diseases, the ringing of fire bells, offal carts, banks, hose companies, exchange offices, eating houses, omnibus stages, and, worst of all, idle children! Look at all this—follow these men—look at their daily walks and occupations—and then turn to the horticulturist.

Follow him to his repose at night—deep, tranquil, and refreshing. No incubus, in the shape of a protested note, takes away his breath. No nightmare, in the form of a printer's devil, rides through his brain. His dreams are not harassed by thieves that rob the vaults, the keys of which are tied to the wrists of the cashier for safety. No villanous hook catches him by the waistband, and drags him through intricate machinery that he may be crushed at once, or dashed to pieces by the fall, while, suiting the action to the feverish thought, he bounces down in the bed, awakened by the dislocating shock with the horrid reality of having fallen! He dreams none of this. *His* midnight fancies, like the true scenes of the day, are through green fields and blooming orchards. He still hears the music of birds, the hum of bees, the murmuring of brooks, the joyous laugh of children, the whistle of the gardener, the tender voice of his wife, and he awakens—gratified and refreshed—only to a continuance of the same pleasures.

Yes, he awakens only to feel more strongly the fresh breeze of the morning, and the aroma of a thousand plants which shed their fragrance more freely *before* sunrise. He walks out amongst his contented labourers, and encourages them by his kindness—all within is peace and gratitude, and a well regulated repast welcomes him back to partake of its wholesomeness and delicacy. All this he doubly enjoys from the consciousness that it is the work of his own hand. And, above all, comes the thought that, unlike those who follow other occupations, he has but *one* master—one who, asking nothing for Himself, gives all that is required of him—bright sunshine, soft falling showers, winds that drive away pestilence, lightnings that purify the air, *cold that rests the tired soil*, health, and a grateful spirit, which enables him to perceive and enjoy all these blessings.

Such a man—and there are many such—would not exchange



one of the tranquil hours of twilight, when the deep shade falls, for all the fictitious sentiment and brilliant display of a ball room, or a convivial party. He can, at once, commune with higher powers, and, in every succeeding year, as the shadows of evening draw in more closely on his fading vision, and external sounds fall more faintly on his ear, his nature will approximate more to the simplicity and purity of innocence. No painful retrospect of duties neglected, of broken faith, of sanguinary battles, no fears of the deep curse which rests on him who has injured the widow and the fatherless, disturb the evening of his days. Rather than have the fame and expire like poor Napoleon, with "tête d'armée" upon his lips, he would prefer the happy style of the good Abbott Boniface, who, raising his feeble eye to the falling dews, exclaimed, "what a fine dropping morning for the early colewort."

And now, with this enlivening touch from the wand of the great magician of the north, we shall turn with zeal to our task—that of pointing out the merits of the quaint old book prefixed to our title page, and to show the necessity of encouraging some able pen to write a good work on horticulture to suit the present time—one that will not only treat of the operative part, but also of the theoretical. We say theoretical, but we must be understood to mean theory deprived of jargon and technicalities; such an elucidation of the theory as that any gentleman farmer can comprehend it; including in the term *theory* the physiology of plants.

This work of M. De la Quintinye is a small folio, and now very scarce. It is one of great merit, every word of which deserves to be studied; for if the difference of climate renders his rules regarding planting of little avail, excepting in our eastern states, yet the whole is mingled with excellent hints and judicious advice. His thoughts and opinions are so quaintly expressed, and with such raciness, spirit, and truth, as well as simplicity, that the work forms a rich treat both to the man of letters and the horticulturist. When we consider, likewise, that it was translated from the French by John Evelyn, he himself claiming a large portion of our respect and gratitude for his own admirable works, we feel assured that we are conferring a favour on all lovers of the art by making this work of De la Quintinye known. We say making it known—for the book is so old and so rare that few of our readers may know any thing about it.

There is no doubt of the fact that trees will grow in any soil of moderate depth; more rapidly and luxuriantly, certainly, if planted in a deep rich loamy soil having a clay bottom, but always serviceable and ornamental wherever they may be placed, provided the necessary care is bestowed on them. In

spite of neglect and hard usage, in spite of impoverished soil and ungenial climate, fruit trees will grow and attain a good size, although the fruit may be neither large nor finely flavoured. De la Quintinye, who was a man of science as well as a practical gardener, assures us that he has been so entirely misled in the character and quality of a pear, the tree being advantageously placed both as to soil and warmth, that he was induced to graft from it, although one which after a trial he was previously obliged to discard as worthless. If poor fruit is thus made sensibly better by a favourable location, what may we not promise ourselves from really good fruit grafts under similar treatment and position.

Climate and soil operate beneficially or injuriously on every thing that has life, and in no way is it so apparent as in vegetable life. This must be obvious to all, for plants have not the power of locomotion, and are, therefore, entirely dependent on the situation in which they are placed. With animals the case is different; injudiciously as they may be placed, they still have the power of modifying the evils of their situation. They can move to a more moist or drier spot, to shade or sunshine, to heat or cold; and they have certain modes of making their wants known. With a knowledge of these facts, we should study the nature and habits of a plant before we commit the violence of removing it from its native bed. We should, at least, render its new home as nearly similar to that whence it was taken as possible.

Experience has convinced us that greater importance should be attached to the practice of trimming and shaping young trees whilst still in the nursery. This was a point that could not be well urged a few years ago, as the art was then in its infancy, and we had but little knowledge. Trees should certainly receive their *first* and *best* pruning in the nursery, for here, in this department of horticulture, it is that error first proceeds—error that clings to the tree throughout its brief life. For the want of previous instruction, the purchaser mangles and disfigures, instead of improving it. He hacks and hews all branches indiscriminately, not knowing that there are such mysteries as bearing and unbearing buds. He has never heard of a *fruit spur*—how should he, therefore, know it from a barren lateral twig? He cannot tell a fruit bud from a leaf bud, nor a water sprout from a sucker.

Does an ignorant man understand why young trees, which are generally deprived of many of the fibrous roots when dug up from the nursery beds, cannot bear to have their branches shortened when newly set out in an orchard? If a man who designs to plant trees to obtain fruit, would only teach himself all this—and it is soon learned—he would know that it is better

to cut out whole limbs, nay, the vertical limb itself, than to shorten the branches of young trees that are just transplanted. If there be any exception to this rule, it is in the case of pear trees that we plant in deep rich soil with clay bottom. Our experience in this matter is of long standing, for we have had extensive orchards under our own care, and of our own planting. Those trees purchased from nurseries presented a miserable contrast to those of our own grafting; the latter of which received their shape and best trimming a year before transplanting, but, after transplanting, the limbs were never shortened.

The reason of this is apparent; a newly transplanted tree with lacerated roots, is not in a condition to receive nutriment from the soil immediately. The tree, therefore, has to depend on the different joints, or articulations, for all the nourishment necessary to sustain life until new roots come out. For it should be known to horticulturists that there is always a *reserve* of proper juices, or cambium, at every joint of the tree, and around the base of every leaf and fruit bud. As the roots of the young tree are torn and debilitated, they can do nothing more than imbibe through their spongelets the mere *fluid* parts of the sap; whilst the nutritive parts are kept back, and do not enter these spongelets. This fluid mass mixes with the *reserved* cambium—thus diluting it, and, of course, no vigour can be imparted to the extremities that this sap reaches. All that the feeble power of the roots can effect, is to elevate this diluted mass, and thus sustain life until it can recover from the shock and form new roots.

If the limbs of a young tree be shortened when it is newly transplanted, the instinct of vegetation stimulates it to the same exertion as when it was firmly rooted. The consequence is, that all the efforts of the tree will be directed to the formation of new limbs *on the shortened extremities*. As nothing but simple fluids is carried up the sap vessels so called, the assimilatory and other proper juices, which are in a state of elaboration at each articulation, are, as we before observed, very much diluted, having received no other accession of nutritive matter than what simple water conveys.

If the bark of a tree is wounded, nature forces certain secretive matter to the part, that the injury may be repaired; in a short time, therefore, the bark is restored. If we shorten the limbs of a tree, the same process commences; the sap, with the diluted juices, is sent to the extremities as is usual when wounds are to be healed, and when limbs are to be lengthened. But when the sap reaches the amputated parts, as it has no further conducting medium, it forces itself against the buds that are nearest the ends; and thus it happens that so many weak, spindling twigs shoot out at the ends of the branches

injudiciously cut off. Instead of having only one or two limbs to supply, the roots are compelled to furnish food for the enlargement and nourishment of a great number, without having a sufficient supply for the purpose. If the whole limb is cut off *closely* to the tree, without leaving any ring, or swelling at the base, no buds can be found, and, consequently, no other effort is necessary than to renew the bark, or rather to cover the amputated part with new bark.

Two operations are going on in a newly planted tree; the first is an elevation of fluid matter to the shortened extremities for the formation of lateral branches; and the second is the lateral transmission of a suitable fluid to the shortened or bruised roots. The same process is carried on below as above ground; we perceive that, if a branch or limb is shortened, it never grows again, but that several new ones spring out from those buds nearest to the amputated parts. It is the same case with the roots; if they are bruised, or cut off when taken from their beds in the nursery, they never grow again. Nature is obliged to repair the mischief by forcing out new roots at right angles with those that were removed. A twofold disturbance, therefore, takes place in the economy of the tree, if both limbs and roots are bruised or shortened. It will be the true policy to cut off a few of the small limbs close to the tree, if the roots have been much injured.

We are thus minute on this point, because such utter recklessness is shown both in removing trees from nurseries and in trimming them when in orchards. If it is understood that great care is necessary in the removing and pruning of trees, and that it is not a haphazard affair, to be left to unskilful hands, those who intend to cultivate them will at least learn so much of the art as not to injure when they mean to do good.

It would be in the power of nurserymen to give all the necessary advice if they allowed themselves more time, but the generality of them are in such haste to sell that they cannot do justice to themselves or their patrons. Some of them feel very much injured if a purchaser complains that the trees are unthrifty and misshapen, and turn out differently from the fruit ordered. Those only who have orchards can tell how great an evil it is, when trees for which a great price is given, and which have been nursed with great care for many years—some kinds requiring six or seven years to arrive at maturity—produce mean and worthless fruit.

We do not say this to injure that valuable class of horticulturists—the nurserymen—on the contrary, it will be of permanent benefit to them if we show where they are at fault—a fault which has arisen as much from the ignorance and impa-

tience of the purchaser as from the desire of immediate gain in the nurseryman. That we may receive an equivalent for our money, and keep men in the strict line of their duty, we should ourselves be tolerably well acquainted with the business and the services we exact of them. No man, let his station in life be what it may, if he intend to plant trees, should be ignorant of what constitutes a well-shaped thrifty tree. Nor should he be satisfied with the mere enjoyment of the delicious juices of a peach, plum, or pear; he should at least know the names of what gives him so much pleasure.

The "famous" De la Quintinye had the greatest affection and reverence for a tree. In describing the position in which it should be placed in a well laid out garden, he refers to it as if it were possessed of animal life. He apologizes to them individually, as if they could feel and be mortified when he places one before the other, giving his reasons for his partiality in the most kind and conciliatory manner. In a garden that will only admit of twenty-four pear trees he places the winter *bon-chrétien* *first*, not only on account of its antiquity, but that "this pear was one of the first that by its singular excellence gained the admiration and courtship of the world. The great monarchies, principally that of old Rome, having known and cultivated it under the name of *crustumium volenum*, so that in all appearance it made a noble figure among those conquering people in the magnificent entertainments they usually made, as well to set out the splendour of their triumphs as to do honour to the tributary kings who often came to pay their homage to those masters of the world."

He then proceeds to speak of the peculiar merits of this pear; and although three folio pages are occupied with a description of it, yet all he says is so new, so fanciful, yet so just, that we are carried along unresistingly, and think that not one word could be left out. We feel tempted to make extracts, but there is still so much to say that we forbear, and proceed to his choice of the second pear for his little garden, first informing those who are selecting fruit for their orchards, that the *bon-chrétien* in our country is not deserving of the high encomiums bestowed on it by M. De la Quintinye. Perhaps it would stand higher in our favour were it not that two other pears ripen at the same time, so far superior as to throw this one in the shade. Of these pears we shall presently speak.

"Now let us see upon what pear tree our choice will fall to be the second dwarf pear, both of a garden so small as to allow of but two, and in a garden where a great number are required; for truly it is a point not easy to decide."

"We have, above all the rest, six different sorts of pears that put in briskly for this second place; nay, and which can hardly

brook without murmuring that the bon-chrétien should peaceably enjoy the honour it has newly received—these are the butter pear, the autumn bergamot, the virgoulee, the lechasserie, the winter ambrette, and the winter thorn pear. Besides these, there are the ancient petitoin, the good Louise, with four new comers—the St. Germain, the colmar, the crasanne, and the marchioness. All these, finding themselves provided with sufficient merit, want not the ambition to enter into this dispute, every one of these twelve pretending severally to have more perfections and fewer defects than any of its rivals, or at least to be nothing inferior to them; and accordingly pretending, also, to win from them the place here in question.”

“And I grant they all have such powerful motives for their several pretensions that we cannot be censured to have made an ill choice to which of them soever we shall give the preference. However, my judgment is, that the six last ought to retire for a time, and leave the six first to fight out this quarrel; and I shall give, if I be not mistaken, such good reasons for it, that I hope they will be satisfied with them. But before I declare myself for any one of those six, it will be necessary to examine separately and without prejudice all the several reasons pleaded by every one of them.”

He then proceeds to detail, in his quaint yet sensible way, all the merits of the pears in question, and in speaking of the butter pear he observes, “that the reasons for the preference are—first, that it possesses the perfection of the first degree of goodness which is desirable in fruits, and this is a smooth, delicious, melting softness, for which the name of butter pear was given to it by way of excellence, and in effect when we want to extol other pears, we give them the borrowed name of butter pear. Therefore, this pear believes it has a right to pretend that not one of the other pears should dispute with it for an extreme abundance of juice, nor for a fine and delicate pulp and rich taste, which are all the conditions necessary to constitute an excellent pear.”

We cannot follow him through the other five pears, but state that his reasons are satisfactory. In speaking of the bergamot he says,—“Would to Heaven it were true that there was a sort of later bergamot, and that every year we could be sure to have some of them till the end of March, as it sometimes happens. In that case we might have just grounds to brag that we had, at least, four or five months in the year the real treasure of fruit. Some certain curious persons would fain persuade themselves and me too that they had this sort of later bergamot, but to my great regret I cannot forbear confessing that to the present time I have not been able to convince myself that I have attained any such good fortune, although in truth I have been

wanting neither in care nor diligence, nor in any other precaution that might contribute to the making a conquest of such importance. What I have attempted to that end—what in pains and what in expenses—has been infinite as well as to no purpose.”

“The lechasserie pear might put in for a little here, so strong is its party, but it rather chooses to join in with the ambrette, which is a pear of ancient standing among us, and in great esteem. These two pears do not think themselves overcome by all that has been said to the advantage of those that have first spoken. They will not make it their business to destroy one another, being agreed to serve alternately at the entrance of gardens, and so their principal ambition is to remain united and allied in interest and friendship, that they may be able the more vigorously to defend themselves against the three preceding ones. And that which contributes the more, with the strict union they have made one with the other, is that in effect they have some resemblance,” &c.

He then proceeds with the winter thorn pear :—“The winter thorn pear, which well knows its own worth, will not let itself be condemned without speaking.”—“It has a satiny skin and a colour between green and white; it has a tender, butter-like consistence, having ordinarily a very fine and delicate pulp, an agreeable taste, and a sweet juice, relished with an admirable smack of perfume. It has little to say against the two last pears, and especially against the lechasserie, and ingenuously confesses the good qualities of both of them, but yet without consenting to give them the precedence, till there shall be a regulation for it. But as for the other pears, it objects to them what these last just now reproached it with.

“It is therefore now the question to terminate this contest, which has appeared but too long. Having however examined all the reasons alleged by each of them, I must confess I have a very particular esteem for every one of them; but yet in regard to the *trees* which bear these fruits, we must not judge the question under discussion altogether upon the same foundation as if we were only examining the merits of their fruits. For upon the bare foot of merit, in what garden soever it be, where there are to be but two dwarf pear trees, I should ever incline to give the second place to the bergamot, as I have the first to the bon-chrétien. The bergamot, methinks, cannot be too much honoured, being, as it were, the queen of pears. For indeed it is like the excellent muskmelons, its pulp appearing at *first* firm, without being hard or stony; and, second, fine and melting, without being doughy or mealy, and its juice is sugared, having a little perfume without having any mixture of sharpness or wildness. And, lastly, its taste is rich and wonderfully deli-

cious, accompanied by something of noble ! For such a pear as that, may it not vaunt having approached very near the perfection of fruits, and ought it not to serve for a rule and model to all those that shall pretend to an entrance into the catalogue of good fruits ?

"The decision in favour of the bergamot to the exclusion of the other pears, would not at all surprise those curious persons that have tasted those that are really good ; for assuredly it excels the butter pear, which cannot deny that it has a little mixture of sharpness in its juice. It surpasses the virgoulee, in that it is a nimbler bearing tree, and is not at all subject to that odd, strawy taste which, as I may so say, persecutes the most of the virgoulee pears, and does them a thousand ill offices in good company. The bergamot surmounts the three competitors—the lechasserie, the ambrette, and the winter thorn—because they certainly have nothing in them more excellent, nor more advantageous, than our bergamot in the point of perfect goodness ; but as one may say without any desire to offend them, that both the one and the other have sometimes the ill hap to have a faint and insipid juice, and a hard or mealy pulp.

"The article concerning the bergamot pear has given me a great deal of trouble to decide it. I return now to declare my judgment of that sort of trees which, together with the beauty of their fruit, have the advantage to be graced with a beautiful wood ; and, therefore, I incline here to give the second place to the butter pear."

We have omitted in these extracts the most important portions of them, such as are of invaluable service to horticulturists ; but we trust they will soon have an edition of this great work—one of the greatest, certainly, that has ever appeared. It is the expensive manner in which it is *got up* that prevented frequent reprints, but in the way that we manage such things now that objection is set aside.

De la Quintinye is in fond communion with all the fruits, and talks to them as if they were living beings ; and his taste being excellent, for he was unrivalled in this particular, he may be considered as the best guide when fruit is to be selected.

And first he tells us his taste and judgment in pears :—"I love those that have a butter-like and smooth pulp, or at least tender and delicate, with a sweet, sugared, and well-relished juice, and especially when these perfections are well set off with something like a perfume—such as the bergamot, butter pear, lechasserie, ambrette," &c.

He would have added the Seckel and Washington, too, had they been known at that period ; for these two native pears, in the estimation of connoisseurs, possess the very character and



perfume of which he so frequently speaks, and which no one can describe so well as himself.

"In the next place, for the want of the foregoing sorts, I love those that break short in the mouth, with a sweet and sugared juice, and that smack a little of perfume, such as the winter bon-chrétien—gathered out of a good place—the robine, the cassolet, the dry martine, &c.

"In the third place, I truly esteem those that are pretty much perfumed and well scented, though I do not care that this perfection should be enclosed in a pulp that is extremely hard and full of dreggy matter, as the amadotte, the citron, and the great winter musk pears. For this hardness and stoniness does so much disgust me in all sorts of pears, that though I love a little touch of perfume in every fruit, yet these two great faults do in a great measure lessen the esteem which I should otherwise have for the pears last mentioned."

Who that reads the above necessary qualifications of a pear, would, after this, eat one that encloses that hard, dreggy, stony matter which so much disgusts honest M. De la Quintinye? But thus he continues :—

"After having thus expressed what pleases me in *raw* pears, it is no very hard matter to guess what particularly displeases me in them; for that is, doubtless, a pulp which, instead of being of a butter-like, smooth and tender substance, or pleasingly short in the mouth, is doughy, as the belissime and the musk valley pear; or which is sharp and sour, as that of the ordinary valley pear; or that which is hard and tough as the bernardiere; or full of earthy, dry, stony, dreggy matter, as the musk perner; or of a wildish taste, as the gillazile, the Dutch or fosse pears, and a numerous train of others of which I shall make a catalogue."

If we had assisted in this catalogue we should have added a number of our market pears, quite as worthless as any above mentioned. Some of our inferior nurserymen, taking the opinion of indifferent judges, graft their young trees with fruit that is not fit to be eaten. The markets are full of such trash, there being a very great scarcity of good pears.

"Lastly; I declare myself an enemy to all affected multiplicity, and that I am not at all taken with the pleasure of some that pass for curious persons, who assert publicly that those who pretend to have any thing like a garden, should have in it a little of every thing. There are some whose palates are far from being delicate, who boast, for example, that they have two or three hundred sorts of pears, which they warrant all to be good; and they affirm, in a manner, as much of the goodness of peaches, plums, apples, and grapes, of which they also boast to be stored with an incredible variety."

We are of the same opinion with this excellent critic, that the fewer sorts we have in our orchards the better, presuming always that they are of the choicest kinds. If others were of this opinion, the nurserymen would have less disposition to introduce every worthless variety which an uncultivated taste is fond of recommending. Eight or ten kinds of pears, coming on, or ripening in succession, are sufficient to gratify the most ardent cultivator. To speak only of those that come to perfection in the middle states—there are the skinless and julienne, both excellent summer pears, the latter ripening in the house like a Beurré. The Seckel, Beurré, Washington, vergalous, and crasane for autumn, and the St. Germaine and ambrette for winter. The last two ripen in the house during the months of January, February, and March. We could speak of others just coming into notice, such as the passe colmar, the Duchess D'Angouleme, &c.; but there is so little difference in the quality and flavour from some of those already mentioned, that we do not lay much stress on their cultivation. The nurserymen will soon find out whether it will be their interest to cultivate them.

Pears which rank very high in Europe do not always sustain their reputation here; we should not be in haste, therefore, to introduce them into our orchards. The moulebouche, that was in such great repute in France, is but a fourth-rate pear in this country. We have been witness to such great disappointment in this way, that we cling to those we know with renewed fondness. The bon-chrétien, which receives such enthusiastic, nay, almost parental encomiums from that best of judges—De la Quintinye—is but a third-rate pear when brought into our gardens. And that famous jargonelle, “overhanging the south end of Andrew Fairservice’s cottage,” and which is highly extolled in England, is very indifferent fruit here.

And here, if we may be allowed a digression, we would remark that the Scots, in early times, were far behind the rest of the civilized world in the cultivation of fruit. Sir Walter Scott, in the vast and diversified range that he took of the occupations and peculiarities of the Scottish nation, does not hint that there was any predilection for horticulture, or that gardening formed part of their employments and amusements, as it did of the English people. Whatever of taste is shown in this way is due to the labour of that indefatigable and extraordinary race of people—the monks. Sir Walter Scott is liberal in his distribution of rounds of beef, Scotch collops, cock-a-leekie, moorcock, and barn-door chuckies—(alas! he knew nothing of our canvassback ducks.) In fact, he makes his readers as hungry as his heroes, and as thirsty to boot, at the savoury messes he

conjures up, even in such unpromising places as the Clachan of Aberfoil—the cave of Warrock point, and Friar Tuck's hut. So tender is this most admirable author on this score, and such is his sympathy for an empty stomach, that we are scarcely told of the hero's hunger until the very appearance of the savoury viands excites *him*, as it often did *us*, to confess that "there are many worse things than a het dinner." The only horticulturist worth naming is our old friend Boniface.

Within the last twenty years two fine pears have made their appearance in this country—the Seckel, and the Washington—both of them delicious, and far superior to every other pear that ripens at the same season. They rank very high with foreign connoisseurs, and have one great advantage over exotic pears in never, or very rarely, being attacked by the disease called fire-blight. This malady often destroys a tree in a few hours—nay, sometimes instantly, as if blasted by lightning, or struck with apoplexy.

We may therefore well boast of these native pears, for they combine all that De la Quintinye—a man of refined horticultural tastes—considers as so essential; the Seckel being melting, juicy, musky, and sugary, having a perfume withal, which entitles it to be called the queen of pears. The Washington is not far inferior to it, being likewise melting, juicy, and sugary, with a very delicate perfume, but not diffusing itself so exclusively over the senses. One has time, as it were, while enjoying this pear to talk of it and commend it, and take up one after another deliberately, experiencing bland and generous feelings. With the Seckel it is different, for there is something so piquant and delectable in its flavour that there is no break in the thoughts whilst devouring it—there is no interval by which you can ascertain whether you are willing to share your treat with another. No one minds giving away a Beurré or a vergalous after the thirst is satisfied—for these two pears, excellent though they be, serve more to supply the place of mere fluids, than to excite the salival and olfactory glands. The Seckel is eaten for no such common purpose—and the Washington!—but we forbear to discuss their merits further; we pity the man who has never tasted them.

An orchardist once suggested to us the propriety of allowing foreign pear trees to grow in a stiff soil as a preventive to fire-blight, because a vergalous, which had arrived at a good age, and was still in a flourishing condition, had lived for many years in a tough sod. How far this practice might operate beneficially on an entire orchard of pears is very problematical, for in the case of the isolated vergalous no definite conclusion could be drawn, as the extremities of the roots—which in a large tree are far distant from the trunk—may have come within the

range of open cultivation. It is from the fibrous extremities of the roots that the tree derives sustenance.

For ourselves, we are of opinion that shortening the terminal twigs every spring will often prevent the tree from being injured by fire-blight. We pursued this experiment for eight years on twelve St. Germaine pears—the most subject to this disease of any exotic pear—and they were never injured, whereas three others, equal in every respect, and which stood in the same row, not having had the ends of the twigs cut off, died of the fire-blight the third year after planting. Five years after this four others died, so that only five trees remained of the twelve. Trees that are thus cut every year do not of course grow so tall, nor have they that symmetrical appearance which so distinguishes them; but if they can be saved from destruction by this process—only allowable in cases of life and death—it matters but little how trees look.

We were not led to this experiment for the purpose of destroying the eggs of the *scolytus pyri*, which some horticulturists suppose are deposited in the terminal shoots, but from our knowledge of the instincts of a plant when its extremities are lopped off.

There are various opinions respecting the cause of fire-blight. Some imagine that the sudden death of the tree is caused by the insect above alluded to—the *scolytus pyri*—which they say injects its poison under the bark and thus gets immediately into the circulation.

Others, again, think that the disease is caused by the rarification of the fluids, which ruptures the vessels near the cuticle. That the sap thus set free, by coming in contact with atmospheric gases, acquires certain deleterious properties which renders it unfit for the uses of the tree; and that when thus vitiated, it excoriates the bark as it passes downwards, and by its acrid and acescent qualities decomposes or corrupts the fresh sap as it is ascending.

Believing, as we do, that the sap ascends through the interstices, and that the vessels, called sap vessels, are mere absorbents, we are inclined to the latter opinion—that the vitiation of sap is the cause of the disease. There can be no doubt that the effect is produced by the rupturing of the absorbents, and the sap, or the crude particles of the ascending fluid, not being abstracted by the elaborating vessels, are acted upon immediately by atmospheric gases, and this union decomposes the particles, thus rendering them injurious to the tree.

Here is a cause adequate to the effect; and because we do not know by what process the ascending fluid is decomposed, so as to excoriate the bark of the tree, we should not infer that such an occurrence cannot take place. In *post mortem* dis-

sections something analogous occurs. It frequently happens that in dissecting dead bodies the surgeon wounds himself with a knife. If great care is not observed in cleansing the wound immediately, the wound inflames and causes death! This happens whether the subject dissected die of disease or old age; it is the *change* which takes place in the *fluids* of the body after death, that causes it to assume a virulent character. This fluid, thus vitiated, when in contact with the healthy circulation of the living subject, imparts its venom to the whole mass.

It is the same case in every part of nature's economy; *stagnation*, or a suspension of free circulation, causes diseases of various kinds, and we may be assured, when the subject comes to be fairly examined, we shall find that there is as regular a circulation going on in the planetary systems, as there is in our own individual system. Mr. Espy, of Philadelphia, is on the track of a beautiful and important discovery in meteorology, which ensures the probability of a regular circulation. He is tracing the laws which govern the weather, and, thus far, his labours have been successful. He must have extensive aid both at home and abroad; aid which will be slowly and grudgingly afforded him; for it is in the nature of man to be envious of those who are so fortunate as to strike out something new. We earnestly entreat him to proceed, and be not discouraged by neglect, or the sneers of the ignorant.

But to return to our subject. We cannot be persuaded that insects are possessed of a poison so subtle as to infect a large tree immediately; nor can it be that the instinct of any animal or insect is so defective as to destroy the life of a plant gratuitously. We are aware that the instinct of inferior insects is very limited, but the destruction which follows their depredations only takes place when the purposes and ends of their being are fully answered.

The plant on which they feed, and on which they depend for a birthplace for their numerous progeny, is safe from any other evil of their own creating until their object is secured or completed. The mischief that results from their presence is always perceptible on the leaves and bark; the former are eaten up, and the latter are punctured, as is the fruit of the tree likewise. In all these operations they have but two objects in view—their immediate sustenance, and the safety of their offspring. These instinctive propensities are deeply implanted in their nature, and we never hear of the destruction of a tree until these two great objects are attained.

The appearance of a tree when struck by fire-blight, is entirely different from that which is produced by any other disease or accident. In fire-blight, a tree looks as if it were scorched by fire, or lightning. It becomes black and shrivelled,

and the juices of the fruit, as well of the tree, are entirely dried up. There can be no doubt that this is caused by the prevalence of the electric fluid during a summer shower.

We have repeatedly seen the insects that deposit their eggs near the buds on the terminal twigs, or shoots; but they do not at all resemble the *scolytus pyri*. The insects seen are of a pale fawn colour, with very narrow wings, and long delicate feelers—we speak so as to be understood by others than entomologists—they are about half an inch in length, and are very restless and shy. They lay their eggs near a bud, and these eggs are most commonly seen on the twigs of the peach and plum tree. Although these eggs are placed, like those of the locust, diagonally, yet one single incision, or puncture, serves to place the whole number, eight, in the exact and beautiful order that we see them, lying four on each side, so as to form the letter V. The locust, likewise, forms the letter V, but an incision is made for each egg, and this is very perceptible on the *outside* of the bark; whereas the other insect leaves no trace of the hole wherein its eggs are deposited. The locusts do not observe any rule, nor are they precise as it regards the age of the twig, or limb, which they choose for the nest of their eggs; we have frequently seen them on limbs three years old; but the fly of which we speak always lays its eggs on the twig which is the growth of the same year of its own existence.

Now it follows that if the *scolytus pyri* were the cause of fire-blight, there would soon be an end of them; for their eggs are deposited in the bark in July and August, just about the time that the disease takes place. Fire-blight would, therefore, be a sure remedy for their destruction, as the whole race would inevitably perish with the tree, as no further sustenance or moisture could be afforded them. Every nurseryman, of common observation, must have seen the eggs of the fly we have described when cutting buds from yearling twigs for inoculation; for, in consequence of the closeness of the puncture to a bud, the latter is often destroyed as a *fruit* bud, but degenerates into a leaf bud. We have not confined our remarks to one section of country, having ascertained that these insects are common to every part of the United States; and, as they were never observed until the importations of foreign fruit trees became common, the presumption is that they are exotics likewise. At any rate they do no further mischief to the tree than to destroy a few buds.

So far from attributing this terrible disease to insect virus, we know that fewer insects infest the pear than other fruit trees; and it is the pear tree alone that is subject to this calamity. The pear tree has a free and rapid growth, thus enabling it while young to slough off fungi and other atmo-

spheric depositions. The bark is smooth, and it has a stout, tough, highly polished leaf. Even in those years when the fruit of all other trees has been stung by the curculio, so that *not one* apple, quince, cherry, plum, and nectarine, was without a worm in it, the fruit of the pear tree was exempt. A pear is very rarely stung by the curculio; the skin of the pear, at the time the insect lays its eggs, is hard, tough, and very astringent; they prefer, therefore, to deposit them in more tender fruits, and, above all, fruits that drop off or ripen in August and September; as the dropping of the fruit enables them to crawl under ground, and get down below frost before winter commences.

It is the foreign tree, such as the Beurré, vergalous, St. Germaine, D'auche, le chasserie, &c., that is most subject to this terrible blight. They grow so rapidly that the little vesicles, from their extreme attenuation, are not able to resist the full flow of ascending sap, and, when this is aided by the electric fluid, the vessels burst. In the course of many years observation, we *have* seen native pears attacked by fire-blight; yet it is by no means common. There is an insect called the borer, which completely girdles the tree, but which girdling does not take place till the eggs are hatched, or rather till the fly is ready to emerge from the chrysalis. These girdled trees do not assume that shrivelled and blackened appearance when dead, which those do that are struck by fire-blight. The very few instances wherein we have witnessed the destruction of native pear trees by this disease, only prove that there must have been some local derangement in the circulatory process—a rapid growth and a consequent distension and rupture of the sap vessels; thus reducing them to the same liability of attack from fire-blight to which foreign pears are liable.

Both heat and cold will rupture the sap vessels of a plant—heat, by raising the temperature of the ascending fluids, thereby causing an unnatural distension of the vessels until they burst—and cold, as De Mairon observes, by producing some new arrangement of the fluid particles, which causes them to occupy a larger space than at first, and, of course, in the act of arranging themselves, the little vesicles must be rent asunder. To so great an extent does this peculiarity in the freezing process prevail, that large forest trees have been split asunder. During the severe cold of the winter of 1829, almost all the large, full-bearing apricot trees were so injured by the splitting and cracking of the bark, that they did not survive the season. The apricot tree is the most delicately organized tree that is imported.

The sap vessels of many other plants and trees are likewise wholly or partially injured by the rarification and freezing of fluids. Cherry trees, particularly those that have been trimmed

up high, often perish by the excoriation of their own sap. Every one conversant with the diseases of trees, knows that, if the gangrene or mortified part of a cherry tree is not cut away, the whole tree will become tainted and perish. That this excoriation does not kill the tree instantly, nor give the limbs so black and shrivelled an appearance, is owing to two causes—the first is the peculiarity of structure, making it less liable to the action of the electric fluid; and the second is the viscid and glutinous nature of the secretions themselves. The exudations of a cherry tree are conspicuously gummy, whereas no such glutinous secretion is perceived in the pear tree, the sap of which, being very thin, can get more immediately in contact with atmospheric air.

The *scolytus pyri*—numerous as these insects may be—do no further injury to the tree on which they live, than to destroy the leaves, puncture the limbs, or sting the fruit. The exuviae, and other rejected secretions of insects, only blight or paralyse the particular spot on which they are ejected. Were the insects so great in number as to cover the surface of the whole tree, still the effect would not be like that of fire-blight. The shrivelling and blackness of the fruit and bark are produced by some chemical process independent of the agency of insects; even the fruit of the pear tree, when almost of the full size, is shrunk up in an instant, and left without juices.

Insects, in following fixed laws, perform their duties with great regularity and unerring precision. They adhere to their instinctive propensities with great pertinacity, and apparently with a sagacity far above instinct. They choose the most vigorous limb for the purpose of laying their eggs in it, and why they should inject into the wound that they make a subtle poison, so as to reach the very vitals of the tree whereon their offspring rests, is utterly incomprehensible. The destruction of a tree by girdling, as we observed, does not take place until the whole metamorphosis is complete.

The knotty excrescences that we see on trees, are formed by insects—one series after the other depositing their eggs on the new bark that is formed over the old nests. By this means the circulation is impeded; for the tree must suffer in proportion to the number of ligatures which encircle the limbs. In certain districts, the plum and the morello cherry tree became extinct in consequence of a number of very minute insects of the cynips tribe which took possession of them. We still see the labours of this very destructive insect in orchards, particularly near the road fences. A man should be despised for suffering such a nuisance to exist on his farm. Every knotty wart on the limbs of the common damson plum, or morello cherry, contains myriads of insects, which spread from tree to tree, and, as they



can fly, from orchard to orchard. The remedy is very simple; the black wart can be cut out with a sharp knife even when of the size of a pea, and the sooner it is done the better for the tree.

The Lombardy poplar and the locust tree have suffered by the ravages of this insect; if the former were worth our care, it could be easily made to flourish again. As the locust is both ornamental and useful, a very little attention, until the tree is five or six years old, will keep off the insects. In this tree, as well as the Lombardy poplar, the excrescence formed by the insect is not black, as on the plum and cherry tree, but of the natural colour of the bark. But let the insect be what it may, or the mode of depositing the eggs ever so peculiar, we still perceive that no instantaneous blight is the consequence of it.

Having mentioned the Lombardy poplar, we shall observe, that, in common with other naturalists, we accounted for the decay of those trees on the supposition that as the twig, or slip, is part of the parent tree, it must partake of its nature, and be subject to the same laws of vitality. But we have changed our opinion on this subject; and having already detailed them at large in a late article on vegetable physiology,<sup>1</sup> we shall only observe that the ragged and forlorn appearance of the poplar is entirely caused by the insects that puncture the bark near the articulations. We have seen large trees decay gradually from this cause, but still there was no shrivelling or blackening of bark, or leaves; the latter remaining firm and green to the last.

It is to render an introduction to the horticultural art easy and pleasant, that we take the business of advice out of the hands of regular teachers; but we wish our friends the nurserymen to understand that we do not imagine *them* to stand in need of any advice we can offer. If we can instruct others, the nurserymen will find great advantage in it, as an ignorant purchaser is of serious injury to them.

It is not the fault of the nurseryman, altogether, that our orchards present such a piteous spectacle as they often do, after years of labour and reasonable expectation. The fault is as much owing to the ignorance and unskilfulness of the purchasers themselves—the want of horticultural knowledge being very apparent. We shall, therefore, throw out a few hints for the guidance of those who have not had a regular training.

Let them understand, therefore, that while trees are young, the ground can be cultivated between them with light crops, such as buckwheat, melons, or potatoes; that is, provided these crops have been well manured. But after the trees begin to bear, a crop of vegetables, or grain, should never be taken from the soil, unless full half of their value has been expended in manuring

<sup>1</sup> See American Quarterly Review, March, 1837.

rem. As to the mode of distributing manures in an orchard, either for the trees alone, or for a crop between them, long experience has taught us that, under every circumstance, the broadcast method is the best. This mode is far more beneficial to trees than when certain portions are applied to the area of each tree. Buckwheat, sowed twice during the summer, and ploughed in lightly, is a cheap and excellent manure; the advantage of ploughing in such crops as buckwheat and weeds we shall proceed to state.

No crop should be allowed to arrive at maturity, that is, to form seed, after the trees are six or seven years old, unless they be full fifty feet apart; nor yet should the ground remain uncovered, and exposed to the scorching rays of the sun. This practice would be more injurious to the trees than the exhaustion from a seed crop; but before we go into further particulars, let us take a view of vegetable life.

For what purposes do trees grow, and why does fruit ripen and fall to the ground? The answer is ready—for the embellishment of nature, and for the gratification of man. It is not our intention to touch on the delicate subject of *sensation*—a feeling which many philosophers imagine a plant to possess, and which certainly implies a capacity to suffer either pain or pleasure—nor shall we descant on the beauty of vegetation, independently of its use to man. We shall advert solely to the course that nature takes in these operations—a course which the dullest observer cannot fail to understand.

But whichever way we proceed in the investigation, whether we view a plant as ornamenting the earth—as it relates to the individual enjoyment of the plant itself, or as it regards the gratification of man—we shall perceive that it is effected by one very simple and beautiful contrivance, a contrivance that is to perpetuate vegetable life as long as the earth exists—this is the production of seed! This seems to be the whole effort of the plant, and to bringing the seed to maturity every thing is made subservient.

It cannot be solely for the gratification of man's appetite that the fruit or seed of plants is formed and protected with so much skill and care, else the gigantic plane tree, and the lofty pines, could have the fleshy covering of their seeds of so palatable a nature as that man would appropriate them to himself. There are certain bounds which the Creator has set to our enquiries, so we should not remain ignorant of the cause which renders fruits so different in their nature and quality when growing in the same field, and nourished by the same food; or why the same fruits are refreshing and nutritive in one latitude, and unwholesome and unpalatable in another. The pulp, or fruit, as it is called, and which man considers as formed for his own

exclusive use, is nothing more than a covering which is to nourish and protect the seed until it arrives at maturity. That the pulpy rind is palatable, is owing to the wisdom of the Creator, who, foreseeing that man would do nothing unless he sees some immediate benefit to himself, rendered the rind of the seed, or *fruit* as we call it, an object of desire. Thus it is, indirectly, that the necessity of preserving the seed is implanted in our bosoms.

There are many trees that have their seeds likewise protected by a rind, which our sagacity detects as injurious and our taste as unpalatable; yet useful and necessary as the wood of these trees is to the arts, they would soon perish if nature had not endowed them with a capacity to assist themselves. The rind or seed of forest trees, for instance, is of no use as *food* to man, but owing to their minuteness and levity they are blown to a distance by the wind, and fall on some spot where there is room for them to take root and expand to the size of the parent tree. But with the trees that bear fruit the case is different. Pear, plum, apple, peach, and quince trees are of small size compared to those of the forest; the branches, therefore, cannot throw their fruit to a distance, for this fruit is large, heavy, and very juicy. It would, when the seed is ripe, fall to the ground *immediately under the tree*, where, if it germinated at all, it would be at the expense of the parent tree. But as it is an object of intense desire to man, he gathers it carefully, and after devouring the rind he plants the seed at judicious intervals.

It seems therefore to be the peculiar object and care of nature to throw every facility in the way of maturing the seeds of all plants, from the chickweed to the oak. The same process is observed, the same effort is made, in bringing the seeds of useless and noxious weeds to maturity as in those of the largest tree in the field. For this purpose nature takes advantage of all the changes that decayed vegetation undergoes. As in the beautiful language of Scripture, a sparrow does not fall to the ground unobserved, so a poor weed is not trodden under foot without the knowledge of a kind Providence, who immediately converts it to some use. All the decayed matter—all the manures which are placed in a field for the sustenance of a crop—are converted into food. It is the business of the plant, therefore, to imbibe as much of this as will serve for the maturity of the seeds. The greatest exhaustion of soil takes place during the period of the ripening of the seeds; until that time arrives, what are called the nutritive particles of manures are not carried off in such abundance.

A thick, full crop of oats—one of the most exhausting of grains—will appropriate all the nourishment which a well

manured field affords. It will therefore be at once understood why trees perish or are stunted, when planted in grain fields or among biennial grasses. The sap vessels of grain and other annual and biennial plants are more ductile—are more greedy of nourishment than those of the hardy, woody fibre, such as trees and shrubs. The gases which propel all the nutritive fluids, find a readier admittance in the spongelets of succulent, rapidly growing plants, than in those of trees and shrubs. Of course, as the universal law respecting gases obliges them to rise upwards and get into space as quickly as possible, they naturally rush to the easiest point of access. It is much easier for gases to elevate themselves by following the course of the sap vessels of a plant than to rise immediately from the soil, because they are charged with certain elementary particles, the greater part of which is abstracted by the plants, thus leaving the gases at greater liberty to ascend into space.

In this view of the case all light crops should be considered as manure; and therefore must be ploughed under before the sowers extricate the best of the nutritive particles from the rich soil to bring these crops to seed. We observed that the most valuable portions of it are absorbed by the spongelets which the seed is maturing. If no weeds or other light crops were allowed to abstract this aliment, the gases would find the spongelets or the roots of trees the next best point of entrance for the purpose of elevating themselves. It is in this way, therefore, that trees are benefited by the absence of other vegetation near them.

Turning down the soil, with the plough or spade, confines the alimentary particles to a stratum whence they can be available to the spongelets of the roots of trees. Even should there be no light succulent crops of grass or weeds, the mere turning down the upper surface of the soil would be beneficial to trees in another sense. Gases can deposit the particles with which they are charged with greater ease when they are allowed to move in a fluid medium. The soil, being moved, has its upper dry surface turned down, and the moist earth then becomes the surface, and it is from this damp medium the gases have an easy transit. We have elsewhere entered more minutely into the subject of gaseous action, and shall say no more at present than that gases always effect their object through a fluid medium; and when deprived of this they move at random.

We hope that we have sufficiently explained why trees should be allowed to absorb all the nutritious particles of manures, and why no other crops should be allowed to produce seed near them. In the article on Vegetable Physiology we have gone more at length into the rationale of the principle, and to that we refer those who have a curiosity on this interesting subject.

Our present purpose is confined to the mere practical details of horticulture, yet we thought the few digressions made in theoretical explanations would materially assist the cultivator in his views.

We here enter our protest against *tall* trees, whether of the fruit or ornamental kind. It is the practice to trim trees up very high. This was done by the nurserymen to facilitate the packing of them in bundles for exportation, and ignorant persons required that they should be so trimmed that the plough might go closely to the tree. Nature works for us more judiciously than we do ourselves; she points out the true mode and the exact time when an operation of this kind should be performed. A tall tree with a slender body is blown about severely by our high winds and equinoctial gales. This violent motion ruptures the spiral and other delicate vessels, and thus renders them unfit to elaborate the sap and other secretory matter. The body bent and twisted in every direction, is unable to support the weight of the branches, and of course the tree presents a crooked and unsightly appearance.

A tree that is allowed to grow low will bear the vicissitudes of weather much better than if trimmed up; the body grows stout and the limbs spread finely, making an ample shade to *protect the roots from the sun and heavy rains*; a beautiful provision of nature! In process of time, as every one has observed, the under or first branches of a well-shaped tree become crooked and get out of the centre of gravity, giving way to other branches that grow above them, just like the process of teething in children. By cutting off these crooked, under limbs, which all disappear piece by piece in the course of time, we give more height to the tree at the precise time when it is proper to do it. When these first branches, like children's first teeth, are gone, the next set come out boldly, and maintain their proper horizontal position during life. Mr. Mark Harden has an excellent paper on this subject in one of the early numbers of the American Farmer.

As it respects grafting, the greatest choice exists with respect to the buds. All nurserymen know—at least they ought to know—that if a tree is grafted from a scion cut from a *horizontal* limb, it will bear fruit much sooner than if the scion were cut from an upright limb. Those slender water sprouts—which from their length and smoothness are so seducing to a scion cutter, and from which he can cut three or four grafts—are utterly unfit for the purpose. A tree grafted with one of these scions takes a longer time before it bears fruit; pear trees throw up a great abundance of these water sprouts from the central limbs, and if young trees are grafted from them, they are very tardy in bearing. These water sprouts, or vertical

limbs, have never a sufficiency of those juices which assist in the development of fruit.

Perhaps, too, the disease called fire-blight, which is so destructive to exotic pears, may arise from being originally grafted with the scions of a water sprout, the sap vessels of which are larger and weaker than those that are taken from horizontal limbs. But this is thrown out as mere conjecture, though there is great show of reason in it.

No one should plant trees unless he is able to give them the care and attention they require. "Plant trees, my son," said the old Laird of Dumbiedikes, "they will aye be growing whiles you sleep." A rich and valuable hint, and coming from a source to which we are already so largely indebted, it should make a strong impression. But although it is our duty to plant trees, and we feel confident that nature will do much for their preservation, yet they are not to be abandoned entirely to the vicissitudes of the elements, or to their enemies. It is proper that the ignorant should be told that canker will obstruct perspiration—that frosts will blight the flowers—that insects will puncture the bark and fruit—that winds will distort the body and break the limbs, that rains will cause rot and insipidity—that drought will produce premature ripeness and decay; but that man—more destructive by his ignorance and neglect—is worse than canker, frosts, insects, winds, rains and drought.

Many of the accidents and diseases to which a tree is liable, the skilful, well-informed horticulturist can cure. For instance, canker can be removed by lime-washings; and manure well applied will allow the tree to grow rapidly so as to prevent a recurrence of the disease. By allowing the trees to grow low, they will not be twisted about by winds. By cutting out the black warts the nests of the cynips can be utterly destroyed. Trenching will carry off superabundance of water, and a water cart will greatly relieve drought. Above all, common vigilance will prevent the plough from injuring the roots and the lower limbs. As it respects the insects which sting the fruit, and deposit their eggs in the punctured part, we have no remedy to offer, save that of repeatedly shaking the tree, a process which must necessarily be limited to very young trees.

Does not a man, after reading all this, feel that a tree is a thing of life, and that if he undertake the care of one he is responsible for its welfare? He may be assured that he has duties to perform towards the tree that he plants in his orchard as well as to the child in his bosom, the animals in his stable, and the strangers that are within his gates. We shall now proceed to speak of the fruits themselves.

The most suitable apples for the middle states, for purposes of cookery, are the early summer pearmain, the Boston harvest,

the Porter apple, and the lemon pippin. This last mentioned apple, independently of its very great beauty, being, when ripe, of a golden hue, tinged on one side with a faint blush, comes from a tree that is hardy, thrifty, and a great bearer.

The next apple deserving notice is the fall pippin, sometimes called the Holland pippin; it is thus described by Mr. Coxe in his work on fruit trees:—"The fall pippin is one of the finest and most beautiful apples of the season, the size is very large, and generally weighs a pound. The form is rather long than flat, the skin is smooth and fair, of a clear, pale, greenish yellow. The flesh pale yellow, juicy, tender, sprightly and finely flavoured, with a delicate perfume. It is a very popular apple for market, and is used both for cooking and for eating. It ripens in October, and keeps well as a fall apple. The tree grows very vigorously, handsomely and spreading, with uncommonly large shoots and leaves."

After these summer and fall apples come the belle fleur, the Esopus Spitzenburgh, the Rhode Island greening, the yellow and the green Newton pippin, the Priestly, and the little lady-apple. Here are a number of very fine apples, but we forgot to mention the Black apple and the Swaur, which latter is often preferred by many people to the Newton pippin. It would take precedence of all winter apples ripening at the same time, if it kept well. Every state throughout the Union has a few standard apples of its own, which the horticulturists love to cultivate; but here, as in France, what is very fine and juicy in one section of country, is but poor fruit in another.

The apple is subject to fewer diseases than other fruit trees; the black rust, or canker—which eventually become moss if the tree is hardy enough to live through the cutaneous irritation—and the punctures of insects, being its worst enemies. A good white-washing or soap washing will destroy the canker; and if the holes which the insect makes in boring through the bark are filled with hard soap, or turpentine paste, the worm within will perish before it becomes a fly. This insect is called the borer, and the place that it punctures for the purpose of depositing its eggs is easily detected by the appearance of a snuff coloured dust at the edge of the hole. In process of time—three years—the tree will be completely girdled, if care be not taken to prevent it.

There would be a great annual profit from the apple tree, if the curculio did not sting the fruit. This insect has increased very rapidly of late years. Under one large apple tree four bushels of apples were picked up, the apples not larger than a small persimmon. *Each apple had a worm in it*, and as the average number of apples was five hundred to a bushel, here at once were two thousand curculios ready to commit depredations

on this tree next year. These insects crawl from the apple after it falls, and get in the earth, where they burrow deep, below frost. The apples that remained on the tree of which we spoke—it was a Newton pippin—were all more or less stung, and there was scarcely one that did not show a trace of the worm when it was cut open. An apple thus wounded never grows to its full size, and the punctured side is always knotty and indented; and trees which, if it were not for the curculio, would bear from twenty to fifty bushels of apples each, now only average ten and twelve bushels. The fruit, therefore, is not only less in quantity but in quality also, and all caused by the ravages of the curculio; in fact, it is only the young trees that bear fair fruit, for, in a few years, from the dropping of the apples the whole fruit will be punctured.

Manures should never be thrown near the trunk or body of a tree, as is the usual unwise practice. The truth is, that water, soapstuds, litter compost, or stable manure should be dug in a little beyond the area where we suppose the roots to lie. Manures—that is, philosophically speaking, the gaseous fluids which are extricated from manures—are the nutriment which sustains the plant, and all such should be within reach of the roots, or, rather, the extremities of the roots. The *mouaths* or spongelets (the spongioles of Dr. Dutrochet) of the roots are placed at the extremities of the fibres, and it is to them that manures should be directed; the broadcast method, therefore, is the best for trees. Nothing is gained by throwing manures against the body of a tree but a plentiful increase of suckers, which are nourished by this careless process.

The peach tree is now so generally cultivated that we shall say but little of it, excepting of the diseases which injure it. We must, however, let M. De la Quintinye be first heard, only observing that the peaches of which he speaks are not now known in this country by the same names. Nor is it of importance to point out many by name, as every year produces an endless variety of excellent peaches equal in goodness to the old ones. There are a few, however, which should never be suffered to run out, such as the early Ann, the rareripe, the Malacaton, the lemon cling, the Swalsh, and the late heath.

The fruit of the peach tree in the famous garden at Versailles, which was under the superintendence of the most excellent and scientific De la Quintinye, only ripened when trained against a south wall. In our happy climate—happy in ripening the first fruits—a peach tree shoots up luxuriantly and bears delicious fruit without care, by the road side. Yet difficult as the culture of peaches was, and still is, in certain districts of France, hear how one enamoured of the subject describes the qualities and pretensions of a good peach.



"The excellence of peaches," says De la Quintinye, "consists in the good qualities they ought naturally to have. Of which the first is to have the pulp a little firm, so that it may be just perceivable and no more, and very fine, withal, which ought to appear when their skin is taken off, which skin should be fine, shining, and yellow, without any thing of green, and easy to strip off, which, if the peach be not ripe, will not be the case. This excellence further appears when we cut a peach with a *silver* knife, which in my opinion is the first thing to be done to it at table by any one who wishes to eat the fruit delightfully and with a true relish. And then we may see, all along where the knife has passed, an infinite number of little springs, as it were, which are, methinks, the prettiest things in the world to look upon. They that open a peach otherwise, oftentimes lose half of the delicious juice."

"The Troy peach follows the avant; it is a wonderful good little peach to stir up in us the idea and remembrance of the excellent ones of the year before."

After enumerating a number of others, in his quaint way, he proceeds:

"The chevereuse, with the pavierosane, comes in at the beginning of September, and almost at the same time begins the persico, the bellegarde, and a number of others, to supply us plentifully for fifteen days. They are, in truth, an illustrious, charming, and delicious shoal or glut of fruit; the violet peach alone, which, in my opinion, and in the opinion of others greater than myself, is the queen of peaches, and is in itself sufficiently qualified, without the help of any others, to satisfy the whole mind."

Now this is all downright earnest in De la Quintinye; his whole heart was in the subject, and, as he deemed it of the first importance, he could not avoid expressing himself strongly. He was a man of classical attainments; of an ancient noble family; gentlemanly and courteous, and of an amiable disposition. Being possessed of a large fortune, he was able to gratify his tastes by travelling in foreign countries, where his love of horticulture increased as he proceeded. His fame having preceded him, he was invited to the court of Charles the Second, who conceived a great friendship for him. Here he was offered a handsome pension, but he could not be prevailed upon to remain, and immediately on his return to Paris, he was taken into the service of Louis the Fourteenth. He took the entire charge of the king's gardens, and soon produced a salutary change in the art of horticulture, not only in France but in England. He may truly be called the father of modern horticulture; and, on an examination of the greater number of works on this subject, we cannot perceive that any thing *new* has been added. His

genius grasped at the whole science, both theoretically and practically, and, like all truly great minds he descended to the most minute part of the subject. Modern science has introduced new instruments, and the improvements from microscopic investigations have given additional facts; but greatly has the art been indebted to De la Quintinye, and all our modern writers—one copying from the other—little imagine that to this French writer they owe the greater part of their knowledge. The only wonder is, that every horticulturist has not a copy of this work in his library. But let us hear what further he says of peaches:

“The admirable appears in crowds soon after the middle of September. Ah, mon Dieu! what peaches for colour, delicacy of pulp, abundance of juices, for sugared sweetness, and for a rich, exquisite taste!

“The nivettes, beautifully and marvellously excellent as they are, have the modesty to wait until the admirables are declining before they ripen, and then they show themselves, and, for ten or twelve days, amply recompense the pains of those who plant them in a good place.

“The pavé peaches, the andillas, and the narbons, press earnestly to accompany the nivettes; but for all their beauty—and which in truth may be called a painted beauty—those peaches, I say, would do wisely to forbear an attempt that can turn to nothing but their own disgrace.”

Of the thirty-two peaches which this learned and curious person enumerates, he discards *nine* as positively bad, and some of the others, with his right good will, he would erase from the list, if the chasm in the time of ripening could be filled up. He condemns the practice of multiplying the kinds of fruits as strongly as *we* do, for sooner or later it ends in wearing out the best varieties.

“Oh unlucky and itching humour, thou mayst properly enough be called the daughter of vanity and ignorance, how great a confusion dost thou occasion among fruits! Is it possible that people should not know that a difference of soil, of exposure, of climate, or of the temperature of the seasons, is able to produce those little varieties in fruit which yet are not essential? Notwithstanding which, they have given me an infinite deal of pains to discover the truth.”

So easy is it now, to guard peach trees from the injury done to the roots by the fly called the *egesia exitiosa*, that, in orchards containing two thousand trees, not more than three or four of these trees were punctured during the summer. As there are two or three generations of these insects in the season, it is proper to search for them at three different periods. An experienced eye can easily detect the place where the fly has

deposited its egg, by the brown dust that lies on the gum which exudes from the puncture. This fly—*egesia exitiosa*—is accurately described in page 334 of the 6th volume of the American Farmer. Killing the worm soon after it is hatched, is the best preventive, and this is done by bending a piece of stout wire at one end, having a sharp point, and following the traces of the worm.

The most formidable disease, at present, is the yellows, which, if suffered to pass unnoticed until the tree is entirely tinged with the jaundiced colour, will destroy it in two years, sometimes in one summer. If the tree is not large, and the disease has just commenced, it can be restored to its health and green colour by a bold trimming, rich manuring, and plentiful waterings. This malady is not propagated from tree to tree by the farina of the flowers, as is sometimes conjectured, but arises from a hot, dry soil, and scantiness of nourishment. A moist, well cultivated soil, ploughed mellow, and so as not to touch the roots of the trees, rarely, if ever, engenders the yellows. Great care should be taken not to plant the kernels from those trees that were infected with this disease, as it is communicated to them; and trees from such seed, especially if planted in the same ground whence they grew, will surely become diseased and perish. We have seen whole rows of yearlings in the nurseries destroyed by the yellows.

Exhaustion and indirect debility always succeed the great excitement of an *overbearing* year. Trees that have borne fruit beyond their strength, assume the same appearance with those that have the disease called the yellows; the same method of cure must be observed. When thus reduced, great pains should be taken with the manure, as none but the most ripe and mellow should be applied; the compost made from the cow-house being always preferred to that of the horse stable, the latter being too stimulating.

It will be perceived by this—and these remarks are the result of long practice and minute observation—that peach trees should be planted in a deep moist soil, well loosened and frequently manured. Buckwheat ploughed in twice during the season before the blossoms form, is sufficient for a light top dressing; and coarse litter, well ploughed in during the fall just before the winter sets in, is all that the tree requires, unless diseased. There cannot be too much stress laid on the impropriety of allowing a tree to bear too much fruit; exhaustion and disease will too surely be the consequence. Nor should too much fruit be suffered to hang on one limb, as the little delicate vessels, and even the bark, are strained and cracked, so that the injury they receive prevents them from bearing fruit the next year. Four things, therefore, contribute to bring on

the yellows—overbearing, improper nourishment, want of nourishment, and a hot, dry soil.

Apricots and nectarines are not so frequently diseased by the yellows, and they would yield good crops were it not for the ravages of the curculio, an insect which destroys the fruit. Cherries suffer in the same way by the same insect, scarcely any ripening without one or more worms in each. Birds make no impression on the numbers of these destructive insects; nor is it possible or prudent to let hogs run loose in a young orchard as some persons advise. It is well known that, from the propensity these animals have to turn up the ground, they would materially injure the roots of the trees. They break down the limbs, too, and rub off the bark of the trunk.

Our experience has taught us that cherry trees should be grafted low, and kept low, so that the head may form about four feet from the ground. All the imported trees of this fruit are unable to resist the extremes of heat and cold of our climate. Many are seriously injured in the bark by the action of the sun's rays on the south side in summer, and by the cold easterly winds in winter. Allowing the trees to grow low, enables them to shade themselves; and if a wisp of straw is tied on the easterly side in winter, the bark will be prevented from bursting. When the sap vessels are ruptured in summer, and the bark throws out gum, the knife should be freely used *until every particle of the mortified part is cut out*. Notwithstanding the reluctance that may be felt in thus disfiguring the tree, whole limbs and branches must be sawed off *below* the affected part, for like fire-blight in pear trees, it poisons the sound portion of the tree when it comes in contact with it. If the gum does not find its way all around the limb, then the whole limb need not be amputated, but only that portion of the bark and wood whence the gum exudes, but not a single speck of the vitiated portion must be left behind. The wounded parts quickly heal; in fact, no tree heals so rapidly as a cherry tree.

Another advantage in keeping the cherry tree low, is the ease with which fruit can be gathered. A man on a step ladder can pick all the cherries from the tree without snapping or cracking the limbs, or bruising the bark, or breaking off the fruit spurs that are to bear fruit the next year. It is not generally known that the fruit buds for the next year are all formed this summer, in July and August, just as the fruit is ripening. If this were fully known and duly appreciated, horticulturists would be more careful in their choice of persons to pick fruit. All exotic cherries thrive well in our climate, and they would be a source of great profit to the orchardist, were it not that the same insect which injures other fruit deposits an egg in the cherry likewise.

Plums are very extensively cultivated, and it more frequently happens that fine varieties spring up from the kernels or seed of good plums, than from those of other fruit. Several years ago, the plum trees were very materially injured by the multiplied larvæ of insects, which caused a great number of black, knotty warts to form on the limbs, and soon spread all over the tree. All the morello cherries and plum trees were destroyed by the ravages of this insect. A check is now given to the evil by cutting out this black wart as soon as it appears, so that we might reasonably hope for a remuneration for our trouble and expense, as plums are generally good bearers, if the same insect which punctures the nectarine, apricot and cherry could be destroyed. We had at one time under our care several orchards of the rarest and finest fruit, all in full bearing; yet out of fifteen hundred apricot, nectarine, plum, cherry, and apple trees, there was not *one* bushel of fruit, for three successive years, that was perfectly free from worms. Amongst the number were four hundred nectarines, and four hundred plum trees; *not one* plum or nectarine from all these trees remained on the tree till ripe—every one had a worm in it!

Our markets would be barren of fruit if it were not for the new orchards that are continually springing up, for it is a fact, well known, that a young tree is not so apt to be stung as an old one. This arises from the few insects that have found their way to the new orchards. As they fly from tree to tree, they soon begin their operations, and then all our care and labour are lost.

These insects have held dominion over our fruit trees for centuries, and, for any thing that we can see to the contrary, they are likely to continue their power over them so long as we choose to plant trees. They have increased in frightful numbers, and yet the greatest ignorance and indifference prevail respecting their ravages. Every man owning a fruit tree saw that the fruit dropped from the tree before it was ripe—he saw that apples, quinces, and cherries were knotty, filled with worms, and unfit either to be eaten or preserved—he saw that it was hopeless to get a single nectarine from a tree of great promise, unless it were protected by gauze nets, and yet he never troubled himself, much as he loved fruit, to enquire into the cause of the evil.

We have detected four varieties of the curculio—one of these deposits its egg in the pod of the pea, which egg becomes a fly during the month of March—sooner or later according to circumstances. The second variety feeds upon the *leaves* of the grape vine, but this insect only appears at intervals. The third curculio, like the second, does not make its appearance

every year ; but instead of the leaf it eats the *bud* of the grape vine before it shoots out into leaf. A very little vigilance will soon exterminate these three species ; but it is the fourth variety that requires all our attention, for it is this destructive little insect—not quite so large as a common house fly—that destroys all our fruit.

This formidable enemy is of a greyish black colour, and, unlike the other three, has a long proboscis which originates immediately from the neck. The pincers, or mouth, are at the extremity of the proboscis, and it is at this extremity, likewise, that the feelers take their rise. These feelers can be elevated or depressed at pleasure ; and when the insect is at rest they lie curled up with the proboscis, which is bent under the throat, resting on the body. It feeds after the manner of butterflies, drawing the juices of the fruit through the tubes. It begins its ravages in May, as soon as the fruit is formed, and continues to deposit its eggs so long as the fruit remains on the tree. This it does year after year, increasing in numbers as we increase the number of fruit trees ; and we can easily understand why whole orchards of fruit are destroyed when we are told that there are three generations of these curculios in one summer !

What, therefore, is to be done ? every experiment has been resorted to, every remedy applied ; but no impression is made, either to prevent the increase of the insect, or to save the fruit from being stung by it. It is very mortifying to be thus baffled by an insect that is neither poisonous nor difficult of approach. We are persuaded that a remedy *must* exist somewhere, and we should hope that time would discover it, if those who are most interested would exert themselves.

We have thrown our views of this matter into this form with the hope that our readers, who are of a different class from those who confine their thoughts to the common books of gardening, may be fully impressed with the importance of the subject.

Not one of the modes hitherto recommended has been found serviceable. In orchards of twelve or fifteen years' growth, hogs might be turned in to eat up all the fruit that falls, and thus destroy many of the curculios, but this could only be beneficial in case of there being no other orchard within a mile or two. It is a fact which cannot be too often repeated, that these insects can fly from tree to tree, and they travel from spot to spot till at length they destroy all the fruit. This is one reason why a stone pavement is of no service for more than a year or two ; the curculio flies to these trees from neighbouring orchards. Besides, an orchardist who has three or four thou-

sand trees to guard, would find it impossible to pave around them all.

Offensive odours or fumigations do not annoy these destructive insects. The fumes of tobacco, sulphur, resin, and other pungent gums and herbs, make no impression on them, neither are they moved by saline or sulphurous waterings or washings. We do not however despair, and we now make an earnest appeal to all lovers of the art of horticulture to make strong efforts to devise a remedy for the evil.

We call it an evil! we might say *calamity*, for it is extending itself even to the north, where hitherto it seldom made its appearance. Fruit is no longer a luxury; it is a necessary of life. Thousands of persons labouring under fever and debility are almost wholly sustained by it, and the poor have a right to enjoy it, for it is cultivated with very little expense. Our pride, our tastes, and our health, require that we should exterminate these destructive insects.

We here close our remarks, the result of long experience and close observation, hoping that vigorous efforts will be made to destroy the curculio. The horticultural societies of Philadelphia and Boston have offered a premium of two thousand dollars to the one who shall devise a simple, easy, and cheap remedy. This offer is of several years' standing, but no one has yet made an attempt to claim it.

We hope, also, that what we have said of the work of M. De la Quintinye will induce the public to call for it. This author is a man of taste and science, possessing liberal sentiments, with shrewdness and good sound sense. Above all, he is honest and scrupulously exact. He is the father of modern horticulture; without vanity or prejudice; and cares no more for the moon's influence upon vegetation than we are inclined to do ourselves.

---

ART. VI.—*Alnwick Castle, with other Poems.* 1 vol. pp. 98.  
New York: 1836.

In a former number of this Review<sup>1</sup> the opinion was expressed that the multifarious and bustling concerns of the American nation have, for a long time past, conspired to create an impulse which is prevalent throughout the bounds of the republic, and can hardly be said to have any direct or congenial alliance with works of the imagination. This impulse is fiery, prospective, and *practical*; it is connected with the enterprises of working-day spirits, and the forecast which belongs to a plodding, active life. That it has benefits immediate, and rewards ultimate, cannot be denied; and it is better, perhaps—may we not say that it is *best* without a peradventure—that such an impulse should exist, than that the people of our Union should be guided by day-dreamers, and turn from their numberless architectural erections of warehouses, tenements, towns, and cities, which spring up as it were like the gourd of Jonah, in a night, garnishing the banks of rivers, or the inland borders of western seas—to castles in the air—the Titanian piles of some visionary brain. The useful, now-a-days, must be preferred before the ornamental: the mere embellishment of life must be a secondary matter in a young republic, scarcely as yet released from its swaddling clothes—restless and revelling in the halcyon newness of its youth.

When, therefore, a departure is made from the ordinary course of men, in our country, it certainly argues a strong as well as an adventurous intellect in him who leaves, even for a little season, the beaten thoroughfares where persons jostle each other in the pursuit of gold—essaying to disport himself in the fairy gardens of imagination, and to create around him, in delicious abstraction, “his own green world of thought.” It stamps the man who *succeeds* in this career, with the character of one equal to either fortune, good or bad. We have always repudiated the notion that high mental capacities and fine attainments can disqualify any man for the most momentous and trying duties of life; and we verily believe that the scholar, who studies mankind in his closet—who reads the present in the past—to whom the records of dead empires are merely the pregnant commentaries upon the passages of to-day’s experience—can apply lesson after lesson, that he has conned in theory by himself, with practical effect, in his intercourse with men. We believe it impossible that such a man can dissociate himself from the world, or play the anchorite, “among his

<sup>1</sup> See American Quarterly Review, March, 1836.



fellows but not of them," as many are apt to contend he can. He is prepared always to make deep impressions; history, teaching by example, has fortified him with a self-adequacy for portentous emergencies, whether they are of a private or widely social character. He benefits others by his counsel; and remembering the models of goodness or evil which tradition, or the page of the annalist, may have furnished him, he applies them to his own case, or to the circumstances of communities or masses of men, with unerring advantage. A mind thus strengthened in itself, can allow relaxation to its energies, and be led into airy and delectable creations, not only without injury, but with positive benefit. Grace is added to grace in its expressions, whether poetic, or in prose; thought provokes thought; and Fancy stands ready to obey the calls of the master as the handmaid of Truth.

That the interests of literature and commerce are not more directly identical, is owing to the false and fully refuted notion that the latter pursuit is at variance with every thing dignified and useful itself. We speak now of the estimation in which it is held by the multitudes who swarm about the crowded wharves, or through the bale-obstructed streets of the Atlantic cities, and extend themselves along the iron and watery avenues of trade, from New York to the Kalamazoo, and from Philadelphia to the boundless contiguity of western shades. To the ears of such as these, the hiss of a locomotive is sweeter music than the happiest stanza that ever melted like the honey of Hybla from the divine pen of the poet, or the most eloquent sentences from the inspired lips of the ambitious statesman, or "oily man of God." With them, taste is an arbitrary affair; the expression of an opinion on a subject allied to letters, is not a matter of much moment; the occasions in which it is required occur infrequently; and they discharge their verdict, hit or miss—unmindful of consequences, because they know that at the worst no harm is done. The latitude accorded to *taste* is the hobby-horse on which they ride, and which carries them triumphantly through every peril. If they shoot wide of the mark in a literary decision in company, there are no bones broken; and thus many a valuable author, a delicate-minded architect of pure and lofty verse, is dismissed with faint praise, or shop-keeping dogmatism, who deserves the honours of his contemporaries, and the thanks of the world. A state of things is thus superinduced by the ease with which a mere opinion, whether just or not, can be made to tell among a social assembly, or a community, that is decidedly inimical to the interests of poetry, and the march of inspiration. A failure in verse, with judges like these, has no special discredit about it; and many a writer, therefore, who should be proud of his tuneful abilities,

d consider them as gifts from God, is driven, by custom, to sink lightly of his faculties—to depress his immortal yearnings, and subdue “the better part of man” within him; to believe the glow of thought a trifle, and the uprising of his soul toward Maker, the play-game of an idle hour. And for whose sake this course pursued? For whom does he thus underrate his intellect, and drive himself into the confession that *he* too is a sickworm, and “of the earth, earthy?” Why, for those who sink that the efforts of the soul, if not convertible at once into dollars, are of far less moment than handicraft rewarded: and so carry out to the full, in their creed, the sentiment so sentimentally disclosed in Horatian numbers:

“Magnum pauperies opprobrium jubet  
Quidvis et facere et pati,  
Virtutisque viam deserit arduæ.”

The author of *Alnwick Castle* has had the discrimination to appreciate this condition of society, and has governed himself in a concatenation accordingly,” as the man says in the play. Born in the country—his young eyes familiarized with majestic and beautiful scenery—the fairest leaves of the great volume of nature opening invitingly around him, he moved onward in his renaissance, like Obidah the son of Abensinah, in the oriental tale, who “left his caravanserai early in the morning, and pursued his course over the plains of Indostan. He was fresh and vigorated with rest; he was incited by desire; he walked swiftly forward over the valleys, and saw the hills gradually rising before him.” With this freshness about his spirit, as we may easily conceive, HALLECK began his intercourse with the world. In this country, as is well known, no man can put his hand to the plough of enterprise and employment, and look back successfully therefrom. At any rate, if meaner souls indulge in the deleterious retrospections of life, the writer of *Alnwick* was not of the number in his early day. It came to pass that he was transplanted from the earlier retirement of the country to a city location, where he soon became commingled with the traffickers of the metropolis, and found the spirit of the sugar trade and cotton line” descending upon him. How many lovely images, the first-born of his fancy, have been lost ever the day-book or the blotter, no one but himself can tell. At night, as one may readily suppose, when his mercantile reckonings, balances, and registries, were done, his countenance became sicklied over with the pale cast of thought, whose thick-coming influence marred his rest. We have no reason, however, of pitying him for his position—for it was doubtless that which compelled him to husband his best imaginings, and pour them forth, in happy moments—Heliconian emissions

VOL. XXI.—NO. 42. 51

—gushes of genuine inspiration. His feelings and his ideas were thus *condensed* into song; and he wrote that which must endure. Yet we cannot but believe that many a charming stanza has run through his mind, as he walked, "at morn or dewy eve," which perished in voiceless conception. Of his hours of retirement, it may doubtless be said, as he philosophized or built castles in town or country—

"Yet not in thoughtless slumber were they past,  
For oft the heavenly fire, that lay concealed  
Beneath the sleeping embers, mounted fast,  
And all its native light anew revealed;  
Oft as he traversed the cerulean field,  
And mark'd the clouds that drove before the wind,  
Ten thousand glorious systems would he build,  
Ten thousand great ideas filled his mind;  
*But with the clouds they fled, and left no trace behind."*

His city residence, however, did not seduce our author away from the remembrance of the country. He reverted to its calmness, its seclusion, and its purity, in many a melodious line. To him there was a charm in recollected rocks, waters, and vernal uplands—"ruris amœni rivos, et musco circumlita saxa nemusque." He heard, even in the crowded and garish ways of the town, those celestial voices which breathe at night from echoing hills and thickets, over land and sea. The power of these entered into his heart of hearts; but he was envired by the every day realities of a crowded capital; the follies of its dwellers passed in daily review before him; and, quenching within himself what we must call his better inspirations, he launched his bark of authorship upon the sea of *satire*. In doing this, he acquired a burlesque habitude of style, which we regret to say became afterwards almost a passion with him, and the effects of which are absent from but very few of his compositions. In the verses of Croaker, written in conjunction with others, his spirit roamed and revelled among the stupidities or the "sins, negligences, and ignorances," of the town. Many a citizen rued the movements of his caustic quill: but like the sword of Sir Lucius O'Trigger in the comedy, it was no less polished than keen. There is one species of satirists that may be called insupportable: those who condemn without grace, and rebuke without good nature. This propensity, in man or woman, but especially in the latter, is beyond endurance. It is produced from ungenial minds, and betokens the utter absence of those lovely humanities, without the enforcement of which no writer can enduringly or really please.

Since he dissolved his partnership with the firm of *Croaker and Co.*, Mr. Halleck—who has been justly accredited in the literary world as the chief operator in the concerns of that well-

known house—has had little to do with satire. Not that its vein is extinct within him ; but he has too much *goodness of heart* to engage in the breaking of social butterflies upon the wheel of ridicule. The follies of the time are numerous enough, it is true ; and no week or month elapses in which they might not be castigated with effect ; but the task is an ungracious one, and is usually assumed by unamiable spirits. It was a love of effect, mainly, which induced the author of Alnwick Castle originally to adventure himself in a sphere where he doubtless would have continued to shine—but not in a light grateful to himself, in retrospective contemplation. It is certain that true satire is pleasing to all but the object on whom it falls ; “good natured friends” laugh at it ; the pictures it gives are drawn with a fidelity which nothing can dislign ; every one owns the joke, though many may not approve it. It is a dangerous power, therefore ; but it has its degrees. Pre-eminence in satire only, is tolerable. Its secondary grades are personality and caricature—and thus the art, in its inferior spheres, cannot be agreeable to a high-minded man, who might indeed pursue it as far as he would list, if self-respect did not constrain him. But it is with satire, we suspect, as with love—“affection ceases when contempt begins :” and he who keeps about him the constant, refreshing redolence of a gentleman, is extremely cautious to shun even the appearances of a departure from the honourable laws adopted by every one who deserves the name. Motives of this nature have unquestionably caused Mr. Halleck to stop before he violated one principle of social amenity, or alienated personal esteem. He has left the field of satirical remark to twilight spirits, and humble caricaturists, who paint without faithfulness, and revile without good nature. The editions of Croaker have been denied to the press, while the poems of which they were merely the promise still live, familiar to the eyes and lips of men.

If, however, our author ever felt a momentary regret that he did not keep up his hunt for the follies and foibles of metropolitan life, he has been abundantly consoled in the success of those better, though not more popular works, which seem to have emanated warmly from his soul, and to have been dashed upon paper by a hand burdened and busy with the genuine promptings of genius. Intending to offer proofs of his sudden power, it is not improper to preface them with our impressions of the method by which Mr. Halleck commits himself “to virgin sheets.” He does not seize upon one bright and lofty thought, and, delighting in it, *per se*, dilute it into a column or a page ; he preserves it ; he joins it with others that may occur to him from time to time, whether he move at nightfall along the dim streets of the city, catching glimpses of the distant country

across the Hudson or the bay, as the sun sinks to his evening pavilion—or whether he gain an afternoon to visit suburban landscapes, and “walk in the fields, hearing the voice of God:” and when his mind is *full*, he pours it forth, a deluge of strong and brilliant imaginings. He suffers little or nothing to go forth to a cold-bosomed public which does not bear the impress of a master’s hand. The first poem in the volume before us establishes the powerful originality of his style. In the present age of indiscriminate locomotion—when “the universal Yankee nation,” using the phrase in the *national* sense, are every where present in Europe, by travelled delegations—we all know how stale and unprofitable are their pictures and descriptions of ivied ruins and broken turrets, the homes of rooks and owls—where the moon is as constant an attendant for every tourist, as if she were hired for the occasion, under a contract of “no postponement on account of the weather;” we know the thrice-told tales of halls, and armours, and corridors, and so forth—part romance, part reality;—and it is an easy thing to set them down at their true value. But, let the reader peruse such a concentrated sketch as the following of Alnwick Castle—and will he ever forget it? Not soon.

“Gaze on the abbey’s ruined pile:  
 Does not the succouring ivy, keeping  
 Her watch around it, seem to smile,  
 As o’er a loved one sleeping?  
 One solitary turret gray  
 Still tells, in melancholy glory,  
 The legend of the Cheviot day,  
 The Percy’s proudest border story.  
 That day its roof was triumph’s arch;  
 Then rang, from aisle to pictured dome,  
 The light step of the soldier’s march,  
 The music of the trump and drum;  
 And babe, and sire, the old, the young,  
 And the monk’s hymn, and minstrel’s song,  
*And woman’s pure kiss, sweet and long,*  
*Welcomed her warrior home.”*

We ask a close attention to the lines we have *Italicised*. If there be any thing more delicious in the whole range of English literature, we have not yet encountered it. Something akin to them may be found in Bassanio’s exclamation in the Merchant of Venice, when he draws from the leaden casket that which assures him how he is beloved:—

“Fair Portia’s counterfeit! What demi-god  
 Hath come so near creation?  
 —Here are sever’d lips  
 Parted with sugar breath: so sweet a bar  
 Should sunder such sweet friends.”

In this little gem of a picture, the author of *Alnwick* has taken us back to the past. The pomp and circumstance of the victory and the return are there; the harpings in the hall of triumph; the shouts of retainers; the joy of the feast; the draining of huge draughts of Rhenish down;—the speaking roll of the drum to the “cannonier without;” and the echoes which that noisy functionary sends thrilling magnificently toward the empyrean. This is *abbreviated romance*—it is the spirit of unadulterated chivalry. The true poet alone could thus embody the scenes of other days. Some who affected the burlesque, and shone therein, have delighted to imagine that knights templars have left their blacksmith's bills for mending coats of mail unpaid, all the way from England to Palestine; and bold historians have sometimes represented them as clumsy horsemen, with their limbs galled, and their unwashed persons irritated, by rusty armour. We do not, for our parts, affect this dissolving of ancient spells: and we can scarcely forgive those venerable chroniclers, Froissart, de Thou, or Stowe, for representing the characters of so many heroes, “dear to fancy” and treasured in the recollection of every true lover of the brave and noble, apparently *in puris naturalibus*—without that ornament which, with the aid of their recorded deeds, imagination could easily supply. For the same reasons, we take but little pleasure in perusing those short narratives in the Decameron of Boccacio, from which Shakspeare has built a fairy and unconquered world. Who would go to the dull outline which some old monk or annalist has furnished of Romeo and Juliet, when he could revel in that glowing description written by the bard of Avon? The moonlight sleeps upon the garden of the Capulets, when we survey it from the window of our imagination, as palpably as if the rustling of its leaves were in our ear;—we hear the stifled sigh—the broken vow—the voice of Philomel singing in the branches. What has “unaccommodated” history to do with the enchanting transactions of that balmy night, and the loving interlocutors who made its presence holy? By the mass, nothing. The poet's duty is to give us things, robed *couleur de rose*; to shed around nature a perfume richer than the breath of the violet—and to suffuse it “with tints more magical than the blush of morning.” A power or skill like this bespeaks more readily the poet, *nascitur, non fit*, than the wildest bursts of animal passion: it exhibits a quality, ethereal—heavenly—which owns no touch of this working-day world. And as often as we think of the devoted pair of Verona, so often are we reminded of their familiar identity; as if we saw the noble girl sinking into the tomb of her fathers. In our mental vision,

"The summer rose hath not yet faded—  
 The summer stream not yet decayed;  
 The purple sky is still unshaded,  
 And, from the sweet pomegranate-glade,  
 Floateth the night-bird's serenade;  
 Flower, and stream, and song remain—  
 Not one of Nature's charms hath fled;  
 While she, who breathed a softer strain,  
 Herself a fairer flower, is dead."

We had not intended to stroll into so long a digression—and return to our author. Having quoted a parallel to those charming lines at the close of the extract from Alnwick, in the same language, we ought perhaps to seek a better in some older tongue. The task is difficult; for with all the luxurious tastes of lyrists in the by-gone time, they had not a better perception of the beautiful than has been accorded, early and late, to a favoured few in many ages, who have swept the lyre with measures of English modulation. Mr. Halleck has built his rhymes with care: he has *turned his stylus often*, until every note he has recorded has discoursed pleasantly to his spiritual ear. Hence, his sentiments, above expressed, are not less pure than smooth—reminding one of those sweet and juicy lines in the *Carmen ad Ilydiam* of Horace:—

—"dulcia oscula, quæ Venus  
 Quintâ parte sui nectaris imbuît."

Next in order, among the productions in the volume under notice, appears that splendid lyric, entitled *Marco Bozzaris*. We will not so far question the good taste of the reader as to presume that he has not perused this stirring effusion, "time and again;" but we cannot refrain from offering the first portions of it for renewed admiration. To ourselves, the best test of its merit is the effect which it has upon our feelings. It is like contemplating a distant conflict, in which we have the deepest interest, but are forbidden to take a part. The spirit of liberty *thrills* through every line. We are convinced, while we read with tingling veins, that the writer possesses the true *chivalresque* quality; and that, occasion serving or demanding, he would be quite ready to distinguish himself, like Körner, not with the lyre merely, but the sword. In truth the very quantity and movement of this noble poem seem instinct with martial ardour. Like the war-horse in Scripture, the author, in his spirit at least, "goeth forth to meet the armed men. The quiver rattleth against him; the glittering spear and the shield. He saith ha, ha! among the trumpets; he heareth the battle afar off;—the noise of the captains, and the shouting." Let the reader observe the life-like energy with which the Turk is

awakened from his last gorgeous dream, and hears the death-shots falling around him, like the angry bolts of heaven as they leap from the bosom of an Alpine tempest;—the stern and patriotic command that rings through the sacred air; the tumult that ensues;—the leaden rain—and the harvest of death. We mark some lines in *Italic*, not that we suppose their grandeur and beauty will not be perceived, but to express how especially we appreciate them.

“ At midnight, in his guarded tent,  
 The Turk was dreaming of the hour  
 When Greece, her knee in suppliance bent,  
 Should tremble at his power:  
 In dreams, through camp and court, he bore  
 The trophies of a conqueror;  
 In dreams his song of triumph heard;  
 Then wore his monarch's signet ring:  
 Then pressed that monarch's throne—a king;  
 As wild his thoughts, and gay of wing,  
 As Eden's garden bird.

“ At midnight, in the forest shades,  
 Bozzaris ranged his Suliote band,  
 True as the steel of their tried blades,  
 Heroes in heart and hand.  
 There had the Persian's thousands stood,  
 There had the glad earth drunk their blood,  
 On old Plataea's day;  
*And now there breathed that haunted air*  
*The sons of sires who conquered there,*  
*With arm to strike, and soul to dare,*  
*As quick, as far as they.*

“ An hour passed on—the Turk awoke;  
 That bright dream was his last;  
 Hé woke—to hear his sentries shriek,  
 ‘To arms! they come! the Greek! the Greek!’  
 He woke—to die midst flame, and smoke,  
 And shout, and groan, and sabre stroke,  
*And death shots falling thick and fast*  
*As lightnings from the mountain cloud;*  
 And heard, with voice as trumpet loud,  
 Bozzaris cheer his band:  
 ‘Strike—till the last armed foe expires;  
 Strike—for your altars and your fires;  
 Strike—for the green graves of your sires;  
 God—and your native land!’

“ They fought—like brave men, long and well;  
 They piled that ground with Moslem slain;  
 They conquered—but Bozzaris fell,  
 Bleeding at every vein.  
 His few surviving comrades saw  
 His smile, when rang their proud hurrah,



And the red field was won ;  
Then saw in death his eyelids close  
Calmly, as to a night's repose,  
Like flowers at set of sun."

The verses in memory of Robert Burns, addressed to a rose brought from near Alloway Kirk, in Ayreshire, in the autumn of 1822, which follow the lyric from which we have just made an extract, are worthy of any modern pen, whose products are but the synonyms for true inspiration. The author has written in a strain worthy of his subject: his method is simple, fervent, and dear to the heart. He has a Scott-like faculty, we think, of contemplating his theme with a nice severity;—there is a *simplex munditiis* about the objects of his song, sometimes, that really gives them more attraction than the most laboured measures could otherwise impart. The mere sight of a rose, brought across the Atlantic, awakens in his mind a host of happy and pathetic imaginations. He is reminded of the autumn noon when he first detached it from its parent stem, on "the banks of bonnie Doon." He bore it with him across the winter sea; and lo! when it meets his eye in his native country, a multitude of recollections pass, with kaleidoscopic colours, through his mind. We consider this faculty of making one thought provoke a legion of others, as among the highest attributes of human intellect. That our author possesses it to more than the ordinary extent, is undeniable. With him the running brook might indeed furnish forth its volumes; or the mossy stone, half hidden from the eye, fructify into a sermon. This power of his reminds us frequently of the peculiar gifts of the imaginary German, *Teufelsdröckh*, with whom the author of *Sartor Resartus* has caused the English and American reader to be well acquainted. This faculty of making the most evanescent thing in nature a nucleus for profound reflection, is admirably exhibited in the following passage:—"As I rode through the *Schwarzwald*," he writes, "I said to myself: that little fire which glows star-like across the dark-growing moor, where the sooty smith bends over his anvil, and thou hopest to replace thy lost horse-shoe—is it a detached, separated speck, cut off from the whole universe; or indissolubly joined to the whole? Thou fool; that smithy fire was primarily kindled at the sun; is fed by air, that circulated from before Noah's deluge—from beyond the dog-star; it is a little ganglion, or nervous centre, in the great vital system of immensity." We cannot help comparing the spirit which dictated these sentences, to that which can evoke from a scentless rose, a thousand leagues from the source where it bloomed, a tribute like the one from which the following quotation is offered.

"Such graves as his are pilgrim-shrines,  
Shrines to no code or creed confined,—  
The Delphian vales, the Palestines,  
The Meccas of the mind.

"Sages, with wisdom's garland wreathed,  
Crowned kings, and mitred priests of power,  
And warriors with their bright swords sheathed,  
The mightiest of the hour;

"And lowlier names, whose humble home  
Is lit by Fortune's dimmer star,  
Are there—o'er wave and mountain come,  
From countries near and far;

"Pilgrims whose wandering feet have prest  
The Switzer's snow, the Arab's sand,  
Or trod the piled leaves of the West,  
My own green forest-land.

"All ask the cottage of his birth,  
Gaze on the scenes he loved and sung,  
And gather feelings not of earth  
His fields and streams among.

"They linger by the Doon's low trees,  
And pastoral Nith, and wooded Ayr,  
And round thy sepulchres, Dumfries!  
The Poet's tomb is there.

"But what to them the sculptor's art,  
His funeral columns, wreaths, and urns?—  
Wear they not, graven on the heart,  
The name of Robert Burns?"

There is a good deal of spirit about the poem of *Wyoming*, and some delicious rural description—but in the abrupt, parenthetical dashes, and vicissitudes of style, which it contains, we recognise a residuum or leaven from *Croaker and Company's* peculiar passion; and we must be permitted to say, that we look upon it as the offspring of bad taste. Every one knows that Campbell's Gertrude was painted *couleur de rose*; yet the *Wyoming*, or the banks of the fair Susquehanna, never came palpably within the scope of his corporeal eye. He looked at them merely, through the glass of his imagination. If we confess we had rather see his heroine as the bard of *Wyoming* has painted her, than to scrutinize her proportions, hoeing corn, sans hose and shoon. We do not affect this blending of styles. One at a time is sufficient; and there is an infelicity about the commingling of two or more, at the very best. Abrupt transitions, such as we find in *Don Juan*, are amusing, it is true, but then they are utterly devoid of *dignity*: without high, pathos is a poor gawd, and the virtues, pitiful ministers

to the burlesque. We really think that Mr. Halleck should eschew this propensity henceforth, whenever he writes gravely. Wit he has, and humour, in abundance; but let him not present them in compositions that might move, as with the wand of a prophet, the sacred fountains of sympathy or tears. We are aware of his versatility; but it should be evinced in the *separate*, rather than in the *collected* variety of his performances. *Olla-podridas* of the kind may have told well in Matthews' amusing rehearsals—but they are not defensible in a bard like Halleck.

Passing over the elegiac effusion on the death of JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE, which is familiar to every admirer of our author, we reach the ensuing lines entitled "Twilight." There is about them a holy music, which rings at the portals of our spiritual ear, like the breathings of some enchanting lute. As we read it, all our visions of the tender and the lovely throng up in glittering array before the eye of reminiscence. We see the sunlight playing again on the vernal landscapes of our early youth; a momentary glimpse is given us of the sheen of waters, that can never flash so blue and bright as in other days; hallowed hours, spell-bound moments, are hurrying by upon the wings of remembrance; and, convening again around us, in sweet communion, the distant and the dead, we go back with rapture to the times when, to our unpractised eyes, there was a newness of lustre in the brave evening firmament, fretted with dazzling fires; and when the mere boon of existence sufficed us, while we could look upon the folded lily, as it rested in humble modesty on the margin of the water-brook, and "rocked to sleep a world of insect life in its golden cradle."<sup>1</sup> These of course were childish affections; and when we come to be men, we put away childish things; but a strain like "Twilight" re-presents them anew.

" TWILIGHT.

" There is an evening twilight of the heart,  
 When its wild passion-waves are lulled to rest,  
 And the eye sees life's fairy scenes depart,  
 As fades the day-beam in the rosy west.  
 'Tis with a nameless feeling of regret  
 We gaze upon them as they melt away,  
 And fondly would we bid them linger yet,  
 But hope is round us with her angel lay,  
 Hailing afar some happier moonlight hour;  
 Dear are her whispers still, though lost their early power.

" In youth the cheek was crimsoned with her glow;  
 Her smile was loveliest then; her matin song  
 Was heaven's own music, and the note of wo  
 Was all unheard her sunny bowers among.

<sup>1</sup> Outre-Mer.

Life's little world of bliss was newly born ;  
 We knew not, cared not, it was born to die ;  
 Flushed with the cool breeze and the dews of morn,  
 With dancing heart we gazed on the pure sky,  
 And mocked the passing clouds that dimmed its blue,  
 Like our own sorrows then—as fleeting and as few.

“ And manhood felt her sway too—on the eye,  
 Half realised, her early dreams burst bright,  
 Her promised bower of happiness seemed nigh,  
 Its days of joy, its vigils of delight ;  
 And though at times might lour the thunder storm,  
 And the red lightnings threaten, still the air  
 Was balmy with her breath, and her loved form,  
 The rainbow of the heart, was hovering there.  
 'Tis in life's noontide she is nearest seen,  
 Her wreath the summer flower, her robe of summer green.

“ But though less dazzling in her twilight dress,  
 There's more of heaven's pure beam about her now ;  
 That angel-smile of tranquil loveliness,  
 Which the heart worships, glowing on her brow ;  
 That smile shall brighten the dim evening star  
 That points our destined tomb, nor e'er depart  
 Till the faint light of life is fled afar,  
 And hushed the last deep beating of the heart ;  
 The meteor-bearer of our parting breath,  
 A moon-beam in the midnight cloud of death.”

The moral idea of this poem is as charming as its execution. The subject is common enough ; but it is the treatment which gives it unction and acceptance. One naturally loves to contemplate the setting sun, when, after describing one of his long summer-arches, his red forehead plunges adown the west, and gorgeous companies of clouds, “contextured in the loom of heaven,” begirt him round, waiting in painted liveries about his royal throne. Heaven seems nearer at hand ; the creeping murmurs of the dark appear preparing to stir from their caverns ; the twilight breeze is lifting its wings from the white rests of the ocean, and poisoning them for a rush over the interminable inland ; and the crescent moon, with the largest stars burning in her train, hangs herself in the dark depths of heaven, dividing with the farewell light of day that aerial abyss. At an hour like this, we cannot help exclaiming, with the tranquillizing *Glück*—

“ Methinks it were no pain to die  
 On such an eve, when such a sky  
 O'er-canopies the west ;  
 To gaze my fill on yon calm deep,  
 And, like an infant, sink to sleep  
 On earth, my mother's breast.

“ There's peace and welcome in yon sea  
 Of endless, blue tranquillity—  
 Those clouds are living things ;

I trace their veins of liquid gold—  
 I see them solemnly unfold  
 Their soft and fleecy wings.

“ These be the angels, that convey  
 Us, weary pilgrims of a day,  
 Life's tedious nothings o'er,  
 Where neither cares can come, nor woes,  
 To vex the genius of repose,  
 On death's majestic shore.”

“ The Field of the Grounded Arms, Saratoga,” is a production which has all the spirit, without any of the poetry, of music around or within it. We are surprised that one so accustomed, both by practice and the habitudes of his thought, to harmonious numbers, as Mr. Halleck is, should have written verses like these, which halt so tediously away. Had he treated his theme in blank verse, all would have been well; but as the piece now stands, it is a truly amphibious and hermaphrodite composition. The sentiment is stirring and patriotic; the conceptions, fine; but the construction is a species of *composite order*, whose constituents it would be difficult indeed to explain or trace home. We copy one quotation as an illustration.

“ Stranger! your eyes are on that valley fixed  
 Intently as we gaze on vacancy,  
 When the mind's wings o'erspread  
 The spirit-world of dreams.

We may be prejudiced against this nondescript sort of quantity; but the mode strikes us as very nearly akin to the annexed specimen of a verse which we offer with the aid of an *indiscriminate* memory, from an effusion of Warren, or Day and Martin—a polished press-gang, who are famous for compelling the Nine into their service:

“ Sixpence a pot, we  
 Axes for our best jet-  
 Blacking; but if you  
 Takes back the pot, we  
 Makes a deduction.”

The reader will bear in mind that we may not quote the foregoing *verbatim*; but we have preserved the pauses and the system. With respect to structure and motive power, the parallel is almost complete.

It gives us pleasure to continue our course through Mr. Halleck's volume, and to find that a weakened gust for one poem, may be succeeded by the strongest admiration for another. *Red Jacket* is one of those lofty and fervid effusions, that one reads to remember. The author's humorous propensity creeps out in it occasionally; but, as a whole, it is

magnificently done. There is a pathetic 'under-song' in this production, which leaves its echo in the heart. The author has represented Red Jacket very much to the life; though the transatlantic allusions might have been well dispensed with. That noble old chief had a spice of the philosopher about him, which would have done honour to the wildest potentate that ever bent the million to his beck, or swayed a party with his nod. There was a natural grandeur about him, forest-born; the air that circulates over interminable wildernesses, and sweeps in freedom across inland seas, was the vital aliment for which his free nostrils thirsted; the perfume that goes up to the sky from vast reservations, as it went from the flowery tops of Carmel in the olden time, was his chosen element of respiration; the anthem for his ear was the voice of Niagara. We can readily believe that he admired his own untrammelled way of life; revered *Manitou*; and, perhaps, loved the fire-water which drowned the memory of his wrongs. In a part of his tenets, he had wisdom on his side. The man who chooses to run wild in woods, a noble savage, can find many enlightened wights in the purlieus of Christendom to bear him out in his partialities. The dress of Red Jacket, in his primitive condition, was of the simplest kind. He was not in the straitened, tailor-owing condition of many at the present day. "I have thatched myself over," says a modern European writer, perhaps in the predicament just hinted at, "with the dead fleeces of sheep, the bark of vegetables, the entrails of worms, the hides of oxen or seals, the entrails of furred beasts, and walk abroad a moving rag-screen, overheaped with shreds and tatters, raked from the charnel-house of nature." In his best days, Red Jacket had no fancy for integuments like these: and his bard should not have stooped to compare his dress at any time with that of "George the Fourth, at Brighton;" for Halleck is a man who cannot easily conceal from himself the fact that there are noblemen of nature,—and that a drawing-room, whether of the British monarch, or of *le Roi Citoyen*, "is simply a section of infinite space, where so many God-created souls do for the time meet together." But we keep the reader from our quotation.

"Is strength a monarch's merit, like a whaler's?  
Thou art as tall, as sinewy, and as strong  
As earth's first kings—the Argo's gallant sailors,  
Heroes in history, and gods in song.

"Is beauty?—Thine has with thy youth departed;  
But the love-legends of thy manhood's years,  
And she who perished, young and broken-hearted,  
Are—but I rhyme for smiles and not for tears.

- "Is eloquence?—Her spell is thine that reaches  
 The heart, and makes the wisest head its sport;  
 And there's one rare, strange virtue in thy speeches,  
 The secret of their mastery—they are short.
- "The monarch mind, the mystery of commanding,  
 The birth-hour gift, the art Napoleon,  
 Of winning, fettering, moulding, wielding, banding,  
 The hearts of millions till they move as one;
- "Thou hast it. At thy bidding men have crowded  
 The road to death as to a festival;  
 And minstrels, at their sepulchres, have shrouded  
 With banner-folds of glory the dark pall.
- "Who will believe? Not I—for in deceiving  
 Lies the dear charm of life's delightful dream;  
 I cannot spare the luxury of believing  
 That all things beautiful are what they seem.
- "Who will believe that, with a smile whose blessing  
 Would, like the patriarch's, sooth a dying hour,  
 With voice as low, as gentle, and caressing,  
 As e'er won maiden's lip in moonlit bower;
- "With look, like patient Job's, eschewing evil;  
 With motions graceful, as a bird's in air;  
 Thou art, in sober truth, the veriest devil  
 That e'er clenched fingers in a captive's hair!
- "That in thy breast there springs a poison fountain,  
 Deadlier than that where bathes the Upas tree;  
 And in thy wrath, a nursing cat-o'-mountain  
 Is calm as her babe's sleep, compared with thee!
- "And underneath that face, like summer ocean's,  
 Its lip as moveless, and its cheek as clear,  
 Slumbers a whirlwind of the heart's emotions,  
 Love, hatred, pride, hope, sorrow—all save fear.
- "Love—for thy land, as if she were thy daughter,  
 Her pipe in peace, her tomahawk in wars;  
 Hatred—of missionaries and cold water;  
 Pride—in thy rifle-trophies and thy scars;
- "Hope—that thy wrongs may be by the Great Spirit  
 Remembered and revenged, when thou art gone;  
 Sorrow—that none are left thee to inherit  
 Thy name, thy fame, thy passions, and thy throne!"

We now take our leave of Mr. Halleck, with the expression of a hope that he will not keep his light, which sends its beams so far, under the bushel hereafter. We counsel no neglect of his day-book; but we entreat him not to let his inspiration expire over the entries therein. He must have a good share of leisure after all. Let him not waste it in society; let him bear in mind that, with respect to *his* commodity at least, poetry will sell as well as peltry; that he has a mine of inalienable bullion in his brain, which no pressure can drive away,

no commercial revulsion diminish. The paper in his escritoire, if he choose to stain it with poetic notes of hand, will always command a premium. He can serve both Apollo and the Syrian god; and to *him* each will be true. He has written enough to secure that fame hereafter, of which he has already had a not disgracious foretaste. He has no right to stifle the stirrings of the power within his soul. We speak this more in reference to his duty to the public than to himself; since in the selfish sense, so far as fame is concerned, he might contemplate his dissolution with composure; assured by the past, that when his death-hour comes, be it soon or late, he will leave behind a name which his countrymen, and the lovers of genius every where, would not willingly let die; and that even now he might enrobe himself in the cere-cloth, and contentedly "take his farewell of the sun."

---

ART. VII.—*The Life and Services of Commodore William Bainbridge, United States Navy.* By THOMAS HARRIS, M. D., Surgeon, United States Navy. 8vo. Philadelphia: 1837.

The brilliant and perhaps unexpected success which attended our naval conflicts with Great Britain during the war of 1812, rendered the names of the principal commanders familiar as household words throughout the land. Their well-fought battles were at the time hastily chronicled, and soon followed by the various demonstrations of a well-spread and thoroughly popular fame. The mixed emotion of national exultation and gratitude to the victors, sought to express itself in illuminations, public receptions, presentation services of plate, and the various manifestations of that joyousness which sprang up in the bosom of every citizen, from a sense of the honour of his country, and of the exploits of his countrymen. Neither did this feeling appear in mere demonstrations of the more formal and speech-accompanied description—it mingled itself with domestic doings and with household feelings: parents and sponsors borrowed, from the honoured navy-list, names for the little Christians who were brought in those days to the baptismal font. If the rage for multiplying collegiate institutions throughout the country



had been of somewhat earlier date, we doubt not that, with that curious felicity which distinguishes so much of our nomenclature, not a few colleges would have received their titles from names that were renowned upon the quarter-deck. The history of the navy furnished the sign-painter with his theme, and many a faithful Red Lion, and Black Bear, and Rising Sun, were content to yield their places to naval exploits, or naval commanders. The likenesses, or what purported to be such, of the latter, pendent upon the sign-posts of village or road-side taverns, bore the brunt of as many storms as did their originals. We recollect to have seen at a little halting place on the brow of one of the Allegheny ridges, a sign decorated with a likeness of Commodore Bainbridge, as the artist had been so considerate as to interpret it by appending the name: it was unquestionably a rude tribute; but for all that, perched up as it was so far from the element on which the name had been made known, it was fame.

The reputation which the American naval commanders have enjoyed, has, however, been of an indefinite kind. They stand in need, therefore, so far as the accuracy and permanency of their fame are concerned, of careful biography. We are ready to acknowledge that, previously to the perusal of the work before us, our general familiarity with Commodore Bainbridge's name and services had not enabled us to do full justice to the sterling qualities of his character, or accurately to appreciate the extent and value of his services. The care of his memory has fallen into good hands, for his biographer, Dr. Harris, beside full general qualifications for the purpose, brought to the work the additional qualification of personal familiarity with the history of our navy, acquired by long and active service, and a participation in one of its brilliant achievements. For other reasons we were pleased to find Dr. Harris's name associated with such a work as the present; we hail any instance of a professional man of eminence finding, amidst his professional duties, hours enough to be devoted to a literary undertaking. The memoir of Commodore Bainbridge will be found to possess its appropriate biographical interest, and at the same time an incidental value considered in connection with American history.

We were glad to perceive that Dr. Harris has not been disposed to overlook a fundamental principle of biographical composition, which is too often neglected by writers who allow themselves to be tempted from the portraiture of individual character by aspirations for the higher dignity of history.

"Commodore Bainbridge's career in the navy has been nearly contemporaneous with its origin. It has been therefore suggested to the author to annex to his memoir a sketch of the history of the naval policy of the United States, of the events which distinguished the partial hos-

ilities with the French republic, and a more extended account of the various actions with the Barbary powers in the Mediterranean under the command of Commodore Preble and others. The incidents of these brief but eminently successful wars, were considered appropriate subjects for the biography of an individual actively engaged in the one, and personally most interested in the results of the other. It will be seen that the author has ventured to give a cursory view of many of these events; but to have extended his narrative, would have destroyed the individuality of a personal memoir."

Yes, as soon as the individuality of the personal memoir is merged in the record of events, no matter how important they may be, the work may be history, or it may belong to that intermediate species, better known in French than English literature—"Memoires pour servir," &c. ; but assuredly it ceases to be biography. It is a grievous error in literature that works purporting to be biographical, should be distinguished for that subordination of individual motives, and passions, and actions, which is the appropriate characteristic of history. The dividing line between them may be so distinctly marked that none need cross it unawares but from wilful or stupid blindness. Writers of history are too often (to use a western world term of greater significancy than beauty) *squatters* on the territory of biography, to the injury of the rightful proprietors, and to the disparagement of their own functions. It is the right of a reader of a work of pure biography to look for a knowledge of personal humanity, and not to have foisted upon him in its stead aggregates and abstractions, by which many a luckless individual has been lost in his own biography. When we look at the past through the medium of biographical composition, we are entitled to be informed what some one being—man or woman—has done or thought or felt—to be informed in what manner the individual, his personal power swaying perhaps the destiny of thousands, has acted upon the age in which he lived, or, if withdrawn more into the seclusion of his own being, how the age has acted upon him. To present it in its most general form, the philosophy of biography is to teach by showing to us how the individual, who may be the subject of it, either has been deepening the shades which hang upon the world, or by the blessed influences of a wise and happy spirit has been adding—no matter in what quantity, or whether in lofty or lowly life—it may be the ray of a planet, or of a beacon, or of

" some gentle taper  
Though a rush-candle from the wicker hole  
Of some clay habitation"—

still something to the light of good thoughts and good deeds, which is a sustaining element of human nature.

The memoir of Commodore Bainbridge has carried our  
VOL. XXI.—NO. 42. 53

minds back to several interesting periods of American history ; and after commending Dr. Harris's fidelity and discretion in not allowing himself as a biographer to be tempted too far away to subjects of an historic nature, we unblushingly claim for ourselves, in the notice of the volume, the reviewer's great privilege of digression. We are *ex officio* discursive. The remark, in the passage above quoted from the preface, that Commodore Bainbridge's career in the navy has been nearly contemporaneous with its origin, though true, may, without some slight qualification, leave an unjust impression, inasmuch as it appears wholly to overlook the naval history of the revolutionary war. The maritime affairs of that contest were in many instances brilliant, but they were all of a subordinate character. The naval engagements were of necessity only incidental to the great struggle. A war of independence must be waged upon the land—it is the soil, and not the wave, that will be incarnadined. When the purpose is freedom, the mailed hand of war will be thrust into the casements of men's houses—his blood-stained foot will be in their streets, and over their fields—upon the threshold, and at the hearth. The news of victory or of defeat is not then brought upon the sea-breeze from a distant ocean, for men walk forth to battle from their homes. The navy organized by the old congress was merely temporary in its design ; and, its purposes being accomplished, the remainder of its history is briefly told. The ships which had survived the war were sold, and retired, we presume, like many a veteran, into the placid channels of civil life. When, not many years afterwards, the navy was revived by the first act of congress under the present constitution, which authorized the construction of vessels of war in 1794, its history became continuous. Commodore Bainbridge's first commission as a lieutenant bears date very nearly at the commencement of that era—a period when it was necessary for the country to look to the merchant service for its supply of officers. The professionally educated officer is a luxury of a more advanced season of national existence. In the olden time, a man was officially born to rank, which now-a-days, by the tedious process of promotion, he arrives at only after many years of service, and after much faith, hope, and charity.

William Bainbridge was born in 1774, at Princeton, New Jersey, and at the age of 15, having discovered that his vocation was to be a sailor, he shipped in a merchant vessel at the port of Philadelphia. His worth raised him, while yet in his minority, to the command of the ship in which he made several voyages. The merchant service of the country was at that period dependent upon its own resources for defence and security, and consequently partook of a mixed character of traffic

and of warfare. During one of his voyages, Captain Bainbridge had an opportunity of shadowing forth the future victor of the Java by his courage and skill in a very pretty affair, in which he compelled a British schooner of superior armament to strike her flag, after having commenced the attack upon his ship. We cannot dwell upon this part of Commodore Bainbridge's career longer than to advert to one occurrence which may serve to recall the indignities and oppressions to which the American flag was once subjected by the practice of the British claim of impressment, a subject which, after having been discussed for more than a quarter of a century, and by word, by pen, and by powder, has not yet been definitively settled.

"On a returning voyage from the north of Europe, he was boarded by a lieutenant of a British line of battle ship, who, in accordance with the odious practice of impressment, commanded him to muster his crew, and show his shipping articles; an indignity to which the commanders of all merchant vessels were at that time compelled to submit, rather than by resistance, in most cases necessarily unavailing, expose their vessels and cargo to the danger of capture and condemnation in the British courts of admiralty. The first man examined was Allen M'Kinsey, who from his name was pronounced a Scotsman. Captain Bainbridge stated to the lieutenant that he was born in the city of Philadelphia, and was his first mate. The boarding officer affected to doubt the truth of this declaration, became very insolent, and when about to seize M'Kinsey, Captain Bainbridge intimated to him to repair to his cabin, where he would find a sabre and pistols to defend himself.

"The mate quickly availed himself of the intimation, and as he descended the companion-way, boldly declared that he would kill the first man who attempted to force him from the ship. The officer, judging of M'Kinsey's determined purpose from his manner, prudently refrained from a pursuit. Another young man was then seized and ordered into the barge. Captain Bainbridge remonstrated against this outrage, stating that this man, claimed as a British subject, was a native of the United States, and had a wife and children in Philadelphia. He added, that as his vessel was feebly manned, her safety would be endangered by any diminution of his crew. Finding expostulations of no avail, he told the officer, in a spirited tone, that he would supply the place of this seaman by seizing one out of the first British merchantman he met, provided she was not of superior strength. The lieutenant observed, with a contemptuous sneer, that an American merchant captain would not dare to impress one of his majesty's subjects, and, nodding disdainfully, carried off his victim.

"Five days afterwards Captain Bainbridge fell in with an English armed merchant brig of eight guns and twenty men, which, after preparing for action, he brought to by firing a gun across her bow. He kept the guns of the *Hope* bearing on the brig, while he ordered his first mate to seize and bring on board an able unmarried seaman. This order was promptly, though with some difficulty executed; after which, the English captain was hailed, and informed, 'that he might report, that Captain William Bainbridge had taken one of his majesty's subjects, in retaliation for a seaman taken from the American ship *Hope*;

by Lieutenant Norton, of the *Indefatigable* Razee, commanded by Sir Edward Pellew,' afterwards the celebrated Lord Exmouth.

"This seaman was allowed full wages, and on his arrival in the United States was regularly paid, discharged, and not dissatisfied with either the service or country into which he had been forced."—p. 21.

Upon this transaction, so far as Captain Bainbridge was concerned, we have a brief comment to make, and that is, to say in the words of an old and pious writer, that his proceeding was "a clear case in sea-divinity." We do not feel called upon to carry it up into any department of transcendental ethics.

Dr. Harris, in a note on the subject of impressment, after referring to some of the negotiations of the American and British governments upon the subject, adds—

"Although the war conferred great benefits on this country, in awakening a proper national spirit—in proving the great importance of a navy as a means of national defence—in showing our ability to repel maritime aggressions, still it failed in compelling Great Britain formally to abandon her offensive claim to her 'right of search.'

"The interests of both nations and the cause of humanity require that the claims of each should be amicably adjusted by a timely negotiation, before events should recur to call into action a practice to which thousands of our citizens have been victims, and which our honour, interest, and sovereignty, will compel us to resist to the last extremity. If the settlement of the *principle* was important in the days of Mr. Jefferson, it is certainly not less so at this time."—*Note*, p. 24.

Although the claim has not, it is true, been *formally* renounced by Great Britain, has not, we would ask, the question been actually and virtually settled? With great respect for the wisdom and ability of the various statesmen by whom this question has been discussed, we hold that the best and most successful negotiation on the subject, because producing most of a result, has been that which, with little regard to the superfluity of courtesy which distinguishes diplomacy, was held upon the open sea. What has been accomplished? It has been shown that the country will deem as adequate cause for war the impressment of her citizens, whether naturalized or native, from her ships. It has been shown, in the second place, that the country can send forth a navy able to compete with the first maritime power in the world. Now what more is needed? Suppose England involved in a European war, the only contingency in which she would have occasion to renew her claim to impress from our vessels; and does it come within the range of reason, that she would seek to gather up a few seamen at the certain cost of multiplying her enemies, and enlarging the sphere of her hostilities? The question was really settled by the reputation which our navy gained during the late war, and is not likely to be disturbed so long as the country is true to itself, and the navy sustains its character. Whenever, by

process of law, permanent allegiance to the country is received from a foreigner, it becomes the right of the country to protect him, for the simplest of all reasons, because it is the duty of the country to protect him. Whether that which constitutes a perfect and absolute right be a fit subject for negotiation, may well be doubted—certainly that which is also a duty cannot be under any circumstances, and it would be humiliating to solicit it by diplomacy.

The fidelity and courage displayed by Captain Bainbridge in the discharge of his commercial trusts, induced the secretary of the navy, in the year 1798, to offer him the commission of lieutenant and commander. On accepting it he was ordered to the command of the schooner *Retaliation*, a prize recently taken from the French; and he sailed upon a cruise in the West Indies, with a small fleet under the command of Commodore Murray. The first of Bainbridge's professional misfortunes befell him during this voyage, his vessel being captured by the French frigate *Insurgent* and carried into Guadaloupe. The *Retaliation* was subsequently restored and the prisoners released, after enduring a severe and cruel confinement. During the period of his detention on the island, the sound sense and manly firmness of Bainbridge were abundantly tested in a sort of semi-diplomatic intercourse with the French governor, Desfourneaux, who wished to secure certain commercial advantages for the port of Guadaloupe alone, and endeavoured, by holding out some private advantages to him, to obtain Lieutenant Bainbridge's co-operation. There is something very pleasing in witnessing the discomfiture of a veteran and artful diplomatist by the intelligence and decision of a candid and unsophisticated negotiator. A naval commander may sometimes find himself in controversies that do not come exactly within his proper professional sphere—cases not anticipated in his instructions, and in which neither chart nor compass will guide him. Not only the honour of the flag, but the rights and interests of individuals may be at stake. The knowledge of some leading principles of international law may be of importance to him, but more than that it is neither necessary nor desirable for him to aim at. In such emergencies we would commend a naval officer to his own judgment—to his own sense of justice, and of propriety. But let him not seek to fortify himself by citations from Vattel and Puffendorf and Bynkershoek. It is a sorry sight that—a sailor among his law books! It would be better wisdom for him to hold sweet counsel with the gunner. If his difficulties continue or increase, let him overhaul the armament and practise the crew at the guns. If the question he is called upon to discuss be especially perplexing—if he should find himself more and more involved in the dark—he will be rather more

likely to be illuminated by an old battle-lantern than by poring over the pages of the most learned of the civilians.

In the year 1800, Lieutenant Bainbridge was promoted to the rank of captain. His first voyage after promotion was noted for some incidents of a delicate and mortifying character, which, though resulting solely from the degrading subordination of the country to a barbarian power, were at the same time calculated deeply to wound the feelings of a high-minded and sensitive officer. It is due to the memory of Bainbridge that the events alluded to should be fully and fairly stated, for, with the growing difficulty of realizing the actual state of our maritime weakness at that period, there would arise a disposition to cast censure most unmerited upon his character :—

“ In the month of May, 1800, Captain Bainbridge was ordered to take command of the frigate *George Washington*, for the purpose of carrying the *tribute* which the United States, by existing treaties, were bound to send annually to the regency of Algiers.

“ After the *George Washington* had arrived at Algiers, in September, and placed the *tribute* into the hands of the United States consul, an extraordinary request was made of Captain Bainbridge, by the dey, that he would carry his ambassador and presents to Constantinople, in order to conciliate the Grand Seignior, whom he had offended by concluding a treaty of peace with France, at a time when Turkey and her British ally were carrying on a war in Egypt against the French army under Bonaparte. He considered it necessary to make every exertion to appease the anger of the Ottoman Porte, and thus avert the chastisement which he so much dreaded. Captain Bainbridge obtained an interview with the dey, and expressed his regret that he could not comply with his request without violating his orders. The dey intimated to him that he must recollect, the frigate was sufficiently in his power to compel an obedience to his demands. Bainbridge, supported by Richard O'Brien, the American consul, who had been at a former period a prisoner at Algiers, a sagacious and intelligent man, and well acquainted with the policy of this regency, made a spirited remonstrance against this arbitrary procedure, which was so revolting to his feelings, and which violated every principle of national law, which, however, had no effect, as the determined purpose of the relentless barbarian remained unaltered. Anchored under the batteries, escape was impossible, and as vengeance was threatened in case his requisition was further opposed, and as a valuable unprotected trade was in danger, it was thought prudent to yield to his arbitrary demands. Captain Bainbridge has stated, in the subjoined extract of a letter, the reasons which influenced him to pursue this course.

“ The Dey of Algiers, soon after my arrival, made a demand that the United States ship, *George Washington*, should carry an ambassador to Constantinople, with presents to the amount of five or six hundred thousand dollars, and upwards of two hundred Turkish passengers. Every effort was made by me to evade this demand, but it availed nothing. The light in which the chief of this regency looks upon the people of the United States, may be inferred from his style of expression. He remarked to me,—You pay me tribute, by which you become my slaves, I have, therefore, a right to order you as I may think proper.

“ The unpleasant situation in which I am placed must convince you

that I have no alternative left but compliance, or a renewal of hostilities against our commerce. The loss of the frigate, and the fear of slavery for myself and crew, were the least circumstances to be apprehended; but I knew our valuable commerce in these seas would fall a sacrifice to the corsairs of this power, as we have here no cruisers to protect it. Enclosed is the correspondence between Richard O'Brien, Esq., consul general, and myself, on the subject of the embassy; by which you will see that I had no choice in acting, but was governed by the tyrant within whose power I had fallen.

"I hope I may never again be sent to Algiers with *tribute*, unless I am authorised to deliver it from the mouth of our cannon. I trust that my conduct will be approved of by the president; for, with every desire to act right, it has caused me many unpleasant moments."

"On the eve of sailing, a difference arose on the subject of the flag. The dey insisted that the colours of Algiers should fly at the main, that of the United States should be carried at the fore. This honour, he stated, had been always yielded to him by the English, French, and Spanish commanders, who had been employed by him in similar services.<sup>1</sup> Bainbridge remonstrated in vain, but at length yielded to a demand which he was induced to comply with, for the same reasons which prompted a compliance with the other arbitrary exactions. Having made no pledges on the subject of the flags, he felt himself at liberty to give precedence to 'the star-spangled banner,' as soon as he was without the reach of the guns of the harbour."—pp. 43—46.

The necessity of the case could only have feebly mitigated the bitter feelings occasioned by such constraint imposed upon a commander entrusted with a fine vessel and crew, conscious that the only course which a true sense of duty directed might expose him to malicious and insidious censure. It appears to have been doubtful whether Captain Bainbridge's conduct was at first favourably regarded by the executive. The secretary of state, in a letter to Mr. O'Brien, the American consul at Algiers, dated May 20th, 1801, uses the following language:—

"One subject of equal importance and delicacy still remains. The sending to Constantinople the national ship of war, the *George Washington*, by force, under the Algerine flag, and for such a purpose, has deeply affected the sensibility not only of the president but of the people of the United States. Whatever temporary effects it may have had favourable to our interests, the indignity is of so serious a nature that it is not impossible that it may be deemed necessary, on a fit occasion, to revive the subject. Viewing it in this light, the president wishes that nothing may be said or done by you, that may unnecessarily

<sup>1</sup> In a letter dated Algiers, 8th of March, 1817, addressed to a naval officer in the United States, it is stated that a British frigate was placed at the disposal of Omar, Dey of Algiers, to carry a minister and presents to Constantinople, with a view of conciliating the Ottoman government, which his predecessor had offended. It appears, then, that the dey was correct in stating that services, similar to those rendered by the *George Washington*, had been performed by the vessels of other nations.



preclude the competent authority from animadverting on that transaction in any way that a vindication of the national honour may be thought to prescribe."

Nothing more than a statement of facts is necessary at the present day for the vindication of Captain Bainbridge's conduct in this affair. The truth is, the national indignity which so deeply affected the president and people of the United States, ought to have been looked for somewhat further back, for it might have been found in the humiliating relation in which the country stood to the Algerine regency. What security could there be for the honour of a tribute-bearing frigate? Verily, we think the dey showed himself a good logician—"You pay me tribute, by which you become my slaves, I have, therefore, a right to order you as I may think proper." The ship was a very good ship to carry tribute from the United States to the Dey of Algiers, and therefore was a very fitting conveyance to be freighted with tribute from the Dey of Algiers to the Grand Seignior:—which we cannot but regard as a very shrewd piece of reasoning; the real fault consisted in furnishing the premises of the argument.

It is perhaps to be regretted that Dr. Harris has not inserted in the Memoir the letter addressed to Captain Bainbridge by Mr. O'Brien, the Americal consul, which may be considered as the most complete statement and vindication of the transaction. The letter may be found in the fourth volume of Wait's State Papers, (p. 354,) and we avail ourselves of the opportunity of supplying the omission by introducing it upon our pages:—

*Letter from Mr. O'Brien to Captain Bainbridge.*

"Sir—Your letter to me of this date I have received and seriously considered its contents, and shall observe, sir, that from the day the United States ship under your command arrived in this port, and to this day it has been generally supposed that the regency would insist that the United States ship should proceed to the Levant on the business—or mission of this regency. On the 18th ult., when you went with me to pay your respects to the dey, after a little Algerine ceremony, the dey said he would want this ship as a favour from the United States, to carry his ambassador and presents to Constantinople, and return on the business to Algiers. I observed to the dey, that the captain or consul had no orders or power, which, in any respects, could justify us in acquiescing in his demand, that without the orders of the United States we could not do any such thing, that having no orders we could make no responsibility, that the captain could not protect his property against the Portuguese or Neapolitans, that your orders were to return to the United States, and by orders you could only defend your ship against French corsairs. The dey did not seem satisfied with these explanations; that shortly after I repeated nearly the same objections on this business to the Algerine prime minister.

"On the 26th ult. the dey sent for me and the British consul, and asked me if I was still determined not to acquiesce in making responsibility and carrying his ambassador and presents. I again repeated all

the arguments which I made use of on the 18th ult. and added, as this vessel belonged to the government of the United States, and we having no fixed peace or treaty with the Italian states, or with the grand seignor, that this ship and crew would be in a very singular predicament in going to Constantinople on the business of the regency, we having no ambassador or consul at these places. The dey answered, passionately, that these were all excuses, that other nations had rendered Algiers the like favours, but that if the British consul would promise faithfully that a British ship of war would come here and go to the Levant on this mission, that under this consideration he would let the American ship return to her country—the British consul, John Falcon, Esq. promised and assured the dey, (in my presence,) that as Lord Keith had promised to send a ship of war on this business that said ship might be daily expected. The dey observed, he would wait a few days before he would fully determine, to see if the British ship would arrive.

"The dey remained undetermined until the 3d inst. when arrived at Algiers from Mahon, a British ship of war of twenty-four guns, sent by the orders of Lord Keith, intentionally to carry the ambassador and presents of Algiers to Constantinople. This business seemed finished and settled, in order that the British ship of war would proceed on the business. But from the 4th inst. to this date, the dey and ministry, and sundry persons of influence, started many difficulties relative to the mission of the regency going in the British ship, and finally objected to go. When this morning the dey came to town from his country seat, and at ten A. M. sent for me and told me without any alternative, the United States ship should do him the favour to carry his ambassador and presents to Constantinople, that if this favour or demand was not complied with, that he no longer holds to his friendship with the United States.

"On my declaring that I or the captain of the United States ship had no orders and could not justify ourselves to our government to acquiesce, the dey got very angry, and declared that he considered every thing we did say or could say to be excuses not to do him the favour he required, and if this favour was not acquiesced to, he knew what to do, that other nations frequently did it, and he could see no reason or motive which should prevent me, on the part of the United States, acquiescing to the request.

"I again repeated to the dey that I or the captain could make no responsibility on the part of the United States, that we could not think his property safe under the American flag from the capture of his enemies, that the ship sailed dull or heavy, that it was war time, a thousand difficulties might happen. The dey hastily observed that God was great, that all was on his head, that all difficulties would be surmounted.

"I again declared that I or the captain had no orders which would in any respect justify ourselves to acquiesce. The dey said he would justify us, and that the ship should go *per force*, and that we had no alternative but to do him this favour, that his mind and his ministry's were soured against the British, and that on this account he rejected the British ship, and would insist his request should be complied with.

"The dey said he would send his flag to the marine to be hoisted at the mast head of the American ship. I answered I was very sorry on account of his determination, and withdrew; went and explained to the prime minister all that had passed or was said on this business between the dey and me.

"The prime minister observed that the dey's mind was so positively fixed and determined on this affair, that there would be no alternative but to comply, to prevent greater evils, reminding me of several overt

acts of this regency to the consuls of other nations and their affairs, that he had tried to prevent the dey from sending the American ship, that it had no effect.

"At meridian, I and Captain Bainbridge were sent for by the general of marine, when we made use of all those arguments which are heretofore detailed; the general of marine declared that there was no alternative but to comply. After our retiring from the marine half an hour, the general of marine sent to the consular house of the United States to acquaint us that it was the orders of the dey of Algiers, that the flag of Algiers should be hoisted to the main-topgallant masthead of the American ship. That we answered all was *per force*, that we were in their power, and the regency of course might do as they had a mind. Shortly after we determined to see the dey, and sent the American dragoman to acquaint the dey that the consul of the United States and commandant of the United States ship demanded an audience.

"At two P. M. we were in the presence of the dey, and stated all those difficulties, and all our former objections; that we had no orders, could not justify ourselves, and could make no responsibility. The dey observed that there was no alternative but to comply; that in doing him this favour he never would forget it on the part of the United States, and that when he did God would forget him; that he would write to the government of the United States on this business of his making this demand, and assured Captain Bainbridge and me that the United States would be highly pleased at the conduct of the consul and commandant in obliging the dey and regency agreeable to the request he made to us as a favour from the United States. We observed to the dey that this was a forced business, that under this idea, and for the safety of his presents, it would be better that his flag should be hoisted at the fore-topgallant masthead than the main. The dey declared he did not well know this business, but that those at the marine knew the custom; he believed it was at the main.

"On this we went to the marine, told the general of the marine that if this United States ship should haul down her pennant, and hoist the Algerine flag at the main, that said ship, agreeable to our laws, was out of commission, and would not be considered as a public ship of the United States, that the Algerine flag would be the same thing at the fore as the main, but to us it made great difference; that by Christian laws the ship would be considered as an Algerine property and not as a ship of the United States; that we made this remonstrance and observation to prevent difficulties; on this explanation the general of marine got into a great passion, swore that the proposition and idea was made as an evasive pretence, that the ships of war of Spain and France and other nations, had acquiesced to hoist the Algerine flag at the main, that it was by the flag being hoisted there that the mission was known and announced at Algiers and Constantinople. I explained to you, sir, that it was the custom, as I have seen and known, that the French and Spanish ships of war, going on the like mission, hoisted at Algiers and Constantinople, the Algerine flag at the main, that at sea he wore his pennant and was more his own master. On this you observed, it being a forced business, that if there was a right to acquiesce to one point, there was no alternative but by the same rule to acquiesce to the other, relative to the flag.

"The general of marine and officers of ditto said if there was not a compliance on this business, agreeable to customs of all nations heretofore, that there no longer existed friendship between this regency and the United States. I observed that I was sorry that the United States

had so much reason to know Algiers, and that Algiers had no reason to know the United States.

"We went on board, the Turkish flag was hoisted at the main of the United States ship, and was saluted with seven guns as customary.

"Painful is the detail, but it contains a narrative of facts. To the truth thereof, witness my hand and seal of office at Algiers, this 9th day of October, 1800.

"I am, sir, very respectfully, your most obedient servant,

"RICHARD O'BRIEN."

There is one pleasant interlude in this disagreeable drama, and as it is the only one, it would be hardly fair to pass it by. If the accuracy of discipline be discomposed when a public vessel bears the honoured burden of the family of a minister plenipotentiary, we can readily conceive that there must have been grievous trials of patience, when the George Washington sailed freighted with a hundred devout Mussulmans. We can only lament that some one gifted with a happy eye of observation, and a pleasant talent of description, did not make a record of the incidents of the voyage; which would, we fancy, have proved that truth may not only be more strange but more ludicrous than fiction:—

"The George Washington sailed from Algiers on the 19th of October, 1800. The winds and weather were unfavourable, and the crowded condition of the ship, with the difficulty of managing the Algerines without using severity, a resort to which would not have been proper, rendered the passage as unpleasant as could be well imagined. The interruptions to the duties of the ship by the frequent devotions of the Mussulmans, proved another source of annoyance. Besides other religious ceremonies, they prayed five times a day, and always with their faces directed towards the Kaaba of Mecca. As the ship frequently tacked while engaged in prayer, they were as often obliged to change their position, and such was their scrupulosity on this point, that one of the number was designated to consult the compass in the binnacle to obtain the precise direction. Such manœuvres never failed to excite the merriment and elicit the gibes of the sailors." p. 46.

It only remains, in connection with this affair, to mention Captain Bainbridge's official reception on his return to the United States:—

"From Alicant, Captain Bainbridge returned to the United States; after which he proceeded to the seat of government, and reported himself in person to the president, detailed to him all the difficulties against which he had to contend, and was gratified to learn from him that his conduct received his approbation, and even commended him for the 'judicious and skilful manner in which he had discharged his duties, while under the pressure of such embarrassing circumstances.'

"The humiliating condition in which Captain Bainbridge was placed, arose out of the feeble policy of our government, in stipulating to purchase an immunity from insult to our citizens, and spoliations on our commerce, by paying an annual tribute to barbarians, whom it could have readily controlled by force. There is no other way of giving complete protection to our citizens, and to our property afloat, than by

the cannon's mouth. Dear-bought experience has proved the utter fallacy of Mr. Jefferson's scheme of preserving peace, by pursuing a pacific and upright policy towards all nations. The point is now settled, however, that nothing less than an exhibition of force, and a willingness to exercise it, can maintain, unimpaired, our national rights and dignity." p. 60.

In 1803 Captain Bainbridge was ordered to the command of the frigate *Philadelphia*, to cruise in the Mediterranean for the purpose of making prizes of the vessels of the *Tripolitans*, the *Bashaw* of Tripoli having recently declared war against the United States. After cruising with some success, he experienced the most severe calamity of his professional life—the stranding and capture of his ship, which was followed by a cruel and protracted imprisonment of the officers and crew in the dungeons of Tripoli. The disaster is well narrated in his official letter :—

“TRIPOLI, November the 1st, 1803.

“On Monday, October the thirty-first, at nine o'clock, A. M., being about six or seven leagues to the eastward of Tripoli, with the wind from the east, discovered a sail in shore. I immediately made sail in chase, and about ten, being within random shot, and perceiving she was armed, began firing into her from the first and second division of the larboard side.

“The chase and fire were continued until half-past eleven, during which time the deep-sea and hand lead were kept constantly going, with regular soundings from seven to ten fathoms; hauling off and on accordingly. At this time, it appearing evident that we could neither run the chase on shore, nor cut her off from the harbour of Tripoli, then distant about three or four miles, orders were given to drop the foresail, which had been brailed up a little before, port the helm, give up the chase, and haul off shore; but instead of deepening our water, as we had every reason to expect from the preceding circumstances of the chase, and from the form of the coast, it suddenly shoaled from eight to seven, and six and a half fathoms. The helm was instantly ordered hard-a-port, and the yards sharp braced; but scarcely was the order issued, before the ship struck, and run on a reef of rocks, until there was not above fourteen feet water under her fore-channels; her draft, before striking, being eighteen and a half feet aft, and her velocity between seven and eight knots. The sails were laid a-back, and the forward guns run aft, in hopes of backing her off, which not producing the desired effect, orders were given to stave the water in the hold, and pump it out, throw over-board the lumber and heavy articles of every kind, cut away the anchors except the larboard bower, and throw over all the guns, except a few for our defence against the enemy's gun-boats, which, by this time, had taken a station on our larboard quarter, and commenced firing upon us. These orders were executed with alacrity and despatch, while the fire of the gun-boats was returned with spirit from the few guns which were brought to bear upon them. Owing to the situation of the ship and position of the enemy, only a few carronades and the stern chasers could be used; for which purpose the stern was cut away. During these defensive operations, the ship drove higher on the rocks, and careened so much, as to render the guns almost entirely unmanageable, and at half-past six she fell over on her broadside. As a last resource, the foremast and main-topgallant-mast were cut away, but without any

beneficial effect, and the ship remained a perfect wreck, exposed to the constant fire of the gun-boats, which could not be returned.

"A council of officers was called, who declared that every possible means had been used, that ingenuity could devise, to get the ship off, and that there was no longer any possible hope of saving her. To strike to any foe was mortifying, but to yield to an uncivilized, barbarous enemy, who were objects of contempt, was humiliating. To lay as a target for them to fire at, and by a vain parade of unavailing courage, wantonly sacrifice the lives of brave men, was cruel, and could not be justified on any principle of war or humanity." After mature deliberation, having been exposed for more than five hours to the fire of the gun-boats, it was unanimously agreed that the only alternative was to haul down the colours and surrender, after having thrown overboard all the small arms, floated the magazine, and scuttled the ship.

"At four o'clock the flag was struck, and, immediately after, the ship was surrounded with the enemy's gun-boats, and other small craft. Our clothing was all packed up, and hopes were entertained of preserving them; but about sunset, possession was taken of the frigate, when she was entered at every port, and an indiscriminate plunder took place. The swords, epaulets, watches, pocket trinkets, money, and almost every rag of clothing, were taken from the officers; even the cravats round their necks, and outside garments.

"We landed about ten o'clock near the bashaw's castle, into which we were conducted, escorted by numerous guards, and finally entered his audience hall, where he was seated in his chair of state, surrounded by his divan and guards, all richly dressed, where we were presented to him as his captives.

"After numerous questions on the subject of our capture, we were conducted to another apartment, where a supper was provided for us. About twelve o'clock at night, we were carried back to the hall and dismissed, in charge of the minister of state, Sidi Mohammed Dgheis, who marched us through the town, to the late American consul's house, which was assigned us as our temporary prison." pp. 80—82.

A letter to his wife presents, in a very agreeable light, the character of Bainbridge disencumbered of all official formality, and we are, therefore, the better pleased to quote it as a freer expression of his feelings.

"TRIPOLI, November 1st, 1803.

"My dear Susan,—With feelings of distress which I cannot describe, I have to inform you that I have lost the beautiful frigate which was placed under my command, by running her a-foul of rocks, a few miles to the east of this harbour, which are not marked in the charts. After defending her as long as a ray of hope remained, I was obliged to surrender, and am now with my officers and crew confined in a prison in this place. I enclose to you a copy of my official letter to the secretary of the navy, from which you will learn all the circumstances in detail, connected with our capture.

"My anxiety and affliction does not arise from my confinement and deprivations in prison—these, indeed, I could bear if ten times more severe; but is caused by my absence, which may be a protracted one, from my dearly beloved Susan; and an apprehension, which constantly haunts me, that I may be censured by my countrymen. These impressions, which are seldom absent from my mind, act as a corroding canker at my heart. So maddened am I sometimes by the workings of my imagi-

nation, that I cannot refrain from exclaiming that it would be a merciful dispensation of Providence if my head had been an enemy, while our vessel lay rolling on the rocks.

"You now see, my beloved wife, the cause of my distress in prison is entirely supportable—I have found her generous friends, such as I hope the virtuous will meet in all but if my professional character be blotched—if an attempt taint my honour—if I am censured, if it does not kill me, least deprive me of the power of looking any of my race always excepting, however, my young, kind, and sympathizing the world desert me, I am sure to find a welcome in her affection, to receive the support and condolence which none can give.

"I cannot tell why I am so oppressed with apprehension. I acted according to my best judgment—my officers tell me my conduct was faultless—that no one indeed could have done this I attribute (perhaps in my weakness) to a generous wish to sustain me in my affliction.

"I hope soon to hear that your health is good, and, altho' at my misfortune, are yet surrounded by dear and condoling friends who will, in some measure, assuage your affliction. Perhaps I will be able to tell me that I have done injustice to my country so far from censuring, they sympathize, and some even more. God grant that this may be the case—and why should it not? Americans are generous as they are brave. I must stop, my dear wife, I see I am disclosing my weakness—these are the mere reveries daily pass through my heated brain.

"I beg that you will not suppose our imprisonment is a suffering; on the contrary, it is, as I have already assured you, a supportable state.

"Your ever faithful and affectionate husband,  
"WILLIAM B.

"Mrs. SUSAN BAINBRIDGE, Perth Amboy."

The details of the captivity would occupy too many limits: we cannot, however, take leave of the subject without adverting to some circumstances which, for the human nature, it is delightful to dwell upon. They were not abandoned to their own fortitude and mustering to bear up under the weary sufferings of a captive heathen citadel. They found friends from whom they received a most affectionate solicitude—a feeling springing from the sympathy of Christianity, and in addition the native sympathy of humanity. The Danish consul, Nissen, a man of most active and fearless benevolence, during their captivity, his invaluable friendship, and the services which congress was afterwards well pleased to acknowledge by a vote of thanks. The heart of the friend of the captive sailors beat, where they could not expect it, beneath a Moorish garb: a truer and more Christian charity could not have been manifested than the kindness of one of the Tripolitan ministers of state, Mohammed Dgheis, who anxiously sought every opportunity to

alleviate the sufferings of the prisoners—pledged the life of his son for the sanctity of Bainbridge's parole of honour—and at length, by his statesmanlike decision, brought the captivity to its termination.<sup>1</sup>

Captain Bainbridge's mind was not inactive while he was immured in the dungeons of Tripoli, where he conceived a project for the destruction of his captured frigate, which, by the agency of his friend, the benevolent Dane, he communicated to Commodore Preble. The accomplishment of the plan by Decatur was one of the most intrepid and distinguished exploits upon our naval annals, and the weight of some weary hours of a cruel captivity was probably lightened by the reflection that the captive was able by the suggestion still to render good service to his country. Captain Bainbridge took occasion also to indicate to Commodore Preble a plan for the bombardment of Tripoli, which was effected in a manner well calculated to reduce the bashaw to terms of peace. The government had adopted a wiser policy than sending ships as bearers of tribute. The letters from Commodore Preble to Captain Bainbridge, during this period, afford conclusive evidence at once of the admirable conduct of the latter in the season of his adversity, and of the generous and kindly spirit of the former, who has left the memory of one of the most accomplished and gallant officers of our early navy.

The officers and crew of the *Philadelphia*, after enduring a captivity protracted to upwards of nineteen months, were set at liberty, and the first use of their recovered freedom displayed a fine trait of the seaman's character—that strange compound of the stormy tongue and the weather-beaten brow with a melting tenderness of heart. The expiration of a nineteen months' captivity furnished the sailors with a superabundance of happiness, which sailor-like they proceeded at once to disburse like the accumulated pay of a three years' service.

"During the captivity of our countrymen, and some months previously to the conclusion of the treaty of peace, the imprisoned sailors and marines informed Captain Bainbridge by letter, that one of their keepers, a Neapolitan, had treated them with great humanity and kindness, and that they were desirous of reciprocating the favours which he had so generously bestowed upon them. This keeper being a slave, and anxious, like themselves, to be liberated, they requested their commander to authorize the purser to advance from the pay then due to

---

<sup>1</sup> We have recently observed a notice of the death of this estimable individual, Sidi Mohammed Dgheis, at Smyrna. After having filled some important stations under the Ottoman government, he was occupied during the latter years of his life in the discharge of some editorial functions, and left behind him the memory of his friendship to the American captives.



them, the sum of seven hundred dollars, the amount demanded for his freedom. So soon as they were informed that peace was concluded, their application was renewed, and, in obedience to their wishes, the money advanced them by the purser; the benevolent slave was redeemed from bondage, and conveyed in safety to his native country in one of our national vessels. When our sailors and their freedman separated at Naples, a poignancy of feeling was exhibited which would have done honour to those who move in more elevated walks in life, and who pretend to more refinement of sentiment." p. 126.

During a furlough which had been granted to him, Captain Bainbridge returned to the merchant service, and was in the city of St. Petersburg, entrusted with an important mercantile negotiation, when he received intelligence in 1811 of the threatening difficulties between the United States and Great Britain. By a desperate journey in the depth of winter, he travelled from the north of Europe, and, without a day's heedless delay, embarked for the United States to report himself for active service, which he was enabled to do in the early part of 1812.

That the government should not, previously to the late war, have felt that confidence in the naval arm of national defence, which was established by the success of that contest, is not surprising. We were aware that when Captain Hull sailed on his cruise in the *Constitution*, the letter of instructions which he received from the navy department was of the most caution-teaching description. The remarkable stress laid upon the jeopardy of bringing his ship into action, would, we think, have justified that gallant officer to his superiors, if, when he encountered the *Guerriere* in all the untamed pride of the British navy, he had relied upon the sailing rather than the fighting qualities of "*Old Ironsides*." The secretary of the navy obviously never anticipated that our favourite frigate would win her well-known title—he would have been quite content if she had returned into port as "*Old Swiftsure*." The extent of the timidity which prevailed in the councils of the national executive is, however, more strongly developed by a fact brought to light in the present memoir, for we do not recollect to have seen it elsewhere recorded.

"After remaining in Washington a few weeks, during the deliberations of congress on the subject of a declaration of war against Great Britain, he was ordered to the command of the navy yard at Charlestown, Massachusetts. Before leaving the seat of government, he learned with infinite regret and mortification, that in a cabinet council it was determined that our vessels of war should be placed in ordinary!! as it was deemed unwise to jeopard our few frigates and sloops of war in a contest with the gigantic navy of our enemy. Captain Bainbridge consulted Captain Charles Stewart, who was also then in Washington, on the propriety of remonstrating against this measure. They accordingly drew up a letter to the secretary of the navy, which both signed, stating,

in forcible language, that such a course would have a most chilling and unhappy effect on the spirit of our officers. The effect on the people of the United States would be an unwillingness hereafter to support the expense of a navy which had been thus pronounced useless during a period of national peril. They further stated, that our vessels, by sailing singly, might materially injure the commerce of the enemy, and that, in any conflict with an equal force, they were very sure the result would redound to the honour of our navy. If we were even to *lose* some of our vessels of war, it would be better to do so than that they should be ingloriously laid up in harbour while other branches of the service were gallantly contending in the field. From the high discipline of our navy, and from the eagerness of our officers and crews for the contest, they felt perfectly assured that if our vessels did not prove invariably triumphant, they would certainly never disgrace themselves or the nation. This letter had its effect—our men of war were permitted to cruise, and the result has shown the truth of their predictions.

“Commodore Stewart happened to be in the navy department at Washington, when Midshipman Hamilton arrived as bearer of despatches from Commodore Decatur, commanding the frigate *United States*, with the flag of the *Macedonian*, which he had captured.

“After the usual congratulations occasioned by the news of the third victory, gained in a few months over the enemy, Mr. Hamilton, then secretary of the navy, remarked, ‘We are indebted to Bainbridge and yourself for these flags and victories. Had it not been for your strong remonstrance, not a vessel of war belonging to the government would have left its anchorage.’ pp. 134—136.

There is a story as old as the “*Facetiae*” of that Grecian Joe Miller, Hierocles, of the wisdom of a fond mother, who forbade her son to venture into water before he knew how to swim. The government of the United States was very near giving, upon a large scale, another instance of the same sort of sagacity, and was, it appears, only saved from playing the old woman by the spirited remonstrance referred to in the quotation. The untoward loss of that document, which was destroyed in the conflagration of the navy department in 1814, is much to be deplored for the lustre it would reflect on the memory of a deceased officer, and on the honour of the survivor. Each of them, and in the same honoured ship, most gloriously redeemed the pledge which was implied, if not expressed, in their remonstrance. It was Commodore Stewart’s peculiar fortune, by the engagement between the *Constitution* and the *Cyane* and *Levant*, which resulted in the capture of two British sloops of war, to elevate the reputation of the service not only for courage, but for nautical talent and ability, and, at the same time, to establish an important principle in naval tactics. The capture of the *Java* by the *Constitution* gave to Commodore Bainbridge the renown of one of the leading victories of the war. Our space does not allow us to dwell upon the details of it, and we can only remark that the battle was not better fought than the victory was nobly used. It was a conflict which served to show that, contrary to the opinion of a significant

old writer,<sup>1</sup> a sea-victory may have as much honour as one achieved by land, and that the laurel got at sea has as lively a verdure as that which is gained on shore.

It is in excellent taste that Dr. Harris has given in the memoir great prominence to the personal intercourse between Commodore Bainbridge and those whom the fortune of war placed in his power. The description of it is an admirable relief to the narrative of hostilities, and especially at the present day, when the animosities of the war have given place to the kindly and true feeling which is mutually cultivated by the two countries, is it pleasing to pass from estimates of killed and wounded to interchanges of the humanities of life. The strong personal esteem and even affection entertained for Commodore Bainbridge by his prisoners of war did great honour to his character.

During the latter part of the war Commodore Bainbridge was in command of the navy yard at Charlestown, Massachusetts, when it was supposed that a strong land and naval force was preparing at Halifax and Bermuda for the destruction of the principal sea-ports in New England. In assuming the defence of the naval station of Boston, his best abilities were put in requisition, and his judgment and decision severely tested by the unfortunate want of harmony between the general and state governments. Immediately responsible for the defence of the station and the national property committed to him, he was solicitous to effect such a co-operation with the state forces as to ensure the safety of the neighbouring towns and harbour.

<sup>1</sup> "Surely, generally sea-fights are more bloody than those on the land, especially since gunnes came up, whose shot betwixt wind and water (like those wounds so often mentioned in the Scripture under the fifth rib) is commonly observed mortall. Yea, farre harder is it for a ship, when arrested and ingaged in a battel, to cleare itself, than for souldiers by land to save themselves by flight. Here neither his own two nor his horses fourre legges can bestead any; but like accidents they must perish with their subjects, and sink with their ship."

"And then why is a sea victorie less honour, being more dangerous than one atchieved by land? Is it because the sea-service is not so generall, nor so full of varieties, and the mysteries thereof sooner learned? or because in sea-fights fortune may seem to be a deeper sharer and valour not so much interested? Whatsoever it is, the laurell purchased on land hath a more lively verdure than that which is got at sea."—*Fuller's "Holy Warre."*

Had old Fuller forgotten how the early British naval service savoured of piracy in the nostrils of some of Queen Elizabeth's proud courtiers? Is not the explanation simply this, that the disposition to disparage the naval character and achievements was a remnant of chivalry, which had recognised no other test of the goodness of a cause, or the stoutness of a heart, than the single combat—hand to hand fighting—accompanied with all that pomp and ceremony, which could have been attempted at best but awkwardly upon the high seas?

A reluctance on the part of the state authorities to accede to the only measures which a sense of duty allowed Commodore Bainbridge to recommend or to sanction, threatened, after several unsuccessful conferences, a permanent division in their plans. A public call was at length made on the citizens of Boston to assemble for the purpose of adopting such measures as the crisis demanded. Commodore Bainbridge was induced, by the friendship subsisting between them, to address a letter to the honourable Harrison Gray Otis, explanatory of the preparatory measures of defence which he deemed necessary, and soliciting him to advocate their adoption at the public meeting. The appeal to the patriotism of that distinguished citizen was not in vain, and the consequent adoption of the plans of defence may be considered as having led to the abandonment of the designs of the enemy.

Commodore Bainbridge continued in active service, with the exception of some few intervals, until ill health compelled him, a short time previously to his death, to resign his command. His usefulness in time of peace was manifested by the suggestion of various important naval improvements, and his unceasing activity in the promotion of the discipline of the service. At a late period of Commodore Bainbridge's career, we encounter a circumstance, which, in closing this notice of Dr. Harris's interesting volume, we would gladly pass over as painful, because discreditable to the government. We refer to a controversy with the secretary of the navy in 1831. A claim for the usual compensation for extra services having been presented by Commodore Bainbridge, was referred to the fourth auditor, by whom it was rejected. Justly indignant at the refusal of a claim which had been allowed under every administration for nearly forty years, Commodore Bainbridge gave expression to that feeling in a letter addressed to the secretary of the navy, which could not however be construed into disrespect towards any one but the fourth auditor in question, Mr. Kendall. In a few days he was informed by the head of the department that he was superseded in his command of the Philadelphia station, without any statement of the reasons for the removal. Such an affair, unimportant as it is in many respects, may serve to show an ebb in the tide of official feeling. That the head of one of the executive departments should deem it better to sacrifice a valuable and distinguished officer for the purpose of fostering the growing power of one of his own subordinates, was one of the circumstances which indicated that the government of the country had passed into different hands from those which had directed it for a series of years. Without any acquaintance with the technical principles of the auditor's decision, we cannot avoid regarding it as a stroke of that mis-

rable policy which would consider a few dollars well saved by the abatement of an equitable and long-sanctioned usage, and at the expense of the feelings of an honoured veteran. We do not pretend to disguise our suspicions of that system of political tactics which ignorantly mistakes or wilfully represents the devices of a paltry and ill-judged parsimony for a plan of praiseworthy and honourable economy. After all it will be the office of some future impartial historian to scrutinize not only the leading principles of policy, but the minute practice of every administration, and we do not aspire to anticipate the judgment. It may be found that there is a mock righteousness which strains at gnats and swallows camels. It may be found that petty savings are sometimes proclaimed from the housetop, while the treasure is stolen out from the vault. It may be found that vain babblings and boastings of economy are the artifices to withdraw attention from wholesale extravagance, and profligate and visionary schemes of finance. It may be found that, at some period of our national existence, the people have entrusted their interests to guardians whom the historian will not be able better to describe than in the phrase of the old adage, that they were "penny wise and pound foolish."

The extracts which we have had occasion to make from this volume may serve as favourable specimens of Dr. Harris's style as a biographer. His chief aim, as stated in the preface, was "to draw a plain and faithful narrative of the prominent events of the life of Commodore Bainbridge." The work is composed in an unassuming style, which is in perfect accordance with the author's intention, and has also the merit of leaving upon the mind of the reader a very distinct impression of the character of the subject of the Memoir. The volume closes with the following portraiture, which bears all the marks of exact fidelity, and, while occasionally manifesting some symptoms of professional trains of thought, is indicative of the biographer's long familiarity with his topic, and his ability to do it justice:—

"Commodore Bainbridge was about six feet in stature, and had a finely modelled and masculine frame, which enabled him to endure almost any degree of fatigue. His complexion was rather fair—his beard dark and strong—his eyes black, animated, and expressive. His deportment was commanding—his dress always neat and genteel, and though his temperament was ardent and sometimes impetuous he could qualify it with the greatest courtesy and with the most attractive amenity.

"The daring and commanding spirit, which was equal to every emergency, enabled him to meet any movement of difficulty with more than ordinary confidence. He was courageous, but not rash, and had the power to inspire every one around him with the same feeling. He had, besides, a degree of energy and moral elevation about him, which caused him to seek rather than to avoid responsibility. When roused he was somewhat fierce and vehement; but, like a summer cloud, the excitement would soon pass away, and all would be calmness and mildness.

"Among young officers, Commodore Bainbridge was considered a model, or the beau ideal of an accomplished commander. As a disciplinarian he was rigid; in the early part of his career, perhaps a little too much so. The error was not an uncommon one among young commanders, and arose from over zeal, which, however, is almost invariably corrected by reflection and the advance of years. In a conversation with him regarding the system of terror which once prevailed in the public ships, both of the United States and Great Britain, he remarked, that it was the fault of youthful ardour, and rejoiced that he had lived to alter and to assist in changing the former practice. He added, on the same occasion, that it was perfectly idle to hope to maintain proper discipline on board a *man of war* without occasional flogging; but at the same time he knew from experience that its frequency could and had been greatly diminished. In many cases, no doubt, poor Jack will derive more advantage from an address to his reason than to his back.

"He was exceedingly careful of the health of his crew—and would cheerfully and promptly adopt any sound suggestion from the medical officer of the ship, that would contribute to this end. He was always particularly anxious to protect his men from unnecessary labour, and those harassing duties which always create dissatisfaction, without accomplishing an equivalent good.

"The writer has heard him remark, that in fleets men are worried and exhausted by a spirit of rivalry which is encouraged among the crews of the different ships. He has seen men so exhausted and heated by a violent effort at the capstan in weighing anchor, that in a cold climate it has proved the exciting cause of catarrh, and in a warm one of fever. He was, therefore, in the practice of directing his officers to allow the crew to work in moderation, unless imperious circumstances demanded an opposite course.

"He was so remarkable for his industry that he never seemed disposed to excuse idleness in others. His mornings were usually occupied in his cabin in reading or writing, except when called to the deck on duty, or for exercise.

"He was always hospitable, and did the duties of the table with an unaffected grace; several of his young officers, according to the good old sociable custom, dined with him almost every day.

"He conciliated the esteem of almost every one with whom he associated, and seldom, if ever, lost it. He may have had enemies, as few men of decided characters are without them, yet certainly no one had more or warmer friends.

"Commodore Bainbridge thought soundly and rapidly on most subjects, but often experienced some difficulty in expressing himself, particularly when speaking in that tone of vehemence in which he sometimes indulged. He would occasionally lose his equanimity of temper, nor is this to be wondered at, when we consider the countless annoyances to which a commander at sea is exposed.

'Who can be wise, amazed, temperate and furious,  
Loyal and neutral, in a moment?'

"He never, however, lost sight of the perfect gentleman; if he deemed it necessary to reprove an officer, however strong the provocation, he would relieve him from duty, invite him into his cabin, and say to him privately whatever he deemed the nature of the offence demanded.

"Commodore Bainbridge did not make a public profession of religion, but he always entertained a profound veneration for it, and expressed a deep disgust towards those who treated this sacred subject slightly.

"His excellent widow has informed the writer that she never knew him to retire to rest, without first offering up a fervent prayer to his God. During his last illness he frequently called on his nephew, the Rev. John M'Lean, to pray for and with him.

"For a few years before his death, his sufferings became so severe that he was obliged to take opium, ether, and other antispasmodics, to such an extent as to seriously affect his nervous system. So great was the alteration in the mind and character of this long admired officer, that his friends observed the change with regret and disquietude. The dashing, warm-hearted, generous, chivalric commander of former times, became garrulous, irritable, and in a great degree withdrew from the society of which he had been long the life and ornament.

"The firmest minds and sweetest dispositions, are not exempt from this fate, when the nervous system becomes the seat of disease. Bolingbroke correctly remarked, that 'the greatest hero is nothing when under a certain state of the nerves; his mind becomes like a fine ring of bells, jangled and out of tune.'" pp. 245—48.

In concluding this article, we should not omit noticing the brief appendix which Dr. Harris has annexed to the Memoir for the purpose of placing in a true light an interesting point of civil as well as naval history. In Professor Tucker's Life of Jefferson the question has been started relative to the opinions of the first three presidents on the policy of providing and sustaining a navy. After referring to Mr. Jefferson's opinions, which upon this as upon many other topics fluctuated at different periods of his life, his biographer has ventured to advance the singular assumption that President Washington was hostile to the establishment of a navy, "his cautious character preventing him from being a zealous advocate of it." There is abundant evidence to the contrary in well-known state papers, and we are glad that, the Memoir of Bainbridge following so soon after Professor Tucker's Life of Jefferson, Dr. Harris has availed himself of the opportunity of giving a prompt and satisfactory correction of the error, and of showing that President Washington was not only a decided but a *consistent* advocate of the navy.

---

ART. VIII.—*Incidents of Travel in Egypt, Arabia Petræa, and the Holy Land.* By an American. With a map and engravings. 2 vols. New York : 1837.

This delightful book came too late to hand to enable us to devote to it so elaborate an examination as its merits demand. We have merely time and space for an abstract of its contents, most of which we shall present in the words of the author. It is especially pleasing to us, (though no one could rise from its perusal without great satisfaction,) as it is the work of an American. This circumstance gives a tinge to all his thoughts and views, which is entirely in harmony with one's prepossessions and feelings. American remarks upon the customs and manners of either Asia or Africa, are generally more agreeable than when elicited by kindred European subjects. In the latter case, there is apt to be too much of politics intermingled—and opposition to the institutions and ways of Europe is prone to degenerate into a sweeping radicalism which is any thing but pleasing. The two larger continents are more likely to be visited for what they have been than for what they are—we regard them as the cradle of the human race, and of arts and science, and the occupants of their soil as mere tenants or guardians of the precious relics which old Time has handed down to us. In gazing upon their venerable ruins, the actual inhabitants of the country are overlooked ; or, if regarded, the contrast is so striking, the diversity so entire, that, though *in* the land, they may well be considered as not *of* the land ; and weigh scarcely at all in the estimate we form of the empire we are surveying. Probably they serve to make more interesting, from their very strangeness, the remains of by-gone ages.

Egypt and Palestine have of late years been rendered very familiar by the works of eminent tourists. The pyramids, the wonders of Thebes, and the deeply interesting localities of the Holy Land, have been laid open to us with every desirable minuteness. Arabia Petræa, however, particularly the famous land of Edom, has never been so amply and entirely, and in so graphic and homely a manner, developed as in these sketches of one of our own countrymen. Messrs. Legh and Banks, and Captains Irby and Mangles, subsequently to the distinguished Burckhardt, have introduced us to many of the wonders of this doomed region—and the late magnificent work of MM. Laborde and Linant has contributed more than any other production to their full exposition. The travels of an American, however, penetrated more thoroughly into the hidden and mysterious confines of Idumea than even those of these last named illustrious tourists—and we confess that we prefer to have the tale



from one of ourselves—developing, as it does, the tastes and ideas which belong to ourselves, and affixing to circumstances and objects the same estimate which we should doubtless have done, if there. There is a freshness about the observations of our author, and enough of simplicity and of enthusiasm, too, to make them very acceptable. He travelled with feelings alive to all the impressions derivable from fine scenery, and the deep emotion consequent upon the presence of the remains of the most remote antiquity. He is nothing of the pedant, and antiquity, therefore, does not prove tiresome in his hands—he is a believer, too, in revelation, and, therefore, the great charm which invests those countries loses none of its interest in his examination of them. They stand forth on his pages, as they are in fact, eternal monuments of the truth and constancy of God.

Over the spots made sacred by the wanderings and doings of God's chosen people, and still more hallowed by the immediate presence of the Deity, Mr. Stevens travelled with his Bible in his hand. It was his best guide-book; for while it led him from place to place, it served also to set before him, in all their awful and fearful reality, the fulfilment of the dread prophecies delivered in the olden time by the holy servants of Jehovah. Not a rock, nor a stream, nor a town, which did not bear its testimony, mute indeed, though more convincing than any eloquence, to the truth of their predictions. He journeyed amid the tombs of the past; but they were living testimonials to the dread certainty of God's wrathful warnings.

We shall endeavour to impart to our readers some of the pleasure which we have ourselves enjoyed in perusing these volumes, and, in doing so, will follow our author through the course of his journey. The most striking passages we shall cull as we go along.

In the month of December, 1835, Mr. Stevens arrived at Alexandria, and after a short stay departed for Cairo. His voyage so far up the "famous river" is pleasantly told, and his arrival is thus stated:

"The next morning at seven o'clock we were alongside the island of Rhoda, as the Arab boatmen called it, where the daughter of Pharaoh came down to bathe and found the little Moses. We crossed over in a small boat to Boulac, the harbour of Cairo, breakfasted with Mr. J—, the brother-in-law of my friend, an engineer in the pacha's service, whose interesting wife is the only English lady there, and mounting a donkey, in half an hour I was within the walls of Grand Cairo. The traveller who goes there with the reminiscences of Arabian tales hanging about him, will no where see the Cairo of the califs; but before arriving there he will have seen a curious and striking spectacle. He will have seen, streaming from the gate among loaded camels and dromedaries, the dashing Turk with his glittering sabre, the wily Greek, the grave Armenian, and the despised Jew, with their long silk robes, their turbans,

their solemn beards, and various and striking costumes; he will have seen the harem of more than one rich Turk, eight or ten women on horseback, completely enveloped in large black silk wrappers, perfectly hiding face and person, and preceded by that abomination of the East, a black eunuch; the miserable santon, the Arab saint, with a few scanty rags on his breast and shoulders, the rest of his body perfectly naked; the swarthy Bedouin of the desert, the haughty janizary, with a cocked gun in his hand, dashing furiously through the crowd, and perhaps bearing some bloody mandate of his royal master; and perhaps he will have seen and blushed for his own image, in the person of some beggarly Italian refugee. Entering the gate, guarded by Arab soldiers in a bastard European uniform, he will cross a large square filled with officers and soldiers, surrounded by what are called palaces, but seeing nothing that can interest him, save the house in which the gallant Kleber, the hero of many a bloody field, died ingloriously by the hands of an assassin. Crossing this square, he will plunge into the narrow streets of Cairo. Winding his doubtful and perilous way among tottering and ruined houses, jostled by camels, dromedaries, horses, and donkeys, perhaps he will draw up against a wall, and, thinking of plague, hold his breath, and screw himself into nothing, while he allows a corpse to pass, followed by a long train of howling women, dressed in black with masks over their faces; and entering the large wooden gate which shuts in the Frank quarter, for protection against any sudden burst of popular fury, and seating himself in a miserable Italian locanda, he will ask himself, Where is the 'Cairo of the califs, the superb town, the holy city, the delight of the imagination, greatest among the great, whose splendour and opulence made the prophet smile?'"

He of course paid a visit to the famous pacha, Mohammed Aly, and as but few Americans have ever had the honour of a friendly chat with that notorious personage, we shall extract what our countryman says of his conference.

"While standing upon the balcony, a janizary came to tell us that the pacha would receive us, or, in other words, that we must come to the pacha. The audience-chamber was a very large room, with a high ceiling—perhaps eighty feet long and thirty high—with arabesque paintings on the wall, and a divan all around. The pacha was sitting near one corner at the extreme end, and had a long and full view of every one who approached him. I too had the same advantage, and in walking up I remarked him as a man about sixty-five, with a long and very white beard, strong features, of a somewhat vulgar cast, a short nose, red face, and rough skin, with an uncommonly fine dark eye, expressing a world of determination and energy. He wore a large turban and a long silk robe, and was smoking a long pipe with an amber mouth-piece. Altogether, he looked the Turk much better than his nominal master, the sultan.

"His dragoman, Nubar Bey, was there, and presented me. The pacha took his pipe from his mouth, motioned me to take a seat at his right hand on the divan, and with a courteous manner said I was welcome to Egypt. I told him he would soon have to welcome half the world there; he asked me why; and without meaning to flatter the old Turk, I answered that every body had a great curiosity to visit that interesting country; that heretofore it had been very difficult to get there, and dangerous to travel in when there; but now the facilities of access were greatly increased, and travelling in Egypt had become so safe

under his government, that strangers would soon come with as much confidence as they feel while travelling in Europe; and I had no doubt there would be many Americans among them. He took his pipe from his mouth and bowed. I sipped my coffee with great complacency, perfectly satisfied with the manner in which, for the first time, I had played the courtier to royalty. Knowing his passion for new things, I went on, and told him that he ought to continue his good works, and introduce on the Nile a steamboat from Alexandria to Cairo. He took the pipe from his mouth again, and in the tone of 'Let there be light, and there was light,' said he had ordered a couple. I knew he was fibbing, and I afterward heard from those through whom he transacted all his business in Europe, that he had never given any such order. Considering that a steamboat was an appropriate weapon in the hands of an American, I followed up my blow by telling him that I had just seen mentioned in a European paper, a project to run steamboats from New York to Liverpool in twelve or fourteen days. He asked me the distance; I told him, and he said nothing and smoked on. He knew America, and particularly from a circumstance which, I afterward found, had done wonders in giving her a name and character in the East, the visit of Commodore Patterson in the ship *Delaware*. So far I had taken decidedly the lead in the conversation; but the constant repetition of 'Son Altesse,' by the dragoman, began to remind me that I was in the presence of royalty, and that it was my duty to speak only when I was spoken to. I waited to give him a chance, and the first question he asked me was, as to the rate of speed of the steamboats on our rivers. Remembering an old, crazy, five or six mile an hour boat that I had seen in Alexandria, I was afraid to tell him the whole truth, lest he should not believe me, and did not venture to go higher than fifteen miles an hour; and even then he looked as Ilderim may be supposed to have looked when the Knight of the Leopard told him of having crossed over a lake like the Dead Sea without wetting his horse's hoofs. I have no doubt, if he ever thought of me afterward, it was as the lying American; and, just at this moment, the party of English coming in, I rose and took my leave. Gibbon says 'When Persia was governed by the descendants of Sefis, a race of princes whose wanton cruelty often stained their divan, their table, and their bed, with the blood of their favourites, there is a saying recorded of a young nobleman, that he never departed from the sultan's presence without satisfying himself whether his head was still on his shoulders.' It was in somewhat of the same spirit that, in passing, one of the Englishmen whispered to me, 'Are you sure of your legs?'

"During my interview with the pacha, although my conversation and attention were directed towards him, I could not help remarking particularly his dragoman, Nubar Bey. He was an Armenian, perhaps a year or two over thirty, with an olive complexion, and a countenance like marble. He stood up before us, about half way between the pacha and me, his calm eye finely contrasted with the roving and unsettled glances of the pacha, a perfect picture of indifference, standing like a mere machine to translate words, without seeming to comprehend or take the least interest in their import; and though I had been particularly recommended to him, he did not give me a single glance to intimate that he had ever seen me before, or cared ever to see me again. He was an ambitious man, and was evidently acting, and acted well, a part suited to an Eastern court; the part necessary in his responsible and dangerous position, as the depositary of important secrets of government. He was in high favour with the pacha, and when I left was in a

fair way of attaining any honour at which his ambitious spirit might aim. On my return to Alexandria, four months after, he was dead."—pp. 38—42.

On the first of January, 1836, he left Cairo, and commenced his course up the Nile in a boat he had hired for the occasion. The travellers had a strong head wind to contend against, and made but little progress. After much labour they succeeded, by the eighth of the month, in reaching Minyeh. It was the season of Ramadan, when, as our readers know, for thirty days, from the rising to the setting of the sun, the followers of the prophet are forbidden to eat, drink, smoke, or take a bath. This last luxury our countryman was determined to enjoy.

"My first enquiry was for a bath. It would not be heated or lighted up till eight o'clock; at eight o'clock I went, and was surprised to find it so large and comfortable. I was not long surprised, however, for I found that no sooner was the sacred prohibition removed, than the Turks and Arabs began to pour in in throngs; they came without any respect of persons—the haughty Turk with his pipe-bearing slave, and the poor Arab boatman; in short, every one who could raise a few paras.

"It was certainly not a very select company, nor over clean, and probably very few Europeans would have stood the thing as I did. My boatmen were all there. They were my servants, said the rais, and were bound to follow me every where. As I was a Frank, and, as such, expected to pay ten times as much as any one else, I had the best place in the bath, at the head of the great reservoir of hot water. My white skin made me a marked object among the swarthy figures lying around me; and half a dozen of the operatives, lank, bony fellows, and perfectly naked, came up and claimed me. They settled it among themselves, however, and gave the preference to a dried-up old man, more than sixty, a perfect living skeleton, who had been more than forty years a scrubber in the bath. He took me through the first process of rubbing with the glove and brush; and having thrown over me a copious ablution of warm water, left me to recover at leisure. I lay on the marble that formed the border of the reservoir, only two or three inches above the surface of the water, into which I put my hand and found it excessively hot; but the old man, satisfied with his exertion in rubbing me, sat on the edge of the reservoir, with his feet and legs hanging in the water, with every appearance of satisfaction. Presently he slid off into the water, and sinking up to his chin, remained so a moment, drew a long breath, and seemed to look around him with a feeling of comfort. I had hardly raised myself on my elbow to look at this phenomenon, before a fine brawny fellow, who had been lying for some time torpid by my side, rose slowly, slid off like a turtle, and continued sinking until he too had immersed himself up to his chin. I expressed to him my astonishment at his ability to endure such heat, but he told me that he was a boatman, had been ten days coming up from Cairo, and was almost frozen, and his only regret was that the water was not much hotter. He had hardly answered me before another and another followed, till all the dark naked figures around me had vanished. By the fitful glimmering of the little lamps, all that I could see was a parcel of shaved heads on the surface of the water, at rest, or turning slowly and quietly as on pivots. Most of them seemed to be enjoying it with an air of quiet dreamy satisfaction; but the man with whom I had spoken first,

seemed to be carried beyond the bounds of Mussulman gravity. It operated upon him like a good dinner; it made him loquacious, and he urged me to come in, nay, he even became frolicsome; and, making a heavy surge, threw a large body of the water over the marble on which I was lying. I almost screamed, and started up as if melted lead had been poured upon me; even while standing up, it seemed to blister the soles of my feet, and I was obliged to keep up a dancing movement, changing as fast as I could, to the astonishment of the dozing bathers, and the utter consternation of my would-be friend. Roused too much to relapse into the quiet luxury of perspiration, I went into another apartment, of a cooler temperature, where, after remaining in a bath of moderately warm water, I was wrapped up in hot cloth and towels, and conducted into the great chamber. Here I selected a couch, and, throwing myself upon it, gave myself up to the operators, who now took charge of me, and well did they sustain the high reputation of a Turkish bath: my arms were gently laid upon my breast, where the knee of a powerful man pressed upon them; my joints were cracked and pulled—back, arms, the palms of the hands, the soles of the feet, all visited in succession. I had been shampooed at Smyrna, Constantinople, and Cairo; but who would have thought of being carried to the seventh heaven at the little town of Minyeh? The men who had me in hand were perfect amateurs, enthusiasts, worthy of rubbing the hide of the sultan himself; and the pipe and coffee that followed were worthy too of that same mighty seigneur. The large room was dimly lighted, and turn which way I would, there was a naked body, apparently without a soul, lying torpid, and turned and tumbled at will by a couple of workmen. I had had some fears of the plague; and Paul, though he felt his fears gradually dispelled by the soothing process which he underwent also, to the last continued to keep particularly clear of touching any of them; but I left the bath a different man; all my moral as well as physical strength was roused. I no longer drooped or looked back; and, though the wind was still blowing a hurricane in my teeth, I was bent upon Thebes and the Cataracts." Vol. I. pp. 74—77.

He proceeded up the Nile—in due course, visited Thebes, the Quarries, the Cataracts—which, by the by, he found much less remarkable than they are generally represented to be—and the splendid temple of Philæ. At Thebes, he had made acquaintance with two gentlemen, travellers like himself; and meeting them again farther up the river, and having previously received some civilities at their hands, he invited them to dine with him on board of his boat, inconsiderately it appeared, as his stores were found to be too scanty for such an invitation. How he got out of the scrape we will let himself narrate—merely premising that he had a servant, Paul, an invaluable fellow, who was his constant and faithful companion in all his labours.

"After giving the invitation, I held a council with Paul, who told me that the thing was impossible, and with a prudence worthy of Caleb Balderstone, expressed his wonder that I had not worked an invitation out of them. I told him, however, that the thing was settled, and dine with me they must. My housekeeping had never been very extravagant, and macaroni, rice, and fowl had been my standing dishes. Paul

was pertinacious in raising objections, but I told him peremptorily there was no escape; that he must buy a cow or camel, if necessary, and left him scratching his head, and pondering over the task before him.

"In the hurried business of the day, I had entirely forgotten Paul and his perplexities. Once only, I remember, with a commendable prudence, I tried to get my companions to expend some of their force upon dried dates and Nubian bread, which they as maliciously declined, that they might do justice to me. Returning now, at the end of nine hours' hard work, crossing rivers, and rambling among ruins, the sharp exercise, and the grating of my teeth at the stubborn movements of my donkey, gave me an extraordinary voracity, and dinner, the all-important, never-to-be-forgotten business of the day, the delight alike of the ploughman and philosopher, dinner, with its uncertain goodness, began to press upon the most tender sensibilities of my nature. My companions felt the vibrations of the same chord, and, with an unnecessary degree of circumstance, talked of the effect of air and exercise in sharpening the appetite, and the glorious satisfaction after a day's work of sitting down to a good dinner. I had perfect confidence in Paul's zeal and ability, but I began to have some misgivings. I felt a hungry devil within me, that roared as if he would never be satisfied. I looked at my companions, and heard them talk, and as I followed their humour with an hysteric laugh, I thought the genius of famine was at my heels, in the shape of two hungry Englishmen. I trembled for Paul, but the first glimpse I caught of him reassured me. He sat with his arms folded, on the deck of the boat, coolly, though with an air of conscious importance, looking out for us. Slowly and with dignity he came to assist us from our accursed asses; neither a smile nor frown was on his face, but there reigned an expression that you could not mistake. Reader, you have seen the countenance of a good man lighted up with the consciousness of having done a good action; even so was Paul's. I could read in his face a consciousness of having acted well his part. One might almost have dined on it. It said, as plainly as face could speak, one, two, three, four, five courses, and a dessert, or, as they say at the two-franc restaurants in Paris, *Quatre plats, une demi-bouteille de vin, et pain à discrétion.*

"In fact, the worthy butler of Ravenswood could not have stood in the hall of his master in the days of its glory, before thunder broke china and soured buttermilk, with more sober and conscious dignity than did Paul stand on the deck of my boat to receive us. A load was removed from my heart. I knew that my credit was saved, and I led the way with a proud step to my little cabin. Still I asked no questions, and made no apologies. I simply told my companions we were in Paul's hands, and he would do with us as seemed to him good. Another board had been added to my table, and my towel had been washed and dried during the day, and now lay, clean and of a rather reddish white, doing the duty of a table-cloth. I noticed two tumblers, knives and forks, and plates, which were strangers to me, but I said nothing; we seated ourselves and waited, nor did we wait long; soon we saw Paul coming towards us, staggering under the weight of his burden, the savoury odour of which preceded him. He entered and laid before us an Irish stew. Reader, did you ever eat an Irish stew? Gracious Heaven! I shall never forget that paragon of dishes; how often in the desert, among the mountains of Sinai, in the Holy Land, rambling along the valley of Jehoshaphat, or on the shores of the Dead Sea, how often has that Irish stew risen before me to tease and tantalize me, and haunt me with the memory of departed joys! The potato is a vegetable that does not grow in Egypt. I had not tasted one for more than a month, and was almost startled out of

my propriety at seeing them; but I held my peace, and was as solemn and dignified as Paul himself. Without much ceremony we threw ourselves with one accord upon the stew. I think I only do our party justice, when I say that few of those famished gentlemen from whose emerald isle it takes its name, could have shown more affection for the national dish. For my own part, as I did not know what was coming next, if any thing, I felt loth to part with it. My companions were knowing ones, and seemed to be of the same way of thinking, and, without any consultation, all appeared to be approaching the same end, to wit, the end of the stew. With the empty dish before him, demonstrative to Paul that so far we were perfectly satisfied with what he had done, that worthy purveyor came forward with an increase of dignity to change our plates. I now saw that something more was coming. I had suspected from the beginning that Paul was in the mutton line, and involuntarily murmured, 'this day a sheep has died;' and presently on came knowing cut of the murdered innocent, in cutlets accompanied by fried potatoes. Then came boiled mutton and boiled potatoes, and then roast mutton and roast potatoes, and then came a macaroni paté. I thought this was going to damn the whole; until this, I had considered the dinner as something extraordinary and *recherché*. But the macaroni, the thing of at least six days in the week, utterly disconcerted me. I tried to give Paul a wink to keep it back, but on he came; if he had followed with a chicken, I verily believe I should have thrown it at his head. But my friends were unflinching and uncompromising. They were determined to stand by Paul to the last, and we laid in the macaroni paté with as much vigour as if we had not already eaten a sheep. Paul wound us up and packed us down with pancakes. I never knew a man that did not like pancakes, or who could not eat them even at the tail of a mighty dinner. And now, feeling that happy sensation of fulness which puts a man above kings, princes, or pachas, we lighted our long pipes and smoked. Our stomachs were full and our hearts were open. Talk of mutual sympathy, of congenial spirits, of similarity of tastes, and all that. 'Tis the dinner which unlocks the heart; you feel yourself warming towards the man that has dined with you. The parts of the several animals which you have forcibly separated seem drawing together, and carrying you with them. It was in this happy spirit that we lay, like warriors resting on our arms, and talked over the particulars of our battle.

"And now, all dignity put aside, and all restraint removed, and thinking my friends might have recognised acquaintances among the things at the table which were strangers to me, and thinking, too, that I stood on a pinnacle, that come what might I could not fall, I led the way in speculating upon the manner in which Paul had served us. The ice once broken, my friends solved many of the mysteries, by claiming this, that, and the other, as part of their furniture and stores. In fact, they were going on most unscrupulously, making it somewhat doubtful whether I had furnished any thing for my own dinner, and I called in Paul. But that functionary had no desire to be questioned; he hemmed, and hawed, and dodged about; but I told him to make a clean heart of it, and then it came out, but it was like drawing teeth, that he had been on a regular foraging expedition among their stores. The potatoes with which he had made such a flourish, were part of a very small stock furnished them by a friend, as a luxury not to be had on the Nile; and instead of the acknowledgments which I expected to receive on account of my dinner, my friends congratulated me rather ironically upon possessing such a treasure of a steward. We sat together till a late hour; were grave, gay, laughing, and lachrymose, by turns; and when we

began to doze over our pipes, betook ourselves to slumber." Vol. I. pp. 134—140.

At the site of the ancient Memphis he remained a short time, in order to visit some of the pyramids in the neighbourhood. One was particularly worthy of notice—that in which the sacred bird, Ibis, was deposited when dead. He succeeded in finding it, and gives an interesting account of his visit.

He takes his leave of Egypt with this reflection upon one of the prophecies :

"It is now more than three thousand years since the curse went forth against the land of Egypt. The Assyrian, the Persian, the Greek, the Roman, the Arabian, the Georgian, the Circassian, and the Ottoman Turk, have successively trodden it down and trampled upon it; for thirty centuries the foot of a stranger has been upon the necks of her inhabitants; and in bidding farewell to this once favoured land, now lying in the most abject degradation and misery, groaning under the iron rod of a tyrant and a stranger, I cannot help recurring to the inspired words, the doom of prophecy: 'It shall be the basest of the kingdoms, neither shall it exalt itself any more among the nations; and there shall be no more a prince of the land of Egypt.'" Vol. I. p. 204.

Having determined then to journey towards the East, and to visit Mount Sinai, and Edom, and passing through that country to traverse, also, the Holy Land, he made an arrangement with an Arabian sheik to conduct him safely on his way. His party started at the same time with the great caravan of the Mussulmans which sets out yearly from Cairo upon a pilgrimage which every devout follower of the prophet must, at least once in his life, make to his tomb. This caravan consists of more than thirty thousand pilgrims gathered from the distant Caspian, the extreme end of Persia, and the confines of Africa, and assembling at Cairo as a central point, winds its dreary way through the sands of the Desert. Fifty days is the ordinary length of the journey. The departure of the caravan, our author says, was well worth seeing:—

"Accustomed as I was to associate the idea of order and decorum with the observance of all rites and duties of religion, I could not but feel surprised at the noise, tumult, and confusion, the strifes and battles of these pilgrim-travellers. If I had met them in the Desert after their line of march was formed, it would have been an imposing spectacle, and comparatively easy to describe; but here, as far as the eye could reach, they were scattered over the sandy plain, thirty thousand people, with probably twenty thousand camels and dromedaries, men, women, and children, beasts and baggage, all commingled in a confused mass that seemed hopelessly inextricable. Some had not yet struck their tents, some were making coffee, some smoking, some cooking, some eating, many shouting and cursing, others on their knees praying, and others, again, hurrying on to join the long moving stream that already extended several miles into the desert.

"It is a vulgar prejudice, the belief that women are not admitted into the heaven of Mahomed. It is true that the cunning prophet, in order



not to disturb the joyful serenity with which his followers look forward to their promised heaven, has not given to woman any fixed position there, and the pious Mussulman, although blessed with the lawful complement of four wives, is not bound to see among his seventy-two black-eyed houries the faces of his companions upon earth; but the women are not utterly cast out; they are deemed to have souls, and entitled to a heaven of their own; and it may be, too, that their visions of futurity are not less bright, for that there is a mystery to be unravelled beyond the grave, and they are not doomed to eternal companionship with their earthly lords. In the wildest, rudest scene where woman appears at all, there is a sweet and undefinable charm; and their appearance among the pilgrims, the care with which they shrouded themselves from every eye, their long thick veils, and their tents of four-post beds with curtains of red silk, fastened down all around, and secured on the high backs of camels, were the most striking objects in the caravan. Next to them in interest were the miserable figures of the marabouts, santons, or Arab saints, having only a scanty covering of rags over their shoulders, and the rest of their bodies completely naked, yet strutting about as if clothed in purple and fine linen; and setting off utterly destitute of every thing, for a journey of months across the Desert, safely trusting to that open-handed charity which forms so conspicuous an item in the list of Mussulman virtues. But the object of universal interest was the great box containing the presents and decorations for the tomb of the prophet. The camel which bears this sacred burden is adorned with banners and rich housings, is watched and tended with pious care, and when his journey is ended, no meaner load can touch his back; he has filled the measure of a camel's glory, and lives and dies respected by all good Mussulmans." Vol. I. pp. 14—16.

He again speaks of it after arriving at the Red Sea:—

"The scene itself did not sustain the high and holy character of a pilgrimage. As I said before, all were abominably filthy; some were sitting around a great dish of pilau, thrusting their hands in it up to the knuckles, squeezing the boiled rice, and throwing back their heads as they crammed the huge morsel down their throats; others packing up their merchandise, or carrying water-skins, or whetting their sabres; others wrangling for a few paras; and in one place was an Arab butcher, bare-legged and naked from the waist upward, with his hands, breast, and face smeared with blood, leaning over the body of a slaughtered camel, brandishing an axe, and chopping off huge pieces of meat for the surrounding pilgrims. A little off from the shore a large party were embarking on board a small boat, to go down to their vessel, which was lying at the mouth of the harbour; they were wading up to their middle, every one with something on his shoulders or above his head. Thirty or forty had already got on board, and as many more were trying to do the same; but the boat was already full. A loud wrangling commenced, succeeded by clinching, throttling, splashing in the water, and running to the shore. I saw bright swords gleaming in the air, heard the ominous click of a pistol, and in one moment more, blood would have been shed, but for a Turkish aga, who had been watching the scene from the governor's balcony, and now dashing in among them with a huge silver-headed mace, and laying about him right and left, brought the turbulent pilgrims to a condition more suited to their sacred character." Vol. I. pp. 238, 239.

Before starting from Cairo it was necessary to see the

nor to procure a letter to the Governor of Akaba, and his for that purpose subjected him to a sight of the horrible infliction of the bastinado. The description is painfully true:—

Accordingly sent Paul with my little caravan to wait for me at the of the califs, and, attended by the consul's janizary, rode up to tadel, and stopped at the door of the governor's palace. The may remember that on my first visit to his excellency I saw a whipped—this time I saw one bastinadoed. I had heard much of punishment existing, I believe, only in the East, but I had never it inflicted before, and hope I never shall see it again. As on the occasion, I found the little governor standing at one end of the hall of entrance, munching, and trying causes. A crowd was ed around, and before him was a poor Arab, pleading and being most piteously, while the big tears were rolling down his s; near him was a man whose resolute and somewhat angry sion marked him as the accuser, seeking vengeance rather than e. Suddenly the governor made a gentle movement with his all noise ceased; all stretched their necks and turned their eager owards him; the accused cut short his crying, and stood with his wide open, and his eyes fixed upon the governor. The latter a few words in a very low voice, to me of course unintelligible, ndeed, scarcely audible, but they seemed to fall upon the quick f the culprit like bolts of thunder; the agony of suspense was over, ithout a word or a look he laid himself down on his face at the f the governor. A space was immediately cleared; a man on ide took him by the hand, and stretching out his arms, kneeled and held them down, while another seated himself across his neck houlders. Thus nailed to the ground, the poor fellow, knowing here was no chance of escape, threw up his feet from the knee so as to present the sole in a horizontal position. Two men came rd with a pair of long stout bars of wood, attached together by a between which they placed the feet, drawing them together with rd so as to fix them in a horizontal position, and leave the whole rface exposed to the full force of the blow. In the mean time two ; Turks were standing ready, one at each side, armed with long much resembling our common cowskin, but longer and thicker, ade of the tough hide of the hippopotamus. While the occupation e judge was suspended by these preparations, the janizary had ted the consul's letter. My sensibilities are not particularly but they yielded in this instance. I had watched all the prelimi-arrangements, nerving himself for what was to come, but when I the scourge whizzing through the air, and, when the first blow pon the naked feet, saw the convulsive movements of the body, and the first loud, piercing shriek, I could stand it no longer; I broke gh the crowd, forgetting the governor and every thing else, except onizing sounds from which I was escaping; but the janizary fol-close at my heels, and, laying his hand upon my arm, hauled me o the governor. If I had consulted merely the impulse of feeling, ild have consigned him and the governor and the whole nation of to the lower regions; but it was all-important not to offend this sum-dispenser of justice, and I never made a greater sacrifice of feeling pendency, than when I re-entered his presence. The shrieks of unhappy criminal were ringing through the chamber, but the go-r received me with as calm a smile as if he had been sitting on

L. XXI.—NO. 42. 57

his own divan, listening only to the strains of some pleasant music, while I stood with my teeth clenched, and felt the hot breath of the victim, and heard the whizzing of the accursed whip, as it fell again and again upon his bleeding feet. I have heard men cry out in agony when the sea was raging, and the drowning man, rising for the last time upon the mountain waves, turned his imploring arms towards us, and with his dying breath called in vain for help; but I never heard such heart-rending sounds as those from the poor bastinadoed wretch before me. I thought the governor would never make an end of reading the letter, when the scribe handed it to him for his signature, although it contained but half a dozen lines; he fumbled in his pocket for his seal, and dipped it in the ink; the impression did not suit him, and he made another, and after a delay that seemed to me eternal, employed in folding it, handed it to me with a most gracious smile. I am sure I grinned horribly in return, and almost snatching the letter, just as the last blow fell, I turned to hasten from the scene. The poor scourged wretch was silent; and had found relief in happy insensibility; I cast one look upon the senseless body, and saw the feet laid open in gashes, and the blood streaming down the legs. At that moment the bars were taken away, and the mangled feet fell like lead upon the floor. I had to work my way through the crowd, and before I could escape I saw the poor fellow revive, and by the first natural impulse rise upon his feet, but fall again as if he had stepped upon red-hot irons. He crawled upon his hands and knees to the door of the hall, and here I rejoiced to see that, miserable and poor and degraded as he was, he yet had friends whose hearts yearned towards him; they took him in their arms and carried him away." Vol. I. pp. 219—22.

The point where the regular road to Mecca, which has been adopted for years by the pilgrims, reaches the Red Sea is, according to the best authority, the very spot where the children of Israel crossed, when pursued by Pharaoh.

The allusion to this topic by the author is very happy; but we have not space for its insertion.

Mount Sinai has been often described—and the account given by our author falls nothing short of any we have ever seen. He well remarks, that however the identity of other spots celebrated in holy writ may be disputed, of Sinai there can be no doubt. One look is sufficient to satisfy the skeptic.

His reception and treatment by the monks were grateful to him personally, and particularly so as their kindness was partly induced by the fact of his being an American.

On his passage through the Desert with his own caravan, after leaving the large body which pursued its course to Mecca, our traveller and his party, bending their way towards the mountains of Edom, came in sight of a woman whom, as the only agreeable looking person they had seen for some time, they followed with the intention of overtaking her. It brought them in contact with a specimen of the old patriarchal race which recalled the days of the father of the faithful:—

"The woman whom he had pursued belonged to the tent of a Bedouin not far from our road, but completely hidden from our view; and when

overtaken by Toualeb, she recognised in him a friend of her tribe, and in the same spirit, and almost in the same words which would have been used by her ancestors four thousand years ago, she asked us to her tent, and promised us a lamb or a kid for supper. Her husband was stretched on the ground in front of his tent, and welcomed us with an air and manner that belonged to the desert, but which a king on his throne could not have excelled. He was the imbodyed personification of all my conceptions of a patriarch. A large loose frock, a striped handkerchief on his head, bare legs, sandals on his feet, and a long white beard, formed the outward man. Almost immediately after we were seated, he took his shepherd's crook, and, assisted by his son, selected a lamb from the flock for the evening meal: and now I would fain prolong the illusion of this pastoral scene; to stop at the door of an Arab's tent, and partake with him of a lamb or kid prepared by his hospitable hands, all sitting together on the ground, and provided with no other implements than those which nature gave us, is a picture of primitive and captivating simplicity; but the details were such as to destroy for ever all its poetry, and take away all relish for patriarchal feasts. While we were taking coffee the lamb lay bleating in our ears, as if conscious of its coming fate, and this was not particularly gratifying. The coffee drunk and the pipe smoked, our host arose and laid his hand upon the victim; the long sword which he wore over his shoulder was quickly drawn; one man held the head and another the hind legs; and, with a rapidity almost inconceivable, it was killed and dressed, and its smoking entrails, yet curling with life, were broiling on the fire.

"I was the guest of the evening, and had no reason to complain of the civility of my entertainer; for, with the air of a well-bred host, and an epicure to boot, he drew from the burning coals one of the daintiest pieces, about a yard and a half in length, and rolling one end between the palms of his hands to a tapering point, broke off about a foot and handed it to me. Now I was by no means dainty. I could live upon the coarsest fare, and all the little luxuries of tables, knives and forks, were of very little moment in my estimation. I was prepared to go full length in this patriarchal feast. But my indifference was not proof against the convivial elegancies of my Bedouin companions; and as I saw yard after yard disappear, like long strings of macaroni, down their capacious throats, I was cured of all poetical associations and my appetite together.

"In the tent of the Arabian patriarch, woman, the pride, the ornament, and the charm of domestic life, is the mere household drudge. In vain may one listen for her light footsteps, or look to find her by the side of her natural lord, giving a richer charm to the hospitality he is extending to a stranger. It would repay one for much of the toil and monotony of a journey in the desert, if, when by chance he found himself at a Bedouin tent, he could be greeted by her sunny smile. Dark and swarthy as she is, and poor and ignorant, it would pay the traveller for many a weary hour, to receive his welcome from the lips of an Arabian girl. But this the customs of the tribes forbid. When the stranger approaches, the woman retires; and so completely is she accustomed to this seclusion, that, however closely he may watch, he can never catch her even peeping at him from behind a screen, or partition of the tent; curiosity, which in civilized life is so universally imputed to the daughters of Eve, seems entirely unknown to the sex in this wild region. Nor is this the worst of her lot. Even when alone the wife of the Bedouin is not regarded as his equal; the holy companionship of wedded life has between them no existence. Even when no guest is present, she never eats with him.

I have seen the father and sons sit down together, and when they had withdrawn from the tent, the mother and daughters came in to what was left. Away, then, with all dreams of superior happiness in this more primitive condition of society. Captivating as is the wild idea of roving abroad at will, unfettered by the restraints of law, or of conventional observances, the meanest tenant of a log hut in our western prairies has sources of happiness which the wandering Arab can never know. A spirit of perfect weariness and dissatisfaction with the world might drive a man to the desert, and after having fallen into the indolent and mere animal habits of savage life, he might find it difficult to return to the wholesome restraints and duties of society; but I am satisfied that it is sheer affectation or ignorance, in which a member of the civilized family sighs, or pretends to sigh, for the imagined delights of an untried freedom. For my own part, I had long been satisfied of this truth, and did not need the cumulative evidence of my visit to the Bedouin's tent. He would have had me sleep under its shelter; but I knew that in all the Bedouin tents there were multitudes of enemies to rest—creatures that murder sleep—and I preferred the solitude of my own.

"One word as to the hospitality of the Arabs. I had read beautiful descriptions of its manifestation, and in some way or other had gathered up the notion that the Bedouin would be offended by an offer to reward his hospitality with a price; but, feeling naturally anxious not to make a blunder on either side of a question so delicate, I applied to my guide Toualeb for information on the subject. His answer was brief and explicit. He said there was no obligation to give or pay, it being the custom of the Bedouin (among friendly tribes) to ask the wayfaring man into his tent, give him food and shelter, and send him on his way in the morning; that I could give or not, as I pleased; but that if I had not, the hospitable host would wish his lamb alive again; and from the exceeding satisfaction with which that estimable person received my parting gift, I am sure that in this instance, at least, I did better in taking Toualeb's knowledge of his people for my guide, than I should have done by acting upon what I had read in books. It may be that if I had gone among them poor and friendless, I should have been received in the same manner, and nothing would have been expected or received from me; but I am inclined to think, from what I saw afterwards, that in such case the lamb would have been spared for a longer term of existence, and the hospitality confined to a dip into the dish and a mat at the door of the tent." Vol II. pp. 16—21.

The entrance into the borders of Edom might well excite the interest of the traveller. A cursory examination of some of the prophecies would suggest a fear that the very attempt to pass through the country was braving the prohibition, and inviting the vengeance of the Deity. No such feeling indeed influenced our countryman, and an attentive consideration of the prophetic writings prompted no such strict construction. He therefore prepared to pass through the land:—

"I had now crossed the borders of Edom. Standing near the shore of the Elanitic branch of the Red Sea, the doomed and accursed land lay stretched out before me, the theatre of awful prophecies and their more awful fulfilment; given to Esau as being of the fatness of the earth, but now a barren waste, a picture of death, an eternal monument of the wrath of an offended God, and a fearful witness to the truth of the

words spoken by his prophets. 'For my sword shall be bathed in heaven: behold, it shall come down upon Idumea, and upon the people of my curse, to judgment.' 'From generation to generation it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever. But the cormorant and the bittern shall possess it; the owl also and the raven shall dwell in it; and he shall stretch out upon it the line of confusion, and the stones of emptiness. They shall call the nobles thereof to the kingdom, but none shall be there, and all her princes shall be nothing. And thorns shall come up in her palaces, nettles and brambles in the fortresses thereof: and it shall be a habitation of dragons, and a court for owls. The wild beasts of the desert shall also meet with the wild beasts of the island, and the satyr shall cry to his fellow; the screech-owl also shall rest there, and find for herself a place of rest. There shall the great owl make her nest, and lay, and hatch, and gather under her shadow: there shall the vultures also be gathered, every one with her mate. Seek ye out the book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it hath commanded, and his spirit it hath gathered them. And he hath cast the lot for them, and his hand hath divided it unto them by line: they shall possess it for ever, from generation to generation shall they dwell therein.' Isaiah xxxiv.

"I read in the sacred book prophecy upon prophecy and curse upon curse against the very land on which I stood. I was about to journey through the land, and to see with my own eyes whether the Almighty had stayed his uplifted arm, or whether his sword had indeed come down 'upon Idumea and the people of his curse to judgment.' I have before referred to Keith on the Prophecies, where, in illustrating the fulfilment of the prophecies against Idumea, 'none shall pass through it for ever and ever,' after referring to the singular fact that the great caravan routes existing in the days of David and Solomon, and under the Roman empire, are now completely broken up, and that the great hadji routes to Mecca from Damascus and Cairo, lie along the borders of Idumea, barely touching at and not passing through it, he proves by abundant references that to this day no traveller has ever passed through the land.

"The Bedouins who roam over the land of Idumea have been described by travellers as the worst of their race. 'The Arabs about Akaba,' says Pococke, 'are a very bad people and notorious robbers, and are at war with all others.' Mr. Joliffe alludes to it as one of the wildest and most dangerous divisions of Arabia; and Burkhardt says, 'that for the first time he had ever felt fear during his travels in the desert, and his route was the most dangerous he had ever travelled,' that he had 'nothing with him that could attract the notice or excite the cupidity of the Bedouins,' and was 'even stripped of some rags that covered his wounded ankles.' Messrs. Legh and Banks, and Captains Irby and Mangles, were told that the Arabs of Wady Moussa, the tribe which formed my escort, 'were a most savage and treacherous race, and that they would use their Frank's blood for a medicine;' and they learned on the spot that 'upwards of thirty pilgrims from Barbary had been murdered at Petra the preceding year, by the men of Wady Moussa;' and they speak of the opposition and obstruction from the Bedouins as resembling the case of the Israelites under Moses, when Edom refused to give them passage through his country. None of these had passed through it, and unless the two Englishmen and Italian, before referred to, succeeded in their attempt, when I pitched my tent on the borders of Edom no traveller had ever done so."

"Standing near the shore of this northern extremity of the Red Sea, I

saw before me an immense sandy valley, which, without the aid of geological science, to the eye of common observation and reason, had once been the bottom of a sea, or the bed of a river. This dreary valley, extending far beyond the reach of the eye, had been partly explored by Burkhardt; sufficiently to ascertain and mention it in the latest geography of the country, as the great valley of El Ghor, extending from the shores of the Elanitic gulf to the southern extremity of the Lake Asphaltites or the Dead Sea; and it was manifest by landmarks of nature's own providing, that over that sandy plain those seas had once mingled their waters, or, perhaps more probably, that before the cities of the plain had been consumed by brimstone and fire, and Sodom and Gomorrah covered by a pestilential lake, the Jordan had here rolled its waters. The valley varied from eight to twelve miles in breadth, and on each side were high, dark, and barren mountains, bounding it like a wall. On the left were the mountains of Judea, and on the right those of Seir—the portion given to Esau as an inheritance; and among them, buried from the eyes of strangers, the approach to it known only to the wandering Bedouins, was the ancient capital of his kingdom, the excavated city of Petra, the cursed and blighted Edom of the Edomites. The land of Idumea lay before me, in barrenness and desolation; no trees grew in the valley, and no verdure on the mountain-tops. All was bare, dreary, and desolate." Vol. II. 44—49.

Nothing but the small space left to us prevents our extracting the whole of the fourth chapter of the second volume. It is devoted to Petra, and is full of intensely interesting details. We shall give a part of it, referring the reader to the book itself for the whole:—

"Petra, the excavated city, the long lost capital of Edom, in the Scriptures and profane writings, in every language in which its name occurs, signifies a rock; and, through the shadows of its early history, we learn that its inhabitants lived in natural clefts or excavations made in the solid rock. Desolate as it now is, we have reason to believe that it goes back to the time of Esau, 'the father of Edom;' that princes and dukes, eight successive kings, and again a long line of dukes, dwelt there before any king 'reigned over Israel;' and we recognise it from the earliest ages, as the central point to which came the caravans from the interior of Arabia, Persia, and India, laden with all the precious commodities of the East, and from which these commodities were distributed through Egypt, Palestine, and Syria, and all the countries bordering on the Mediterranean, even Tyre and Sidon deriving their purple and dyes from Petra. Eight hundred years before Christ, Amaziah, the king of Judea, 'slew of Edom in the valley of Salt ten thousand, and took Selah (the Hebrew name of Petra) by war.' Three hundred years after the last of the prophets, and nearly a century before the Christian era, the 'King of Arabia' issued from his palace at Petra, at the head of fifty thousand men, horse and foot, entered Jerusalem, and uniting with the Jews, pressed the siege of the Temple, which was only raised by the advance of the Romans; and in the beginning of the second century, though its independence was lost, Petra was still the capital of a Roman province. After that time it rapidly declined; its history became more and more obscure; for more than a thousand years it was completely lost to the civilized world; and, until its discovery by Burkhardt in 1812, except to the wandering Bedouins its very site was unknown.

"And this was the city at whose door I now stood. In a few words,

this ancient and extraordinary city is situated within a natural amphitheatre of two or three miles in circumference, encompassed on all sides by rugged mountains five or six hundred feet in height. The whole of this area is now a waste of ruins, dwelling-houses, palaces, temples, and triumphal arches, all prostrate together in undistinguishable confusion. The sides of the mountains are cut smooth, in a perpendicular direction, and filled with long and continued ranges of dwelling-houses, temples, and tombs, excavated with vast labour out of the solid rock; and while their summits present nature in her wildest and most savage form, their bases are adorned with all the beauty of architecture and art, with columns, and porticoes, and pediments, and ranges of corridors, enduring as the mountains out of which they are hewn, and fresh as if the work of a generation scarcely yet gone by.

"Nothing can be finer than the immense rocky rampart which encloses the city. Strong, firm, and immovable as nature itself, it seems to deride the walls of cities, and the puny fortifications of skilful engineers. The only access is by clambering over this wall of stone, practicable only in one place, or by an entrance the most extraordinary that nature, in her wildest freaks, has ever framed. The loftiest portals ever raised by the hands of man, the proudest monuments of architectural skill and daring, sink into insignificance by the comparison. It is, perhaps, the most wonderful object in the world, except the ruins of the city to which it forms the entrance. Unfortunately, I did not enter by this door, but by clambering over the mountains at the other end; and when I stood upon the summit of the mountain, though I looked down upon the vast area filled with ruined buildings and heaps of rubbish, and saw the mountain-sides cut away so as to form a level surface, and presenting long ranges of doors in successive tiers or stories, the dwelling and burial-places of a people long since passed away; and though immediately before me was the excavated front of a large and beautiful temple, I was disappointed. I had read the unpublished descriptions of Captains Irby and Mangles. Several times the sheik had told me, in the most positive manner, that there was no other entrance; and I was moved to indignation at the marvellous and exaggerated, not to say false representations, as I thought, of the only persons who had given any account of this wonderful entrance. I was disappointed, too, in another matter. Burkhart had been accosted, immediately upon his entry, by a large party of Bedouins, and been suffered to remain but a very short time. Messrs. Legh, Banks, Irby and Mangles had been opposed by hundreds of Bedouins, who swore 'that they should never enter their territory nor drink of their waters,' and 'that they would shoot them like dogs, if they attempted it.' And I expected some immediate opposition from at least the thirty or forty, fewer than whom, the shiek had told me, were never to be found in Wady Moussa. I expected a scene of some kind; but at the entrance of the city there was not a creature to dispute our passage; its portals were wide open, and we passed along the stream down into the area, and still no man came to oppose us. We moved to the extreme end of the area; and, when in the act of dismounting at the foot of the rock on which stood the temple that had constantly faced us, we saw one solitary Arab straggling along without any apparent object, a mere wanderer among the ruins; and it is a not uninteresting fact, that this poor Bedouin was the only living being we saw in the desolate city of Petra. After gazing at us for a few moments at a distance he came towards us, and in a few moments was sitting down to pipes and coffee with my companions. I again asked the shiek for the other entrance, and he again told me there was none; but I



could not believe him, and set out to look for it myself; and although in my search I had already seen enough abundantly to repay me for all my difficulties in getting there, I could not be content without finding this desired avenue.

"In front of the great temple, the pride and beauty of Petra, of which more hereafter, I saw a narrow opening in the rocks, exactly corresponding with my conception of the object for which I was seeking. A full stream of water was gushing through it, and filling up the whole mouth of the passage. Mounted on the shoulders of one of my Bedouins, I got him to carry me through the swollen stream at the mouth of the opening, and set me down on a dry place a little above, whence I began to pick my way, occasionally taking to the shoulders of my follower, and continued to advance more than a mile. I was beyond all peradventure in the great entrance I was seeking. There could not be two such, and I should have gone on to the extreme end of the ravine, but my Bedouin suddenly refused me the further use of his shoulders. He had been some time objecting and begging me to return, and now positively refused to go any further; and, in fact, turned about himself. I was anxious to proceed, but I did not like wading up to my knees in the water, nor did I feel very resolute to go where I might expose myself to danger, as he seemed to intimate. While I was hesitating, another of my men came running up the ravine, and shortly after him Paul and the shiek, breathless with haste, and crying in low gutturals, 'El Arab! El Arab!'—The Arabs! the Arabs! This was enough for me. I had heard so much of El Arab that I had become nervous. It was like the cry of Delilah in the ears of the sleeping Sampson, 'The Philistines be upon thee.' At the other end of the ravine was an encampment of the El Alouins; and the shiek, having due regard to my communication about money matters, had shunned this entrance to avoid bringing upon me this horde of tribute-gatherers for a participation in the spoils. Without any disposition to explore farther, I turned towards the city; and it was now that I began to feel the powerful and indelible impression that must be produced on entering, through this mountainous passage, the excavated city of Petra.

"For about two miles it lies between high and precipitous ranges of rocks, from five hundred to a thousand feet in height, standing as if torn asunder by some great convulsion, and barely wide enough for two horsemen to pass abreast. A swelling stream rushes between them; the summits are wild and broken; in some places overhanging the opposite sides, casting the darkness of night upon the narrow defile; then receding and forming an opening above, through which a strong ray of light is thrown down, and illuminates with the blaze of day the frightful chasm below. Wild fig-trees, oleanders, and ivy, were growing out of the rocky sides of the cliffs hundreds of feet above our heads; the eagle was screaming above us; all along were the open doors of tombs, forming the great necropolis of the city; and at the extreme end was a large open space, with a powerful body of light thrown down upon it, and exhibiting in one full view the façade of a beautiful temple, hewn out of the rock, with rows of Corinthian columns and ornaments, standing out fresh and clear as if but yesterday from the hands of the sculptor. Though coming directly from the banks of the Nile, where the preservation of the temples excites the admiration and astonishment of every traveller, we were roused and excited by the extraordinary beauty and excellent condition of the great temple of Petra. Even in coming upon it, as we did, at disadvantage, I remember that Paul, who was a passionate admirer of the arts, when he first obtained a glimpse

of it, involuntarily cried out, and moving on to the front with a vivacity. I never saw him exhibit before or afterwards, clapped his hands, and shouted in ecstasy. To the last day of our being together, he was in the habit of referring to his extraordinary fit of enthusiasm when he first came upon that temple; and I can well imagine that, entering by this narrow defile, with the feelings roused by its extraordinary and romantic wildness and beauty, the first view of that superb façade must produce an effect which could never pass away. Even now that I have returned to the pursuits and thought-engrossing incidents of a life in the busiest city in the world, often in situations as widely different as light from darkness, I see before me the façade of that temple; neither the Coliseum at Rome, grand and interesting as it is, nor the ruins of the Acropolis at Athens, nor the Pyramids, nor the mighty temples of the Nile, are so often present to my memory.

"The whole temple, its columns, ornaments, porticoes, and porches, are cut out from and form part of the solid rock; and this rock, at the foot of which the temple stands like a mere print, towers several hundred feet above, its face cut smooth to the very summit, and the top remaining wild and misshapen as nature made it. The whole area before the temple is perhaps an acre in extent, enclosed on all sides except at the narrow entrance, and an opening to the left of the temple, which leads into the area of the city by a pass through perpendicular rocks, five or six hundred feet in height." Vol. II. pp. 65—72.

An entertaining account of a visit to the tomb of Aaron upon Mount Hor, we are compelled to omit.

The approach to the Holy Land over the same road and through the very spot which the Israelites, so many centuries since, traversed, each one hallowed by some act of divine agency, and bearing the clearest testimony to the truth of the scriptural narrative, is replete with interest of the deepest and warmest kind. Mr. S. reached Palestine through Idumea; though he was unable to visit the southern shore of the Dead Sea, the journey being, in his circumstances, altogether impracticable. He turned off, therefore, to the left, towards Hebron, and visited it and every other town of note in Palestine.

The places of Palestine being comparatively familiar to our readers, we shall not dwell upon this portion of the book. Upon but one concluding topic we shall say a word—the Dead Sea.

This mysterious lake has been thoroughly explored, so far as is known and believed, but by two Europeans—one an illiterate sailor; the other an enthusiastic traveller, an Irish gentleman, who died upon its shores after having made its fearful circuit. His story has died with him, and the world has lost what cannot be easily supplied. The ruins of Sodom and Gomorrah lie beneath the tainted waters of the "Sea of Death," and the unfortunate Costigan is supposed to have dropped his line in the midst of their ocean-covered remains. Had but strength and means been his, what disclosures might

not he have drawn from those awful depths! What proofs might not these terrible soundings have furnished!

Our author was but able to visit a small portion of the sea in question—it was sufficient, however, to impart ample authentication to the reports of previous writers. To his industry and research we are indebted for the preservation of the tale of the sailor we mentioned above, (the companion of the unfortunate Costigan,) which is the first and only account of a circuit of these dread waters having been made. We extract it, and, with it, conclude our notice of this very delightful book.

“When the unhappy Costigan was found by the Arabs on the shore of the Dead Sea, the spirit of the enterprising Irishman was fast fleeing away. He lived two days after he was carried to the convent at Jerusalem, but he never once referred to his unhappy voyage. He had long been a traveller in the East, and long preparing for this voyage; had read every book that treated of the mysterious water, and was thoroughly prepared with all the knowledge necessary for exploring it to advantage. Unfortunately for the interests of science, he had always been in the habit of trusting greatly to his memory; and, after his death, the missionaries in Jerusalem found no regular diary or journal, but merely brief notes written on the margins of books, so irregular and confused that they could make nothing of them; and, either from indifference, or because they had no confidence in him, they allowed Costigan’s servant to go without asking him any questions. I took some pains to trace out this man; and afterward, while lying at Beyroot, suffering from a malady which abruptly put an end to my travels in the East, Paul hunted him out and brought him to me. He was a little, dried-up Maltese sailor; had rowed around that sea without knowing why, except that he was paid for it; and what he told me bore the stamp of truth, for he did not seem to think that he had done any thing extraordinary. He knew as little about it as any man could know who had been over the same water, and yet, after all, perhaps, he knew as much as any one else could learn. He seemed, however, to have observed the coast and the soundings with the eye of a sailor, and I got him to make me a map, which has been engraved for this work, and on which I marked down the particulars as I received them from his lips. The reader will perceive by it that they had completed the whole tour of the lake. They were eight days in accomplishing the task, sleeping every night on shore except once, when, afraid of some suspicious Arabs whom they saw on the mountains, they slept on board, beyond the reach of gunshot from the land. He told me that they had moved in a zigzag direction, crossing and recrossing the lake several times; that every day they sounded, frequently with a line of 175 brachia (about six feet each); that they found the bottom rocky and of very unequal depth, sometimes ranging thirty, forty, eighty, twenty brachia, all within a few boats’ lengths;† that some-

---

† I would suggest whether this irregularity does not tend to show the fallacy of the opinion that the cities of the plain were destroyed by a volcanic eruption, and that the lake covers the crater of an extinct volcano. I have seen the craters of Vesuvius, Solfaterra, Etna, and Monte Rosso, and all present the same form of a mountain excavated in the form of a cone, without any of the irregularities found in the bottom of this sea.

times the lead brought up sand, like that of the mountains on each side ; that they failed in finding bottom but once, and in that place there were large bubbles all around for thirty paces, rising probably from a spring ; that in one place they found on the bank a hot sulphur spring ; that at the southern extremity Mr. Costigan looked for the River of Dogs, but did not find it ; that in four different places they found ruins, and could clearly distinguish large hewn stones, which seem to have been used for buildings ; and in one place they saw ruins which Mr. Costigan said were the ruins of Gomorrah. Now I have no doubt that Mr. Costigan talked with him as they went along, and told him what he told me ; and that Mr. Costigan had persuaded himself that he did see the ruins of the guilty city ; he may have been deceived and probably was ; but it must have been the most intensely interesting illusion that ever any man had. But of the island, or what Paul and I had imagined to be such :—He said that they too had noticed it particularly ; and when they came towards the southern extremity of the lake, found that it was an optical deception, caused by a tongue of high land, that put out for a long distance from the middle of the southern extremity, as in the map ; and being much higher than the valley beyond it, intercepted the view in the manner we had both noticed ; this tongue of land, he said, was composed of solid salt, tending to confirm the assertion of Strabo, to which I referred in my journey through Idumea, that in the great valley south of the Dead Sea there were formerly large cities built entirely of salt. The reader will take this for what it is worth ; it is at least new, and it comes from the only living man who has explored the lake.

“He told me some other particulars ; that the boat, when empty, floated a palm higher out of the water than on the Mediterranean ; and that Costigan lay on the water, and picked a fowl, and tried to induce him to come in ; that it was in the month of July, and from nine to five dreadfully hot, and every night a north wind blew, and the waves were worse than in the Gulf of Lyons ; and, in reference to their peculiar exposures, and the circumstances that hurried poor Costigan to his unhappy fate, he said that they had suffered exceedingly from the heat, the first five days Costigan taking his turn at the oars ; that on the sixth day their water was exhausted, and Costigan gave out ; that on the seventh day they were obliged to drink the water of the sea ; and on the eighth they were near the head of the lake, and he himself exhausted, and unable any longer to pull an oar. There he made coffee from the water of the sea ; and a favourable wind springing up, for the first time they hoisted their sail, and in a few hours reached the head of the lake ; that, feeble as he was, he set off for Jericho, and, in the mean time, the unhappy Costigan was found by the Arabs on the shore a dying man, and, by the intercession of the old woman, carried to Jericho. I ought to add, that the next time he came to me, like Goose Gibbie, he had tried whether the money I gave him was good, and recollected a great many things he had forgotten before. Vol. II. pp. 278—282.

---

ART. IX.—*The Life of Oliver Goldsmith, M. B., from a variety of original sources.* By JAMES PRIOR, Esq., Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries; Member of the Royal Irish Academy; author of the *Life of Burke*, &c. Philadelphia: 1 vol. 8vo. pp. 550.

Of all the writers of whom perhaps any age can boast, Goldsmith engages most the affection and sympathies of his readers. He so identifies himself with his subject, that the interest with which his genius invests it, is involuntarily transmitted to himself. Why is this? What secret chord of the human bosom does he touch, that teaches the heart so to vibrate in harmony with his own emotions? Is it other than a refined and delicate spirit, known as the sensibility of nature, which presides like an enchantress over his delightful and exquisite page?

We pour over the volumes of master minds with gratification, and rise from them with a sense of improvement. We are pleased because we are instructed, and admire for the same reason. But it requires something more than the impress of deep learning or a great understanding, to captivate our fancy and our love. It is possible to admire what we do not esteem, and still more common to be repelled from that which stands high in our estimation.

Nor is the imagination alone that quality in a writer which secures for him the sympathetic regard of his reader. The mind may emit the sublimest conceptions of poetic genius, and yet be unmoved and cold. If the subject of an author be not in unison with the affections of our nature, if he be frigid in his treatment of it, or if he stand at a distance, as if to dictate lessons of wisdom to inferior beings, no desire will be felt towards an intimate acquaintance, and no sentiment excited but that vague impulse which pays homage to acknowledged superiority.

To Goldsmith we are allured by various concurring influences. We feel admiration for his genius, love for the man, and sympathy for his frailties and misfortunes.

It is a reflection upon the literature of England, that a period of sixty years elapsed from the death of one of its most charming and gifted authors, before any serious attempt was made to collect his writings or record his life. We are certainly grateful to Mr. Prior for what his diligence and talents have accomplished, in the large contribution which has been made to the knowledge of both. But no assiduity can now recover those minute incidents of conversation and personal history, which vividly portray the man as he lived. These rest only in the memory of survivors, and if not immediately seized, become

perverted or indistinct before death closes the possibility of living testimony.

We are accustomed to view Goldsmith through the distorted medium of Boswell's account. This attractive biographer had one absorbing object in view, the glorification of a great idol. Every person and every event introduced into his book was in subserviency to this. He proposes only to record the colloquies of Johnson, and so much of the actions and conversations of others as may render intelligible his piquancy and wisdom. It is remarkable that among the great wits whose sayings are repeated, all are *Doctores Minores* in the presence of this *Doctor Major*. Burke and Garrick, whose colloquial sallies, it is well known, were frequently brilliant, and the former scarcely inferior in declamatory dignity to Johnson himself, are exhibited rather as his foils than equals. No surprise therefore should be felt at the unmeasured inferiority of the part which Goldsmith, in his *dramatis personæ*, is permitted to enact.

But candour must acknowledge that other causes were at work, with reference to Boswell's portrait of Goldsmith, than presenting a fine picture in a hero. This was jealousy verging to envy, and vexation approaching to dislike.

Upon his coming to London, Boswell found Goldsmith about his own age, high in the esteem of Johnson, and in the possession of a growing literary fame. The unstudied colloquial ease, denominated by Bozzy the *careless rattle* of Goldy, his playful and unpremeditated wit, his joyous, perhaps boisterous mirth, were qualities diametrically opposed to the measured stateliness and solemn verbosity of Johnson. Every departure from the habits which marked his venerated favourite, was an abandonment of propriety, and a violation of the rules of true greatness. These might easily detract from his appreciation of a man who took no pains to conceal the contempt in which he held his own pretensions, and whose gibes must have been the more cutting from the exquisite point with which they were conveyed. A *bon mot* has been preserved by the late Mr. Wheble, which, as it probably reached the ears of its object, may have produced some of the passages objected to. Some one angrily called Boswell "a Scotch cur," in a moment of irritation. Goldsmith replied, "No, no, you are too severe; he is only a Scotch *burr*." Tom Davies threw him at Johnson in sport, and he has the faculty of *sticking*." And last, but not least, it was enough to give the preserver of Johnson's conversations and anticipated biographer, a mortal distaste to one who held so high a place in the regard of Johnson himself, as to be considered by that personage the fittest of his contemporaries to transmit his fame to posterity.

These causes conspired to produce ill consequences upon

the usually candid and liberal mind of the panegyrist of Johnson. They soured his feelings, perhaps even unconsciously to himself, and the results are perceptible in almost every page of his interesting Life. The anecdotes of Goldsmith, when related upon his own testimony, may be relied upon; but his comments show the natural effects of jealousy—a disposition to undervalue the character, and depreciate the works of an excellent man and a matchless writer. In one place he applies to him with evident gusto, the ill-natured phrase “an inspired idiot,” upon the authority of Hawkins; and, in another, characterizes his mind as a fruitful indeed, but thin soil. These are unjust and disparaging ascriptions, in which none but a determined detractor could indulge.

But notwithstanding the neglect of those friends of the poet from whom mankind had a right to expect some tribute to his memory, and maugre the envvenomed shafts of Boswell, his works and memory still live, and promise to live throughout future time. There are few writers to whom all classes of readers recur with so much delight, and no one for whom they entertain feelings so akin to personal friendship. The bland benevolence of his spirit, the simple beauty of his language, the harmony and polish of his sentences, the vivacity of his humour, the elegance of his fancy, and the pungency and occasional power with which he writes, are admitted by all. For ourselves we shall not affect to conceal such a love of the man and admiration of his writings as lead us to examine with minuteness every point in the character of the former, and to read even “Goody Two Shoes,” now ranked in the category of the others. We have never been able to believe that a writer of such exquisite genius as Goldsmith, could be the bungling converser described in the pages of Boswell. This opinion receives countenance from the fact, that whenever he is allowed to speak for himself, he does it with characteristic beauty of language and felicity of illustration. Madame D’Arblay, in her amusing but grotesque Life of Dr. Burney, and Sir Joshua Reynolds confirm this impression. We had hoped therefore, perhaps unreasonably, to find in Mr. Prior’s book, some detailed and authentic registry of his conversation. But in this we have been disappointed. He disproves many of the opinions and assertions of Boswell, but gives his reader few specimens to enable him to judge of the matter for himself.

In the meagre notices, miscalled biographies, of this eminent writer, there was just enough, with what an admirer could cull from Boswell, to excite his curiosity. Many no doubt have felt, like ourselves, almost feverishly anxious to know something more of the man than these performances convey. Even in this country, the gratification of such a desire was not entirely

hopeless. In one of the editions of Boswell, there is a letter from Dr. Johnson to a late venerable prelate of Philadelphia, referring to the comedy, "She Stoops to Conquer," then about to appear at Covent Garden Theatre. As this very aged gentleman obtained his clerical degree in England, and during his sojourn there associated with the wits of the metropolis, we had no doubt he might possess some anecdotes of the slighted and injured Goldsmith, illustrative of his personal character. But an application to the prelate, though seriously intended, was unfortunately deferred until the death of the distinguished and excellent man at last closed the avenue forever.

We, therefore, hail Mr. Prior's book with the sincerest pleasure. Without the advantage of a personal acquaintance with the illustrious subject of his book, and too far from the period when he lived to hope for literal reports of conversations, he has done all that could have been reasonably expected, if not as much as might reasonably have been hoped for. He has penetrated the obscurity of his early life, traced his wayward career in youth, followed his adventurous fortunes in mature years, fixed the localities of his "Deserted Village," brought to light many interesting facts and anecdotes, and greatly added to the known number of his writings. The charming letters he has preserved, entitle him to our grateful acknowledgments. Of these letters, indeed, which are given to us as new, we recognise many that we have elsewhere perused. Some of these are to be found in Bishop Percy's memoir, and in several others of the many imperfect biographies which have been prefixed to various editions of Goldsmith's miscellaneous works.

The circulation of this interesting volume, promises to be diffusive in this country. It has not only been republished by one or more booksellers, but Mr. Waldie, of Philadelphia, has reprinted it in his valuable Library. Not only Mr. Prior's biography, but his edition of the works of his beautiful author, not yet in this country, would greatly enrich the pages of such a repository. We cannot wish our countrymen better aid to the attainment of an elegant taste in composition than the writings of Goldsmith. Let them be widely disseminated. Divested of those meretricious trappings which are now so much the fashion, they will correct the false taste which sets so high a value upon fustian and affectation, and lead to an appreciation of the charms of refined simplicity in authorship.

Without wishing to find fault, we may hope that Mr. Prior himself, in a future edition, or some Croker with whom he may be favoured, may glean additional particulars illustrative of Goldsmith's social qualities. We may hope, too, that certain episodes may be lopped, and disquisitions retrenched, which detract from the prevailing interest of his pages. The book, in



this respect, claims some affinity to the recent *Life of Cowper* by Southey, which includes a somewhat lengthened account of every literary person who had the slightest intimacy with the professed subject of the narrative.

The reading of this biography will, we think, induce the perusal of works, which, from their subject or pretensions, would hardly claim a notice. Mr. Prior not only renders it probable that "*Goody Two Shoes*" was an emanation of Goldsmith's teeming pen, but ascertains that the *Life of Beau Nash*, and the *Letters on English History in the character of a Nobleman to his Son*, successively attributed to Littleton and Chesterfield, are from the same intellectual mine. We have done in this case what, no doubt, many of our readers may likewise be allured to attempt—we have searched for and read all that have been thus specified. In *Beau Nash* we found his easy style, and many of his beauties, but much that is crude, and the result of that haste, rendered necessary "by his scurvy circumstances." Too much praise cannot be awarded to the *Letters on English History* as a comprehensive and philosophical survey of British annals. Perhaps there is no book extant which embraces so distinct an elucidation of the British constitution, at the same time marking with clearness the events of each historical era.

But not to anticipate what, on another occasion, we may be required to enlarge upon, we will now rapidly pass in review some of the leading incidents of the poet's life.

The herald's office cannot dissipate the obscurity which hangs over the early progenitors of Oliver Goldsmith. His great-great grandfather, the Rev. John Goldsmith, is the first ascertained ancestor of the family. This gentleman was rector of Borrishoull, in the county of Mayo, Ireland, a respectable and deserving man. It is related of him that he narrowly escaped the popish massacre of 1641. The father of Oliver was Charles Goldsmith, of Trinity College, Dublin. He took orders on leaving it, immediately married, and lived twelve years upon a farm of fifty acres of land, known by the name of Pallismore, in the parish of Kilkenny-West. It was here the poet was born on the 10th of November, 1728. Two or three years after the birth of this son, who was one of six children, the father acceded to the living of Kilkenny-West, then worth from £150 to £200, and occupied a neat house at Lissoy in that parish. Lissoy is the "*sweet Auburn*" so graphically and beautifully delineated by the poet in after life, as Mr. Prior establishes by abundant proofs, to which we shall hereafter refer.

Oliver does not seem to have been distinguished as a precocious child. A Mrs. Delap, with whom he learnt his letters,

when boasting in subsequent years of their former connection, described him as the dullest boy in her school. He passed at the age of six to the care of Thomas Byrne, a veteran soldier in the wars of Marlborough. His course there seemed to be unmarked by any peculiarity, except that he always listened with rapture to the relations of his teacher's campaigns and adventures, and was delighted with the music of the blind Irish minstrel, Carolan, whose name and lyrical pretensions he has embalmed in one of his charming essays. He was likewise fond of reading wondrous stories of pirates, robbers, and smugglers. His passion for music, and love of the marvellous, were fostered by his master to such an extent that he became noted for his legends and the delight of his friends, in the singing of pathetic old ballads. "Johnny Armstrong's last good night" continued to possess charms for him in manhood, as he informs us, beyond all the attractions of Italian melody.

All his biographers tell a miraculous story, which Mr. Prior, with some variation, has repeated, tending to show his impromptu power of versification. Whoever the truth-telling wight, there is little doubt its nominal hero would have discarded it, as Dr. Johnson did the wonderful tale of his doting father about the duck, in proof of his own surprising precocity. Mr. Prior gives another anecdote of his smartness a year or two later, which we omit because hardly worthy of repetition.

These or other proofs of superior intelligence induced his father to relinquish the design of making him a merchant. The limited circumstances of the Rev. Mr. Goldsmith scarcely justified the expense of sending him to the university, after the liberal education he had bestowed on an elder son. Oliver, however, was sent in 1739 to a school of some repute in Athlone, where he continued two years, and thence to Edgeworthstown, where he was prepared for entrance into the university.

He was admitted a sizer of Trinity College, Dublin, on the 11th June, 1745. At that time, the unfortunate student who entered the college upon such a footing, was exposed to the humiliation of carrying up dinner, and subjected to other menial compliances. Goldsmith was stung to the soul by subjection to such an indignity, and seems to have been strongly impressed with it in subsequent life. He thus refers to the oppressive regulation, in his *Enquiry into Polite Learning in Europe*.

"Sure pride itself has dictated to the fellows of our colleges the absurd passion of being attended at meals and on other public occasions by those poor men who, willing to be scholars, come in upon some charitable foundation. It implies a contradiction, for men to be at once

learning the liberal arts, and at the same time treated as slaves; at once studying freedom and practising servitude." p. 46.

From such a degradation, however, these poor men, whose fate Goldsmith could so sympathetically deplore, were relieved by a more generous policy some years after.

But the humility of his station at college was not the grievance of which he chiefly complained. His tutor, Mr. Wilder, a man of savage brutality of disposition, and addicted to the exact sciences, for which his poetical pupil entertained no partiality, treated him with cruel harshness, and took pleasure in deriding his abilities in the presence of his class. The character of this man is so vividly drawn by Mr. Prior, that we make no apology for quoting it at length.

"The character of the unhappy person to whom the direction of his studies was entrusted, 'under the notion of a tutor,' as Dr. Wilson expresses it, appears to have been wholly unfit, either in temper or general conduct, for the superintendence of youth. Many unfavourable stories are still told of him in the university; and the mortifications endured by his pupil, from mingled caprice and harshness, were supposed to have not only obstructed his progress in learning, but, by producing despondency and irregularities, tinged with a darker hue parts of his future life. This person was fixed upon from being the younger son of a gentleman living within a few miles of the Rev. Mr. Goldsmith, and Oliver had been especially recommended to his care. He possessed considerable scientific attainments, clouded by a disposition represented as almost savage, and passions so irregular as to require for himself that indulgence he rarely extended to others. In Dublin he was noted for strength, agility, and ferocity; an instance of which was exhibited in the streets by springing, at a bound, from the pavement on a hackney coach proceeding at a fast pace, and felling to the ground the driver, who had accidentally touched his face with the whip. Of his strange caprice or injustice in the performance of his public duties, the Rev. Dr. Marsh mentioned an instance. When filling the senior lecturer's chair, the three first places were admitted to be the right of Marsh, Mead, and Hans, the best answerers in the order of their names, which he thought fit to transpose into the order of Hans, Mead, and Marsh, assigning as the reason the superior euphony of the latter arrangement.

"To such students as incurred his dislike, he proved a bitter persecutor at the public examinations; and an illustration of this disposition appears in the vindictive conduct adopted towards another. When a student himself, he found constant means of evading college discipline, and gaining egress from its walls at night by the connivance of a companion, whose window in the front square being secured by an iron palisading, a movable bar had been skilfully introduced unknown to the authorities, which admitted of removal at pleasure. Soon afterwards (1774) he was elected to a fellowship; the office of sub-dean, who has charge of the general conduct of the students, came to him in rotation; and now, from being an offender against discipline, he became its most strict and often severe preserver. The first exertion of authority was a visit to the apartment of which he had formerly so often made use, but unexpectedly he found the outlet already secured. On sternly enquiring of its then possessor, a friend of the previous occupier, whether there had not been a screw bar before the window, the reply was in the affirmative,

and that he very well knew it. To further questions, uttered in an insulting manner, by whom the alteration was made, the student (afterwards the Rev. Mr. G——, an amiable man) was tempted to reply, 'By me, sir; for I *knew you*.' The remark was never forgiven; he assailed him unremittingly ever afterwards at the public examinations, and when his proficiency admitted of little censure, found a handle for ill-nature and sarcasm in the personal peculiarities of the youth. These in return produced retorts not quite in keeping with subordination, or the decorum of the place and occasion, until at length an opportunity offered of turning him down to the bottom of his class." pp. 48, 49.

With such a person, a boy of Goldsmith's waywardness and peculiar temperament would not be likely to get along without disagreement. He was insulted and chastised for a trifling imprudence, and the result was his indignant retreat from college. The mediation of his brother Henry restored peace, if it did not bring amity, to the parties. His stay at the university was undistinguished, except by penury and academical disgraces. He sought to forget the last in an occasional song, and to alleviate the other by the composition of ballads to be sung in the streets. Although he received but five shillings for a ballad, his friend Beatty relates that he never forgot them; but, true to his offspring, he evinced all the feelings of solicitous pater-nity. It was his wont to stroll about at night, with a view to listen to the songs which were sung; and, upon recognising his own, to mark the applause which they received from the auditors.

Besides these relaxations from academic discipline, he is remembered to have indulged now and then in original compositions and translations from the classics. In his own words to Malone, many years afterwards, "though he made no great figure in mathematics, which was a study much in repute at the university, he could turn an ode of Horace into English with the best of them."

But neither his restricted remittances from home, nor the low price of his ballads, taught him the necessary prudence in expenditure, nor steeled his heart against the appeals of distress. In illustration of the latter, we quote a whimsical story which is told by Mr. Prior upon the authority of a fellow student. We give it in his own words, with the restrictions which he has thought proper to prescribe.

"The poor are commonly said to be improvident; and Goldsmith, by all accounts, failed to manage his scanty finances with the care that his necessities required—an imprudent benevolence, as it would seem, to distressed objects proving the cause of serious inconvenience to himself. Illustrative of this point of character, Mr. Edward Mills, of Mount Prospect in Roscommon, his relative, and who entered college about two years after him, told a ludicrous story which, though obviously exaggerated, may have had some foundation in truth. He was a professed wit and punster, and therefore the anecdote probably lost nothing

in the narration; it may likewise owe something to the whim of the poet, whose humour was sometimes sufficiently broad and practical.

"Mills, whose family in Roscommon was opulent, possessing a handsome allowance at the university, occasionally furnished his relative with small supplies, and frequently invited him to breakfast. On being summoned on one occasion to this repast, he declared from within to the messenger his inability to rise; and that, to enable him to do so, they must come to his assistance, by forcing open the door. This was accordingly done by Mills; who found his cousin, not on his bed, but literally in it—having ripped part of the ticking and immersed himself in the feathers, from which situation, as alleged, he found difficulty in extricating himself. By his own account, in explanation of this strange scene, after the merriment which it occasioned had subsided, it appeared that, while strolling in the suburbs the preceding evening, he met a poor woman with five children, who told a pitiful story of her husband being in the hospital, and herself and offspring destitute of food, and of a place of shelter for the night; and that, being from the country, they knew no person to whom, under such circumstances, they could apply with hope of relief. The appeal to one of his sensitive disposition was irresistible; but, unfortunately, he had no money. In this situation he brought her to the college gate, sent out his blankets to cover the wretched group, and part of his clothes in order to sell for their present subsistence; and, finding himself cold during the night, from want of the usual covering, had hit upon the expedient just related for supplying the place of his blankets." p. 62.

Having abandoned the university he returned to Lissoy, and divided his time, for about two years, between assisting his brother Henry in teaching a school, visiting his friends, and rural sports and occupations. This spot seems to have been deeply imprinted upon his heart, and there to have been cherished, transmuted, and refined, with the fondness, warmth, and fancy of a poet. He recurs to it through life, and describes it in his letters and poem with all the glow of poetical enthusiasm. But this place and Ballymahon, to which he resorted for society, were not distinguished for the elegance and refinement of their inhabitants. The Celtic manners and peculiarities prevailed to a great extent, mingled with simplicity, pride, and hospitality. The people were marked with that ignorance which results from little intercourse with strangers; and, being defective in education, they held literature in contempt. Yet, from the native benevolence of his disposition—being always, as he expresses it, "an admirer of happy human faces"—or from being condemned to inferior society at college, by his mean wants and shabby habiliments, that master spirit, the emanations of whose mind were destined to be the admiration and delight of each succeeding generation of English readers, could so far forget his character and destiny as to stoop to the degrading association.

During the two years of his sojourn with his friends in Ireland, his reading was desultory and light. It consisted chiefly of

biography, travels, poetry, novels, and plays. He indulged occasionally in poetry, and some pieces written at this time are specified as his in the Ladies' Magazine. It is remembered, too, that he drew up, at the instance of his uncle, an essay on the more popular poets, with reflections upon their comparative merits and defects. No reference is made by his biographer to biblical studies, as, it appears, his destination at this time was the church. Goldsmith applied to the bishop for orders with ill-suppressed reluctance, though at the urgent solicitation of his generous uncle, the Rev. Mr. Contarine. Being too young, as his sister alleges, he was rejected. How far the neglect of theological reading, and his appearing before the bishop in *scarlet breeches*, influenced the result, we can now only conjecture.

The church being relinquished, he accepted the situation of tutor in the family of a gentleman of the name of Flinn. He quitted this employment at the end of the year, tired of confinement, and resolved to travel. His sister relates that he left the country, none knew whither, upon a good horse, with about thirty pounds in his pocket. At the expiration of six weeks he returned, destitute of money, and upon a miserable animal which he facetiously called Fiddleback. It would appear that his mother was displeased at the carelessness, improvidence, or misconduct, which these miscarriages implied. In explanation of his unfortunate plight, and to satisfy the enquiries of his friends, he gave, in the following epistle, some account of his adventures. We may observe that this letter is for the first time printed in Mr. Prior's biography.

"My dear mother,—If you will sit down and calmly listen to what I say, you shall be fully resolved in every one of those many questions you have asked me. I went to Cork, and converted my horse, which you prize so much higher than Fiddleback, into cash, took my passage in a ship bound for America, and at the same time paid the captain for my freight and all the other expenses of my voyage. But it so happened that the wind did not answer for three weeks; and you know, mother, that I could not command the elements. My misfortune was, that when the wind served I happened to be with a party in the country, and my friend the captain never enquired after me, but set sail with as much indifference as if I had been on board. The remainder of my time I employed in the city and its environs, viewing every thing curious, and you know no one can starve while he has money in his pocket.

"Reduced, however, to my last two guineas, I began to think of my dear mother and friends whom I had left behind me; and so bought that generous beast, Fiddleback, and bade adieu to Cork with only five shillings in my pocket. This, to be sure, was but a scanty allowance for man and horse towards a journey of above an hundred miles; but I did not despair, for I knew I must find friends on the road.

"I recollected particularly an old and faithful acquaintance I made at college, who had often and earnestly pressed me to spend a summer with him, and he lived but eight miles from Cork. This circumstance

of vicinity he would expatiate on to me with particular emphasis: 'We shall,' says he, 'enjoy the delights of both city and country, and you shall command my stable and my purse.'

"However, upon the way I met a poor woman all in tears, who told me her husband had been arrested for a debt he was not able to pay, and that his eight children must now starve, bereaved as they were of his industry, which had been their only support. I thought myself at home, being not far from my good friend's house, and therefore parted with a moiety of all my store; and pray, mother, ought I not to have given her the other half-crown, for what she got would be of little use to her? However, I soon arrived at the mansion of my affectionate friend, guarded by the vigilance of a huge mastiff, who flew at me and would have torn me to pieces, but for the assistance of a woman whose countenance was not less grim than that of the dog; yet she, with great humanity, relieved me from the jaws of this Cerberus, and was prevailed on to carry up my name to her master.

"Without suffering me to wait long, my old friend, who was then recovering from a severe fit of sickness, came down in his night-cap, night-gown, and slippers, and embraced me with the most cordial welcome, showed me in, and, after giving me a history of his indisposition, assured me that he considered himself peculiarly fortunate in having under his roof the man he most loved on the earth, and whose stay with him must, above all things, contribute to perfect his recovery. I now repented sorely I had not given the poor woman the other half-crown, as I thought all my bills of humanity would be punctually answered by this worthy man. I revealed to him my whole soul; I opened to him all my distresses, and freely owned that I had but one half-crown in my pocket; but that now, like a ship after weathering out the storm, I considered myself secure in a safe and hospitable harbour. He made no answer, but walked about the room, rubbing his hands, as one in deep study. This I imputed to the sympathetic feelings of a tender heart, which increased my esteem for him—and, as that increased, I gave the most favourable interpretation to his silence. I construed it into delicacy of sentiment, as if he dreaded to wound my pride by expressing his commiseration in words, leaving his generous conduct to speak for itself.

"It now approached six o'clock in the evening; and as I had eaten no breakfast, and as my spirits were raised, my appetite for dinner grew uncommonly keen. At length the old woman came into the room with two plates, one spoon, and a dirty cloth, which she laid upon the table. This appearance, without increasing my spirits, did not diminish my appetite. My protectress soon returned with a small bowl of sago, a small porringer of sour milk, a loaf of stale brown bread, and the heel of an old cheese all over crawling with mites. My friend apologized that his illness obliged him to live on slops, and that better fare was not in the house; observing, at the same time, that a milk diet was certainly the most healthful; and at eight o'clock he again recommended a regular life, declaring that for his part he would *lie down with the lamb and rise with the lark*. My hunger was at this time so exceedingly sharp that I wished for another slice of the loaf, but was obliged to go to bed without even that refreshment.

"The lenten entertainment I had received made me resolve to depart as soon as possible. Accordingly, next morning when I spoke of going, he did not oppose my resolution; he rather commended my design, adding some very sage counsel upon the occasion. 'To be sure,' said he, 'the longer you stay away from your mother, the more you will grieve her and your other friends; and possibly they are already afflicted at

bearing of this foolish expedition you have made.' Notwithstanding all this, and without any hope of softening such a sordid heart, I again renewed the tale of my distress, and asked him 'how he thought I could travel above a hundred miles upon one half-crown?' I begged to borrow a single guinea, which I assured him should be repaid with thanks. 'And you know, sir,' said I, 'it is no more than I have often done for you.' To which he firmly answered, 'Why, look you, Mr. Goldsmith, that is neither here nor there; I have paid you all you ever lent me, and this sickness of mine has left me bare of cash. But I have bethought myself of a conveyance for you: sell your horse, and I will furnish you a much better one to ride on.' I readily grasped at his proposal, and begged to see the nag; on which he led me to his bedchamber, and from under the bed he pulled out a stout oak stick. 'Here he is,' said he; 'take this in your hand, and it will carry you to your mother's with more safety than such a horse as you ride.' I was in doubt, when I got it into my hand, whether I should not, in the first place, apply it to his pate; but a rap at the street door made the wretch fly to it, and when I returned to the parlour he introduced me, as if nothing of the kind had happened, to the gentleman who entered, as Mr. Goldsmith, his most ingenious and worthy friend, of whom he had so often heard him speak with rapture. I could scarcely compose myself; and must have betrayed indignation in my mien to the stranger, who was a counsellor at law in the neighbourhood, a man of engaging aspect and polite address.

"After spending an hour, he asked my friend and me to dine with him at his house. This I declined at first, as I wished to have no further communication with my old hospitable friend; but at the solicitation of both I at last consented, determined as I was by two motives: one, that I was prejudiced in favour of the looks and manner of the counsellor; and the other, that I stood in need of a comfortable dinner. And there, indeed, I found every thing that I could wish—abundance without profusion, and elegance without affectation. In the evening, when my old friend, who had eaten very plentifully at his neighbour's table, but talked again of lying down with the lamb, made a motion to me for retiring, our generous host requested I should take a bed with him; upon which I plainly told my old friend that he might go home and take care of the horse he had given me, but that I should never re-enter his doors. He went away with a laugh, leaving me to add this to the other little things the counsellor already knew of his plausible neighbour.

"And now, my dear mother, I found sufficient to reconcile me to all my follies; for here I spent three whole days. The counsellor had two sweet girls to his daughters, who played enchantingly on the harpsicord; and yet it was but a melancholy pleasure I felt the first time I heard them—for, that being the first time also that either of them had touched the instrument since their mother's death, I saw the tears in silence trickle down their father's cheeks. I every day endeavoured to go away, but every day was pressed and obliged to stay. On my going, the counsellor offered me his purse, with a horse and servant to convey me home; but the latter I declined, and only took a guinea to bear my necessary expenses on the road.

"OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

"To Mrs. Anne Goldsmith, Ballymahon."

It was now necessary to choose a profession, and Mr. Contarine supplied him with fifty pounds to undertake the study of the law. Being seduced into a gaming-house in Dublin, he was stripped of his money, and once more returned almost a starve-



ling to his friends. His mother, it is said, evinced resentment; but his faithful uncle at once forgave, received, and assisted him.

It being finally determined that he should study physic, he departed for that purpose to Edinburgh in the autumn of 1752. When he reached the Scottish metropolis, he eagerly sallied forth from the inn where he had deposited his wardrobe, to gratify his curiosity. At the approach of evening he wished to return, but was unable, having neglected to enquire the name of the landlady or the street in which she resided. He wandered about until night in a search which would have been fruitless, if accident had not thrown in his way the porter who carried his baggage in the morning.

At Edinburgh he composed and sang songs, and the periodicals of the day attest the general exercise of his poetical talents. An epigram, perhaps not the best of its kind, inserted in his works, bears the date of Edinburgh, 1753. That he was not an inattentive observer of the world around him, and could write at this period with something of the graceful ease and unaffected vivacity which distinguished him in subsequent life, the following letter bears ample testimony:

*"To Robert Bryanton, at Ballymahon, Ireland.*

*"EDINBURGH, September 26th, 1753.*

"My dear Bob,—How many good excuses (and you know I was ever good at an excuse) might I call up to vindicate my past shameful silence. I might tell how I wrote a long letter on my first coming hither, and seem vastly angry at my not receiving an answer; I might allege that business (with business you know I was always pestered) had never given me time to finger a pen. But I suppress those, and twenty more as plausible and as easily invented, since they might be attended with a slight inconvenience of being known to be lies. Let me then speak truth. An hereditary indolence (I have it from the mother's side) has hitherto prevented my writing to you, and still prevents my writing at least twenty-five letters more, due to my friends in Ireland. No turn-spit dog gets up into his wheel with more reluctance than I sit down to write; yet no dog ever loved the roast meat he turns better than I do him I now address.

"Yet what shall I say now I am entered? Shall I tire you with a description of this unfruitful country, where I must lead you over their hills all brown with heath, or their valleys scarcely able to feed a rabbit? Man alone seems to be the only creature who has arrived to the natural size in this poor soil. Every part of the country presents the same dismal landscape. No grove, nor brook, lend their music to cheer the stranger, or make the inhabitants forget their poverty. Yet, with all these disadvantages to call him down to humility, a Scotsman is one of the proudest things alive. The poor have pride ever ready to relieve them. If mankind should happen to despise them, they are masters of their own admiration; and that they can plentifully bestow upon themselves.

"From their pride and poverty, as I take it, results one advantage this country enjoys; namely, the gentlemen here are much better bred than

among us. No such character here as our fox-hunters; and they have expressed great surprise when I informed them that some men in Ireland, of one thousand pounds a year, spend their whole lives in running after a hare, drinking to be drunk, and getting every girl with child that will let them. Truly, if such a being, equipped in his hunting dress, came among a circle of Scottish gentry, they would behold him with the same astonishment that a countryman does King George on horseback.

"The men here have generally high cheek bones, and are lean and swarthy, fond of action, dancing in particular. Now that I have mentioned dancing, let me say something of their balls, which are very frequent here. When a stranger enters the dancing-hall, he sees one end of the room taken up by the ladies, who sit dismally in a group by themselves; in the other end stand their pensive partners that are to be; but no more intercourse between the sexes than there is between two countries at war. The ladies indeed may ogle, and the gentlemen sigh, but an embargo is laid on any closer commerce. At length, to interrupt hostilities, the lady directress, or intendant, or what you will, pitches upon a lady and gentleman to walk a minuet; which they perform with a formality that approaches to despondence. After five or six couple have thus walked the gantlet, all stand up to country dances, each gentleman furnished with a partner from the aforesaid lady directress; so they dance much, say nothing, and thus concludes our assembly. I told a Scottish gentleman that such profound silence resembled the ancient procession of the Roman matrons in honour of Ceres; and the Scottish gentleman told me (and, faith, I believe he was right) that I was a very great pedant for my pains.

"Now I am come to the ladies; and to show that I love Scotland, and every thing that belongs to so charming a country, I insist on it—and will give him leave to break my head that denies it—that the Scottish ladies are ten thousand times finer and handsomer than the Irish. To be sure, now, I see your sisters Betty and Peggy vastly surprised at my partiality; but tell them flatly I don't value them, or their fine skins, or eyes, or good sense, or —, a potato; for I say, and will maintain it; and as a convincing proof (I am in a great passion) of what I assert, the Scottish ladies say it themselves. But to be less serious; where will you find a language so prettily become a pretty mouth as the broad Scottish? And the women here speak it in its highest purity; for instance, teach one of your young ladies at home to pronounce the 'Whoar wull I gong?' with a becoming widening of mouth, and I'll lay my life they'll wound every hearer.

"We have no such character here as a coquette, but, alas! how many envious prudes! Some days ago I walked into my Lord Kilcoubry's, (don't be surprised, my lord is but a glover,) when the Duchess of Hamilton (that fair who sacrificed her beauty to her ambition, and her inward peace to a title and gilt equipage) passed by in her chariot; her battered husband, or more properly the guardian of her charms, sat by her side. Straight envy began, in the shape of no less than three ladies who sat with me, to find faults in her faultless form. 'For my part,' says the first, 'I think what I always thought, that the duchess has too much of the red in her complexion.' 'Madam, I am of your opinion,' says the second; 'I think her face has a palish cast, too much on the delicate order.' 'And, let me tell you,' added the third lady, whose mouth was puckered up to the size of an issue, 'that the duchess has fine lips, but she wants a mouth.' At this every lady drew up her mouth, as if going to pronounce the letter P.

"But how ill, my Bob, does it become me to ridicule women with

whom I have scarcely any correspondence. There are, 'tis certain, handsome women here; and, 'tis certain, they have handsome men to keep them company. An ugly and poor man is society only for himself, and such society the world lets me enjoy in great abundance. Fortune has given you circumstances, and nature a person, to look charming in the eyes of the fair. Nor do I envy my dear Bob such blessings, while I may sit down and laugh at the world and at myself—the most ridiculous object in it. But you see I am grown downright splenetic, and perhaps the fit may continue till I receive an answer to this. I know you cannot send me much news from Ballymahon, but, such as it is, send it all; every thing you send will be agreeable to me.

"Has George Conway put up a sign yet, or John Bingley left off drinking drams, or Tom Allen got a new wig? But I leave you to your own choice what to write. While I live, know you have a true friend in yours, &c. &c. &c.

"OLIVER GOLDSMITH."

The other epistles from Edinburgh are addressed to his uncle, the excellent Mr. Contarine. One sketches the professors of the medical school, and the other, while eminently characteristic of the writer, lets us into the generosity and good nature of the correspondent.

"*To the Rev. Thos. Contarine.*

"May 8, 1753.

"My dear uncle,—In your letter (the only one I received from Kilmore) you call me the philosopher who carries all his goods about him. Yet how can such a character fit me, who have left behind in Ireland every thing worth possessing; friends that I loved, and a society that pleased while it instructed? Who but must regret the loss of such enjoyments? Who but must regret his absence from Kilmore, that ever knew it as I did? Here, as recluse as the Turkish spy at Paris, I am almost unknown to every body, except some few who attend the professors of physic as I do.

"Apropos, I shall give you the professors' names, and, as far as occurs to me, their characters; and first, as most deserving, Mr. Munro, professor of anatomy. This man has brought the science he teaches to as much perfection as it is capable of; and, not content with barely teaching anatomy, he launches out into all the different branches of physic, when all his remarks are new and useful. 'Tis he, I may venture to say, that draws hither such a number of students from all parts of the world, even from Russia. He is not only a skilful physician, but an able orator, and delivers things in their nature obscure in so easy a manner, that the most unlearned may understand him. Plume, professor of chemistry, understands his business well, but delivers himself so ill that he is but little regarded. Alston, professor of *materia medica*, speaks much, but little to the purpose. The professors of theory and practice (of physic) say nothing but what we may find in books laid before us, and speak that in so drowsy and heavy a manner that their hearers are not many degrees in a better state than their patients.

"You see then, dear, that Munro is the only great man among them; so that I intend to hear him another winter, and go then to hear Albinus, the great professor at Leyden. I read (with satisfaction) a science the most pleasing in nature, so that my labours are but a relaxation, and, I may truly say, the only thing here that gives me pleasure. How I enjoy the pleasing hope of returning with skill, and to find my friends stand

in no need of my assistance! How many happy years do I wish you!—and nothing but want of health can take from your happiness, since you so well pursue the paths that conduct to virtue.

“I am, my dear uncle, your most obliged,  
“Most affectionate nephew,  
“OLIVER GOLDSMITH.”

“*To the Rev. Thomas Contarine.*”

“My dear uncle,—After having spent two winters in Edinburgh, I now prepare to go to France the 10th of next February. I have seen all that this country can exhibit in the medical way, and therefore intend to visit Paris, where the great Mr. Farhein, Petit, and Du Hammel de Monceau instruct their pupils in all the branches of medicine. They speak French, and consequently I shall have much the advantage of most of my countrymen, as I am perfectly acquainted with that language, and few who leave Ireland are so.

“Since I am upon so pleasing a topic as self applause, give me leave to say that the circle of science which I have run through, before I undertook the study of physic, is not only useful, but absolutely necessary to the making a skilful physician. Such sciences enlarge our understanding, and sharpen our sagacity; and what is a practitioner without both but an empiric—for never yet was a disorder found entirely the same in two patients. A quack, unable to distinguish the particularities in each disease, prescribes at a venture; if he finds such a disorder may be called by the general name of fever, for instance, he has a set of remedies which he applies to cure it; nor does he desist till his medicines are run out, or his patient has lost his life. But the skilful physician distinguishes the symptoms, manures the sterility of nature, or prunes her luxuriance; nor does he depend so much on the efficacy of medicines as on their proper application. I shall spend this spring and summer in Paris, and the beginning of next winter go to Leyden. The great Albinus is still alive there, and ’t will be proper to go, though only to have it said that we have studied in so famous a university.

“As I shall not have another opportunity of receiving money from your bounty till my return to Ireland, so I have drawn for the last sum that I hope I shall ever trouble you for; ’tis 20*l*. And now, dear sir, let me here acknowledge the humility of the station in which you found me; let me tell how I was despised by most, and hateful to myself. Poverty, hopeless poverty, was my lot, and melancholy was beginning to make me her own; when you—but I stop here, to enquire how your health goes on. How does my cousin Jenny, and has she recovered her late complaint? How does my poor Jack Goldsmith? I fear his disorder is of such a nature as he won’t easily recover. I wish, my dear sir, you would make me happy by another letter before I go abroad, for there I shall hardly hear from you. I shall carry just 33*l*. to France, with good store of clothes, shirts, &c. &c.; and that, with economy, will serve.

“I have spent more than a fortnight every second day at the Duke of Hamilton’s, but it seems they like me more as a *jester* than as a companion; so I disdained so servile an employment—’t was unworthy my calling as a physician.

“I have nothing new to add from this country; and I beg, dear sir, you will excuse this letter, so filled with egotism. I wish you may be revenged on me, by sending an answer filled with nothing but an account of yourself.

“I am, dear uncle, your most devoted  
“OLIVER GOLDSMITH.”

His course at Edinburgh, according to the evidence of his fellow student, Mr. Laughlan Maclane, was marked with some irregularities. But whatever his excesses or improprieties there—and they seem to have been venial—his uncle did not waver in his attachment or liberality. He supplied him with money to prosecute his studies at Leyden, then nearly in the zenith of its repute as a medical seminary. Without a degree, poor Goldsmith therefore hastened to quit Edinburgh, where he was in danger of an arrest for debt, only to get into prison elsewhere upon a serious charge. His philosophical spirit is strikingly displayed in the following effusion. The indifference and unconcern he shows for an event which, in other men, would have produced loud and angry complaint, are eminently in keeping with the general tone of his character.

*“To the Rev. Thomas Contarine.*

“LEYDEN, (the date wanting, but no doubt April or May, 1754.)

“Dear sir,—I suppose by this time I am accused of either neglect or ingratitude, and my silence imputed to my usual slowness of writing; but believe me, sir, when I say, that till now I had not the opportunity of sitting down with that ease of mind which writing required. You may see, by the top of the letter, that I am at Leyden; but of my journey hither you must be informed.

“Some time before the receipt of your last I embarked for Bourdeaux, on board a Scottish ship called the *St. Andrew's*, Captain John Wall master. The ship made a tolerable appearance; and, as another inducement, I was let to know that six agreeable passengers were to be my company. Well, we were but two days at sea when a storm drove us into a city of England called Newcastle-upon-Tyne. We all went on shore to refresh us after the fatigues of our voyage. Seven men and I were one day on shore; and on the following evening, as we were all very merry, the room door bursts open—enters a sergeant and twelve grenadiers with their bayonets screwed, and puts us all under the king's arrest. It seems my company were Scotsmen in the French service, and had been in Scotland to enlist soldiers for the French army. I endeavoured all I could to prove my innocence; however, I remained in prison with the rest a fortnight, and with difficulty got off even then. Dear sir, keep this a secret, or at least say it was for debt; for, if it were once known at the university, I should hardly get a degree. But hear how Providence interfered in my favour: the ship was gone on to Bourdeaux before I got from prison, and was wrecked at the mouth of the Garonne, and every one of the crew were drowned. It happened the last great storm. There was a ship at that time ready for Holland; I embarked, and in nine days, thank my God, I arrived safe at Rotterdam; whence I traveled by land to Leyden, and whence I now write.

“You may expect some account of this country; and though I am not well qualified for such an undertaking, yet I shall endeavour to satisfy some part of your expectations. Nothing surprised me more than the books every day published descriptive of the manners of this country. Any young man, who takes it into his head to publish his travels, visits the countries he intends to describe; passes through them with as much inattention as his valet de chambre; and, consequently, not having a fund himself to fill a volume, he applies to those who wrote before him,

and gives us the manners of a country—not as he must have seen them, but such as they might have been fifty years before.

“The modern Dutchman is quite a different creature from him of former times; he in every thing imitates a Frenchman, but in his easy, disengaged air, which is the result of keeping polite company. The Dutchman is vastly ceremonious, and is perhaps what a Frenchman might have been in the reign of Louis XIV. Such are the better bred; but the downright Hollander is one of the oddest figures in nature: upon a head of lank hair he wears a half-cocked narrow hat, laced with black riband; no coat, but seven waistcoats, and nine pairs of breeches—so that his hips reach almost up to his arm-pits. This well-clothed vegetable is now fit to see company, or to make love. But what a pleasing creature is the object of his appetite! Why, she wears a large fur cap with a deal of Flanders lace; and for every pair of breeches he carries, she puts on two petticoats.

“A Dutch lady burns nothing about her phlegmatic admirer but his tobacco. You must know, sir, every woman carries in her hand a stove with coals in it, which, when she sits, she snugs under her petticoats; and at this chimney dozing Strephon lights his pipe. I take it that this continual smoking is what gives the man the ruddy, healthful complexion he generally wears, by draining his superfluous moisture; while the woman, deprived of this amusement, overflows with such viscidities as tint the complexion, and give that paleness of visage which low fenny grounds and moist air conspire to cause.

“A Dutch woman and Scottish will well bear an opposition. The one is pale and fat, the other lean and ruddy; the one walks as if she were straddling after a go-cart, and the other takes too masculine a stride. I shall not endeavour to deprive either country of its share of beauty; but must say, that, of all objects on this earth, an English farmer's daughter is most charming. Every woman there is a complete beauty, while the higher class of women want many of the requisites to make them even tolerable. Their pleasures here are very dull, though very various. You may smoke, you may doze, you may go to the Italian comedy—as good an amusement as either of the former. This entertainment always brings in harlequin, who is generally a magician; and, in consequence of his diabolical art, performs a thousand tricks on the rest of the persons of the drama, who are all fools. I have seen the pit in a roar of laughter at this humour, when with his sword he touches the glass from which another was drinking. 'Twas not his face they laughed at, for that was masked; they must have seen something vastly queer in the wooden sword, that neither I, nor you, sir, were you there, could see.

“In winter, when their canals are frozen, every house is forsaken, and all people are on the ice; sleds drawn by horses, and skating, are at that time the reigning amusements. They have boats here that slide on the ice, and are driven by the winds. When they spread all their sails they go more than a mile and a half a minute, and their motion is so rapid that the eye can scarcely accompany them. Their ordinary manner of travelling is very cheap and very convenient: they sail in covered boats drawn by horses; and in these you are sure to meet people of all nations. Here the Dutch slumber, the French chatter, and the English play at cards. Any man who likes company may have them to his taste. For my part, I generally detached myself from all society, and was wholly taken up in observing the face of the country. Nothing can equal its beauty; wherever I turn my eyes, fine houses, elegant gardens, statues, grottoes, vistas, presented themselves; but when you enter their towns,

you are charmed beyond description. No misery is to be seen here; every one is usefully employed.

"Scotland and this country bear the highest contrast. There, hills and rocks intercept every prospect; here, 'tis all a continued plain. There, you might see a well-dressed duchess issuing from a dirty close; and here, a dirty Dutchman inhabiting a palace. The Scots may be compared to a tulip planted in dung; but I never see a Dutchman in his own house, but I think of a magnificent Egyptian temple dedicated to an ox.

"Physic is by no means taught so well here as in Edinburgh; and in all Leyden there are but four British students, owing to all necessities being so extremely dear, and the professors so very lazy (the chemical professor excepted) that we don't much care to come hither. I am not certain how long my stay here may be; however, I expect to have the happiness of seeing you at Kilmore, if I can, next March.

"Direct to me, if I am honoured with a letter from you, to Madam Diallion's, at Leyden.

"Thou best of men, may Heaven guard and preserve you and those you love!

"OLIVER GOLDSMITH."

Several anecdotes are narrated in connection with his voyage to Holland, of which we quote the following:

"In Ireland a story is told, that, being plunged into further difficulties by the departure of the ship with a portion of his baggage on board, he was recommended to follow her on his release from prison, rather than proceed to Holland; but he exclaimed, with characteristic simplicity, 'What is the use of that? Sure it will be sent after me any where!' Another jest against him, taken like several more from his own writings, has likewise found currency: that in a moment of absence he committed the blunder imputed to the philosophic wanderer in his novel, of proceeding to Holland to teach the natives English, when he himself knew nothing of Dutch. And considering the diversity of route between that which he intended to take and that actually pursued—Bourdeaux and Rotterdam—without stating more explicitly the reasons for deviating so widely from his first route, it may be difficult to disprove any story, however absurd; excepting we believe what is probably true—that, committing his destiny to chance, he cared not on what part of the continent he was flung."

At Leyden he does not appear to have acquired professional, so much as miscellaneous, knowledge. His mind was obviously more intent upon culling the flowers of poetry than in accumulating the science necessary to the future physician. He was as reckless and imprudent as ever, and was often reduced to the greatest indigence and distress. Though he was obliged to borrow small sums, and sometimes resorted to play to better his fortunes, (and mostly with desperate results,) his independence, cheerfulness and gaiety were never abated. If taxed, he admitted his folly, and promised amendment for the future. But each successive act was a new imprudence, only varied in circumstances or increased in degree. It is remarked that, amid all his mishaps and reverses, he carried about him an elevation

of mind, and philosophical tone and manner, which, with his unaffected simplicity and scholastic conversation, won the interest and regard of every discerning man who approached him.

After residing at Leyden a year, he conceived the design of travelling over Europe on foot. One morning he counted to Dr. Ellis a considerable sum, the results of a venture at play, which was sufficient perhaps, with economy, to defray his expenses. Being advised not to trust again to the fickleness of chance, but to hoard what he had as a provision for the future, he promised, and no doubt intended, compliance. But he was again seduced to the scene of his former success, and was punished by losing all he possessed.

Undaunted by the fear of physical want, with a mind pliant under misfortune, and a body capable of fatigue, he resolved to set out on his journey without a shilling. But his friend Ellis gave him his purse, which, though intended for his journey, was lavishly exhausted in the silly purchase of some rare plants which he supposed would gratify his uncle in Ireland. Thus reduced almost to destitution, with a single clean shirt, he started upon his tour.

The adventures of this journey, now very imperfectly known, might have supplied the materials for an amusing narrative. Goldsmith wrote an account of it for his uncle Contarine, which, though described as a very remarkable performance, was unhappily lost in a fire. Sundry allusions to this romantic peregrination are to be met with in his works, particularly in George's history in the *Vicar of Wakefield*. His probable appearance, mode of travelling, and objects, are felicitously described by himself, in the phrase, "a philosophic vagabond." There is little doubt he had in view the example of the famous Baron Holberg, whose similar exploit at an early age, and the splendour of his subsequent career, are celebrated in his *Enquiry into Polite Learning*. However Quixotic the scheme, the world has no reason to regret its accomplishment, since it is indebted to this journey for one of the most finished and beautiful poems in the English language.

Having fought his way through a considerable part of France, (where, at the University of Louvain, he is supposed to have taken his degree of bachelor of medicine,) Switzerland, and Germany, to Padua in Italy, he returned to England, and landed at Dover on the 1st of February, 1756. In the utmost want he travelled to London, and sought employment among the druggists of the metropolis. An obscure chemist engaged his services from feelings of compassion. It was probably to this period of his life he inadvertently alluded, when, ten years after, he surprised a brilliant company at Sir Joshua Reynolds's, by beginning a story—"When I lived among the beggars of



Axe Lane——.” The late ingenious Richard Sharp remembered, from motives of curiosity, visiting the shop in which Goldsmith was employed, in company with one of his old friends, then recently deceased. We may judge of the extremity to which he was reduced, when Dr. Sleigh, his old school-fellow and friend, did not recognise him from the shabbiness of his attire. Goldsmith writes to Mr. Cooke—“Notwithstanding it was Sunday, and I had on my best clothes, Sleigh scarcely knew me; such is the tax the unfortunate always pay to poverty. However, when he did recollect me, I found his heart as warm as ever, and he shared his purse with me so long as he remained in London.”

With the aid received from this gentleman, Goldsmith was enabled to set up as a physician. He bought a second-hand green velvet suit of clothes. As the coat had a patch on the left breast which was very perceptible in conference, Goldsmith, during his visits to a lady who was his patient, placed his hat over it to conceal the imperfection. The constant recurrence of the same continued attitude set to work the prying eye of curiosity, which detected the blemish to the no small amusement of the observers.

He was engaged about this time with Richardson as a proof-reader; and this occupation, together with an occasional medical fee, enabled him to live. But this mode of life proving insufficient or precarious, he accepted an ushership, toward the end of 1756, under the late Dr. John Milner. His benevolence and improvidence continued unabated in a situation which furnished so limited a salary as this. Mr. Prior says—

“With the scholars he was a favourite, being ever ready to indulge them in certain, not very expensive indeed, schoolboy dainties, whenever his pecuniary means permitted; and he was not over strict in that discipline which, however necessary to observe, a man of amiable disposition occasionally feels reluctant to enforce. His benevolent feelings appeared always active; mendicants rarely quitted him without relief; and a tale of distress roused all his sympathies. His small supplies were thus exhausted frequently before the stated salary became due; when Mrs. Milner would say to him with a smile, upon application for an advance—‘You had better, Mr. Goldsmith, let me take care of your money, as I do for some of the young gentlemen;’ to which he would reply, in the same spirit of good humour, ‘In truth, madam, there is equal need.’”

He next agreed to write for the *Monthly Review*, conducted by Mr. Griffiths, a bookseller. A few months terminated this connection, Goldsmith complaining that his articles were altered and interpolated. Mr. Griffiths’ copy of the *Review* having been obtained by Mr. Prior, he is able to indicate the numerous pieces which the poet contributed, some of which, it is hoped, have found place in Mr. Prior’s collection.

The accidental mention by Goldsmith, in a letter to Mrs. Lawder, of some names eminent in literature, brought to London his brother Charles, to share his supposed fortune or to partake of his success. Oliver being then connected with the *Monthly Review*, he was surprised to find him the occupant of a small room, in a daily struggle for daily bread. When he expressed his disappointment, Oliver gaily replied, "All in good time, my dear boy; I shall be richer by and by. Besides, you see I am not in positive want. Addison, let me tell you, wrote his poem of the Campaign in a garret in the Haymarket, three stories high; and you see I am not come to that yet, for I have only got to the *second* story."

The following delightful letter was written soon after quitting the *Review*. His heart, it will be perceived, still vividly retained the scenes of his youth, while his understanding was convinced of the defects of its society.

"To Daniel Hodson, Esq., at Lishoy, near Ballymahon, Ireland.

"Dear sir,—It may be four years since my last letters went to Ireland, to you in particular. I received no answer—probably because you never wrote to me. My brother Charles, however, informs me of the fatigue you were at in soliciting a subscription to assist me, not only among my friends and relatives, but acquaintance in general. Though my pride might feel some repugnance at being thus relieved, yet my gratitude can suffer no diminution. How much am I obliged to you, to them, for such generosity, or (why should not your virtues have their proper name?) for such charity to me at that juncture. Sure I am born to ill fortune, to be so much a debtor and unable to repay. But to say no more of this: too many professions of gratitude are often considered as indirect petitions for future favours. Let me only add, that my not receiving that supply was the cause of my present establishment at London. You may easily imagine what difficulties I had to encounter, left as I was without friends, recommendations, money, or impudence; and that in a country where being born an Irishman was sufficient to keep me unemployed. Many in such circumstances would have had recourse to the friar's cord, or the suicide's halter; but, with all my follies, I had principle to resist the one, and resolution to combat the other.

"I suppose you desire to know my present situation. As there is nothing in it at which I should blush, or which mankind could censure, I see no reason for making it a secret. In short, by a very little practice as a physician, and a very little reputation as a poet, I make a shift to live. Nothing is more apt to introduce us to the gates of the muses than poverty; but it were well if they only left us at the door. The mischief is, they sometimes choose to give us their company to the entertainment; and want, instead of being gentleman-usher, often turns master of the ceremonies.

"Thus, upon learning I write, no doubt you imagine I starve; and the name of an author naturally reminds you of a garret. In this particular I do not think proper to deceive my friends. But whether I eat or starve, live in a first floor or four pair of stairs high, I still remember them with ardour; nay, my very country comes in for a share of my affection. Unaccountable fondness for country—this *maladie du pays*, as the French call it: unaccountable that he should still have an affec-

tion for a place who never, when in it, received above common civility; who never brought any thing out of it except his brogue and his blunders. Surely my affection is equally ridiculous with the Scotsman's, who refused to be cured of the itch, because it made him unco' thoughtful of his wife and bonny Inverary.

"But now to be serious—let me ask myself what gives me a wish to see Ireland again? The country is a fine one, perhaps?—no. There is good company in Ireland?—no. The conversation there is generally made up of a smutty toast or a bawdy song; the vivacity supported by some humble cousin, who had just folly enough to earn his dinner. Then perhaps there 's more wit and learning among the Irish?—Oh, lord, no! There has been more money spent in the encouragement of the Padareen mare there one season, than given in rewards to learned men since the time of Usher. All their productions in learning amount to perhaps a translation, or a few tracts in divinity; and all their productions in wit to just nothing at all. Why the plague, then, so fond of Ireland? Then all at once, because you, my dear friend, and a few more who are exceptions to the general picture, have a residence there. This it is that gives me all the pangs I feel in separation. I confess I carry this spirit sometimes to the souring the pleasures I at present possess. If I go to the opera, where Signora Columba pours out all the mazes of melody, I sit and sigh for Lishoy fireside, and Johnny Armstrong's 'Last Good Night,' from Peggy Golden. If I climb Hampstead hill, than where nature never exhibited a more magnificent prospect, I confess it fine; but then I had rather be placed on the little mount before Lishoy gate, and there take in (to me) the most pleasing horizon in nature.

"Before Charles came hither, my thoughts sometimes found refuge from severe studies among my friends in Ireland. I fancied strange revolutions at home; but I find it was the rapidity of my own motion that gave an imaginary one to objects really at rest. No alterations there. Some friends, he tells me, are still lean, but very rich; others very fat, but still very poor. Nay, all the news I hear of you is, that you sally out in visits among the neighbours, and sometimes make a migration from the blue bed to the brown. I could from my heart wish that you and she (Mrs. Hodson), and Lishoy and Ballymahon, and all of you, would fairly make a migration into Middlesex; though, upon second thoughts, this might be attended with a few inconveniences. Therefore, as the mountain will not come to Mahomed, why Mahomed shall go to the mountain; or, to speak plain English, as you cannot conveniently pay me a visit, if next summer I can contrive to be absent six weeks from London, I shall spend three of them among my friends in Ireland.\* But first, believe me, my design is purely to visit, and neither to cut a figure nor levy contributions—neither to excite envy nor solicit favour; in fact, my circumstances are adapted to neither. I am too poor to be gazed at, and too rich to need assistance.

"You see, dear Dan, how long I have been talking about myself; but attribute my vanity to my affection: as every man is fond of himself, and I consider you as a second self, I imagine you will consequently be pleased with these instances of egotism. . . . My dear sir, these things give me real uneasiness, and I could wish to redress them. But at present there is hardly a kingdom in Europe in which I am not a debtor. I have already discharged my most threatening and pressing demands, for we must be just before we can be grateful. For the rest, I need not say (you know I am) your affectionate kinsman,

"OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

"Temple Exchange Coffee-house, near Temple Bar, (where you may direct an answer,) December 27, 1757."

In the early part of the following year, appeared a translation by Goldsmith, from the French, entitled "The Memoirs of a Protestant," containing nearly six hundred pages octavo. The version is pronounced vigorous, easy, and perspicuous, but without pretension to severe accuracy. The title-page bears the name of James Willington, one evidently fictitious and assumed. Goldsmith did not choose to come before the public by name, in the humble character of translator, and, being constantly impressed with the idea of one day taking a high place in letters, he was unwilling to hazard his name with a production of inferior order. At that day, too, authors were more coy in committing their names to the tender mercies of literary criticism than at present.

Besides contributing to the Grand Magazine, a repertory which was projected this year by a few printers and booksellers, he was engaged in the preparation of a work of higher pretensions than any which had yet employed his pen, as appears by the following beautiful letter :

*"To Edward Mills, Esq. near Roscommon, Ireland.*

"Dear sir,—You have quitted, I find, that plan of life which you once intended to pursue,<sup>1</sup> and given up ambition for domestic tranquillity. Were I to consult your satisfaction alone in this change, I have the utmost reason to congratulate your choice; but when I consider my own, I cannot avoid feeling some regret that one of my few friends has declined a pursuit in which he had every reason to expect success. The truth is, like the rest of the world, I am self-interested in my concern; and do not so much consider the happiness you have acquired, as the honour I have probably lost in the change. I have often let my fancy loose when you were the subject, and have imagined you gracing the bench, or thundering at the bar; while I have taken no small pride to myself, and whispered all that I could come near that this was my cousin. Instead of this, it seems you are merely contented to be a happy man—to be esteemed only by your acquaintance—to cultivate your paternal acres—to take unmolested a nap under one of your own hawthorns, or in Mrs. Mills's bedchamber, which even a poet must confess is rather the more comfortable place of the two.

"But however your resolutions may be altered with respect to your situation in life, I persuade myself they are unalterable with regard to your friends in it. I cannot think the world has taken such entire possession of that heart (once so susceptible of friendship) as not to have left a corner there for a friend or two; but I flatter myself that even I have my place among the number. This I have a claim to from the similitude of our dispositions; or, setting that aside, I can demand it as a right by the most equitable law in nature—I mean that of retaliation; for, indeed, you have more than your share in mine.

"I am a man of few professions; and yet this very instant I cannot avoid the painful apprehension that my present professions (which speak not half my feelings) should be considered only as a pretext to cover a request, as I have a request to make. No, my dear Ned, I know

---

<sup>2</sup> He had been intended for the bar.

you are too generous to think so; and you know me to be too proud to stoop to unnecessary insincerity. I have a request, it is true, to make; but as I know to whom I am a petitioner, I make it without diffidence or confusion. It is in short this: I am going to publish a book in London, entitled 'An Essay on the Present State of Taste and Literature in Europe.' Every work published here the printers in Ireland republish there, without giving the author the least consideration for his copy. I would in this respect disappoint their avarice, and have all the additional advantages that may result from the sale of my performance there to myself.

"The book is now printing in London; and I have requested Dr. Radcliff, Mr. Lawder, Mr. Bryanton, my brother, Mr. Henry Goldsmith, and brother-in-law Mr. Hodson, to circulate my proposals among their acquaintance. The same request I now make to you, and have accordingly given directions to Mr. Bradley, bookseller, in Dame street, Dublin, to send you a hundred proposals. Whatever subscriptions, pursuant to those proposals, you may receive, when collected may be transmitted to Mr. Bradley, who will give a receipt for the money, and be accountable for the books. I shall not, by a paltry apology, excuse myself for putting you to this trouble. Were I not convinced that you found more pleasure in doing good-natured things than uneasiness in being employed in them, I should not have singled you out on this occasion. It is probable you would comply with such a request if it tended to the encouragement of any man of learning whatsoever; what, then, may not he expect who has claims of family and friendship to enforce his?

"I am, dear sir, your sincere friend and humble servant,

"OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

"London, Temple Exchange Coffee-house,

"August 7, 1758."

A week from this time he addressed to his friend Bryanton, an epistle, which, in that part relating to his future fame, though jestingly written, may have been more seriously entertained than he was willing openly to avow. Mr. Prior feelingly suggests, from his own embarrassment in ascertaining the earlier writings of the poet, that a sally referring to that topic has proved as prophetic as it then was amusing.

"*To Robert Bryanton, Esq., at Ballymahon, Ireland.*

"Dear sir—I have heard it remarked, I believe by yourself, that they who are drunk, or out of their wits, fancy every body else in the same condition: mine is a friendship that neither distance nor time can efface, which is probably the reason that, for the soul of me, I can't avoid thinking yours of the same complexion; and yet I have many reasons for being of a contrary opinion, else why in so long an absence was I never made a partner in your concerns? To hear of your successes would have given me the utmost pleasure; and a communication of your very disappointments would divide the uneasiness I too frequently feel for my own. Indeed, my dear Bob, you don't conceive how unkindly you have treated one whose circumstances afford him few prospects of pleasure, except those reflected from the happiness of his friends. However, since you have not let me hear from you, I have in some measure disappointed your neglect by frequently thinking of you. Every day do I remember the calm anecdotes of your life, from the fireside to the easy chair; recall the various adventures that first cemented our friendship—

the school, the college, or the tavern; preside in fancy over your cards; am displeased at your bad play when the rubber goes against you, though not with all that agony of soul as when I was once your partner.

"Is it not strange that two of such like affections should be so much separated and so differently employed as we are? You seem placed at the centre of fortune's wheel, and let it revolve never so fast, seem insensible of the motion. I seem to have been tied to the circumference, and turned disagreeably round like a wheel—in a whirligig. I sate down with an intention to chide, and yet methinks I have forgot my resentment already. The truth is, I am a simpleton with regard to you; I may attempt to bluster, but, like Anacreon, my heart is respondent only to softer affections. And yet, now I think on't again, I will be angry. God's curse, sir! who am I? Eh! what am I? Do you know whom you have offended? A man whose character may one of these days be mentioned with profound respect in a German comment or Dutch dictionary; whose name you will probably hear ushered in by a *Doctissimus Doctissimorum*, or heel-pieced with a long Latin termination. Think how Goldsmithius, or Gubblegurchius, or some such sound, as rough as a nutmeg-grater, will become me? Think of that!—God's curse, sir! who am I? I must own my ill-natured contemporaries have not hitherto paid me those honours I have had such just reason to expect. I have not yet seen my face reflected in all the lively display of red and white paints on any sign-posts in the suburbs. Your handkerchief weavers seem as yet unacquainted with my merits or physiognomy, and the very snuff-box makers appear to have forgot their respect. Tell them for me, they are a set of Gothic, barbarous, ignorant scoundrels. There will come a day, no doubt it will—I beg you may live a couple of hundred years longer only to see the day—when the Scaligers and Daciers will vindicate my character, give learned editions of my labours, and bless the times with copious comments on the text. You shall see how they will fish up the heavy scoundrels who disregard me now, or will then offer to cavil at my productions. How will they bewail the times that suffered so much genius to lie neglected. If ever my works find their way to Tartary or China, I know the consequence. Suppose one of your Chinese Owonowitzers instructing one of your Tartarian Chianobacchi—you see I use Chinese names to show my own erudition, as I shall soon make our Chinese talk like an Englishman to show his. This may be the subject of the lecture:—

"Oliver Goldsmith flourished in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. He lived to be a hundred and three years old, and in that age may justly be styled the sun of literature and the Confucius of Europe. Many of his earlier writings to the regret of the learned world, were anonymous, and have probably been lost, because united with those of others. The first avowed piece the world has of his is entitled an "Essay on the Present State of Taste and Literature in Europe"—a work well worth its weight in diamonds. In this he profoundly explains what learning is, and what learning is not. In this he proves that blockheads are not men of wit, and yet that men of wit are actually blockheads."

"But as I choose neither to tire my Chinese philosopher, nor you, nor myself, I must discontinue the oration, in order to give you a pause for admiration; and I find myself most violently disposed to admire too. Let me, then, stop my fancy to take a view of my future self; and, as the boys say, light down to see myself on horseback. Well, now I am down, where the d—l is I? Oh, Gods! Gods! here in a garret writing for bread, and expecting to be dunned for a milk score! However, dear

Bob, whether in penury or affluence, serious or gay, I am ever wholly thine.

“ OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

“ London, Temple Exchange Coffee-house,  
“ Temple Bar, Aug. 14, 1758.”

“ Give my—no, not compliments neither, but something [the] most warm and sincere wish that you can conceive, to your mother, Mrs. Bryanton, to Miss Bryanton, to yourself; and if there be a favourite dog in the family, let me be remembered to it.” pp. 142, 143.

The following letters, written soon after the preceding, were intended to forward the sale of his book, and are too characteristic to be omitted :

“ *To Mrs. Jane Lawder.*

“ If you should ask why, in an interval of so many years, you never heard from me, permit me, madam, to ask the same question. I have the best excuse in recrimination. I wrote to Kilmore from Leyden in Holland, from Louvain in Flanders, and Rouen in France, but received no answer. To what could I attribute this silence but to displeasure and forgetfulness? Whether I was right in my conjecture I do not pretend to determine; but this I must ingenuously own, that I have a thousand times in my turn endeavoured to forget them whom I could not but look upon as forgetting me. I have attempted to blot their names from my memory, and, I confess it, spent whole days in efforts to tear their image from my heart. Could I have succeeded, you had not now been troubled with this renewal of a discontinued correspondence; but as every effort the restless make to procure sleep serves but to keep them waking, all my attempts contributed to impress what I would forget deeper on my imagination. But this subject I would willingly turn from, and yet, ‘for the soul of me,’ I can’t till I have said all.

“ I was, madam, when I discontinued writing to Kilmore, in such circumstances, that all my endeavours to continue your regards might be attributed to wrong motives. My letters might be looked upon as the petitions of a beggar, and not the offerings of a friend; while all my professions, instead of being considered as the result of disinterested esteem, might be ascribed to venal insincerity. I believe, indeed, you had too much generosity to place them in such a light, but I could not bear even the shadow of such a suspicion. The most delicate friendships are always most sensible of the slightest invasion, and the strongest jealousy is ever attendant on the warmest regard. I could not—I own I could not—continue a correspondence; for every acknowledgment for past favours might be considered as an indirect request for future ones, and where it might be thought I gave my heart from a motive of gratitude alone, when I was conscious of having bestowed it on much more disinterested principles.

“ It is true this conduct might have been simple enough, but yourself must confess it was in character. Those who know me at all, know that I have always been actuated by different principles from the rest of mankind, and while none regarded the interest of his friend more, no man on earth regarded his own less. I have often affected bluntness to avoid the imputation of flattery, have frequently seemed to overlook those merits too obvious to escape notice, and pretended disregard to those instances of good nature and good sense which I could not fail tacitly to applaud; and all this lest I should be ranked amongst the grinning tribe, who say ‘very true’ to all that is said, who fill a vacant chair at a tea-table, whose narrow souls never moved in a wider circle than

the circumference of a guinea, and who had rather be reckoning the money in your pocket than the virtue in your breast. All this, I say, I have done, and a thousand other very silly though very disinterested things, in my time, and for all which no soul cares a farthing about me. God's curse, madam! is it to be wondered, that he should once in his life forget you, who has been all his life forgetting himself?

"However, it is probable you may one of these days see me turned into a perfect hunk, and as dark and intricate as a mouse-hole. I have already given my landlady orders for an entire reform in the state of my finances. I declaim against hot suppers, drink less sugar in my tea, and check my grate with brick-bats. Instead of hanging my room with pictures, I intend to adorn it with maxims of frugality. Those will make pretty furniture enough, and won't be a bit too expensive; for I shall draw them all out with my own hands, and my landlady's daughter shall frame them with the pairings of my black waistcoat. Each maxim is to be inscribed on a sheet of clean paper, and wrote with my best pen; of which the following will serve as a specimen:—'Look sharp;' 'Mind the main chance;' 'Money is money now;' 'If you have a thousand pounds you can put your hands by your sides, and say you are worth a thousand pounds every day of the year;' 'Take a farthing from a hundred, and it will be a hundred no longer.' Thus, which way soever I turn my eyes, they are sure to meet one of those friendly monitors; and as we are told of an actor who hung his room round with looking-glass to correct the defects of his person, my apartment shall be furnished in a peculiar manner, to correct the errors of my mind.

"Faith! madam, I heartily wish to be rich, if it were only for this reason, to say without a blush how much I esteem you; but, alas! I have many a fatigue to encounter before that happy time comes, when your poor old simple friend may again give loose to the luxuriance of his nature, sitting by Kilmore fireside, recount the various adventures of a hard-fought life, laugh over the follies of the day, join his flute to your harpsichord, and forget that ever he starved in those streets where Butler and Otway starved before him.

"And now I mention those great names—My uncle!—he is no more that soul of fire as when once I knew him. Newton and Swift grew dim with age as well as he. But what shall I say?—his mind was too active an inhabitant not to disorder the feeble mansion of its abode; for the richest jewels soonest wear their settings. Yet who but the fool would lament his condition! He now forgets the calamities of life. Perhaps indulgent Heaven has given him a foretaste of that tranquillity here, which he so well deserves hereafter.

"But I must come to business; for business, as one of my maxims tells me, must be minded or lost. I am going to publish in London a book entitled 'The Present State of Taste and Literature in Europe.' The booksellers in Ireland republish every performance there without making the author any consideration. I would, in this respect, disappoint their avarice, and have all the profits of my labour to myself. I must, therefore, request Mr. Lawder to circulate among his friends and acquaintances a hundred of my proposals, which I have given the bookseller, Mr. Bradley, in Dame street, directions to send to him. If, in pursuance of such circulation, he should receive any subscriptions, I entreat when collected they may be sent to Mr. Bradley as aforesaid, who will give a receipt, and be accountable for the work, or a return of the subscription. If this request (which, if it be complied with, will in some measure be an encouragement to a man of learning) should be disagreeable or troublesome, I would not press it; for I would be the last man on earth



to have my labours go a begging; but if I know Mr. Lawder (and sure I ought to know him), he will accept the employment with pleasure. All I can say—if he writes a book, I will get him two hundred subscribers, and those of the best wits in Europe.

“Whether this request is complied with or not, I shall not be uneasy; but there is one petition I must make to him and to you, which I solicit with the warmest ardour, and in which I cannot bear a refusal. I mean, dear madam, that I may be allowed to subscribe myself,

“Your ever affectionate and obliged kinsman,

“OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

“Now see how I blot and blunder when I am asking a favour.

“Temple Exchange Coffee-house, Temple Bar,

“August 15, 1758.”

“*To David Hodson, Esq. at Lishoy, near Ballymahon, Ireland.*

“Dear sir—You cannot expect regularity in one who is regular in nothing. Nay, were I forced to love you by rule, I dare venture to say I could never do it sincerely. Take me then with all my faults. Let me write when I please; for you see I say what I please, and am only thinking aloud when writing to you. I suppose you have heard of my intention of going to the East Indies. The place of my destination is one of the factories on the coast of Coromandel, and I go in quality of physician and surgeon; for which the Company has signed my warrant, which has already cost me £10. I must also pay £50 for my passage, and £10 for my sea-stores; and the other incidental expenses of my equipment will amount to £60 or £70 more. The salary is but trifling, viz. £100 per annum; but the other advantages, if a person be prudent, are considerable. The practice of the place, if I am rightly informed, generally amounts to not less than £1000 per annum, for which the appointed physician has an exclusive privilege. This, with the advantages resulting from trade, with the high interest which money bears, viz. £20 per cent., are the inducements which persuade me to undergo the fatigues of the sea, the dangers of war, and the still greater dangers of the climate; which induce me to leave a place where I am every day gaining friends and esteem, and where I might enjoy all the conveniences of life.

“I am certainly wrong not to be contented with what I already possess, trifling as it is; for should I ask myself one serious question—What is it I want?—what can I answer? My desires are as capricious as the big-bellied woman's who longed for a piece of her husband's nose. I have no certainty, it is true; but why cannot I do as some men of more merit, who have lived on more precarious terms? Scarron used jestingly to call himself the Marquis of Quenault, which was the name of the bookseller who employed him; and why may not I assert my privilege and equality on the same pretensions?

“Yet, upon deliberation, whatever airs I give myself on this side of the water, my dignity, I fancy, would be evaporated before I reached the other. I know you have in Ireland a very different idea of a man who writes for bread, though Swift and Steele did so in the earliest part of their lives. You imagine, I suppose, that every author by profession lives in a garret, wears shabby clothes, and converses with the meanest company. Yet I do not believe there is one single writer who has abilities to translate a French novel, that does not keep better company, wear finer clothes, and live more genteelly, than many who pride themselves for nothing else in Ireland. I confess it again, my dear Dan, that

nothing but the wildest ambition could prevail on me to leave the enjoyment of the refined conversation which I am sometimes admitted to partake in, for uncertain fortune and paltry show. You cannot conceive how I am sometimes divided ; to leave all that is dear to me gives me pain ; but when I consider I may possibly acquire a genteel independence for life ; when I think of that dignity which philosophy claims to raise itself above contempt and ridicule ; when I think thus, I eagerly long to embrace every opportunity of separating myself from the vulgar, as much in my circumstances as I am already in my sentiments.

"I am going to publish a book, for an account of which I refer you to a letter which I wrote to my brother Goldsmith. Circulate for me among your acquaintance a hundred proposals, which I have given orders may be sent to you ; and if, in pursuance of such circulation, you should receive any subscriptions, let them, when collected, be transmitted to Mr. Bradley, who will give a receipt for the same.

"I know not how my desire of seeing Ireland, which had so long slept, has again revived with so much ardour. So weak is my temper and so unsteady, that I am frequently tempted, particularly when low-spirited, to return home and leave my fortune, though just beginning to look kinder. But it shall not be. In five or six years I expect to indulge these transports. I find I want constitution, and a strong steady disposition, which alone makes men great. I will, however, correct my faults, since I am conscious of them." pp. 147—149.

But notwithstanding his contributions to periodicals, the prospect of a speedy publication of his *Enquiry*, and the translation of a French novel, called "*Memoirs of my Lady B.*," which were performed this year, still the necessity of making some provision for future wants, was felt to be so urgent that he looked solicitously around for other sources of income. An employment in the service of the East India Company was first projected, and finally a surgical connection with the army or navy. To procure this appointment, it was necessary to submit to an examination at Surgeons' Hall. As his apparel at this juncture was the worse for wear, he applied to Griffiths for the use of an appropriate dress upon the occasion. It was procured, and he presented himself before his examiners as a candidate for the station of Hospital-mate. But lo ! whether from the neglect of professional reading since he left Leyden, or the absence of nerve to call up the knowledge he actually possessed, certain it is, he was rejected as incompetent ! Mr. Prior has inserted this extract from the books of the college :

"At a court of examiners, held at the Theatre, 21st December, 1758. Present—

"James Bernard, mate to an hospital. Oliver Goldsmith, found not qualified for ditto."

This disappointment was not merely a wound inflicted upon his pride, severe and humiliating as was the infliction, but it involved a pecuniary detriment. Such an issue as rejection had not been anticipated. He had contracted debts which he

was unable to relieve, except by the pledge of the borrowed garments. The tailor required payment, and Mr. Griffiths became clamorous, abusive, and threatening. Goldsmith could not disclose the secret of his situation, preferring the imputation of dishonesty to the mortification of his pride. The *Monthly Review* assailed, in a petulant manner, his moral and literary character; and the story of his default was ungenerously and disparagingly spread by the proprietor, through the literary circles of London, long after the fact occurred. Griffiths felt or feigned apprehension for the safety of his books in the possession of Goldsmith, and wrote him a menacing and intemperate letter. The poet replied in terms of deprecation and apology, admitting the impropriety of the act; but this served only as the text of a rejoinder replete with the keenest reproaches. Another and certainly very touching letter was written by the accused, from which it appears how extreme and desperate were the affairs of poor Goldsmith on the one hand, and how inhuman and unrelenting was the conduct of his accuser and creditor on the other. By the endorsement of Griffiths, this note was received in January, 1759.

"Sir,—I know of no misery but a jail to which my own imprudences and your letter seem to point. I have seen it inevitable these three or four weeks, and, by heavens! request it as a favour—as a favour that may prevent somewhat more fatal. I have been some years struggling with a wretched being—with all that contempt that indigence brings with it—with all those strong passions which make contempt insupportable. What, then, has a jail that is formidable? I shall at least have the society of wretches, and such is, to me, true society. I tell you again and again, I am now neither able nor willing to pay you a farthing, but I will be punctual to any appointment you or the tailor shall make; thus far, at least, I do not act the sharper, since, unable to pay my debts one way, I would willingly give some security another. No, sir, had I been a sharper, had I been possessed of less good nature and native generosity, I might surely now have been in better circumstances.

"I am guilty, I own, of meanness which poverty unavoidably brings with it; my reflections are filled with repentance for my imprudence, but not with any remorse for being a villain; that may be a character you unjustly charge me with. Your books, I can assure you, are neither pawned nor sold, but in the custody of a friend from whom my necessities obliged me to borrow some money: whatever becomes of my person you shall have them in a month. It is very possible both the reports you have heard and your own suggestions may have brought you false information with respect to my character; it is very possible that the man whom you now regard with detestation may inwardly burn with grateful resentment. It is very possible that, upon a second perusal of the letter I sent you, you may see the workings of a mind strongly agitated with gratitude and jealousy. If such circumstances should appear, at least spare invective till my book with Mr. Dodsley shall be published, and then perhaps you may see the bright side of a mind, when my professions shall not appear the dictates of necessity, but of choice.

"You seem to think Dr. Milner knew me not. Perhaps so; but he was a man I shall ever honour; but I have friendships only with the

dead ! I ask pardon for taking up so much time ; nor shall I add to it by any other professions than that I am,

" Sir, your humble servant,

" OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

" P. S. I shall expect impatiently the result of your resolutions."

The poet had furnished four articles for the Review of December number, 1758, to evince his gratitude for the loan, or in compensation for the use. A brief compilation now followed, by which the dispute with the exacting bookseller was settled for a time. The rancour, however, of Griffiths was not allayed, or another cause of enmity arose. His tongue was not only busy to the prejudice of the man he had so cruelly treated, but his Review was always the vehicle of biting sarcasm, or ill-tempered criticism, whenever Goldsmith or his writings were the subject of notice.

Unhappy as is the whole train of incidents connected with his application to Surgeons' Hall, yet it formed, if we may so speak, the crisis of his literary fate. His rejection detained him in England, where his stay was to reflect honour upon his country's literature. Hitherto he had been struggling with contempt, indigence, and obscurity. From this dark period of his history he began gradually to emerge into notice and applause.

We step aside from the current of his literary to exhibit him in his mental career, through the medium of an epistolary mirror. The letter we refer to, was written in February, 1759, and faithfully reflects the despondency and gloom of that unhappy period.

" *To the Reverend Henry Goldsmith, at Lowfield, near Ballymore, in Westmeath, Ireland.*

" Dear sir,—Your punctuality in answering a man whose trade is writing, is more than I had reason to expect ; and yet you see me generally fill a whole sheet, which is all the recompense I can make for being so frequently troublesome. The behaviour of Mr. Mills and Mr. Lawder is a little extraordinary. However, their answering neither you nor me, is a sufficient indication of their disliking the employment which I assigned them. As their conduct is different from what I had expected, so I have made an alteration in mine. I shall, the beginning of next month, send over two hundred and fifty books, which are all that I fancy can be well sold among you, and I would have you make some distinction in the persons who have subscribed. The money, which will amount to sixty pounds, may be left with Mr. Bradley as soon as possible. I am not certain but I shall quickly have occasion for it.

" I have met with no disappointment with respect to my East India voyage, nor are my resolutions altered ; though at the same time, I must confess, it gives me some pain to think I am almost beginning the world at the age of thirty-one. Though I never had a day's sickness since I saw you, yet I am not that strong, active man you once knew me. You scarcely can conceive how much eight years of disappointment, anguish, and study, have worn me down. If I remember right, you are seven or eight years older than me, yet I dare venture to say that if a stranger

saw us both he would pay me the honours of seniority. Imagine to yourself a pale, melancholy visage, with two great wrinkles between the eyebrows, with an eye disgustingly severe, and a big wig; and you may have a perfect picture of my present appearance. On the other hand, I conceive you as perfectly sleek and healthy, passing many a happy day among your own children, or those who knew you a child.

"Since I knew what it was to be a man, this is a pleasure I have not known. I have passed my days among a parcel of cool, designing beings, and have contracted all their suspicious manner in my own behaviour. I should actually be as unfit for the society of my friends at home, as I detest that which I am obliged to partake of here. I can now neither partake of the pleasure of a revel, nor contribute to raise its jollity. I can neither laugh nor drink; have contracted a hesitating disagreeable manner of speaking, and a visage that looks ill-nature itself; in short, I have thought myself into a settled melancholy, and an utter disgust of all that life brings with it. Whence this romantic turn that all our family are possessed with? Whence this love for every place and every country but that in which we reside—for every occupation but our own?—this desire of fortune, and yet this eagerness to dissipate? I perceive, my dear sir, that I am at intervals for indulging this splenetic manner, and following my own taste, regardless of yours.

"The reasons you have given me for breeding up your son a scholar, are judicious and convincing; I should, however, be glad to know for what particular profession he is designed. If he be assiduous and divested of strong passions (for passions in youth always lead to pleasure) he may do very well in your college; for it must be owned that the industrious poor have good encouragement there, perhaps better than in any other in Europe. But if he has ambition, strong passions, and an exquisite sensibility of contempt, do not send him there, unless you have no other trade for him but your own. It is impossible to conceive how much may be done by a proper education at home. A boy, for instance, who understands perfectly well Latin, French, arithmetic, and the principles of the civil law, and can write a fine hand, has an education that may qualify him for any undertaking; and these parts of learning should be carefully inculcated, let him be designed for whatever calling he will.

"Above all things, let him never touch a romance or novel; these paint beauty in colours more charming than nature, and describe happiness that man never tastes. How delusive, how destructive, are those pictures of consummate bliss! They teach the youthful mind to sigh after beauty and happiness that never existed; to despise the little good which fortune has mixed in our cup, by expecting more than she ever gave; and in general, take the word of a man who has seen the world, and has studied human nature more by experience than precept—take my word for it, I say, that books teach us very little of the world. The greatest merit in a state of poverty would only serve to make the possessor ridiculous—may distress, but cannot relieve him. Frugality, and even avarice, in the lower orders of mankind, are true ambition. These afford the only ladder for the poor to rise to preferment. Teach, then, my dear sir, to your son thrift and economy. Let his poor wandering uncle's example be placed before his eyes. I had learned from books to be disinterested and generous, before I was taught from experience the necessity of being prudent. I had contracted the habits and notions of a philosopher, while I was exposing myself to the approaches of insidious cunning; and often by being, even with my narrow finances, charitable

to excess, I forgot the rules of justice, and placed myself in the very situation of the wretch who thanked me for my bounty. When I am in the remotest part of the world, tell him this, and perhaps he may improve from my example. But I find myself again falling into my gloomy habits of thinking.

"My mother, I am informed, is almost blind; even though I had the utmost inclination to return home, under such circumstances I could not, for to behold her in distress without a capacity of relieving her from it would add much to my splenetic habit. Your last letter was much too short; it should have answered some queries I had made in my former. Just sit down as I do, and write forward until you have filled all your paper. It requires no thought, at least from the ease with which my own sentiments rise when they are addressed to you. For, believe me, my head has no share in all I write; my heart dictates the whole. Pray, give my love to Bob Bryanton, and entreat him from me not to drink. My dear sir, give me some account about poor Jenny. Yet her husband loves her; if so, she cannot be unhappy.

"I know not whether I should tell you—yet why should I conceal these trifles, or, indeed, any thing from you? There is a book of mine will be published in a few days—the *Life of a very extraordinary man*; no less than the great Voltaire. You know already by the title that it is no more than a catch-penny. However, I spent but four weeks on the whole performance, for which I received twenty pounds. When published I shall take some method of conveying it to you, unless you may think it dear of the postage, which may amount to four or five shillings. However, I fear you will not find an equivalent of amusement.

"Your last letter, I repeat it, was too short; you should have given me your opinion of the design of the heroi-comical poem which I sent you. You remember I intended to introduce the hero of the poem as lying in a paltry alehouse. You may take the following specimen of the manner, which I flatter myself is quite original. The room in which he lies may be described somewhat in this way:—

'The window, patch'd with paper, lent a ray  
That feebly show'd the state in which he lay;  
The sanded floor that grits beneath the tread,  
The humid wall with paltry pictures spread;  
The game of goose was there expos'd to view,  
And the twelve rules the royal martyr drew;  
The Seasons, fram'd with listing, found a place,  
And Prussia's monarch showed his lamp-black face.  
The morn was cold; he views with keen desire  
A rusty grate unconscious of a fire;  
An unpaid reckoning on the frieze was scored,  
And five crack'd teacups dress'd the chimney board.'

"And now imagine after his soliloquy the landlord to make his appearance, in order to dun him for the reckoning:—

'Not with that face, so servile and so gay,  
That welcomes every stranger that can pay:  
With sulky eye he smoked the patient man,  
Then pull'd his breeches tight, and thus began,' &c.

"All this is taken, you see, from nature. It is a good remark of Montaign's, that the wisest men often have friends with whom they do not care how much they play the fool. Take my present follies as instances of my regard. Poetry is a much easier and more agreeable species of composition than prose; and could a man live by it, it were

not unpleasant employment to be a poet. I am resolved to leave no space, though I should fill it up only by telling you, what you very well know already, I mean that

"I am your most affectionate friend and brother,

"OLIVER GOLDSMITH."

The life of Voltaire to which he alludes, appeared in fact a few days after the composition of the letter. Though he calls it a catch-penny, as it undoubtedly was to him, it is nevertheless a performance of considerable elegance. It is doubtless erroneous in point of fact, and unhappily in a part where accuracy might reasonably be expected. We refer to the *time* and *place* of the author's interviews with Voltaire, as it unfortunately happens that the sage of Ferney was not only not at Paris, when Goldsmith made the tour of the continent, but was absent from about 1750 to 1774. The passage is certainly striking, but we must forget the anacronism and misplaced *locus in quo*, and perhaps the assigned length of Voltaire's harangue, as not quite in keeping with the ordinary *regime* of social custom. We quote the passage referred to: "The person who writes this Memoir, who had the honour of being his (Voltaire's) acquaintance, remembers to have seen him in a select company of wits of both sexes at Paris when the subject happened to turn upon English taste and learning. Fontenelle, who was of the party, and who was unacquainted with the language of the authors he undertook to condemn, with a spirit truly vulgar began to revile both. Diderot, who liked the English, and knew something of their literary pretensions, attempted to vindicate their poetry and learning, but with unequal abilities. The company quickly perceived that Fontenelle was superior in the dispute, and were surprised at the silence which Voltaire had preserved all the former part of the night, particularly as the conversation turned upon one of his favourite topics.

"Fontenelle continued his triumph till about twelve o'clock, when Voltaire appeared at last aroused from his revery. His whole frame seemed animated. He began his defence with the utmost elegance, mixed with spirit, and now and then let fall the finest strokes of raillery upon his antagonist; and his harangue lasted till three in the morning. I must confess that, whether from national partiality or from the elegant sensibility of his manner, I never was so much charmed, nor did I ever remember so absolute a victory as he gained in this dispute."

In March was published for the Dodsleys, a book which brought him some money and an accession of fame; we mean "An Enquiry into the present state of Polite Learning in Europe." Except the Monthly Review, which was acrimonious and personal in its criticism, the periodical press was warm in its commendation.

About this time Kenrick, a noted libeller, appears upon the stage, who persecuted Goldsmith with coarse invective and illiberal censure to the end of his life. He wrote the unmanly attack upon his *Enquiry* in the *Monthly Review*. As a set-off to this, it may be mentioned, that he made the acquaintance, about the same time, of Doctor (afterwards Bishop) Percy, whose esteem of the man and admiration of his genius were unwavering during the poet's life, and were displayed in a *Memoir* after his death.

A little earlier than the appearance of either of the two last mentioned works, he became a regular contributor to the *Critical Review*, the principal editor of which was Dr. Smollett. He contributed largely to this and other magazines of that period, and at length became editor of the *Lady's Magazine*. His papers are fondly traced by Mr. Prior, and no doubt a part will be collected and preserved. This kind of writing, which Goldsmith disliked, and which he deems, in his *Enquiry*, one of the lower departments of literary exertion, required despatch, and prevented that elaboration and care necessary to the production of excellence. He was precluded by the constant demands which it made upon his time from cultivating poetry, that province to which his feelings were inseparably wedded. Mr. Prior manifests his sympathies for Goldsmith's hard fate, in the following apposite remarks:—

“One of the inconveniences of poverty, besides its positive privations, is not only the bar thrown in our way to pursue the path we wish, but the frequent necessity of adopting that which we dislike. Thus, the wayward fate of Goldsmith seemed constantly to thwart the bent of his inclinations as well in life as in letters. It caused him to enter the university in a situation he disliked, if not despised; it made him a traveller on foot through Europe when his ambition was to seem of consequence; and usher at a school, when detesting the employment; and the frequent companion of persons whom he avowedly despised, and from whose society he wished to escape. At a future period it compelled him in great measure to desist from the cultivation of poetry, in which he delighted; to become the writer of histories which, however popular and excellent of their class, he never thought conducive to his fame; of other compilations he did not think proper to own; and at this moment, while condemning criticism as the bane of polite letters, forced him, in order to earn a scanty subsistence, to pursue the very occupation he stigmatised, that of a professional critic.” pp. 165, 166.

His essays in the *Bee*, the *Busy Body*, and the *Ladies' Magazine*, now engrossed his time, until the appearance of the *Citizen of the World*, which commenced with the *Public Ledger* in 1760. Two of these beautiful essays appeared every week, and were furnished in fulfilment of an agreement to contribute that number of papers weekly, at a salary of £100 per annum. Dr. Johnson wrote similar papers, under the name of the *Idler*, for the *Universal Chronicle*, then under the



protection of the same publishers. It is some evidence of the estimation in which Goldsmith was held as a writer, that while Johnson, whose fame was at its summit, should have been employed to raise one newspaper into character, Goldsmith, then unknown in literature by name, should be required to aid the success of another. The expectation which it implied was not disappointed. 'The Citizen of the World' attracted notoriety, and was read with avidity. The flowing drapery of the diction, the elegance and occasional boldness of the sentiments, the easy sprightliness of the descriptions, were appreciated by every class of readers. The journal in which they appeared partook of their popularity, which advanced as the essays continued. The circulation of the *Ledger* became large, and its reputation permanent—a standing which is retained to the present day.

The celebrity of these essays, which have now taken their stand among the list of English classics, introduced their author to Johnson, Burke, Reynolds, Garrick, and the other great stars in the literary constellation of the metropolis. Though still under pecuniary embarrassment, he felt himself brought amongst kindred minds, a happiness from which he had been hitherto excluded. Their approbation fortified his self-respect, and their society cheered his moments of despondency.

In May, 1761, he exchanged his miserable lodgings in Green Arbour court, for superior accommodations in Fleet street. Of the wretchedness of his situation in the former place, Bishop Percy was a witness:—

"'The doctor,' observes that prelate, 'was employed in writing his *Enquiry into Polite Learning*,' (or rather, perhaps, in correcting the proof-sheets, for the work, as already noticed, appeared on the 3d of April following,) 'in a wretchedly dirty room, in which there was but one chair, and when, from civility, this was offered to his visitant, he himself was obliged to sit in the window. While they were conversing, some one gently rapped at the door, and on being desired to come in, a poor ragged little girl of very decent behaviour entered, who, dropping a courtesy, said,—My mamma sends her compliments, and begs the favour of you to lend her a chamber-pot full of coals.'" p. 171.

The same accomplished and amiable gentleman conducted Dr. Johnson in his first visit to Goldsmith, when he noticed the unaccustomed neatness of the philosopher's attire:—

"'He had on,' said the bishop in telling the story, 'a new suit of clothes, a new wig nicely powdered, and every thing so dissimilar from his usual habits, that I could not resist the impulse of enquiring the cause of such rigid regard in him to exterior appearance.—Why, sir, said he with characteristic shrewdness, and willing to play the instructor as well by example as by precept, I hear that Goldsmith, who is a very great sloven, justifies his disregard of cleanliness and decency by quoting my practice, and I am desirous this night to show him a better example.'" p. 194.

His pen was now busy with a great variety of works. Among these was a "History of the War," so called, being an exhibition of the success of England in the war against France, published in 1762. Mr. Prior, who had the original MS. of this history before him, in the autograph of the author, speaks of it as remarkably free from erasures and blots, though hastily written—a proof of the facility which he had attained in composition.

His project of visiting the East, which had so long slept, now revived, and though he addressed Lord Bute on the subject, and was earnest in his effort, it failed. He produced now a pamphlet on the Cock-Lane Ghost, a History of Mecklenburg, and "The Art of Poetry on a new plan," compiled from the best English poets, with critical notices prefixed to each of the specimens. Besides these, he seems to have carried on together a "Compendium of Biography," in imitation of Plutarch, but which terminated with the fourth volume, a History of England, and a Life of the Beau Nash.

The history, a different work from what he afterwards wrote, seems to have been designed as a school book, by question and answer. In November the Memoir of Nash made its appearance, a book of two hundred and thirty-four pages octavo. We have been induced by curiosity to procure and read this performance, so little known in this country as the production of Goldsmith. It certainly has many of his happy and inimitable strokes, but wants in the subject something to sustain the interest of the reader. Nash was essentially a trifler, with no talents, except, perhaps, an aptitude, in the early part of his life, for those *ineptiæ* of which he was for a time the acknowledged *arbiter*. Many interesting traits are displayed, among which his benevolence and humanity are conspicuous. Upon two of the fly-leaves of this book, which is one of the early editions, the enterprising Mr. Newbery advertises as being for sale at his shop, "The History of Mecklenburg," "The Art of Poetry," "The Idler," "The Citizen of the World," and other works of recent production by Goldsmith and Johnson.

One or two anecdotes illustrative of the simple-hearted character of the man, may be here related. A person by the name of Pilkington, with whom the poet had a very slight acquaintance, and who was famous for levying small sums upon various pretexts, appealed to Goldsmith, whose prodigal munificence was well known to be bounded only by the sum in his possession. Mr. Prior says:—

"Calling upon the unconscious poet in 1760, he gave vent to many regrets that the immediate want of a small sum prevented the prospect of a rich return. Upon enquiry of the circumstances, he said that a lady of the first rank, (the name of the Duchess of Manchester or of

Portland was mentioned,) being well known for her attachment to curious animals, and the large prices given for the indulgence of this taste, a friend in India, desirous to serve him, had sent home two white mice, then on board a ship in the river, which were to be offered to her grace. He had apprised her of their arrival, and she expressed impatience to see the animals, but unfortunately he had neither an appropriate cage for their reception, nor clothes fit to appear in before a lady of rank: two guineas would accomplish both objects, but where, alas! were two guineas to be procured? Goldsmith, with great sincerity replied that he possessed only half a guinea, and that sum necessarily could be of no use; the opening however was too favourable, and the applicant too dexterous, to permit his attempt to be thus parried. He begged to suggest with much diffidence and deference—the emergency was pressing, and might form some apology for the liberty—that the money might be raised from a neighbouring pawnbroker by the deposit of his friend's watch;—the inconvenience could not be great, and at most of only a few hours' continuance; it would rescue a sincere friend from enthrallment, and confer an eternal obligation. The mode of appeal proved irresistible: the money was raised in the manner pointed out, but neither watch nor white mice were afterwards heard of, nor even Mr. Pilkington himself until a lapse of seven months, when a paragraph in the *Ledger* informed the world that he, giving his name nearly at full length, was endeavouring to raise money in a more equivocal manner." pp. 191, 192.

It is the province of genius to turn even calamities to account. Accordingly we find in the *Citizen of the World*, the story of a white mouse, doubtless suggested by his own personal misfortune. The other anecdote is still more ludicrous:—

"When strolling in the gardens of White Conduit House, he met with three females of the family of a respectable tradesman, whom, for some favour received in the way of his occupation, he invited without hesitation to take tea. The repast passed off with great hilarity, but when the time of payment arrived, he found to his infinite mortification he had not sufficient money for the purpose. To add to this annoyance occasioned by this discovery, some acquaintances in whose eyes he wished to stand particularly well came up, discovered his perplexity by a remark of the waiter, and willing to enjoy, professed at first their inability to relieve him; nor was it till after much amusement had been enjoyed at his expense that the debt was discharged." pp. 192, 193.

He had been made so often the dupe of designing villany, by an unsuspicious and credulous temper, and was frequently in embarrassing and awkward situations from imprudence or simplicity, that an inevitable mishap which might naturally enough have occurred to any other person, turned the laugh effectually against Goldsmith:—

"Occasionally we find him mingling in scenes of amusement, or pursuing objects of popular curiosity; frequently, as we may believe from his remarks, in order to turn them in some way to account. One of these, in the summer of 1762, was the Cherokee chiefs then in London and sought after eagerly by the inquisitive and idle, a visit to whom gave origin to a humorous story told by Derrick, well known by his

poems and letters, and once master of the ceremonies at Bath. Having made a present of some trifle to one of the Indians during the interview, the latter, delighted with the gift and remembering one of the European modes of endearment, stooped and embraced Goldsmith with so much cordiality as to leave behind part of the red ochre, with which he was plentifully bedaubed, upon his face, and being seen in this state, was teased by the wags of his acquaintance with using *rouge*." p. 214.

He did not however neglect to make a philosophical use of the interview, on occasion, as appears from the following passage in his *Animated Nature*:—

" 'I remember,' he says, 'when the Cherokee kings were over here, that I have waited for three hours during the time they were dressing. They never would venture to make their appearance till they had gone through the tedious ceremonies of the toilet: they had their boxes of oil and ochre, their fat and their perfumes, like the most effeminate beau, and generally took up four hours in dressing before they considered themselves as fit to be seen. We must not therefore consider delicacy in point of dress as a mark of refinement, since savages are much more difficult in this particular than the most fashionable or tawdry European. The more barbarous the people, the fonder of finery.' " p. 214.

We give another incident out of many which might be quoted as a proof of the easiness of his nature, and his exposure to dishonesty:—

" While sitting in the Chapter Coffee-house, Goldsmith, who had been recently ill, was accosted by a stranger with enquiries after his health; and evincing the surprise and hesitation natural on the occasion, the enquirer proceeded to introduce himself. 'You will pardon my abruptness; my name is Lloyd; you are Dr. Goldsmith: as literary men, familiar to each other by name, we ought to be acquainted; and as I have a few friends to supper here this evening, let me have the pleasure of your company likewise without further ceremony.' The frankness of the invitation to a man of social propensities, insured its acceptance: he joined the party composed chiefly of authors, spent an agreeable evening, but when about to depart overheard a discussion between his new friend and the landlord, who seemed perfectly known to each other, implying that the one could not at that moment pay the reckoning, while the other declined to give credit. The generosity of Goldsmith obviated the difficulty by guarantying the debt which eventually he paid, Lloyd, who had long lived by shifts and expedients, caring nothing further about the matter." pp. 217.

Towards the close of 1762, Goldsmith removed from London into the country, and resided near his friend Newbery, with a Mrs. Fleming. Here he remained until some time in 1764, sedulously engaged in various literary enterprises of greater extent and importance than any in which he had been previously engaged. Besides prefaces, translations, biographies, assisting in a book called the *Martial Review*, and contributing to the periodical press, he now wrote his masterly survey of English History, in the form of Letters from a Nobleman to his Son. As this precious work is nearly out of print, there is need of an Ameri-

can edition, in which some minor errors might easily be rectified. The only edition we have seen is a London twelve of 1792, in two volumes.

Poor Goldsmith, notwithstanding his increasing reputation as a writer, was still not exempt from the visitation of pecuniary distress. He owed a debt, and was only saved from prison by the friendly interposition of Johnson. The MS. of his enchanting novel, the *Vicar of Wakefield*, which Johnson sold for £60, removed the apprehension of duress. For some cause the novel was suppressed by the bookseller, for two years after the purchase.

At this time, though popularly confessed to be one of the first authors of his day, Goldsmith had not published his name in a title-page. He reserved such an announcement for a work upon which he might confidently rest his fame. It was formally blazoned for the first time in connection with his *Traveller*. This epic was at once recognised as the offspring of poetic genius. Every one felt, and almost every one acknowledged, the force of its merit and the greatness of its beauty. The complimentary notices with which it was hailed, have been industriously collected and approvingly quoted by Mr. Prior. It at once established the celebrity of its author. In perfect consistency with the character of the poet, was the dedication to his brother, a clergyman whose living was "forty pounds a year." Such a departure from ordinary practice, filled his contemporaries with surprise. A man of more calculation and less heart, would have sought the prefix of an illustrious name to give it passport and protection; but where interest and feeling were diverse, there was little hesitation as to which to obey. One of the newspapers of the day, in mentioning various instances of disinterested nobility of action, cites "Dr. Goldsmith, when he dedicated his beautiful poem, the *Traveller*, to a man of no greater income than £40 a year."

The admiration which the *Traveller* excited, would have made Dr. Goldsmith a fortune, if he had been influenced by the motives which govern ordinary mortals. Sir John Hawkins relates an instance of proffered assistance, which he accompanies by remarks in his usual strain of unjust severity:—

"'Having one day,' says Sir John, 'a call to make on the late Duke, then Earl, of Northumberland, I found Goldsmith waiting for an audience in an outer room: I asked him what had brought him there; he told me, an invitation from his lordship. I made my business as short as I could, and as a reason mentioned that Dr. Goldsmith was waiting without. The earl asked me whether I was acquainted with him; I told him I was, adding what I thought likely to recommend him. I retired, and staid in the outer room to take him home. Upon his coming out I asked him the result of his conversation—"His lordship," says he, "told me he had read my poem (meaning the *Traveller*) and was much

delighted with it; that he was going to be Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and that hearing I was a native of that country, he should be glad to do me any kindness." "And what did you answer," asked I, "to this gracious offer?" "Why," said he, "I could say nothing but that I had a brother there, a clergyman, who stood in need of help: as for myself I have no dependence on the promises of great men: I look to the booksellers for support; they are my best friends, and I am not inclined to forsake them for others." Thus did this idiot in the affairs of the world trifle with his fortunes, and put back the hand that was held out to assist him! Other offers of a like kind he either rejected or failed to improve, contenting himself with the patronage of one nobleman, whose mansion afforded him the delights of a splendid table, and a retreat for a few days from the metropolis.' " pp. 286, 287.

The Hermit, which has been called, and not without reason, the sweetest ballad in any language, besides other literary labours, followed and extended his fame. Afterwards appeared the Vicar of Wakefield, one of the most charming pieces of fiction extant. It is not only a favourite in this country and England, but it has been translated into nearly every language of Europe, where it vies in popularity with the famed romances of Cervantes and *Le Sage*. Under the severe censorship of Spain it is permitted to be circulated, with a few cautionary notes. The copy we possess, in the Spanish language, was published at Barcelona, and the annotations are curious enough. They seem principally intended to guard the immaculate sanctity of the Spanish clergy from the supposed laxity of the English Vicar.

Having now conducted the reader through the long period of Goldsmith's obscurity, a period marked rather by struggles for existence than efforts for lasting fame, we shall pass rapidly over the remaining portion of his life.

The comedy of "The Good-Natured Man," which was represented on the 29th of January, 1768, was received well, but not with enthusiasm. The fervour of its reception was chilled by the appearance of "False Delicacy," by Kelly, a popular drama of the time, of the sentimental cast, but now forgotten. There was nothing however, it would appear, that induced the friends of the poet to consider it a failure, as its humour was relished; the bailiff scene, after retrenchment, was liked, and Croaker was a decided favourite. On the first night of performance, when the bailiff scene was hissed, the chagrin and mortification of the author were extreme. Mrs. Piozzi retails an anecdote which shows how much this child of nature was the sport of his sensibilities. Few dramatic writers but would have had as acute feelings as he under the same circumstances, and still fewer that would not have suppressed their unreserved exhibition.

"'Returning home one day from dinner at the chaplain's table,' says Mrs. Piozzi, 'he (Johnson) told me that Dr. Goldsmith had given a very

comical and unnecessarily exact recital there of his own feelings when his play was hissed; telling the company how he went to the Literary Club at night and chatted gaily among his friends as if nothing had happened amiss; that to impress them still more forcibly with an idea of his magnanimity, he even sung his favourite song about "*an old woman tossed in a blanket seventeen times as high as the moon;*" but "all this while I was suffering horrible tortures," said he, "and verily believe that if I had put a bit into my mouth it would have strangled me on the spot, I was so excessively ill; but I made more noise than usual to cover all that; and so they never perceived my not eating, nor I believe at all imagined to themselves the anguish of my heart; but when all were gone except Johnson here, I burst out a crying, and even *swore* that I would never write again." "All which, doctor," said Dr. Johnson, amazed at his odd frankness, "I thought had been a secret between you and me; and I am sure I would not have said any thing about it for the world." p. 334.

The play, when printed, received the highest encomiums, and this, together with his profits from other literary works, made his receipts considerable. How he continued so necessitous, may be learned from the following, among many others, which might be selected. The story is vouched by the authority of Glover:—

"His carelessness of money, and of which there was little doubt, exhibited an unusual, if not ostentatious negligence. Whenever a sum was procured and the most pressing demands paid, the remainder was thrown by in an open drawer, to be disbursed either by himself or his servant, as occasion required. When a friend once called at an earlier hour than usual, the bill of the laundress chanced to lie on the table for payment, and the footman received orders to 'pay the poor woman.' A sum of moment happened to be in the drawer from which the domestic, after turning it over with seeming care, though evidently no adept at calculation, took the amount, and the remainder was replaced. The visitor, who had observed the proceeding, at length enquired whether as a matter of prudence it was right to place such a temptation in the way of a person in his station of life, who in some unhappy moment might be tempted to abuse the trust. The only reply was, with an expression of surprise—'What, my dear friend, do you take Dennis for a thief?'" p. 344.

Among other works in 1769 and 1770 which fell from his pen, such as a Roman History, in a thousand pages octavo, came out his exquisite poem of the Deserted Village. The reputation he had acquired, being only second to Johnson in fame, and as a writer much more admired, rendered no friendly aid necessary to bring it into notice. It was read with approbation and delight, and the voice of the public was so loud in its favour as to silence even the malevolence of envy. Kenrick, the anonymous libeller, and Miller, his old opponent, shrunk overawed, if not by the merit of the poem, by the splendour of its success. Poetical addresses poured in from all quarters, praising not merely the surpassing sweetness of the lay, but the elegant pathos of its sentiments:—

"One of the topics particularly adverted to by readers and critics, was the intimation dropped by the poet, of forsaking the pursuit of an art which is plainly stated to have proved of an unprofitable kind. A general interest was expressed on this occasion by all the admirers of his poetical talents; the reviews joined the newspapers in their regrets; and a variety of petitions were thrown out to prevail upon him not to carry his threat into execution. 'We hope,' was the general strain of supplication, 'for the honour of the art and the pleasure of the public, Dr. Goldsmith will retract his farewell to poetry, and give us other opportunities of doing justice to his merit.'" p. 385.

This poem, appealing so powerfully to the common feelings of human nature, has awakened in the breast of every reader an intense curiosity to fix the locality described. Travellers in England have been known to undertake pilgrimages to a town of the name of Auburn, in the belief that it is the scene of the description. But this is a mistake. Lissoy, in Ireland, the scene of Goldsmith's childhood and youth, the place to which his fervid imagination recurred with all the endearing associations of that charming season, furnishes each local incident, and is without question the spot so beautifully celebrated. With an enthusiasm which does him honour, Mr. Prior undertook to visit the place and examine on the spot the various localities. The result has been very full information and illustration, scattered in various passages of his book, but which we now present, in a group, as parts of one interesting whole:—

"The identity of Lissoy with the scenes of the poem, in the general belief of the people of the vicinity, is corroborated by an anecdote told by a traveller some years ago in the United States.

"The Deserted Village, said he, (Mr. Best, an Irish clergyman, is the speaker,) relates to the scenes in which Goldsmith was an actor. Auburn is a poetical name for the village of Lissoy, in the county of Westmeath, barony of Kilkenny West. The name of the schoolmaster was Paddy Burns. I remember him well. He was, indeed, a man severe to view. A woman called Walsey Cruse kept the alehouse—

"Imagination fondly stoops to trace  
The parlour splendours of that festive place."

I have been often in the house. The hawthorn-bush was remarkably large, and stood opposite the alehouse. I was once riding with Brady, titular Bishop of Ardagh, when he observed to me, "Ma foy, Best, this huge overgrown bush is mightily in the way; I will order it to be cut down." "What, sir," said I, "cut down Goldsmith's hawthorn-bush, that supplies so beautiful an image in the Deserted Village!" "Ma foy!" exclaimed the bishop, "is that the hawthorn-bush? Then ever let it be sacred from the edge of the axe, and evil to him that would cut from it a branch."

"The house once occupied by the rector of Kilkenny West, pleasantly situated and of good dimensions, is now a ruin, verifying the truth of the pathetic lines of his son—

'Vain transitory splendours! Could not all  
Relieve the tottering mansion from its fall!'



The front, including a wing, extends, as nearly as could be judged by pacing it, sixty-eight feet by a depth of twenty-four; it consisted of two stories, with five windows in each. The roof has been off for a period of twenty years; the gable ends remain, but the front and back walls of the upper story have crumbled away, and if the hand of the destroyer be not stayed, will soon wholly disappear. Two or three wretched cottages for labourers, surrounded by mud, adjoin it on the left. Behind the house is an orchard of some extent and the remains of a garden, both utterly neglected. In front, a pretty avenue of double rows of ash trees, which formed the approach from the high road, about sixty yards distant, and at one time presented an object of interest to travellers, has, like every other trace of care or superintendence, disappeared—cut down by the ruthless hand of some destroyer. No picture of desolation can be more complete. As if an image of the impending ruin had been present, the poet has painted with fearful accuracy what his father's house was to be—

‘Near yonder copse, where once the garden smiled,  
And still where many a garden flower grows wild;  
There, where a few torn shrubs the place disclose,  
The Village Preacher's modest mansion rose.’

And we contemplate the realization of the melancholy scene as we do the poem of the unfortunate Falconer, who, while singing the story of one shipwreck, scarcely conceived he was fated to perish by a second.

“A visiter to this spot will be tempted to believe, from the ignorance he finds among many of the neighbouring peasantry, that little enthusiasm exists regarding the name of him who nevertheless gives it all its importance. We found some unexpected instances of this. In Ireland the legend of a saint, or of a miracle, is universally familiar and never forgotten; but not so the memorials of her distinguished men. These have too often passed away with contemporary generations. Nor are the middling and upper classes exempt from the charge of neglecting what it should be their first ambition affectionately to cherish. It is not that they are indifferent to the fame of their celebrated countrymen, but we require more obvious proofs of the fact; it is in the public statue and the column, that their professions of admiration should be brought to the test of performance.” pp. 24—26.

“‘In order,’ writes the Rev. Mr. Handcock, ‘to be accurate in the description you require of the place, I rode there immediately on receipt of your letter; it is a snug farm-house in view of the high road, to which a straight avenue leads with double rows of ash trees, six miles north-east of this town. The farm is still held under the Naper family by a nephew of Goldsmith, at present in America. In the front view of the house is the “decent church” of Kilkenny West, that literally “tops the neighbouring hill;” and in a circuit of not more than half a mile diameter around the house, and “the never failing brook,” “the busy mill,” “the hawthorn bush with seats beneath the shade,” “the brook with mantling cresses spread,” “the straggling fence that skirts the way, with blossomed furze unprofitably gay,” “the thorn that lifts its head on high, where once the sign-post caught the passing eye,” “the house where nut-brown draughts inspired,” in short every striking object in the picture. There are besides many ruined houses in the neighbourhood, bespeaking a better state of population than at present.

“‘In the house at Lissoy lived Goldsmith's father, at first curate to an uncle named Green, and “passing rich on forty pounds a year.” After the death of the incumbent he obtained the living. This gentleman and

his wife were the genuine Dr. and Mrs. Primrose. Though a man of learning there are many laughable instances of his simplicity and ignorance of mankind recorded in the neighbourhood to this day. Here Goldsmith was instructed in the first stage of his learning." p. 378.

"The details of the poem sufficiently show that he had each (England and Ireland) occasionally in view; the picture is neither wholly from imagination, nor wholly from reality; from any one place, or from any one division of the kingdom; but from the remembrance or observation of many circumstances belonging to either island, which with the skill of a poet are worked up into a perfect whole. Thus the flourishing state of trade, the influx of wealth and luxury, the song of the nightingale, and many other incidental details, hold good only of England. On the other hand, the stream of emigration, which has for a century largely and steadily flowed towards America, and much of the local scenery and objects belong to Ireland.

"The allusions bearing upon Lissoy are numerous; the following are supposed to apply to the Sundays or numerous holidays, usually kept in Roman catholic countries.

‘How often have I blessed the coming day  
When toil remitting lent its turn to play.’

"To the succeeding are traced the origin of the poem—

‘The man of wealth and pride  
Takes up the space that many poor supplied,  
Space for his lake, his park’s extended bounds,  
Space for his horses, equipage, and hounds.’

"The general character of the adjoining country, particularly in the rear of the house, being a plain, Auburn is appropriately characterised ‘loveliest village of the plain.’ As the scene of enjoyment in early life, and of boyish delights, he with equal truth and affection calls them—

‘Dear lovely bowers of innocence and ease,  
Seats of my youth when every sport could please,  
How often have I loitered o’er thy green!’

"And again—

‘How often have I paused on every charm!’

"Personal allusions such as these may be admissible in poetry not strictly meant to be accurately descriptive, yet taken with the context, their application to the feelings and circumstances of the writer is perfectly compatible with the fact.

‘The never-failing brook, the busy mill,’

are found in a hollow, the road to which lies at the end of the village in a turning to the left as we proceed from his paternal residence; the stream which moves it is small, and the mill of rude construction, and of the overshot kind, but he may have had also in view that of Ballymahon, which existed at that period above the bridge of that town, and where afterwards he was known to spend many hours.

‘The decent church that tops the neighbouring hill,’

was that in which his father officiated; it crowned a height of gentle elevation in front of their residence, and though distant about a mile, from its conspicuous situation constantly in their eye.

"Such an object was not likely to escape his recollection. The term *decent* is that perhaps which describes it most exactly ; being clean and very homely without pretension to any other quality. Between it and the house lies a valley occupied by a sheet of water, alluded to probably in the line—

'The noisy geese that gabbled o'er the pool.'

"Another natural object—

'The hawthorn bush with seats beneath the shade,  
For talking age, and whispering lovers made,'

was larger than ordinary trees of that description, with surrounding seats as here represented ; it rose with a double trunk, shaded a considerable portion of ground opposite the alehouse, and from being at the confluence of two roads, presented sufficient space for the evening assemblages of the villagers, described as having

'Led up their sports beneath the spreading tree.'

The selection of a 'hawthorn bush,' so rarely of sufficient dimensions to perform the office here assigned, when so many nobler tenants of the forest affording ampler shade and more majesty of description for his verse were at poetical command to use on the occasion, is considered another proof of the identity of the spot from which the picture was drawn. The celebrity of this tree has been fatal to it. The material objects immortalised by poets are too frequently sacrificed to the admiration they excite, as if spoliation were the truest test of devotion in the eyes of admirers ; and poetry thus seems like the unnatural mother of mythology, content to prey upon her own offspring. Every traveller hither for a period of forty years, carried away a portion of the trees as a relic either of the poem or of his pilgrimage ; when the branches had been destroyed, the trunks were attacked ; and when these disappeared, even the roots were partially dug up, so that in 1820, scarcely a vestige remained, either above or below ground, notwithstanding a resident gentleman, by building round it, endeavoured to prevent its utter extinction. At the period of the writer's visit (1830) a very tender shoot had again forced its way to the surface, which he in imitation of so many other inconsiderate idlers felt disposed to seize upon as a memorial of his visit ; but if permitted to remain, though this is unlikely, may renew the honours paid to its predecessor.

"Opposite the remains of the hawthorn stands the alehouse—

———— 'where nut-brown draughts inspired,  
Where gray-beard mirth and smiling toil retired,'

still appropriated to its original use, chiefly by the care of Mr. Hogan, who repaired or rebuilt it after being long in a state of decay. By the same hand it was supplied with the sign of the 'Three Jolly Pigeons,' with new copies of the 'twelve good rules,' and the 'royal game of goose,' not omitting even the—

———— 'broken tea-cups wisely kept for show  
Ranged o'er the chimney glistened in a row,'—

which for better security in the frail tenure of an Irish publican, or the doubtful decorum of his guests, were embedded in the mortar. Most of these have again disappeared, sacrifices to the love of relics, and sold no doubt to admiring visitors as the originals referred to in the poem ; even

the sign is no longer to be seen, removed either by cupidity or the ravages of time.

"The allusions to America, as the destined home of voluntary exiles, who

— 'took a long farewell and wished in vain,  
For seats like these beyond the western main,'

are in perfect keeping with truth, the late celebrated John Wesley having remarked the large efflux of persons thither from Ireland as far back as the year 1770, though it prevailed at a much earlier period. Indeed, whenever by the alleged cupidity of landlords, the rivalry of other tenants, or their own imprudence, the lower class of Irish become unsettled, they seldom refix permanently in another part of their own country, or even in England or Scotland, but commonly seek a distant, and as they are led to believe, a more advantageous settlement in the New World.

"The pathetic lines—

————— 'Yon widow'd solitary thing  
That feebly bends beside the plashy spring ;  
She, wretched matron, forced in age for bread,  
To strip the brook with mantling cresses spread,'

are supposed to apply to a female named Catherine Geraghty, whom the poet had known in earlier and better days, and who was well remembered by some of the inhabitants when Dr. Streat served the curacy of the parish. The brook and ditches near the spot where her cabin stood, still furnish cresses, and several of her descendants reside in the neighbourhood.

"To his own instructor, Thomas Byrne, is supposed to belong the description of a personage so important to youth.

'There in his noisy mansion, skill'd to rule,  
The village master taught his little school.'

But the portrait, though good as a general sketch, wants that individuality which, from the actual peculiarities of the person in question, might have been given it; one probable characteristic however is retained—

'While words of learned length, and thundering sound,  
Amazed the gazing rustics ranged around.'

The school-house is still shown; here there may be some straining of fact as to identity, for no place built expressly for such purpose having existed at that time, the common cottages which are constructed loosely of mud and stone would have crumbled long ere this, few of them without great care attaining the age of a century.

"No lines in the poem point more strongly to the abode of his youth, than—

'Along thy glades a solitary guest,  
The hollow-sounding bittern guards its nest.'

"In the immediate vicinity of the village, and in more than one direction, is found a considerable portion of water; a river, likewise, with several small lakes, pools, and marsh lands, lie around Ballymahon, to which is now added the course of the Grand Canal from Dublin; to several of these, water-fowl continue to resort, and among others the bird which he has thought proper to notice in the foregoing lines. In

the opening of the sixth volume of *Animated Nature*, it is thus poetically adverted to, with the effects of its call upon the minds of the villagers.

"Those who have walked in an evening by the sedgy sides of unfrequented rivers, must remember a variety of notes from different water-fowl: the loud scream of the wild goose, the croaking of the mallard, the whining of the lapwing, and the tremulous neighing of the jacksnipe. But of all these sounds, there is none so dismally hollow as the booming of the bittern. It is impossible for words to give those who have not heard this evening call an adequate idea of its solemnity. It is like an interrupted bellowing of a bull, but hollower and louder, and is heard at a mile's distance as if issuing from some formidable being that resided at the bottom of the waters.

*I remember in the place where I was a boy with what terror this bird's note affected the whole village; they considered it as the presage of some sad event; and generally found or made one to succeed it. I do not speak ludicrously; but if any person in the neighbourhood died, they supposed it could not be otherwise, for the night-raven had foretold it; but if nobody happened to die, the death of a cow or sheep gave completion to the prophecy.'*" pp. 380—383.

We have been surprised in the perusal of a late *Life of Cowper* by Mr. Southey, to find no allusion to the dulcet strains of this admirable poet. He recounts Pope, Gray, Akenside, Glover, Churchill, and Crabbe, but omits any reference to the author of the *Traveller*, *Deserted Village*, and *Hermit*. Perhaps Goldsmith may be regarded by Mr. Southey as a minor or indifferent poet, as Cowper seems to have considered Pope, and as Byron deemed Cowper. If so, in the dispensation of poetical justice, the poet-laureate himself may in his turn be ruthlessly despoiled, by an unsparing hand, of those blooming laurels which now cluster so proudly and thickly around him.

It is to be regretted that a man who was capable of writing the *Traveller*, *Deserted Village*, and so many other works of standard eminence, should have been obliged by the penury of his circumstances to bring out productions so lame and imperfect as the lives of Bolingbroke and Parnell. He was sensible of the occasional effects of his haste, and wrote to Mr. Langton with reference to it in the following strain:—"God knows I am tired of this kind of finishing, which is but bungling work; and that not so much my fault as the fault of my scurvy circumstances." To some one else he observed, "I must write a book, while you are pondering over a word or a phrase."

After the biographies alluded to, came out in quick succession, the humorous and admirable *jeux d'esprit*, *Retaliation*, and the *Haunch of Venison*, the latter addressed to his friend, Lord Clare, and a *History of England* in four volumes. This *History*, as well as that of *Rome* which preceded, and the *History of Greece* which followed it, possesses all the graceful attractiveness of his style, and the usual ingenuity of his reflections.

They are elegant abstracts, so happily condensed as to embrace as much useful knowledge as any histories of the same size, within the compass of any language. They received the emphatic sanction of his great contemporary, Dr. Johnson, a severe judge; and a most flattering verdict has been rendered by the unbiassed judgment of posterity.

In the early part of the year 1773, was enacted for the first time at Covent Garden, his comedy, "*She Stoops to Conquer, or the Mistakes of a Night.*" When this play was sent to Colman, at that time the manager, he verbally expressed a great variety of objections to the whole performance. He at length returned the manuscript to Goldsmith, with critical remarks written on the blank sides of the leaves, in violation, as it was considered, of literary courtesy. The friends of the poet to whom these animadversions were shown, called them unfair; the public journalists denounced them, as "envious, insipid, and contemptible." Garrick, who was referred to, manifested his usual indecision, but hesitated to pronounce a favourable opinion. The friends of Goldsmith, and especially Johnson, then interfered, and procured, by their remonstrances, the reluctant consent of the manager to its representation.

When in rehearsal, the inimical Colman suggested alterations which went to change the whole aspect of the piece. Being rejected by the author, a new offence was given, the effects of which were very soon perceived. He induced two of the chief performers, Smith and Woodward, to decline their respective parts, and during the period of rehearsal, as well as before, indulged in the most unhandsome strictures, confidently predicting its failure. To crown all, the scenery, dresses, and actors, were of an inferior description. Seeing such accumulated causes of apprehension, his friends advised the postponement of its appearance until the following season. Owing to the state of his finances, he declined the proposal, and, with the lofty pride of merit, declared—"I should sooner that my play were damned by bad players than merely saved by good acting."

It must be premised, that for a long period a passion for what was called sentimental comedy, had so taken possession of London as to banish wit and humour from the stage. "*The Good-Natured Man,*" and "*She Stoops to Conquer,*" were not in harmony with the predominating taste, but were boldly designed to alter its complexion. Shortly before the latter play appeared, Goldsmith, with a view to conciliate the public, composed an agreeable essay, entitled "*A Comparison between Laughing and Sentimental Comedy.*"

The time of representation at last arrived, and what with the dampening effects of the manager's well-known sentiments and all-pervading influence, there was an evident anticipation of

miscarriage. But the public were so stupid as to be amused, exhilarated, and delighted, to a degree beyond the hopes of the author. In short, it was received with the most emphatic applause, and the three nights of the poet yielded him between four and five hundred pounds.

The daily press was loud in condemnation and ridicule of Colman on the one hand, and in the most flattering ascriptions of merit to Goldsmith on the other. We select from the many verses given by Mr. Prior, two or three pieces as specimens :—

“ TO DR. GOLDSMITH,

*On the success of his new Comedy, called ‘She Stoops to Conquer.’*

“ Long has the Comic Muse, seduced to town,  
Shone with false charms, in finery not her own;  
And strove by affectation’s flimsy arts,  
And sickly sentiments, to conquer hearts:  
But now reclaim’d, she seeks her native plains,  
Where pass’d her youth, where mirth, where pleasure reigns;  
She throws each tinsel ornament aside,  
And takes once more plain Nature for her guide;  
With sweet simplicity she smiles again,  
And *Stoops to Conquer* with her Goldsmith’s pen.”

“ TO DR. GOLDSMITH.

“ Has then, (the question pray excuse,  
For doctor you’re a droll man,)  
The dose that saved the Comic Muse,  
Almost destroy’d poor Colman ?

“ How drugs alike in strength and name,  
In operations vary !  
When what exalts the doctor’s fame  
Undoes the apothecary !”

“ TO GEORGE COLMAN, ESQ.,

*On the success of Dr. Goldsmith’s new Comedy.*

“ Come, Coley, doff those mourning weeds,  
Nor thus with jokes be flamm’d;  
Tho’ Goldsmith’s present play succeeds,  
His next may still be damn’d.

“ As this has ’scaped without a fall,  
To sink his next prepare;  
New actors hire from Wapping Wall,  
And dresses from Rag Fair.

“ For scenes let tatter’d blankets fly,  
The prologue Kelly write;  
Then swear again the piece must die  
Before the author’s night.

“ Should these tricks fail, the lucky elf  
To bring to lasting shame,  
E’en write *the best you can yourself*,  
And print it in *his name*.”

The triumph of the author was singular and complete, and the discomfiture of Colman attended with no circumstance of mitigation. The warfare against Colman was waged with such spirit and heat, that he at length cried out to his victor for mercy, and begged him "to take him off the rack of the newspapers." Such is the intrinsic virtue of a good cause, or rather such the retributive power of justice!

A flood of so much praise provoked, unavoidably, the malevolence of his old enemies. Kenrick was the author of a most scurrilous composition, referring unhandsomely to a female of the poet's acquaintance. Though too coarse and vulgar for notice, Goldsmith was indignant, and in the mistaken notion that a show of spirit was necessary, corporally belaboured the unoffending publisher. The fact was noised about London, and the impropriety of attempting to restrain the freedom of the press by such means, was canvassed. It was asserted, too, that Goldsmith, as a contributor to the periodical press, had no doubt indulged in criticism as severe as that for the punishment of which he had now resorted to personal outrage. Of this imputation he seems to have been entirely innocent, as his strictures were always exempt from personality, and the tone of his criticism was calm and dignified. He therefore replied to the charge, and justified his course in the following brief and well-written address:—

*"To the Public.*

"Lest it should be supposed that I have been willing to correct in others an abuse of which I have been guilty myself, I beg leave to declare, that in all my life I never wrote or dictated a single paragraph, letter, or essay in a newspaper, except a few moral essays under the character of a Chinese, about ten years ago, in the Ledger, and a letter to which I signed my name, in the St. James's Chronicle. If the liberty of the press, therefore, has been abused, I have had no hand in it.

"I have always considered the press as the protector of our freedom, as a watchful guardian, capable of uniting the weak against the encroachments of power. What concerns the public, most properly admits of a public discussion. But of late the press has turned from defending public interest, to making inroads upon private life; from combatting the strong, to overwhelming the feeble. No condition is now too obscure for its abuse, and the protector has become the tyrant of the people. In this manner the freedom of the press is beginning to sow the seeds of its own dissolution; the great must oppose it from principle, and the weak from fear; till at last every rank of mankind shall be found to give up its benefits, content with security from insults.

"How to put a stop to this licentiousness by which all are indiscriminately abused, and by which vice consequently escapes in the general censure, I am unable to tell; all I could wish is that, as the law gives us no protection against the injury, so it should give calumniators no shelter after having provoked correction. The insults which we receive before the public, by being more open are the more distressing; by treating them with silent contempt, we do not pay a sufficient deference



to the opinion of the world. By recurring to legal redress we too often expose the weakness of the law, which only serves to increase our mortification by failing to relieve us. In short, every man should singly consider himself as the guardian of the liberty of the press, and as far as his influence can extend, should endeavour to prevent its licentiousness becoming at last the grave of its freedom.

“OLIVER GOLDSMITH.”

The play was as successful in print as at the theatre, for it is said six thousand copies were sold during that and the ensuing season.

He had projected, upon a popular plan, a “Dictionary of the Arts and Sciences,” which the versatility of his genius and the distinguished aid he had been promised, would no doubt have been worthy of his great reputation. Burke was to furnish an abstract of his Essay on the Sublime and Beautiful, Bishop Berkley a paper on Philosophy, Sir Joshua Reynolds on Painting, Dr. Burney on Music, and Garrick on his peculiar art, as far as writing could impart its *intransitive* arcana. As Dr. Goldsmith's taste, which he made no secret in confessing, was rather classical than scientific, other contributors would have been indispensable. A prospectus was prepared, according to Bishop Percy, in the best style of the author, but the booksellers hesitating to second his views, an undertaking which had long engaged his mind, upon which he had spent great labour, and for which he had felt much anxiety, was abandoned. His inferior enterprises, which were always numerous, and now, when his pecuniary affairs were involved, ceased to be productive, gave him marked uneasiness. His “Animated Nature,” which came out in June, 1774, had been paid for long before, and though it confirmed and enlarged his reputation, did not replenish his coffers. Of this extensive and laborious work, it is enough to say, that happily coinciding with his tastes, it was executed *con amore*, and written in his most polished and elegant manner. Though more than sixty years have elapsed from its appearance, and since that time knowledge in this department has greatly advanced, yet no treatise has superseded it with the general reader. An edition of this excellent book, with “alterations and corrections,” was published a year or two ago in Philadelphia.

But the pressure of his necessities increasing, they at length undermined his nervous system, produced despondency, and laid the foundation of that disease which soon after extinguished in death the perishable part of Goldsmith. His friend Cradock, who met him in London a short time before his decease, gives the following narrative :

“Goldsmith I found much altered and at times very low, and I devoted almost all my mornings to his immediate service. He wished me

to look over and revise some of his works; but, with a select friend or two, I was pressing that he should publish by subscription his two celebrated poems of the 'Traveller' and the 'Deserted Village,' with notes; for he was well aware that I was no stranger to Johnson's having made some little addition to the one, and possibly had suggested some corrections at least for the other; but the real meaning was to give some great persons an opportunity of conveying pecuniary relief, of which the doctor at that time was particularly in need. Goldsmith readily gave up to me his private copies, and said, 'Pray do what you please with them.' But whilst he sat near me, he rather submitted to than encouraged my zealous proceedings.

"I one morning called upon him, however, and found him infinitely better than I expected; and in a kind of exulting style he exclaimed, 'Here are some of my best prose writings; I have been hard at work since midnight, and I desire you to examine them.' 'These,' said I, 'are excellent indeed.' 'They are,' he replied, 'intended as an introduction to a body of arts and sciences.'

"The day before I was to set out for Leicestershire, I insisted upon his dining with us. He replied, 'I will, but on one condition—that you will not ask me to eat any thing.' 'Nay,' said I, 'this answer is absolutely unkind; for I had hoped, as we are supplied from the Crown and Anchor, that you would have named something you might have relished.' 'Well,' was the reply, 'if you will but explain it to Mrs. Cradock, I will certainly wait upon you.'

"The doctor found as usual at my apartments newspapers and pamphlets, and with a pen and ink he amused himself as well as he could. I had ordered from the tavern some fish, a roasted joint of lamb, and a tart; and the doctor either sat down or walked about, just as he pleased. After dinner he took some wine with biscuits, but I was obliged soon to leave him for a while, as I had matters to settle for my next day's journey. On my return coffee was ready, and the doctor appeared more cheerful (for Mrs. Cradock was always rather a favourite with him); and in the course of the evening he endeavoured to talk and remark as usual, but all was force. He stayed till midnight, and I insisted on seeing him safe home, and we most cordially shook hands at the Temple gate. He did not live long after our return into Leicestershire; and I have often since regretted that I did not remain longer in town at every inconvenience." pp. 468, 469.

His death, which occurred soon after, was accelerated by the use of a medicine which was thought to be inapplicable to his case. He died on the 4th of April, 1774, at the early age of forty-five years.

Of the character of Dr. Goldsmith enough has been said to show that it was marked by many of those peculiarities which sometimes unhappily fall to the lot of genius. Rather of plain physiognomy, and not strikingly personable, he was slovenly or gay in his attire, according to his mood; and seldom in this, or any thing else, preserved a medium. He joined the greatest playfulness of temper to manners the most simple and unobtrusive. His heart was open to every manifestation of distress, and his hand was at once obedient to its impulses. Owing to the thriftless prodigality of his munificence, and the base arts

practised upon his simplicity, he was needy through life. Anecdotes abound in the pages of Mr. Prior, which want of space prevents us from quoting, in proof of the most extraordinary and boundless generosity. Poor as he was, so long as the objects which sought his bounty were in want, he continued to give, and only ceased his donatives when he had nothing left to bestow.

Dr. Goldsmith's pen was enlisted on the side of religion and virtue; and such was the moral chastity of his mind, that he repelled an application to write for the ministry with disdain. Considering the society in which he mingled in early life, the temptations to which he was exposed by his necessities, the sharpers who preyed upon his substance, and the scenes of profligacy he was doomed to witness, we think that the prevailing purity of his allusions and sentiments presents an anomaly in authorship. The honest sincerity of his heart determined him to decline the clerical office, believing that he was religiously unfit for such a station. His standing aloof from Baretti, because his principles were infidel, deserves specification, since the rigid Johnson and the other wits of London, adopted his companionship, and admitted him to their confidence and intimacy.

The powers of Goldsmith as a writer in every thing he attempted, were of the highest order, and his range of subjects embraces nearly the wide circle of literature. Either as a poet, historian, naturalist, novelist, dramatic writer, biographer, or essayist, he has been rarely equalled. His delicate taste, his excursive imagination, the fine powers of his understanding, his exquisite humour, and the polished harmony of his expressions, prove the superiority and rare versatility of his talents. But this is not the place to enter into a critical examination of his distinct and comparative merits. These may be analysed hereafter, when Mr. Prior's edition of the poet's works shall be the subject of commentary. For the present, we shall quote in conclusion the opinions of two eminent writers upon the general character of his prose and poetry—opinions which good taste and critical judgment have long since recognised as orthodox. His prose compositions are thus characterized by Dr. Anderson in his *British Poets* :—

“As a prose writer, Goldsmith must be allowed to have rivalled and even exceeded Dr. Johnson, and his imitator Dr. Hawkesworth, the most celebrated professional prose writer of his time. His prose may be regarded as the model of perfection, and the standard of our language; to equal which the efforts of most will be vain, and to exceed it, every expectation folly.”

The other writer bears a name of no less literary authority than Sir Walter Scott. After condemning, in the character of

a reviewer, a remark which had been applied to the poetry of Pratt, that he inherited the lyre of Goldsmith, he proceeds in the following manner:—

“This is the third instance we remember of living poets being complimented at the expense of poor Goldsmith. A literary journal has thought proper to extol Mr. Crabbe as far above him; and Mr. Richards (a man of genius also we readily admit) has been said in a note to a late sermon, famous for its length, to unite ‘the nervousness of Dryden with the ease of Goldsmith.’ This is all very easily asserted. The native ease and grace of Goldsmith’s versification have probably led to the deception; but it would be difficult to point out one among the English poets less likely to be excelled in his own style than the author of the ‘Deserted Village.’ Possessing much of the compactness of Pope’s versification, without the monotonous structure of his lines; rising sometimes to the swell and fulness of Dryden, without his inflations; delicate and masterly in his descriptions; graceful in one of the great graces of poetry, its transitions; alike successful in his sportive or grave, his playful or melancholy mood; he may long bid defiance to the numerous competitors whom the friendship or flattery of the present age is so hastily arraying against him.”

---

#### ART. X.—MISCELLANEOUS NOTICES.

*Juvenal and Persius.* 1 vol. Classical Family Library, No. 35.  
*Pindar and Anacreon.* Ditto, No. 36. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1837.

We know of no undertaking in this age of cheap reprints, which deserves more encouragement than the Classical Family Library of the above enterprising publishers. The bent of the times has been entirely too much towards a disregard of classical studies and works, and in favour of the lighter and frivolous productions of fancy. To these have been postponed not only the bright memorials of antiquity, but even the remains of the Augustan age of English literature. Nothing has *a run* but the tribe of novels, or an occasional book of travels. This danger to the public taste we have often noticed, and have done our share in endeavouring to avert—the effect is but too apparent every where around us. Any experiment with a view of introducing a better state of things should be warmly welcomed, and ought to receive the aid of all who have the cause of letters in their country at heart.

No better plan can be pursued than that of introducing into general use the best classical authors through the medium of the most approved translations. They are thus capable of being enjoyed by all—and they require but to be known to be admired. A strange or a difficult tongue is then no longer an excuse for being ignorant of their contents. They should be presented, too, in such a shape, that while typography and binding are not disregarded, their cheapness may render them readily accessible. The Messrs. Harper have accomplished both these objects. The books in question are afforded at a reasonable rate; while, at the same time, the binding is very neat and durable, and the printing does credit to American art.

We wish that publications of this description were more generally encouraged in our country than they appear to be.

---

*The Economy of Health, &c.* By JAMES JOHNSON, M. D. 1 vol. New York: Harper & Brothers, 1837.

This is another instructive book from the same press. The learned author professes to follow “the stream of human life from the cradle to the grave”—and he intermingles his narration with “reflections, moral, physical and philosophical, on the septennial phases of human existence.” This is promising largely and dealing with rather sounding phrases—though we perceive at once by the work itself that the writer is no pretender, but handles his subject with a master’s hand and in a style totally devoid of affectation. “Utility” he professes to have been his design in its composition; and certainly we have never met with a production on the all-important and much discussed theme of health, which contained more valuable suggestions or threw greater light upon the animal economy. He divides life into ten septenniads; ending of course with the seventieth year of mortal existence; and calling the few, sad years—“full of sorrow” as they are—which may perchance be allotted to any beyond that period, the “ultra-limitēs”—viz. from “seventy to *naught*.”

There is a deal of practical information in the book on the subject of the body, its diseases and its capacities; the proper periods for intellectual and corporeal exertion; and the best modes of bringing into full play its dormant energies. All this should be attentively studied and thoroughly understood by parents and such as have the education of the young entrusted to them. Youth is the season for sowing not only those moral

and religious seeds which may spring up to the harvest in riper years, but also for laying up a stock of health which may enable its possessor to withstand the alternations of climate and the rigours of a laborious life, as well as the confinements and exertions of sedentary and professional avocations. How much havoc of health has been committed in the early years of human existence by injudicious or careless treatment, and how many bright promises of future excellence have been untimely blighted, the experienced physician alone can tell—though every churchyard contains its plentiful and mournful record. Although human skill can elongate man's brief career at the most to some fourscore years, and there is a limit in the counsels of Providence to his span of life which he is not permitted to pass, yet it may not only alleviate the sorrows and burdens of existence, soothe the sharp pain and calm the irritated pulse, but oftentimes arrest a premature march to the grave, and allow the ultimate victim of mortality "to strut his hour upon the stage." Nor let this be thought a trifle, whilst health is considered one of God's greatest blessings.

The last topic in his book is "religious consolation"—the fitting attendant of that period which is to end, so far as time is concerned, in *naught*. The language in which our author discusses this part of his subject is as beautiful as the sentiments are honourable.

---

*Martin Faber, the Story of a Criminal; and Other Tales.*

By the author of the "Yemassee," &c. 2 vols. New York: Harper & Brothers, 1837.

That Mr. Simms is a man of genius we take to be unquestionable—that his genius, however, is not of the best regulated kind we consider equally undeniable. There is no endowment of Providence, mental or physical, of a more dangerous nature than this same quality of genius; none which is more likely "to perish in the using," or to produce fruits utterly at variance with the promise early held out. Without fixed principles—we speak not merely of morals but of order, restraint and moderation—genius is a curse instead of a blessing; for its vagaries nurture those erratic and evil propensities of man which are, unfortunately, too apt of themselves to run riot and lead their possessors into the wilderness of infidelity and licentiousness.

It must not be supposed from these grave introductory remarks, that we hold this author censurable for any extreme of

misapplied talent, or as having contributed any considerable quantity of food to the more depraved appetites of his fellow-men. On the contrary, until the above work fell into our hands we had seen nothing to warrant such an opinion. It was only when we read "Martin Faber" that we began to fear that he was enticed from the only allowable regions of fiction—we mean those where attempts are made through her agency to call into exercise the better feelings of our nature, by engaging our interest and exciting our sensibilities—and had begun to descend into the far lower and less honourable province of feeding a depraved taste or pandering to the sensual inclinations of man. In the former of these departments Mr. Simms had gained a deservedly high reputation, and we anticipated, what we trust will yet be the result, a gradual development of improved and improving powers exercised with a view to the exaltation of our national literature and the amelioration of our national morals.

We look upon "Martin Faber" as an imitation—not indeed without talent of some description—of the bad German school—a school whose tastes and principles are totally diverse from the healthy and native propensities of the American character; and one which can never be popular here unless it be unduly fostered and encouraged, and invested in the garb of beauty by the industry of dazzling and misdirected talent. We hold that no greater curse could befall our land, particularly in the infant years of her literature, than the growth among us of works of fiction of the German—we should rather say *Satanic*—order, or those of kindred parentage, the modern French romances, tales, novels, dramas, or by whatever name it is deemed proper to designate the appeals which are constantly made in that country to the unholy promptings of corrupted nature. We would raise an early and unwearied voice against the first approach of this moral pestilence—for such we regard it—and emphatically would we do it when the poison is scattered by an author of our own.

The present is a second edition of this story. The first, published two years ago, was severely criticised, and Mr. Simms, in a laboured preface, seeks to deprecate censure. His claims to originality, which he appears anxious to establish, we are not disposed to controvert; but we consider him—however sincere may have been his design of rendering the work "purely moral"—as utterly failing in the attempt to reach this high aim. Let our author leave the imitation of unworthy foreign models, and devote his admitted powers to some nobler and worthier object.

*Falkner ; a Novel.* By the author of "Frankenstein." New York: Harper & Brothers, 1837.

This is a book which we cannot commend highly—nor should we be disposed to recommend it at all to our readers. It can be praised only by comparison ; and this as contrasted with "Frankenstein."

We do not dispute that Mrs. Shelley has produced a tale of much interest, and one containing many passages of considerable force and beauty—but, as a whole, the moral tone of her story is not a healthy one, and the sentiments are partially false and much exaggerated. Her hero is by no means a natural character ; and a palliation is attempted for his offence—to apply to it no stronger term—which morality and justice could never approve. There is a stiffness, too, about much of the dialogue which does not exhibit the practised writer—and the trial of Falkner is heavily managed ; presenting no striking incident, and not handled by one familiar with such details.

We confess ourselves not over indulgent to such productions, nor do we wish to see a taste for them encouraged. They illustrate no portion of history—develope no new views of human nature—and conduce in no particular to the advancement of religion or morals. To a mere work of fiction, having no reference to either of these ends, we are not disposed to accord our approbation ; even though we may recognise the hand of talent in some of the portraitures.

As compared, however, with her prior and most celebrated work, "Frankenstein," Falkner exhibits evidence of a highly improved taste. Indeed, we regard the former as one of the most disgusting productions in the language. We pity the man, much more the *woman*, who could dwell upon such scenes with other feelings than those of loathing and horror. This novel is worse than any of Maturin ; for these exhibit none of the coarseness and indelicacy which are inherent in such a tale as Frankenstein. It is but debasing the high attribute of genius to call the authorship of such works any evidence of that quality.

If Falkner, therefore, be a gradation in the progress of Mrs. Shelley's mind, we hail it as a decided improvement, and would urge her to proceed in the labours of her pen.

---



*The Library of American Biography.* Conducted by JARED SPARKS. Vol. 7th. Boston: Hilliard, Gray & Co., 1837.

During the last quarter we have received another volume of this truly national work, which continues to be regularly issued. We hope that its circulation is sufficient to compensate both editor and contributors for their labours. The paper and printing of this work would do honour to the British press. Our eastern brethren have reason to congratulate themselves upon the excellence to which the art has attained among them. Unlike the miserable editions which are usually put forth of our new books that seem but intended to announce the ephemeral character of their contents, this publication is issued in a style which commends it to the shelves of any library.

Its contents, too, are worthy of the manner in which it is got up. They embody a fund of biographical information connected with the colonization and revolutionary history of our country which should be accessible to all, and most of which no American scholar should be without. We fear (and it is not to our credit that the assertion may be made) that the publication in question is regarded with more interest in England than at home. This should not be so. Let it not be said that it is too valuable and substantial a work to be popular; or that solid encouragement is only extended to the trifles of the day.

This number contains four lives, all well written, viz.—those of Sir William Phips, Israel Putnam, Lucretia Maria Davidson, and David Rittenhouse. Each, except the third, has an appropriate dignity in its subject. In regard to it we may remark, that though the distinguished writer has made the most of her materials, and the lady seems to have been a sensitive and refined person, of great modesty and real worth, yet we are disposed to consider her as not entitled from her abilities to the niche in the library of American biography which has been assigned to her.

We trust that the series will proceed regularly to its completion.

---

*Nick of the Woods, or the Jibbenainosay.* 2 vols. By the author of "Calavar." Philadelphia: Carey, Lea & Blanchard, 1837.

Dr. Bird has presented us with a novel of thrilling interest. Every thing, indeed, which touches upon the wild men of our western forests and prairies; which is connected with the early

history; the rapid decay; the character and habits of the American Indian possess for us a very strong attraction. Genius has heretofore in the same field opened scenes and incidents of commanding interest; and our author is not behind his great predecessors in the same path, in his powers of engaging our attention. Fiction, however, in this department does not alone challenge our regards or awaken our sympathies—real life, as displayed in the career of adventurers among that people, affords as much of excitement and agitation of feeling as the most highly wrought picture of the novelist. In proof of this we would refer to the delightful narrative of Mr. Irving, which we reviewed in our last number.

Two estimates of the Indian character have generally been formed by writers upon the subject, widely different indeed in their results. By one of these, the North American Indians have been supposed to be possessed of almost every virtue which can ennoble human nature. Magnanimity, wisdom, generosity, bravery, independence, eloquence—have each and all been challenged for them by their admirers. On the other hand, their characters are alleged to be but a compound of treachery, cruelty, cowardice, ignorance, and conceit; and their boasted eloquence, a cheat. The truth, indeed, appears to be a compound of these two diverse opinions. That they are brave and wise—(probably *cunning* would be the more appropriate expression)—and high-spirited, we are inclined to admit. But we are also persuaded that they are eminently cruel and barbarous; selfish, treacherous, and revengeful. Of their powers of oratory we are extremely sceptical.

Dr. Bird adopts the unfavourable estimate of their qualities—not mingling with it a sufficient grain of allowance. On the whole, however, we regard him as more correct than those persons who look for the perfection or even a high standard of human nature amid the woods and wilds—or among any unchristianized, warlike tribes. We are glad that our author's book has been published, simply for this, if for no other reason, that something might be plausibly urged on both sides of the question. And this has been effected in a narrative which loses none of its interest because its hero has not been selected from a savage people.

Upon the beauties of the work we have not space to enlarge. They are doubtless familiar to our readers; for the novel must have been extensively perused by this time. Our duties as critics will be better discharged by pointing out what we consider a few of its defects.

The female characters possess no special interest. Indeed they are exceedingly tame. The delineation of female cha-

racter is not the writer's forte. There is a want of individuality about them without which no portrait can be attractive.

Again; we cannot but view *Nathan* as an unnatural sketch. While there is much force and originality in the conception of such a character, and while, as we admit, it is admirably sustained throughout and engages our continued admiration; yet we feel that the whole picture is forced and exaggerated—a caricature indeed of qualities which have a real separate existence, but which we cannot conceive as co-existing in the same individual. There is not about *Nathan* the close adherence to nature which we at once recognise and admire in *Leatherstocking*.

Dr. Bird, however, we consider in the direct path to the highest distinction as an American novelist. To *American* novels—if his powers be exclusively adapted to this department of literature—let him confine himself. In tales of mere imagination or feeling, or portraiture of individual character, we are inclined to think he would fail. He possesses strength, not grace—fire, not delicacy of tact—takes bold views rather than nicely discriminates. In description he excels. With the features of our country he is familiar; and he enters into the spirit of her history and politics. As Americans, we feel a strong interest in his success—as Philadelphians, doubly so.

---

*Gleanings in Europe; France.* By the Author of the "Spy."  
Philadelphia: Carey, Lea & Blanchard, 1837.

We have regarded Mr. Cooper in most of his late works as merely playing with his unquestioned abilities—as not at all seriously putting forth his strength. He appears to have contented himself with a fame, brilliant indeed, but still not one (as no literary man's is) entirely above diminution or free from decay. The wisest may slip into dotage, and the brightest be darkened with a cloud.

It is no small matter to trifle with a reputation however high. A great man may readily outlive it. It is more easy still for one to write down his own fame. Even Sir Walter Scott was beginning to disparage his excellent repute as a novelist when death called him hence. Mr. Cooper should feel that it is still more in his power to do so than it was for the great Scotsman.

We concede that in the works we refer to, our distinguished countryman has written much that is sprightly and agreeable; and that some of his descriptions of scenery are very fine. But we speak of them in mass; and as such we have no hesitation in pronouncing them unworthy of his powers. His politics (for

which we profess no admiration) he is exceedingly fond of mixing up with other matters altogether uncongenial ; and there is, therefore, the appearance presented of a desire to establish his reputation not upon its intrinsic merit, but his standing as a party man. Literature and politics seldom lend permanent support to each other.

There is a bold egotism, too, about these books, neither graceful nor conciliating. This is barely tolerable, either in conversation or composition. It propels prejudices against the speaker or writer, which deprive him of so fair a chance as he might otherwise have of interesting others. There must exist very commanding abilities in the individual to do away with the effect of this vice.

The light talk, *persiflage*, scandal, and sarcasm, which appear to be his favourite passages in his "France," are not to our taste. They do not sit easily upon him. There is neither great wit nor much grace about them. The author excels in other themes.

We are thus free in our strictures upon Mr. Cooper, because we are proud of his former fame, and are desirous to see him put forth something worthy of it. We wish to behold his reputation steadily advancing, and exalting with it that of his country. That he can do both we are persuaded ; and are anxiously waiting for the first promise of it.

---











